Q
1
A512
NH

10

3

184747

THE

AMERICAN

JOURNAL OF SCIENCE.

EDITOR: EDWARD S. DANA.

ASSOCIATE EDITORS

PROFESSORS GEORGE L. GOODALE, JOHN TROWBRIDGE,
W. G. FARLOW AND WM. M. DAVIS, OF CAMBRIDGE,

PROFESSORS A. E. VERRILL, HORACE L. WELLS, CHARLES
SCHUCHERT, L. V. PIRSSON, H. E. GREGORY,
AND HORACE S. UHLER, OF NEW HAVEN,

PROFESSOR JOSEPH S. AMES, OF BALTIMORE,
MR. J. S. DILLER, OF WASHINGTON.

FOURTH SERIES

VOL. XLVI—[WHOLE NUMBER, CXCVI].

WITH TWO PLATES

81 12204

NEW HAVEN, CONNECTICUT.

1918.

THE TUTTLE, MOREHOUSE & TAYLOR COMPANY
NEW HAVEN

CONTENTS TO VOLUME XLVI.

Number 271.

ERRATA.

Page 34, line 10 (bottom), for **27**, 40b, 1835, read **27**, 406, 1835.

Page 37, line 3 (bottom), also page 40, line 8, for George W. read George L. Goodale.

Page 38, line 9, for **35**, 181, 1855, read **35**, 181, 1888.

Page 10 near bottom, after 1818, American Journal etc., add the line:
1818—. Flora, or Allgemeine botanische Zeitung. Regensburg, Munich.

Number 272.

Number 273.

Number 274.

SCIENTIFIC INTELLIGENCE.

Number 275.

SCIENTIFIC INTELLIGENCE.

Number 276.

SCIENTIFIC INTELLIGENCE.

BENJAMIN SILLIMAN, M.D., LL.D.

PROFESSOR OF CHEMISTRY, PHARMACY, MINERALOGY
AND GEOLOGY

IN YALE COLLEGE

B. Silliman

PREFATORY NOTE

The present number commemorates the one-hundredth anniversary of the founding of the American Journal of Science by Benjamin Silliman in July, 1818. The opening chapter gives a somewhat detailed account of the early days of the Journal, with a sketch of its subsequent history. The remaining chapters, eleven in number, are devoted to the principal branches of science which have been prominent in the pages of the Journal. They have been written with a view to showing in each case the position of the science in 1818 and the general progress made during the century; special prominence is given to American science and particularly to the contributions to it to be found in the Journal's pages. References to specific papers in the Journal are in most cases included in the text and give simply volume, page, and date, as (**24**, 105, 1833); when these and other references are in considerable number they have been brought together as a Bibliography at the end of the chapter.

The entire cost of the present number is defrayed from the income of the Mrs. Hepsa Ely Silliman Memorial Fund, established under the will of Augustus Ely Silliman, a nephew of Benjamin Silliman, who died in 1884. Certain of the chapters here printed have been made the basis of a series of seven Silliman Lectures in accordance with the terms of that gift. The selection of these lectures has been determined by the convenience of the gentlemen concerned and in part also by the nature of the subject. A special volume reproducing this number, with some important additions, will soon be published by the Yale University Press.

THE

AMERICAN JOURNAL OF SCIENCE

[FOURTH SERIES.]

Art. I.—*The American Journal of Science from 1818 to 1918;* by Edward S. Dana.

Introduction.

In July, 1818, one hundred years ago, the first number of the American Journal of Science and Arts was given to the public. This is the only scientific periodical in this country to maintain an uninterrupted existence since that early date, and this honor is shared with hardly more than half a dozen other independent scientific periodicals in the world at large. Similar publications of learned societies for the same period are also very few in number.

It is interesting, on the occasion of this centenary, to glance back at the position of science and scientific literature in the world's intellectual life in the early part of the nineteenth century, and to consider briefly the marvelous record of combined scientific and industrial progress of the hundred years following—subjects to be handled in detail in the succeeding chapters. It is fitting also that we should recall the man who founded this Journal, the conditions under which he worked, and the difficulties he encountered. Finally, we must review, but more briefly, the subsequent history of what has so often been called after its founder, "Silliman's Journal."

The nineteenth century, and particularly the hundred years in which we are now interested, must always stand out in the history of the world as the period which has combined the greatest development in all departments of science with the most extraordinary industrial progress. It was not until this century that scientific investigation used to their full extent the twin methods of observation and experiment. In cases too numerous to mention they have given us first, a tentative hypothesis; then, through the testing and correcting of the hypothesis by newly acquired data, an accepted theory has been arrived at; finally, by the same means carried further has been established one of nature's laws.

Early Science.—Looking far back into the past, it seems surprising that science should have had so late a growth, but the wonderful record of man's genius in the monuments he erected and in architectural remains shows that the working of the human mind found expression first in art and further man also turned to literature. So far as man's thought was constructive, the early results were systems of philosophy, and explanations of the order of things as seen from within, not as shown by nature herself. We date the real beginning of science with the Greeks, but it was the century that preceded Aristotle that saw the building of the Parthenon and the sculptures of Phidias. Even the great Aristotle himself (384-322 B. C.) though he is sometimes called the "founder of natural history," was justly accused by Lord Bacon many centuries later of having formed his theories first and then to have forced the facts to agree with them.

The bringing together of facts through observation alone began, to be sure, very early, for it was the motion of the sun, moon, and stars and the relation of the earth to them that first excited interest, and, especially in the countries of the East, led to the accumulation of data as to the motion of the planets, of comets and the occurrence of eclipses. But there was no coördination of these facts and they were so involved in man's superstition as to be of little value. In passing, however, it is worthy of mention that the Chinese astronomical data accumulated more than two thousand years before the Christian era have in trained hands yielded results of no small significance.

Doubtless were full knowledge available as to the science existing in the early civilizations, we should rate it higher than we can at present, but it would probably prove even then to have been developed from within, like the philosophies of the Greeks, and with but minor influence from nature herself. It is indeed remarkable that down to the time with which we are immediately concerned, it was the branches of mathematics, as arithmetic and geometry and later their applications, that were first and most fully developed: in other words those lines of science least closely connected with nature.

Of the importance to science of the Greek school at Alexandria in the second and third centuries B. C., there can be no question. The geometry of Euclid (about 300 B. C.) was marvelous in its completeness as in clearness of logical method. Hipparchus (about 160-125 B. C.) gave the world the elements of trigonometry and developed astronomy so that Ptolemy 260 years later was able to construct a system that was well-developed, though in error in the fundamental idea as to the relative position of the earth. It is interesting to note that the Almagest of Ptolemy was thought worthy of republication by the Carnegie Institution only a year or two since. This great astronomical work, by the way, had no successor till that of the Arab Ulugh Bey in the fifteenth century, which within a few months has also been made available by the same Institution.

To the Alexandrian school also belongs Archimedes (287-212 B. C.), who, as every school boy knows, was the founder of mechanics and in fact almost a modern physical experimenter. He invented the water screw for raising water; he discovered the principle of the lever, which appealed so keenly to his imagination that he called for a ποῦ στῶ, or fulcrum, on which to place it so as to move the earth itself. He was still nearer to modern physics in his reputed plan of burning up a hostile fleet by converging the sun's rays by a system of great mirrors.

To the Romans, science owes little beyond what is implied in their vast architectural monuments, buildings and aqueducts which were erected at home and in the countries of their conquests. The elder Pliny (23-79 A. D.) most nearly deserved to be called a man of science, but his work on natural history, comprised in thirty-seven volumes, is hardly more than a compilation of fable, fact, and fancy, and is sometimes termed a collection of anecdotes. He lost his life in the "grandest geological event of antiquity," the eruption of Vesuvius, which is vividly described by his nephew, the younger

Pliny, in "one of the most remarkable literary productions in the domain of geology" (Zittel).

With the fall of Rome and the decline of Roman civilization came a period of intellectual darkness, from which the world did not emerge until the revival of learning in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries. Then the extension of geographical knowledge went hand in hand with the development of art, literature, and the birth of a new science. Copernicus (1473-1543) gave the world at last a sun-controlled solar system; Kepler (1571-1630) formulated the laws governing the motion of the planets; Galileo (1564-1642) with his telescope opened up new vistas of astronomical knowledge and laid the foundations of mechanics; while Leonardo da Vinci (1452-1519), painter, sculptor, architect, engineer, musician and true scientist, studied the laws of falling bodies and solved the riddle of the fossils in the rocks. Still later Newton (1642-1727) established the law of gravitation, developed the calculus, put mechanics upon a solid basis and also worked out the properties of lenses and prisms so that his Optics (1704) will always have a prominent place in the history of science.

From the time of the Renaissance on science grew steadily, but it was not till the latter half of the eighteenth century that the foundations in most of the lines recognized to-day were fully laid. Much of what was accomplished then is, at least, outlined in the chapters following.

Our standpoint in the early years of the nineteenth century, just before the American Journal had its beginning, may be briefly summarized as follows: A desire for knowledge was almost universal and, therefore, also a general interest in the development of science. Mathematics was firmly established and the mathematical side of astronomy and natural philosophy—as physics was then called—was well developed. Many of the phenomena of heat and their applications, as in the steam engine of Watt, were known and even the true nature of heat had been almost established by our countryman, Count Rumford; but of electricity there were only a few sparks of knowledge. Chemistry had had its foundation firmly laid by Priestley, Lavoisier, and Dalton, while Berzelius was pushing rapidly forward. Geology had also its roots down, chiefly through the work of Hutton and

William Smith, though the earth was as yet essentially an unexplored field. Systematic zoology and botany had been firmly grounded by Buffon, Lamarck and Cuvier, on the one hand, and Linnæus on the other; but of all that is embraced under the biology of the latter half of the nineteenth century the world knew nothing. The statements of Silliman in his Introductory Remarks in the first number, quoted in part on a following page, put the matter still more fully, but they are influenced by the enthusiasm of the time and he could have had little comprehension of what was to be the record of the next one hundred years.

Now, leaving this hasty and incomplete retrospect and coming down to 1918, we find the contrast between to-day and 1818 perhaps most strikingly brought out, on the material side, if we consider the ability of man, in the early part of the nineteenth century, to meet the demands upon him in the matter of transportation of himself and his property. In 1800, he had hardly advanced beyond his ancestor of the earliest civilization; on the contrary, he was still dependent for transportation on land upon the muscular efforts of himself and domesticated animals, while at sea he had only the use of sails in addition. The first application of the steam engine with commercial success was made by Fulton when, in 1807, the steamboat "Clermont" made its famous trip on the Hudson River. Since then, step by step, transportation has been made more and more rapid, economical and convenient, both on land and water. This has come first through the perfection of the steam engine; later through the agency of electricity, and still further and more universally by the use of gasolene motors. Finally, in these early years of the twentieth century, what seemed once a wild dream of the imagination has been realized, and man has gained the conquest of the air; while the perfection of the submarine is as wonderful as its work can be deadly.

Hardly less marvelous is the practical annihilation of space and time in the electric transmission of human thought and speech by wire and by ether waves. While, still further, the same electrical current now gives man his artificial illumination and serves him in a thousand ways besides.

But the limitations of space have also been conquered, during the same period, by the spectroscope which brings a knowledge of the material nature of the sun and the fixed stars and of their motion in the line of sight; while spectrum analysis has revealed the existence of many new elements and opened up vistas as to the nature of matter.

The chemist and the physicist, often working together in the investigation of the problems lying between their two departments, have accumulated a staggering array of new facts from which the principles of their sciences have been deduced. Many new elements have been discovered, in fact nearly all called for by the periodic law; the so-called fixed gases have been liquefied, and now air in liquid form is almost a plaything; the absolute zero has been nearly reached in the boiling point of helium; physical measurements in great precision have been carried out in both directions for temperatures far beyond any scale that was early conceived possible; the atom, once supposed to be indivisible, has been shown to be made up of the much smaller electrons, while its disintegration in radium and its derivatives has been traced out and with consequences only as yet partly understood but certainly having far-reaching consequences; at one point we seem to be brought near to the transmutation of the elements which was so long the dream of the alchemist. Still again photography has been discovered and perfected and with the use of X-rays it gives a picture of the structure of bodies totally opaque to the eye; the same X-rays seem likely to locate and determine the atoms in the crystal.

Here and at many other points we are reaching out to a knowledge of the ultimate nature of matter.

In geology, vast progress has been made in the knowledge of the earth, not only as to its features now exhibited at or near the surface, but also as to its history in past ages, of the development of its structure, the minute history of its life, the phenomena of its earthquakes, volcanoes, etc. Geological surveys in all civilized countries have been carried to a high degree of perfection.

In biology, itself a word which though used by Lamarck did not come into use till taken up by Huxley, and then by Herbert Spencer in the middle of the century, the progress is no less remarkable as is well developed in a later chapter of this number.

Although not falling within our sphere, it would be wrong, too, not to recognize also the growth of medicine, especially through the knowledge of bacteria and their functions, and of disease germs and the methods of combating them. The world can never forget the debt it owes to Pasteur and Lister and many later investigators in this field.

To follow out this subject further would be to encroach upon the field of the chapters following, but, more important and fundamental still than all the facts discovered and the phenomena investigated has been the establishment of certain broad scientific principles which have revolutionized modern thought and shown the relation between sciences seemingly independent. The law of conservation of energy in the physical world and the principle of material and organic evolution may well be said to be the greatest generalizations of the human mind. Although suggestions in regard to them, particularly the latter, are to be found in the writings of early authors, the establishment and general acceptance of these principles belong properly to the middle of the nineteenth century. They stand as the crowning achievement of the scientific thought of the period in which we are interested.

Any mere enumeration of the vast fund of knowledge accumulated by the efforts of man through observation and experiment in the period in which we are interested would be a dry summary, and yet would give some measure of what this marvelous period has accomplished. As in geography, man's energy has in recent years removed the reproach of a "Dark Continent," of "unexplored" central Asia and the once "inaccessible polar regions," so in the different departments of science, he has opened up many unknown fields and accumulated vast stores of knowledge. It might even seem as if the limit of the unknown were being approached. There remains, however, this difference in the analogy, that in science the fundamental relations—as, for example, the nature of gravitation, of matter, of energy, of electricity; the actual nature and source of life—the solution of these and other similar problems still lies in the future. What the result of continued research may be no one can predict, but even with these possibilities before us, it is hardly rash to say that so great a combined progress of pure and applied science as that of the past hundred years is not likely to be again realized.

Scientific Periodical Literature in 1818.

The contrast in scientific activity between 1818 and 1918 is nowhere more strikingly shown than in the amount of scientific periodical literature of the two periods. Of the thousands of scientific journals and regular publications by scientific societies and academies to-day, but a very small number have carried on a continuous and practically unbroken existence since 1818. This small amount of periodical scientific literature in the early part of the last century is significant as giving a fair indication of the very limited extent to which scientific investigation appealed to the intellectual life of the time. Some definite facts in regard to the scientific publications of those early days seem to be called for.

Learned societies and academies, devoted to literature and science, were formed very early but at first for occasional meetings only and regular publications were in most cases not begun till a very much later date. Some of the earliest—not to go back of the Renaissance—are the following:

1560. Naples, Academia Secretorum Naturæ.
1603. Rome, Accademia dei Lincei.
1651. Leipzig, Academia Naturæ Curiosum.
1657. Florence, Accademia del Cimento.
1662. London, Royal Society.
1666. Paris, Académie des Sciences.
1690. Bologna, Accademia delle Scienze.
1700. Berlin, Societas Regia Scientiarum. This was the forerunner of the K. preuss. Akad. d. Wissenschaften.

The Royal Society of London, whose existence dates from 1645, though not definitely chartered until 1662, began the publication of its "Philosophical Transactions" in 1665 and has continued it practically unbroken to the present time; this is a unique record. Following this, other early—but in most cases not continuous—publications were those of Paris (1699); Berlin (1710); Upsala (1720); Petrograd, 1728; Stockholm (1739); and Copenhagen (1743).

For the latter half of the eighteenth century, when the foundations of our modern science were being rapidly laid, a considerable list might be given of early publications of similar scientific bodies. Some of the prominent ones are: Göttingen (1750), Munich (1759), Brussels (1769), Prague (1775), Turin (1784), Dublin (1788), etc. The early years of the nineteenth century saw the beginnings of many others, particularly in northern Italy. It is to be noted that, as stated, only rarely were the publications of these learned societies even approximately continuous. In the majority of cases the issue of transactions or proceedings was highly irregular and often interrupted.

In this country the earliest scientific bodies are the following:

Philadelphia. American Philosophical Society, founded in 1743. Transactions were published 1771-1809; then interrupted until 1818 *et seq.*

Boston. American Academy of Arts and Sciences, founded in 1780. Memoirs, 1785-1821; and then 1833 *et seq.*

New Haven. Connecticut Academy of Arts and Sciences, begun in 1799. Memoirs, vol. **1**, 1810-16; Transactions, 1866 *et seq.*

Philadelphia. Academy of Natural Sciences, begun in 1812. Journal, 1817-1842; and from 1847 *et seq.*

New York. Lyceum of Natural History, 1817; later (1876) became the New York Academy of Sciences. Annals from 1823; Proceedings from 1870.

The situation is somewhat similar as to independent scientific journals. A list of the names of those started only to find an early death would be a very long one, but interesting only historically and as showing a spasmodic but unsustained striving after scientific growth.

It seems worth while, however, to give here the names of the periodicals embracing one or more of the subjects of the American Journal, which began at a very early date and most of which have maintained an uninterrupted existence down to 1915. It should be added that certain medical journals, not listed here, have also had a long and continued existence.[1]

[1] The statements given are necessarily much condensed, without an attempt to follow all changes of title; furthermore, the dates of actual publication for the academies given above are often somewhat vaguely recorded. For fuller information see Scudder's "Catalogue of Scientific Serials, 1633-1876," Cambridge, 1876; also H. Carrington Bolton's "Catalogue of Scientific and Technical Periodicals, 1665-1882" (Smithsonian Institution, 1885). The writer is much indebted to Mr. C. J. Barr of the Yale University for his valuable assistance in this connection.

Early Scientific Journals.

1771–1823. Journal de Physique, Paris; title changed several times.

1787–. Botanical Magazine. (For a time known as Curtis's Journal.)

1789–1816. Annales de Chimie, Paris. Continued from 1817 on as the Annales de Chimie et de Physique.

1790. Journal der Physik, Halle (by Gren); from 1799 on became the Annalen der Physik (und Chemie), Halle, Leipzig. The title has been somewhat changed from time to time though publication has been continuous. Often referred to by the name of the editor-in-chief, as Gren, Gilbert, Poggendorff, Wiedemann, etc.

1795–1815. Journal des Mines, Paris, continued from 1816 as the Annales des Mines.

1796–1815. Bibliothèque Britannique, Geneva. From 1816–1840, Bibliothèque Universelle, etc. 1846–1857, Archives des Sci. phys. nat. Since 1858 generally known as the Bibliothèque Universelle.

1797. Journal of Natural Philosophy, Chemistry and the Arts (Nicholson's Journal) London; united in 1814 with the Philosophical Magazine (Tilloch's Journal).

1798–. The Philosophical Magazine (originally by Tilloch). This absorbed Nicholson's Journal (above) in 1814; also the Annals of Philosophy (Thomson, Phillips) in 1827 and Brewsters' Edinburgh Journal of Science in 1832.

1798–1803. Allgemeines Journal de Chemie (Scherer's Journal). 1803–1806; continued as Neues Allg. J. etc. (Gehlen's Journal.) Later title repeatedly changed and finally (1834 *et seq.*) Journal für praktische Chemie.

1816–18. Journal of Science and the Arts, London. 1819–30, Quarterly J. etc. 1830–31, Journal of the Royal Institution of Great Britain.

1818. American Journal of Science and Arts until 1880, when "the Arts" was dropped, New Haven, Conn. First Series, **1-50**, 1818–1845; Second Series, **1-50**, 1846–1870; Third Series, **1-50**, 1871-1895; Fourth Series, **1-45**, 1896–June, 1918.

1820–1867. London Journal of Arts and Sciences (after 1855, Newton's Journal).

1824–. Annales des sciences naturelles. Paris.

1826–. Linnæa, Berlin, Halle; from 1882 united with Jahrb. d. K. botan. Gartens.

1828–1840. Magazine of Natural History, London; united 1838 with the Annals of Natural History, and known since 1841 as the Annals and Magazine of Natural History.

1828–. Journal of the Franklin Institute, Philadelphia, from 1826; earlier (1825) the American Mechanics Magazine.

1832–. Annalen der Chemie (und Pharmacie) often known as Liebig's Annalen. Leipzig, Lemgo.

The Founder of the American Journal of Science.

The establishment of a scientific journal in this country in 1818 was a pioneer undertaking, requiring of its founder a rare degree of energy, courage, and confidence in the future. It was necessary, not only to obtain the material to fill its pages and the money to carry on the enterprise, but, before the latter end could be accomplished, an audience must be found among those who had hitherto felt little or no interest in the sciences. This great work was accomplished by Benjamin Silliman, "the guardian of American Science," whose influence was second to none in the early development of science in this country. Before speaking in some detail of the early years of this Journal and of its subsequent history, it is proper that some words should be given to its founder.

Benjamin Silliman, son of a general prominent in the Revolutionary War, was born in Trumbull, Connecticut, on August 8, 1779. He was a graduate of Yale College of the class of 1796. Though at first a student of law and accepted for the bar in Connecticut, he was called in 1802 by President Timothy Dwight—a man of rare breadth of mind—to occupy the newly-made chair of chemistry, mineralogy (and later geology) in Yale College at New Haven. To fit himself for the work before him he carried on extensive studies at home and in Philadelphia and spent the year 1805 in travels and study at London and Edinburgh, and also on the Continent. His active duties began in 1806 and from this time on he was in the service of Yale College until his resignation in 1853. From the first, Silliman met with remarkable success as a teacher and public lecturer in arousing an interest in science. His breadth of knowledge, his enthusiasm for his chosen subjects and power of clear presentation, combined with his fine presence and attractive personality, made him a great leader in the science of the country and gave him a unique position in the history of its development.

Much might be said of the man and his work, but, the best tribute is that of James Dwight Dana, given in his inaugural address upon the occasion of his beginning his duties as Silliman professor of geology in Yale College. This was delivered on February 18, 1856, in what was then known as the "Cabinet Building." Dana says in part:

"In entering upon the duties of this place, my thoughts turn rather to the past than to the subject of the present hour. I feel that it is an honored place, honored by the labors of one who has been the guardian of American Science from its childhood; who here first opened to the country the wonderful records of geology; whose words of eloquence and earnest truth were but the overflow of a soul full of noble sentiments and warm sympathies, the whole throwing a peculiar charm over his learning, and rendering his name beloved as well as illustrious. Just fifty years since, Professor Silliman took his station at the head of chemical and geological science in this college. Geology was then hardly known by name in the land, out of these walls. Two years before, previous to his tour in Europe, the whole cabinet of Yale was a half-bushel of unlabelled stones. On visiting England he found even in London no school public or private, for geological instruction, and the science was not named in the English universities. To the mines, quarries, and cliffs of England, the crags of Scotland, and the meadows of Holland he looked for knowledge, and from these and the teachings of Murray, Jameson, Hall, Hope, and Playfair, at Edinburgh, Professor Silliman returned, equipped for duty,—albeit a great duty,—that of laying the foundation, and creating almost out of nothing a department not before recognized in any institution in America.

He began his work in 1806. The science was without books—and, too, without system, except such as its few cultivators had each for himself in his conceptions. It was the age of the first beginnings of geology, when Wernerians and Huttonians were arrayed in a contest. . . . Professor Silliman when at Edinburgh witnessed the strife, and while, as he says, his earliest predilections were for the more peaceful mode of rock-making, these soon yielded to the accumulating evidence, and both views became combined in his mind in one harmonious whole. The science, thus evolved, grew with him and by him; for his own labors contributed to its extension. Every year was a year of expansion and onward development, and the grandeur of the opening views found in him a ready and appreciative response.

. . .

And while the sciences and truth have thus made progress here, through these labors of fifty years, the means of study in the institution have no less increased. Instead of that half-bushel of stones, which once went to Philadelphia for names, in a candle-box, you see above the largest mineral cabinet in the country, which but for Professor Silliman, his attractions and his personal exertions together, would never have been one of the glories of old Yale. . . .

Moreover, the American Journal of Science,—now in its thirty-seventh year and seventieth volume [1856],—projected and long-sustained solely by Professor Silliman, while ever distributing truth, has also been ever gathering honors, and is one of the laurels of Yale.

We rejoice that in laying aside his studies, after so many years of labor, there is still no abated vigor. . . . He retires as one whose right it is to throw the burden on others. Long may he be with us, to enjoy the good he has done, and cheer us by his noble and benign presence."

In addition to these words of Dana, much of vital interest in regard to Silliman and his work will be gathered from what is given in the pages immediately following, quoted from his personal statements in the early volumes of the Journal.

The Early Years of the Journal.

In no direction did Silliman's enthusiastic activities in science produce a more enduring result than in the founding and carrying on of this Journal. The first suggestion in regard to the enterprise was made to Silliman by his friend, Colonel George Gibbs, from whom the famous Gibbs collection of minerals was bought by Yale College in 1825. Silliman says (**25**, 215, 1834):

"Col. Gibbs was the person who first suggested to the Editor the project of this Journal, and he urged the topic with so much zeal and with such cogent arguments, as prevailed to induce the effort in a case then viewed as of very dubious success. The subject was thus started in November, 1817; proposals for the Journal were issued in January, 1818, and the first number appeared in July of that year."

He adds further (**50**, p. iii, 1847) that the conversation here recorded took place "on an accidental meeting on board the steamboat Fulton in Long Island Sound." This was some ten years after Robert Fulton's steamboat, the Clermont, made its pioneer trip on the Hudson river, already alluded to. The incident is not without significance in this connection. The deck of the "Ful-

THE AMERICAN JOURNAL OF SCIENCE,

MORE ESPECIALLY OF

MINERALOGY, GEOLOGY,

AND THE

OTHER BRANCHES OF NATURAL HISTORY;

INCLUDING ALSO

AGRICULTURE

AND THE

ORNAMENTAL AS WELL AS USEFUL

ARTS.

CONDUCTED BY

BENJAMIN SILLIMAN,

PROFESSOR OF CHEMISTRY, MINERALOGY, ETC IN YALE COLLEGE, AUTHOR OF TRAVELS IN ENGLAND, SCOTLAND, AND HOLLAND, ETC

VOL. I.....NO. I.

ENGRAVING IN THE PRESENT NO.

New apparatus for the combustion of TAR, &c. by the vapour of water.

New-York:

PUBLISHED BY J. EASTBURN AND CO. LITERARY ROOMS, BROADWAY, AND BY HOWE AND SPALDING, NEW-HAVEN.

Abraham Paul, printer.

1818.

ton'' was not an inappropriate place for the inauguration of an enterprise also great in its results for the country.

In the preface to the concluding volume of the First Series (loc. cit.) Silliman adds the following remarks which show his natural modesty at the thought of undertaking so serious a work. He says:

Although a different selection of an editor would have been much preferred, and many reasons, public and personal, concurred to produce diffidence of success, the arguments of Col. Gibbs, whose views on subjects of science were entitled to the most respectful consideration, and had justly great weight, being pressed with zeal and ability, induced a reluctant assent; and accordingly, after due consultation with many competent judges, the proposals were issued early in 1818, embracing the whole range of physical science and its applications. The Editor in entering on the duty, regarded it as an affair for life, and the thirty years of experience which he has now had, have proved that his views of the exigencies of the service were not erroneous.

The plan with which the editor began his work and the lines laid down by him at the outset can only be made clear by quoting entire the ''Plan of the Work'' which opens the first number. It seems desirable also to give this in its original form as to paragraphs and typography. The first page of the cover of the opening number has also been reproduced here. It will be seen that the plan of the young editor was as wide as the entire range of science and its applications and extended out to music and the fine arts. This seems strange to-day, but it must be remembered how few were the organs of publication open to contributors at the time. If the plan was unreasonably extended, that fact is to be taken not only as an expression of the enthusiasm of the editor, as yet inexperienced in his work, but also of the time when the sciences were still in their infancy.

He says (**1**, pp. v, vi):

''PLAN OF THE WORK.

This Journal is intended to embrace the circle of THE PHYSICAL SCIENCES, with their application to THE ARTS, and to every useful purpose.

It is designed as a deposit for *original American communications;* but will contain also occasional selections from Foreign Journals, and notices of the progress of science in other countries. Within its plan are embraced

Natural History, in its three great departments of Mineralogy, Botany, and Zoology;

Chemistry and Natural Philosophy, in their various branches: and Mathematics, pure and mixed.

It will be a leading object to illustrate American Natural History, and especially our Mineralogy and Geology.

The Applications of these sciences are obviously as numerous as *physical arts,* and *physical wants;* for no one of these arts or wants can be named which is not connected with them.

While Science will be cherished *for its own sake,* and with a due respect for its own *inherent* dignity; it will also be employed as the *handmaid to the Arts.* Its numerous applications to Agriculture, the earliest and most important of them; to our Manufactures, both mechanical and chemical; and to our Domestic Economy, will be carefully sought out, and faithfully made.

It is also within the design of this Journal to receive communications on Music, Sculpture, Engraving, Painting, and generally on the fine and liberal, as well as useful arts;

On Military and Civil Engineering, and the art of Navigation.

Notices, Reviews, and Analyses of new scientific works, and of new Inventions, and Specifications of Patents;

Biographical and Obituary Notices of scientific men; essays on Comparative Anatomy and Physiology, and generally on such other branches of medicine as depend on scientific principles;

Meteorological Registers, and Reports of Agricultural Experiments: and we would leave room also for interesting miscellaneous things, not perhaps exactly included under either of the above heads.

Communications are respectfully solicited from men of science, and *from men versed in the practical arts.*

Learned Societies are invited to make this Journal, occasionally, the vehicle of their communications to the Public.

The editor will not hold himself responsible for the sentiments and opinions advanced by his correspondents; but he will consider it as an allowed liberty to make slight *verbal alterations,* where errors may be presumed to have arisen from inadvertency."

In the "Advertisement" which precedes the above statement in the first number, the editor remarks somewhat naïvely that he "does not pledge himself that all the subjects shall be touched upon in every number. This is plainly impossible unless every article should be very short and imperfect. . ."

The whole subject is discussed in all its relations in the "Introductory Remarks" which open the first volume. No apology is needed for quoting at considerable length, for only in this way can the situation be made clear, as seen by the editor in 1818. Further we gain here a picture of the intellectual life of the times and, not less interesting, of the mind and personality of the writer. With a frank kindliness, eminently characteristic of the man, as will be seen, he takes the public fully into his confidence. In the remarks made in subsequent volumes,—also extensively quoted—the vicissitudes in the conduct of the enterprise are brought out and when success was no longer doubtful, there is a tone of quiet satisfaction which was also characteristic and which the circumstances fully justified.

The INTRODUCTORY REMARKS begin as follows:

> The age in which we live is not less distinguished by a vigorous and successful cultivation of physical science, than by its numerous and important applications to the practical arts, and to the common purposes of life.
>
> In every enlightened country, men illustrious for talent, worth and knowledge, are ardently engaged in enlarging the boundaries of natural science; and the history of their labors and discoveries is communicated to the world chiefly through the medium of scientific journals. The utility of such journals has thus become generally evident; they are the heralds of science; they proclaim its toils and its achievements; they demonstrate its intimate connection as well with the comfort, as with the intellectual and moral improvement of our species; and they often procure for it enviable honors and substantial rewards.

Mention is then made of the journals existing in England and France in 1818 "which have long enjoyed a high and deserved reputation." He then continues:

> From these sources our country reaps and will long continue to reap, an abundant harvest of information: and if the light of science, as well as of day, springs from the East, we will welcome the rays of both; nor should national pride induce us to reject so rich an offering.
>
> But can we do nothing in return?
>
> In a general diffusion of useful information through the various classes of society, in activity of intellect and fertility of resource and invention, producing a highly intelligent population, we have no reason to shrink from a comparison with any country. But the devoted cultivators of science in the United States are comparatively few: they are, however, rapidly increasing in number. Among them are persons distinguished for their capacity and attainments, and, notwithstanding the

local feelings nourished by our state sovereignties, and the rival claims of several of our larger cities, there is evidently a predisposition towards a concentration of effort, from which we may hope for the happiest results, with regard to the advancement of both the science and reputation of our country.

Is it not, therefore, desirable to furnish some rallying point, some object sufficiently interesting to be nurtured by common efforts, and thus to become the basis of an enduring, common interest? To produce these efforts, and to excite this interest, nothing, perhaps, bids fairer than a SCIENTIFIC JOURNAL.

The valuable work already accomplished by various medical journals is then spoken of and particularly that of the first scientific periodical in the United States, Bruce's Mineralogical Journal. This, as Silliman says (**1**, p. 3, 1818), although "both in this country and in Europe received in a very flattering manner," did not survive the death of its founder, and only a single volume of 270 pages appeared (1810-1813).

Silliman continues:

No one, it is presumed, will doubt that a journal devoted to science, and embracing a sphere sufficiently extensive to allure to its support the principal scientific men of our country, is greatly needed; if cordially supported, it will be successful, and if successful, it will be a great public benefit.

Even a failure, in so good a cause, (unless it should arise from incapacity or unfaithfulness,) cannot be regarded as dishonourable. It may prove only that the attempt was premature, and that our country is not yet ripe for such an undertaking; for without the efficient support of talent, knowledge, and money, it cannot long proceed. No editor can hope to carry forward such a work without the active aid of scientific and practical men; but, at the same time, the public have a right to expect that he will not be sparing of his own labour, and that his work shall be generally marked by the impress of his own hand. To this extent the editor cheerfully acknowledges his obligations to the public; and it will be his endeavour faithfully to redeem his pledge.

Most of the periodical works of our country have been short-lived. This, also, may perish in its infancy; and if any degree of confidence is cherished that it will attain a maturer age, it is derived from the obvious and intrinsic importance of the undertaking; from its being built upon permanent and momentous national interests; from the evidence of a decided approbation of the design, on the part of gentlemen of the first eminence, obtained in the progress of an extensive correspondence; from assurance of support, in the way of contributions, from men of ability in many sections of the union; and from the existence of such a crisis in the affairs of this country and of the world, as appears peculiarly auspicious to the success of every wise and good undertaking.

An interesting discussion follows (pp. 5-8) as to the claims of the different branches of science, and the extent to which they and their applications had been already developed, also the spheres still open to discovery.

The Introductory Remarks close, as follows:

In a word, the whole circle of physical science is directly applicable to human wants and constantly holds out a light to the practical arts; it thus polishes and benefits society and everywhere demonstrates both supreme intelligence and harmony and beneficence of design in the Creator.

The science of mathematics, both pure and mixed, can never cease to be interesting and important to man, as long as the relations of quantity shall exist, as long as ships shall traverse the ocean, as long as man shall measure the surface or heights of the earth on which he lives, or calculate the distances and examine the relations of the planets and stars; and as long as the *iron reign of war* shall demand the discharge of projectiles, or the construction of complicated defences.

The closing part of the paragraph shows the influence exerted upon the mind of the editor by the serious wars of the years preceding 1818, a subject alluded to again at the close of this chapter.

In February, 1822, with the completion of the fourth volume, the editor reviews the situation which, though encouraging is by no means fully assuring. He says (preface to vol. 4, dated Feb. 15, 1822):

Two years and a half have elapsed, since the publication of the first volume of this Journal, and one year and ten months since the Editor assumed the pecuniary responsibility. . . .

The work has not, even yet, reimbursed its expenses, (we speak not of editorial or of business compensation,) we intend, that it has not paid for the paper, printing and engraving; the proprietors of the first volume being in advance, on those accounts, and the Editor on the same score, with respect to the aggregate expense of the three last volumes. This deficit is, however, no longer increasing, as the receipts, at present, just about cover the expense of the physical materials, and of the manual labour. A reiterated disclosure of this kind is not grateful, and would scarcely be manly, were it not that the public, who alone have the power to remove the difficulty, have a right to a frank exposition of the state of the case. As the patronage is, however, growing gradually more extensive, it is believed that the work will be eventually sustained, although it may be long before it will command any thing but gratuitous intellectual labour. . . .

These facts, with the obvious one,—that its pages are supplied with contributions from all parts of the Union, and occasionally from Europe, evince that the work is received as a national and not as a local undertaking, and that the community consider it as having no sectional character. Encouraged by this view of the subject, and by the favour of many distinguished men, both at home and abroad, and supported by able contributors, to whom the Editor again tenders his grateful acknowledgments, he will still persevere, in the hope of contributing something to the advancement of our science and arts, and towards the elevation of our national character.

In the autumn of the same year, the editor closes the fifth volume with a more confident tone (Sept. 25, 1822):

A trial of four years has decided the point, that the American Public will support this Journal. Its pecuniary patronage is now such, that although not a lucrative, it is no longer a hazardous enterprise. It is now also decided, that the intellectual resources of the country are sufficient to afford an unfailing supply of valuable original communications and that nothing but perseverance and effort are necessary to give perpetuity to the undertaking.

The decided and uniform expression of public favour which the Journal has received both at home and abroad, affords the Editor such encouragement, that he cannot hesitate to persevere—and he now renews the expression of his thanks to the friends and correspondents of the work, both in Europe and the United States, requesting at the same time a continuance of their friendly influence and efforts.

Still again in the preface to the sixth volume (1823) he takes the reader more fully into his confidence and shows that he regards the enterprise as no longer of doubtful success. He says:

The conclusion of a new volume of a work, involving so much care, labour and responsibility, as are necessarily attached, at the present day, to a Journal of Science and the Arts, naturally produces in the mind, a state of not ungrateful calmness, and a disposition, partaking of social feeling, to say something to those who honour such a production, by giving to it a small share of their money, and of their time. The Editor's first impression was, that the sixth volume should be sent into the

12204

world without an introductory note, but he yields to the impulse already expressed, and to the established usages of respectful courtesy to the public, which a short preface seems to imply. He has now persevered almost five years, in an undertaking, regarded by many of the friends whom he originally consulted, as hazardous, and to which not a few of them prophetically alloted only an ephemeral existence. It has been his fortune to prosecute this work without, (till a very recent period,) returns, adequate to its indispensable responsibilities;—under a heavy pressure of professional and private duty; with trying fluctuations of health, and amidst sévere and reiterated domestic afflictions. The world are usually indulgent to allusions of this nature, when they have any relation to the discharge of public duty; and in this view, it is with satisfaction, that the Editor adds, that he has now to look on formidable difficulties, only in retrospect, and with something of the feeling of him, who sees a powerful and vanquished foe, slowly retiring, and leaving a field no longer contested.

This Journal which, from the first, was fully supplied with original communications, is now sustained by actual payment, to such an extent, that it may fairly be considered as an established work; its patronage is regularly increasing, and we trust it will no longer justify such remarks as some of the following, from the pen of one of the most eminent scientific men in Europe. "Nothing surprises me more, than the little encouragement which your Journal," ("which I always read with very great interest, and of which I make great use,") "experiences in America—this must surely arise from the present depressed condition of trade, and cannot long continue."

Six years more of uninterrupted editorial work passed by, the sixteenth volume was completed, and the editor was now in a position to review the whole situation up to 1829. This preface (dated July 1, 1829), which is quoted nearly in full, cannot fail to be found particularly interesting and from several standpoints, not the least for the insight it gives into the writer's mind. It is also noteworthy that at this early date it was found possible to pay for original contributions, a privilege far beyond the means of the editor of to-day.

When this Journal was first projected, very few believed that it would succeed.

Among others, Dr. Dorsey wrote to the editor; "I predict a short life for you, although I wish, as the Spaniards say, that you may live a thousand years." The work has not lived a thousand years, but as it has survived more than the hundredth part of that period, no reason is apparent why it may not continue to exist. To the contributors, disinterested and arduous as have been their exertions, the editor's warmest thanks are due; and they are equally rendered to numerous personal friends for their unwavering support: nor ought those subscribers to be forgotten who, occupied in the common pursuits of life, have aided, by their money, in sustaining the hazardous novelty of an American Journal of Science. A general approbation, sufficiently decided to encourage effort, where there was no other reward, has supported the editor; but he has not been inattentive to the voice of criticism, whether it has reached him in the tones of candor and kindness, or in those of severity. We must not look to our friends for the full picture of our faults. He is unwise who neglects the maxim—

—fas est ab hoste doceri,

and we may be sure, that those are quite in earnest, whose pleasure it is, to place faults in a strong light and bold relief; and to throw excellencies into the shadow of total eclipse. Minds at once enlightened and amiable, viewing both in their proper proportions, will however render the equitable verdict;

Non ego paucis offendar maculis,—

It is not pretended that this Journal has been faultless; there may be communications in it which had been better omitted, and it is not doubted that the power to command intellectual effort, by suitable pecuniary reward, would add to its purity, as a record of science, and to its richness, as a repository of discoveries in the arts.

But the editor, even now, offers payment, at the rate adopted by the literary Journals, for able original communications, containing especially important facts, investigations and discoveries in science, and practical inventions in the useful and ornamental Arts.

As however his means are insufficient to pay for all the copy, it is earnestly requested, that those gentlemen, who, from other motives, are still willing to write for this Journal, should continue to favor it with their communications. That the period when satisfactory compensation can be made to all writers whose pieces are inserted, and to whom payment will be acceptable, is not distant, may perhaps be hoped, from the spontaneous expression of the following opinion, by the distinguished editor of one of our principal literary journals, whose letter is now before me. "The character of the American Journal is strictly national, and it is the only vehicle of communication in which an inquirer may be sure to find what is most interesting in the wide range of topics, which its design embraces. It has become in short, not more identified with the science than the literature of the country." It is believed that a strict examination of its contents will prove that its character has been decidedly scientific; and the opinion is often expressed to the editor, that in common with the journals of our Academies, it is a work of reference, indispensable to him who would examine the progress of American science during the period which it covers. That it might not be too repulsive to the general reader, some miscellaneous pieces have occasionally occupied its pages; but in smaller proportion, than is common with several of the most distinguished British Journals of Science.

Still, the editor has been frequently solicited, both in public and private, to make it more miscellaneous, that it might be more acceptable to the intelligent and well educated man, who does not cultivate science; but he has never lost sight of his great object, which was to produce and concentrate original American effort in science, and thus he has foregone pecuniary returns, which by pursuing the other course, might have been rendered important. Others would not have him admit any thing that is not strictly and technically scientific; and would make this journal for mere professors and amateurs; especially in regard to those numerous details in natural history, which although important to be registered, (and which, when presented, have always been recorded in the American Journal,) can never exclusively occupy the pages of any such work without repelling the majority of readers.

If this is true even in Great Britain it is still more so in this country; and our savants, unless they would be, not only the exclusive admirers, but the sole purchasers of their own works, must permit a little of the graceful drapery of general literature to flow around the cold statues of science. The editor of this Journal, strongly inclined, both from opinion and habit, to gratify the cultivators of science, will still do everything in his power to promote its high interests, and as he hopes in a better manner than heretofore; but these respectable gentlemen will have the courtesy, to yield something to the reading literary, as well as scientific public, and will not, we trust, be disgusted, if now and then an *Oasis* relieves the eye, and a living stream refreshes the traveller. Not being inclined to renew the abortive experiment, to please every body, which has been so long renowned in fable; the editor will endeavor to pursue, the even tenor of his way; altogther inclined to be courteous and useful to his fellow travellers, and hoping for their kindness and services in return.

The Close of the First Series.

The "First Series," as it was henceforth to be known, closed with the fiftieth volume (1847, pp. xx + 347). This final volume is devoted to an exhaustive index to the forty-nine volumes preceding. In the preface (dated April 19, 1847) the elder Silliman, now the senior editor, reviews the work that had been accomplished with a frank expression of his feeling of satisfaction in the victory won against great obstacles; with this every reader must sympathize. He quotes here at length (but in slightly altered form) the matter from the first volume (1818), which has been already reproduced almost entire, and then goes on as follows (pp. xi *et seq.*):

Such was the pledge which, on entering upon our editorial labors in 1818, we gave to the public, and such were the views which we then entertained, regarding science and the arts as connected with the interests and honor of our country and of mankind. In the retrospect, we realize a sober but grateful feeling of satisfaction, in having, to the extent of our power, discharged these self-imposed obligations; this feeling is chastened also by a deep sense of gratitude, first to God for life and power continued for so high a purpose; and next, to our noble band of contributors, whose labors are recorded in half a century of volumes, and in more than a quarter of a century of years. We need not conceal our conviction, that the views expressed in these "Introductory Remarks," have been fully sustained by our fellow laborers.

Should we appear to take higher ground than becomes us, we find our vindication in the fact, that we have heralded chiefly the doings and the fame of others. The work has indeed borne throughout "the impress" of editorial unity of design, and much that has flowed from one pen, and not a little from the pens of others, has been without a name. The materials for the pile, have however been selected and brought in, chiefly by other hands, and if the monument which has been reared should prove to be *"aere perennius,"* the honor is not the sole property of the architect; those who have quarried, hewn and polished the granite and the marble, are fully entitled to the enduring record of their names already deeply cut into the massy blocks, which themselves have furnished.

If a retrospective survey of the labors of thirty years on this occasion has rekindled a degree of enthusiasm, it is a natural result of an examination of all our volumes from the contents of which we have endeavored to make out a summary both of the laborers and their works. . . .

The series of volumes must ever form a work of permanent interest on account of its exhibiting the progress of American science during the long period which it covers. Comparing 1817 with 1847, we mark on this subject a very gratifying change. The cultivators of science in the United States were then few—now they are numerous. Societies and associations of various names, for the cultivation of natural history, have been instituted in very many of our cities and towns, and several of them have been active and efficient in making original observations and forming collections.

A summary follows presenting some facts as to the growth of scientific societies and scientific collections in this country during the period involved: Then the striking contrast between 1818 and 1847 in the matter of organized effort toward scientific exploration is discussed, as follows (pp. xvi *et seq.*):

When we began our Journal, not one of the States had been surveyed in relation to its geology and natural history; now those that have not been explored are few in number. State collections and a United States Museum hold forth many allurements to the young naturalist, as well as to the archæologist and the student of his own race. The late Exploring Expedition [Wilkes] with the National Institute, has enriched the capital with treasures rarely equalled in any country, and the Smithsonian Institution recently organized at Washington, is about to begin its labors for the increase and diffusion of knowledge among men.

It must not be forgotten that the American Association of Geologists and Naturalists—composed of individuals assembled from widely separate portions of the Union—by the seven sessions which it has held, and by its rich volume of reports, has produced a concentration and harmony of effort which promise happy results, especially as, like the British Association, it visits different towns and cities in its annual progress.

Astronomy now lifts its exploring tubes from the observatories of many of our institutions. Even the Ohio, which within the memory of the oldest living men, rolled along its dark waters through interminable forests, or received the stains of blood from deadly Indian warfare, now beholds on one of its most beautiful hills, and near its splendid city, a permanent observatory with a noble telescope sweeping the heavens, by the hand of a zealous and gifted observer. At Washington also, under the powerful patronage of the general government, an excellent observatory has been established, and is furnished with superior instruments, under the direction of a vigilant and well instructed astronomer—seconded by able and zealous assistants.

Here also (in Yale College) successful observations have been made with good instruments, although no permanent building has been erected for an Observatory.

We only give single examples by way of illustration, for the history of the progress of science in the United States, and of institutions for its promotion, during the present generation, would demand a volume. It is enough for our purpose that science is understood and valued, and the right methods of prosecuting it are known, and the time is at hand when its moral and intellectual use will be as obvious as its physical applications. Nor is it to be forgotten that we have awakened an European interest in our researches: general science has been illustrated by treasures of facts drawn from this country, and our discoveries are eagerly sought for and published abroad.

While with our co-workers in many parts of our broad land, we rejoice in this auspicious change, we are far from arrogating it to ourselves. Multiplied labors of many hands have produced the great results. In the place which we have occupied, we have persevered despite of all discouragements, and may, with our numerous coadjutors, claim some share in the honors of the day. We do not say that our work might not have been better done—but we may declare with truth that we have done all in our power, and it is something to have excited many others to effort and to have chronicled their deeds in our annals. Let those that follow us labor with like zeal and perseverance, and the good cause will continue to advance and prosper. It is the cause of truth—science is only embodied and sympathized truth and in the beautiful conception of our noble Agassiz—"it tells the thought of God."

The preface closes with some personal remarks:

In tracing back the associations of many gone-by years, a host of thoughts rush in, and pensive remembrance of the dead who have labored with us casts deep shadows into the vista through which we view the past.

Anticipation of the hour of discharge, when our summons shall arrive, gives sobriety to thought and checks the confidence which health and continued power to act might naturally inspire, were we not reproved, almost every day, by the death of some co-eval, co-worker, companion, friend or patron. This very hour is saddened by such an event,—but we will continue to labor on, and strive to be found at our post of duty, until there is nothing more for us to do; trusting our hopes for a future life in the hands of Him who placed us in the midst of the splendid garniture of this lower world, and who has made not less ample provision for another and a better.

Editorial and financial.—The editorial labors on the Journal were carried by the elder Silliman alone for twenty years from 1818 to 1838. As has been clearly shown in his statements, already quoted, he was, after the first beginning, personally responsible also for the financial side of the enterprise. With volume **34** (1838) the name of Benjamin Silliman, Jr., is added as co-editor on the title page. He was graduated from Yale College the year preceding and at this date was only twenty-one years old. His aid was unquestionably of much service from the beginning and increased rapidly with years and experience. The elder Silliman introduces him in the preface to vol. **34** (1838) and comes back to the subject again in the preface to vol. **50** (1847). The whole editorial situation is here presented as follows:

> "During twenty years from the inception of this Journal, the editor labored alone, although overtures for editorial co-operation had been made to him by gentlemen commanding his confidence and esteem, and who would personally have been very acceptable. It was, however, his opinion that the unity of purpose and action so essential to the success of such a work were best secured by individuality; but he made every effort, and not without success, to conciliate the good will and to secure the assistance of gentlemen eminent in particular departments of knowledge. On the title page of No. 1, vol. **34**, published in July, 1838, a new name is introduced: the individual to whom it belongs having been for several years more or less concerned in the management of the Journal, and from his education, position, pursuits and taste, as well as from affinity, being almost identified with the editor, he seemed to be quite a natural ally, and his adoption into the editorship was scarcely a violation of individual unity. His assistance has proved to be very important:—his near relation to the senior editor prevents him from saying more, while justice does not permit him to say less."

As is distinctly intimated in the preceding paragraph the elder Silliman was fortunate in obtaining the assistance in his editorial labors of numerous gentlemen interested in the enterprise. Their coöperation provided many of the scientific notices, book reviews and the like contained in the Miscellany with which each number closed. It is impossible, at this date, to render the credit due to Silliman's helpers or even to mention them by name. Very early Asa Gray was one of these as occasional notes are signed by his initials. Dr. Levi Ives of New Haven was another. Prof. J. Griscom of Paris also sent numerous contributions even as early as 1825 (see **9**, 154, 1825; **22**, 192, 1832; **24**, 342, 1833, and others).

Some statements have already been quoted from the early volumes as to the business part of Silliman's enterprise. The subject is taken up more fully in the preface to volume **50** (1847). No one can fail to marvel at the energy and optimism required to push the Journal forward when conditions must have been so difficult and encouragement so scanty. He says (pp. iii, iv):

This Journal first appeared in July, 1818, and in June, 1819, the first volume of four numbers and 448 pages was completed. This scale of publication, originally deemed sufficient, was found inadequate to receive all the communications, and as the receipts proved insufficient to sustain the expenses, the work, having but three hundred and fifty subscribers, was, at the end of the year, abandoned by the publishers.

An unprofitable enterprise not being attractive to the trade, ten months elapsed before another arrangement could be carried into effect, and, therefore, No. 1 of vol. **2** was not published until April, 1820. The new arrangement was one of mutual responsibility for the expenses, but the Editor was constrained nevertheless to pledge his own personal credit to obtain from a bank the funds necessary to begin again, and from this responsibility he was, for a series of years, seldom released. The single volume per annum being found insufficient for the communications, two volumes a year were afterward published, commencing with the second volume.

The publishers whose names appear on the title page of the four numbers of the first volume are "J. Eastburn & Co., Literary Rooms, Broadway, New York" and Howe & Spalding, New Haven." For the second volume and those immediately following the corresponding statement "printed and published by S. Converse [New Haven] for the Editor."

Silliman adds (p. iv):

At the conclusion of vol. **10**, in February, 1826, the work was again left upon the hands of its Editor; all its receipts had been absorbed by the expenses, and it became necessary now to pay a heavy sum to the retiring publisher, as an equivalent for his copies of previous volumes, as it was deemed necessary either to control the work entirely or to abandon it. The Editor was not willing to think of the latter, especially as he was encouraged by public approbation, and was cheered onward in his labors by eminent men both at home and abroad, and he saw distinctly that the Journal was rendering service not only to science and the arts, but to the reputation of his country. He reflected, moreover, that in almost every valuable enterprise perseverance in effort is necessary to success. He being now sole proprietor, a new arrangement was made for a single year, the publishers being at liberty, at the end of that time, to retire, and the Editor to resume the Journal should he prefer that course.

The latter alternative he adopted, taking upon himself the entire concern, including both the business and the editorial duties, and of course, all the correspondence and accounts. From that time the work has proceeded without interruption, two volumes per annum having been published for the last twenty years; and its pecuniary claims ceased to be onerous, although its means have never been large. . . .

Later in the same preface he adds (p. xiv):

It may be interesting to our readers to know something of the patronage of the Journal. It has never reached one thousand paying subscribers, and has rarely exceeded seven or eight hundred—for many years it fluctuated between six and seven hundred.

It has been far from paying a reasonable editorial compensation; often it has paid nothing, and at present it does little more than pay its bills. The number of engravings and the extra labor in printer's composition, cause it to be an expensive work, while its patronage is limited.

It is difficult at this date to give any adequate statement of the amount of encouragement and active assistance given to Silliman by his scientific colleagues in New Haven and elsewhere—a subject earlier alluded to. It is fortunately possible, however, to acknowledge the generous aid received by the Journal in the early days from a source near at hand. It has already been noted in another place that the dawning activity of science at New Haven was recognized by the founding of the "Connecticut Academy of Arts and Sciences," formally established at New Haven in 1799 and the third scientific body to be organized in this country. From the beginning of the Journal in 1818, the Connecticut Academy freely gave its support both in papers for publication and at least on one occasion later it gave important financial aid. Upon the occasion of the celebration of the centennial anniversary of the Academy on October 11, 1899, Professor, later Governor, Baldwin, the president of the Academy, discusses this subject in some detail. He says in part:

To support his [Silliman's] undertaking, a vote had been passed in February [1818], "that the Committee of Publication may allow such of the Academy's papers as they think proper, to be published in Mr. Silliman's Scientific Journal."

Free use was made of this authority, and a large part of the contents of the Journal was for many years drawn from this source. In some cases this fact was noted in publication;[2] but in most it was not. . . .

[2] The following footnote accompanies the opening article of the first volume of the Journal. "From the MS. papers of the Connecticut Academy, now published by permission." Similar notes appear elsewhere. Ed.

In 1826, when the Journal was in great need of financial support, the Academy further voted to pay for a year the cost of printing such of its papers as might be published in it. In Baldwin's Annals of Yale College, published in 1831, it is described as a publication ''honorable to the science of our common country,'' and having ''an additional value as being adopted as the acknowledged organ of the Connecticut Academy of Arts and Sciences.''

Many active campaigns were carried on over the country through paid agents to obtain new subscribers for the Journal and it was doubtless due to these efforts that the nominal subscription list was, at times, as already noted, relatively large as compared with that of a later date. The new subscribers in many cases, however, did not remain permanently interested, often failed to pay their bills, and the uncertain and varying demand upon the supply of printed copies was doubtless one reason why many single numbers became early out of print.

An interesting sidelight is thrown upon the efforts of Silliman to interest the public in his work, at its beginning, by a letter to the editor from Thomas Jefferson, then seventy-five years of age. The writer is indebted to Mr. Robert B. Adam of Buffalo for a copy of this letter and its interest justifies its being reproduced here entire. The letter is as follows:

Monticello, Apr. 11. '18.

Sir

The unlucky displacement of your letter of Mar 3 has been the cause of delay in my answer. altho' I have very generally withdrawn from subscribing to or reading periodical publications from the love of rest which age produces, yet I willingly subscribe to the journal you propose from a confidence that the talent with which it will be edited will entitle it to attention among the things of select reading for which alone I have time now left. be so good as to send it by mail, and the receipt of the 1st number will be considered as announcing that the work is commenced and the subscription money for a year shall be forwarded. Accept the assurance of my great esteem and respect.

Th. Jefferson

Professor Silliman.

Contributors.—An interesting summary is also given by Silliman of the contributors to the Journal and the extent of their work (vol. **50**, pp. xii, xiii); he says:

We find that there have been about 600 contributors of original matter to the Journal, and we have the unexpected satisfaction of believing that probably five-sixths of them are still living; for we are not certain that more than fifty are among the dead; of perhaps fifty more we are without information, and if that additional number is to be enrolled among the "stelligeri," we have still 500 remaining. Among them are not a few of the veterans with whom we began our career, and several of these are still active contributors. Shall we then conclude that the peaceful pursuits of knowledge are favorable to long life? This we think is, *cœteris paribus,* certainly true: but in the present instance, another reason can be assigned for the large amount of survivorship. As the Journal has advanced and death has removed its scientific contributors, younger men and men still younger, have recruited the ranks, and volunteers have enlisted in numbers constantly increasing, so that the flower of the host are now in the morning and meridian of life.

We have been constantly advancing, like a traveller from the equinoctial towards the colder zones,—as we have increased our latitude, stars have set and new stars have risen, while a few planetary orbs visible in every zone, have continued to cheer us on our course.

The number of articles, almost exclusively original, contained in the Journal is about 1800, and the Index will show how many have been contributed by each individual; we have doubtless included in this number *some few* articles republished from foreign Journals—but we think they are even more than counterbalanced by original communications without a name and by editorial articles, both of which have been generally omitted in the enumeration.

Of smaller articles and notices in the Miscellany, we have not made any enumeration, but they evidently are more numerous than the regular articles, and we presume that they may amount to at least 2500.

Of party, either in politics or religion, there is no trace in our work; of personalities there are none, except those that relate to priority of claims or other rights of individuals. Of these vindications the number is not great, and we could heartily have wished that there had been no occasion for any.

General Scope of Articles.—Many references will be found in the chapters following which throw light upon the character and scope of the papers published in the Journal, particularly in its early years; a few additional statements here may, however, prove of interest.

One feature that is especially noticeable is the frequent publication of articles planned to place before the readers of the Journal in full detail subjects to which they might not otherwise have access. These are sometimes translations; sometimes republications of articles that had already appeared in English periodicals; again, they are exhaustive and critical reviews of important memoirs or books. The value of this feature in the early history of the Journal, when the distribution of scientific literature had nothing of the thoroughness characteristic of recent years, is sufficiently obvious.

It is also interesting to note the long articles of geological description and others giving lists of mineral or botanical localities. Noteworthy, too, is the attempt to keep abreast of occurring phenomena as in the many notes on tornadoes and storms by Redfield, Loomis, etc.; on auroras at different localities; on shooting stars by Herrick, Olmstead and others.

The wide range of topics treated of is quite in accordance with the plan of the editor as given on an earlier page. Some notes, taken more or less at random, may serve to illustrate this point. An extended and quite technical discussion of "Musical Temperament" opens the first number (**1**, pp. 9-35) and is concluded in the same volume (pp. 176-199). An article on "Mystery" is given by Mark Hopkins A.M., "late a tutor of Williams College" (**13**, 217, 1828). There is an essay on "Gypsies" by J. Griscom (from the Revue Encyclopédique) in volume **24** (pp. 342-345, 1833), while some notes on American gypsies are added in vol. **26** (p. 189, 1834). The "divining rod" is described at length in vol. **11** (pp. 201-212, 1826), but without giving any comfort to the credulous; on the contrary the last paragraph states that "the pretensions of diviners are worthless, etc." A long article by J. Finch on the forts of Boston harbour appeared in 1824 (**8**, 338-348); the concluding paragraph seems worthy of quotation.

> "Many centuries hence, if despotism without, or anarchy within, should cause the republican institutions of America to fade, then these fortresses ought to be destroyed, because they would be a constant reproach to the people; but until that period, they should be preserved as the noblest monuments of liberty."

The promise to include the fine arts is kept by the publication of various papers, as of the Trumbull paintings (**16**, 163, 1829); also by a series of articles on "architecture in the United States" (**17**, 99, 1830; **18**, 218, 220, 1830) and others. Quite in another line is the paper by J. W. Gibbs (**33**, 324, 1838) on "Arabic words in English." A number of related linguistic papers by the same author are to be found in other volumes. Papers in pure mathematics are also not infrequent, though now not considered as falling within the field of the Journal.

Applied science takes a prominent place through all the volume of the First Series. An interesting paper is that on Eli Whitney, containing an account of the cotton gin; this is accompanied by an excellent portrait (**21**, 201-264, 1832). The steam engine and its application are repeatedly discussed and in the early volumes brief accounts are given of the early steamboats in use; for example, between Stockholm and St. Petersburg (**2**, 347, 1820); Trieste and Venice (**4**, 377, 1822); on the Swiss Lakes (**6**, 385, 1823). The voyage of the first Atlantic steamboat, the "Savannah," which crossed from Savannah to Liverpool in 1819, is described (**38**, 155, 1840); mention is also made of the "first iron boat" (**3**, 371, 1821; **5**, 396, 1822). A number of interesting letters, on "Steam Navigation" are given in vol. **35**, 160, 162, 332, 333, 336; some of the suggestions seem very quaint, viewed in the light of the experience of to-day.

A very early form of explosive engine is described at length by Samuel Morey (**11**, 104, 1826); this is an article that deserves mention in these days of gasolene motors. Even more interesting is the description by Charles Griswold (**2**, 94, 1820) of the first *submarine* invented by David Bushnell and used in the Revolutionary War in August, 1776. An account is also given of a dirigible balloon that may be fairly regarded as the original ancestor of the Zeppelin (see **11**, 346, 1826). The whole subject of aërial navigation is treated at length by H. Strait (**25**, pp. 25, 26, 1834) and the expression of his hopes for the future deserve quotation:

"Conveyance by air can be easily rendered as safe as by water or land, and more cheap and speedy, while the universal and uniform diffusion of the air over every portion of the earth, will render aërial navigation preferable to any other. To carry it into effect, there needs only an immediate appeal on a sufficiently large scale, to experiment; reason has done her part, when experiment does hers, nature will not refuse to sanction the whole. Aërial navigation will present the works of nature in all their charms; to commerce and the diffusion of knowledge, it will bring the most efficient aid, and it can thus be rendered serviceable to the whole human family."

A subject of quite another character is the first discussion of the properties of chloroform (chloric ether) and its use as an anæsthetic (Guthrie, **21**, 64, 405, 1832; **22**, 105, 1832; Levi Ives, **21**, 406). Further interesting communications are given of the first analyses of the gastric juice and the part played by it in the process of digestion. Dr. William Beaumont of St. Louis took advantage of a patient who through a gun-shot wound was left with a permanent opening into his stomach through which the gastric juice could be drawn off. The results of Dr. Beaumont and of Professor Robley Dunglison, to whom samples were submitted, are given in full in the life of Beaumont by Jesse S. Myer (St. Louis, 1912). The interest of the matter, so far as the Journal is concerned, is chiefly because Dr. Beaumont selected Professor Silliman as a chemist to whom samples for examination were also submitted. An account of Silliman's results is given in the Beaumont volume referred to (see also **26**, 193, 1834). Desiring the support of a chemist of wider experience in organic analysis, he also sent a sample through the Swedish consul to Berzelius in Stockholm. After some months the sample was received and it is interesting to note in a perfectly fresh condition; it is to be regretted, however, that the Swedish chemist failed to add anything to the results already obtained in this country (**27**, 40b, 1835).

The above list, which might be greatly extended, seems to leave little ground for the implied criticism replied to by Silliman as follows (**16**, p. v, 1829):

A celebrated scholar, while himself an editor, advised me, in a letter, to introduce into this Journal as much *"readable"* matter as possible: and there was, pretty early, an earnest but respectful recommendation in a Philadelphia paper, that Literature, in imitation of the London Quarterly Journal of Science, &c. should be in form, inscribed among the titles of the work.

The Second, Third and Fourth Series.

The Second Series of the Journal, as already stated, began with January, 1846. Up to this time the publication had been a quarterly or two volumes annually of two numbers each. From 1846 until the completion of an additional fifty volumes in 1871, the Journal was made a bimonthly, each of the two yearly volumes having three numbers each. Furthermore, a general index was given for each period of five years, that is for every ten volumes.

Much more important than this change was the addition to the editorial staff of James Dwight Dana, Silliman's son-in-law. Dana returned from the four-years cruise of the Wilkes Exploring Expedition in 1842; he settled in New Haven, was married in 1844, and in 1850 was appointed Silliman professor of Geology in Yale College. He was at this time actively engaged in writing his three quarto reports for the Expedition and hence did not begin his active professional duties in Yale College until 1856. Part of his inaugural address was quoted on an earlier page.

Dana had already performed the severe labor of preparing the complete index to the First Series, a volume of about 350 pages, finally issued in 1847. From the beginning of the Second Series he was closely associated with his brother-in-law, the younger Silliman. Later the editorial labor devolved more and more upon him and the larger part of this he carried until about 1890. His work, was, however, somewhat interrupted during periods of ill health. This was conspicuously true during a year's absence in Europe in 1859-60, made necessary in the search for health; during these periods the editorial responsibility rested entirely upon the younger Silliman. Of Dana's contributions to science in general this is not the place to speak, nor is the present writer the one to dwell in detail upon his work for the Journal. This subject is to such an extent involved in the history of geology and zoology, the subjects of several succeeding chapters, that it is adequately presented in them.

It may, however, be worth stating that in the bibliography accompanying the obituary notice of Dana (**49**, 329-356, 1895) some 250 titles of articles in the Journal are enumerated; these aggregate approximately 2800 pages. The number of critical notes, abstracts, book reviews, etc., could be also given, were it worth while, but what is much more significant in this connection, than their number or aggregate length, is the fact that these notices are in a large number of cases—like those of Gray in botany—minutely critical and original in matter. They thus give the writer's own opinion on a multitude of different subjects. It was a great benefit to Dana, as it was to science also, that he had this prompt means at hand of putting before the public the results of his active brain, which continued to work unceasingly even in times of health prostration.

This may be the most convenient place to add that as Dana became gradually less able to carry the burden of the details involved in editing the Journal in addition to his more important scientific labors, particularly from 1890 on, this work devolved more and more upon his son, the present editor, whose name was added to the editorial staff in 1875, with volume **9**, of the Third Series. The latter has served continuously until the present time, with the exception of absences, due to ill health, in 1893-94 and in 1903; during the first of these Professor Henry S. Williams and during the second Professor H. E. Gregory occupied the editorial chair.

The Third Series began in 1871, after the completion of the one-hundredth volume from the beginning in 1818. At this date the Journal was made a monthly and as such it remains to-day. Fifty volumes again completed this series, which closed in 1895.

The Fourth Series began with January, 1896, and the present number for July, 1918, is the opening one of the forty-sixth volume or, in other words,—the one hundred and ninety-sixth volume of the entire issue since 1818. The Fourth Series, according to the precedent established, will end with 1920.

Associate Editors.—In 1851 the new policy was introduced of adding "Associate Editors" to the staff. The first of these was Dr. Wolcott Gibbs of Cambridge. He began his duties with the eleventh volume of the Second Series in 1851 and continued them with unceasing care and thoroughness for more than twenty years. In a note dated Jan. 1, 1851 (**11**, 105), he says:

It is my intention in future to prepare for the columns of this Journal abstracts of the more important physical and chemical memoirs contained in foreign scientific journals, accompanied by references, and by such critical observations as the occasion may demand. Contributions of a similar character from others will of course not be excluded by this arrangement, but I shall hold myself responsible only for those notices which appear over my initials.

The departments covered by Dr. Gibbs, in his excellent monthly contributions, embraced chemistry and physics, and these subjects were carried together until 1873 when they were separated and the physical notes were furnished, first by Alfred M. Mayer and later successively by E. C. Pickering (from 1874), J. P. Cooke (from 1877), and John Trowbridge (from 1880). The first instalment of the long series of notes in chemistry and chemical physics by George F. Barker, was printed in volume **50**, 1870. He came in at first to occasionally relieve Dr. Gibbs, but soon took the entire responsibility. His name was placed among the associate editors on the cover in 1877 and two years later Dr. Gibbs formally retired. It may be added that from the beginning in 1851 to the present time, the notes in "Chemistry and Physics" have been continued almost without interruption.

The other departments of science have been also fully represented in the notes, abstracts of papers published, book notices, etc., of the successive numbers, but as with the chemistry and physics the subject of botany was long treated in a similar formal manner. For the notes in this department, the Journal was for many years indebted to Dr. Asa Gray, who became associate editor in 1853, two years after Gibbs, although he had been a not infrequent contributor for many years previously, Gray's contributions were furnished with great regularity and were always critical and original in matter. They formed indeed one of the most valuable features of the Journal for many years; as botanists well appreciate, and, as Professor Goodale has emphasized in his chapter on botany, Gray's notes are of vital importance in the history of the development of his subject. With Gray's retirement from active duty, his colleague, George W. Goodale, took up the work in 1888 and in 1895 William G. Farlow, also of Cambridge, was added as an associate editor in cryptogamic botany. At this time, however, and indeed earlier, the sphere of the Journal had unavoidably contracted and botany perforce ceased to occupy the prominent place it had long done in the Journal pages.

This is not the place to present an appreciation of the truly magnificent work of Asa Gray. It may not be out of place, however, to call attention to the notice of Gray written for the Journal by his life-long friend, James D. Dana (**35**, 181, 1855). The opening paragraph is as follows:

> "Our friend and associate, Asa Gray, the eminent botanist of America, the broad-minded student of nature, ended his life of unceasing and fruitful work on the 30th of January last. For thirty-five years he has been one of the editors of this Journal, and for more than fifty years one of its contributors; and through all his communications there is seen the profound and always delighted student, the accomplished writer, the just and genial critic, and as Darwin has well said, 'The lovable man.'"

The third associate editor, following Gray, was Louis Agassiz, whose work for science, particularly in his adopted home in this country, calls for no praise here. His term of service extended from 1853 to 1866 and, particularly in the earlier years, his contributions were numerous and important. The next gentleman in the list was Waldo I. Burnett, of Boston, who served one year only, and then followed four of Dana's colleagues in New Haven, of whose generosity and able assistance it would be impossible to say too much. These gentlemen were Brush in mineralogy; Johnson in chemistry, particularly on the agricultural side; Newton in mathematics and astronomy, whose contributions will be spoken of elsewhere; and Verrill—a student of Agassiz—in zoology.

All of these gentlemen. besides their frequent and important original articles, were ever ready not only to give needed advice, but also, to furnish brief communications, abstracts of papers and book reviews, and otherwise to aid in the work. Verrill particularly furnished the Journal a long list of original and important papers, chiefly in systematic zoology, extending from 1865 almost down to the present year. His abstracts and book notices also were numerous and trenchant and it is not too much to say that without him the Journal never could have filled the place in zoology which it so long held. Much later the list of New Haven men was increased by the addition of Henry S. Williams (1894), and O. C. Marsh (1895).

Of the valuable work of those more or less closely associated in the conduct of the Journal at the present time, it would not be appropriate to speak in detail. It must suffice to say that the services rendered freely by them have been invaluable, and to their aid is due a large part of the success of the Journal, especially since the Fourth Series began in 1896. But even this statement is inadequate, for the editor-in-chief has had the generous assistance of other gentlemen, whose names have not been placed on the title page, and who have also played an important part in the conduct of the Journal. This policy, indeed, is not a matter of recent date. Very early in the First Series, Professor Griscom of Paris, as already noted, furnished notes of interesting scientific discoveries abroad. Other gentlemen have from time to time acted in the same capacity. The most prominent of them was Professor Jerome Nicklès of Nancy, France, who regularly furnished a series of valuable notes on varied subjects, chiefly from foreign sources, extending from 1852 to 1869. On the latter date he met an untimely death in his laboratory in connection with experiments upon hydrofluoric acid (**47**, 434, 1869).

It may be added, further, that one of the striking features about the Journal, especially in the earlier half century of its existence, is the personal nature of many of its contributions, which were very frequently in the form of letters written to Benjamin Silliman or J. D. Dana. This is perhaps but another reflection of the extent to which the growth of the magazine centered around these two men, whose wide acquaintance and broad scientific repute made of the Journal a natural place to record the new and interesting things that were being discovered in science.

The following list gives the names and dates of service, as recorded on the Journal title pages, of the gentlemen formally made Associate Editors:

Wolcott Gibbs	(2)	11, 1851	to	(3)	18, 1879
Asa Gray	"	15, 1853	"	"	34, 1887
Louis Agassiz	"	16, 1853	"	(2)	41, 1866
Waldo I. Burnett	"	16, 1853	"	"	17, 1853
George J. Brush	"	35, 1863	"	(3)	18, 1879
Samuel W. Johnson	"	35, 1863	"	"	18, 1879

Hubert A. Newton	(2)	38, 1864	to	(4)	1, 1896
Addison E. Verrill	"	47, 1869			
Alfred M. Mayer	(3)	5, 1873	to	(3)	6, 1873
Edward C. Pickering	"	7, 1874	"	"	13, 1877
George F. Barker	"	14, 1877	"	(4)	29, 1910
Josiah P. Cooke	"	14, 1877	"	(3)	47, 1894
John Trowbridge	"	19, 1880			
George W. Goodale	"	35, 1888			
Henry S. Williams	"	47, 1894			
Henry P. Bowditch	"	49, 1895	to	(4)	8, 1899
William G. Farlow	"	49, 1895			
Othniel C. Marsh	"	49, 1895	to	(4)	6, 1899
Henry A. Rowland	(4)	1, 1896	"	"	10, 1900
Joseph S. Diller	"	1, 1896			
Louis V. Pirsson	"	7, 1899			
William M. Davis	"	9, 1900			
Joseph S. Ames	"	12, 1901			
Horace L. Wells	"	18, 1904			
Herbert E. Gregory	"	18, 1904			
Horace S. Uhler	"	33, 1912			

Present and Future Conditions.

The field to be occupied by the "American Journal of Science and Arts," as seen by its founder in 1818 and presented by him in the first number, as quoted entire on an earlier page, was as broad as the entire sphere of science itself. It thus included all the departments of both pure and applied science and extended even to music and fine arts also. As the years went by, however, and the practical applications of science greatly increased, technical journals started up, and the necessity of cultivating this constantly expanding field diminished. It was not, however, until January, 1880, that "the Arts" ceased to be a part of the name by which the Journal was known.

About the same date also—or better a little earlier—began an increasing development of scientific research, particularly as fostered by the graduate schools of our prominent universities. The full presentation of this subject would require much space and is indeed unnecessary as the main facts must be distinct in the mind of the reader. It is only right, however, that the large part played in this movement by the Johns Hopkins University (founded in 1876) should be mentioned here.

As a result of this movement, which has been of great benefit in stimulating the growth of science in the country, many new journals of specialized character have come into existence from time to time. Further localization and specialization of scientific publication have resulted from the increased activity of scientific societies and academies at numerous centers and the springing into existence thereby of new organs of publication through them, as also through certain of the Government Departments, the Carnegie Institution, and certain universities and museums.

As bearing upon this subject, the following list of the more prominent scientific periodicals started in this country since 1867 is not without interest:

1867– . American Naturalist.
1875– . Botanical Bulletin; later Botanical Gazette.
1879–1913. American Chemical Journal.
1880–1915. School of Mines Quarterly.
1883– . Science.
1885– . Journal of Heredity.
1887– . Journal of Morphology.
1887–1908. Technology Quarterly.
1888–1905. American Geologist.
1891– . Journal of Comparative Neurology.
1893– . Journal of Geology.
1893– . Physical Review.
1895– . Astrophysical Journal.
1896– . Journal of Physical Chemistry.
1896– . Terrestrial Magnetism.
1897–1899. Zoological Bulletin; followed by
1900– . Biological Bulletin.
1901– . American Journal of Anatomy.
1904– . Journal of Experimental Zoology.
1905– . Economic Geology.
1906– . Anatomical Record.
1907– . Journal of Economic Entomology.
1911– . Journal of Animal Behavior.
1914– . American Journal of Botany.
1916– . Genetics.
1918– . American Journal of Physical Anthropology.

The result of the whole movement has been of necessity to narrow, little by little, the sphere of a general scientific periodical such as the Journal has been from the beginning. The exact change might be studied in detail by tabulating as to subjects the contents of successive volumes, decade by decade, from 1870 down. It is sufficient, here, however, to recognize the general fact that while the number of original papers published in the periodicals of this country, in 1910, for example, was very many times what it was in 1825, a large part of these have naturally found their home in periodicals devoted to the special subject dealt with in each case. That this movement will continue, though in lessened degree now that the immediate demand is measurably satisfied, is to be expected. At the same time it has not seemed wise, at any time in the past, to formally restrict the pages of the Journal to any single group of subjects. The future is before us and its problems will be met as they arise. At the moment, however, there seems to be still a place for a scientific monthly sufficiently broad to include original papers of important general bearing even if special in immediate subject. In this way it would seem that "Silliman's Journal" can best continue to meet the ideals of its honored founder, modified as they must be to meet the change of conditions which a century of scientific investigation and growth have wrought. Incidentally it is not out of place to add that a self-supporting, non-subsidized scientific periodical may hope to find a larger number of subscribers from among the workers in science and the libraries if it is not too restricted in scope.

The last subject touched upon introduces the essential matter of financial support without which no monthly publication can survive. With respect to the periodicals of recent birth, listed above, it is safe to say that some form of substantial support or subsidy—often very generous—is the rule, perhaps the universal one. This has never been the case with the American Journal. The liberality and broad-minded attitude of Yale College in the early days, and of the Yale University that has developed from it, have never been questioned. At the same time the special conditions have been such as to make it desirable that the responsibility of meeting the financial requirements should be carried by the editors-in-chief. At present the Yale Library gives adequate payment for certain publications received by the Journal in exchange, though for many years they were given to it as a matter of course, free of charge. Beyond this there is nothing approaching a subsidy.

The difficulties on the financial side met with by the elder Silliman have been suggested, although not adequately presented, in the various statements quoted from early volumes. The same problems in varying degree have continued for the past sixty years. Since 1914 they have been seriously aggravated for reasons that need not be enlarged upon. Prior to that date the subscription list had, for reasons chiefly involved in the development of special journals, been much smaller than the number estimated by Silliman, for example, in volume 50 (p. xiv), although there has been this partial compensation that the considerable number of well-established libraries on the subscription list has meant a greater degree of stability and a smaller proportion of bad accounts. The past four years, however, the Journal, with all similar undertakings here and elsewhere, has been compelled to bear its share of the burden of the world war in diminished receipts and greatly increased expenses. It is gratifying to be able to acknowledge here the generosity of the authors, or of the laboratories with which they have been connected, in their willingness not infrequently to give assistance, for example, in the payment of more or less of the cost of engravings, or in a few special cases a large portion of the total cost of publication. In this way the problem of ways and means, constantly before the editor who bears the sole responsibility, has been simplified.

It should also be stated that as those immediately interested have looked forward to the present anniversary, it has been with the hope that this occasion might be an appropriate one for the establishment of a "Silliman Fund" to commemorate the life and work of Benjamin Silliman. The income of such a fund would lift from the University the burden that must unavoidably fall upon it when the responsibility for the conduct of the Journal can no longer be carried by members of the family including the editor and—as in years long past—a silent partner whose aid on the business side has been essential to the efficiency and economy of the enterprise. Present conditions are not favorable for such a movement, although some thing has been already accomplished in the desired direction. At the present time every patriotic citizen must feel it his first duty to give his savings as well as his spare income to the support of the National Government in the world struggle for freedom in which it is taking part. But, whatever the exact condition of the future may be, it cannot be questioned that the Journal founded by Benjamin Silliman in 1818 will survive and will continue to play a vital part in the support and further development of science.

The present year of 1918 finds the world at large, and with it the world of science, painfully crushed beneath the overwhelming weight of a world war of unprecedented severity. The four terrible years now nearly finished have seen a fearful destruction of life and property which must have a sad influence on the progress of science for many years to come. Only in certain restricted lines has there been a partial compensation in the stimulating influence due to the immediate necessities connected with the great conflict. One hundred years ago "the reign of war" was keenly in the mind of the editor in beginning his work, but for him, happily, the long period of the Napoleonic wars was already in the past, as also the brief conflict of 1812, in which this country was engaged and in which Silliman himself played a minor part. We, too, must believe, no matter how serious the outlook of the present moment, that a fundamental change will come in the not distant future; the nations of the world must sooner or later turn once more to peaceful pursuits and the scientific men of different races must become again not enemies but brothers engaged in the common cause of uplifting human life. The peace that we look forward to to-day is not for this country alone, but a peace which shall be a permanent blessing to the entire world for ages to come.

Note.—The portrait which forms the frontispiece of the present number has been reproduced from the plate in volume **50** (1847). The original painting was made by H. Willard in 1835, when Silliman was in Boston engaged in delivering the Lowell lectures; he was then nearly fifty-six years of age. The engraving, as he states elsewhere, was made from this painting for the Yale Literary Magazine, and was published in the number for December, 1839.

It is interesting to quote the remarks with which the editor introduces the portrait (**50**, xviii, 1847). He says:

> The portrait prefixed to this volume was engraved for a very different purpose and for others than the patrons of this Journal. It has been suggested by friends, whose judgment we are accustomed to respect, that it ought to find a place here, since it is regarded as an authentic, although, perhaps, a rather austere resemblance. In yielding to this suggestion, it may be sufficient to quote the sentiment of Cowper on a similar occasion, who remarked—"that after a man has, for many years, turned his mind *inside out* before the world, it is only affectation to attempt to hide his face."

ART. II.—*A Century of Geology.—The Progress of Historical Geology in North America;* by CHARLES SCHUCHERT.

INTRODUCTION.

The American Journal of Science, "one of the greatest influences in American geology," founded in 1818, has published a little more than 92,000 pages of scientific matter. Of geology, including mineralogy, there appear to be upward of 20,000 pages. What a vast treasure house of geologic knowledge is stored in these 194 volumes, and how well the editors have lived up to their proposed "plan of work" as stated in the opening volume, where Silliman says: "It is designed as a deposit for original American communications" in "the physical sciences . . . and especially our mineralogy and geology" (**1**, v, 1818)! Not only is it the oldest continuously published scientific journal of this country, but it has proved itself to be "perhaps the most important geological periodical in America" (Merrill). It is impossible to adequately present in this memorial volume of the Journal the contents of the articles on the geological sciences.

Editor Silliman was not only the founder of the Journal, but the generating center for the making of geologists and promoting geology during the rise of this science in America. For nearly three decades, the workers came to him for counsel and help, and he had a kind paternal word for them all. This influence is also shown in the many letters which were addressed to him, and which he published in the Journal. A similar influence, paternal care, and constructive criticism were continued by James D. Dana, and especially in his earlier career as editor.

Not including mineralogy, there are in the Journal upward of 1500 distinct articles on geology. Of these, over 400 are on vertebrate paleontology, about 325 on invertebrate paleontology, and 90 on paleobotany. Of articles bearing on historical geology there are about 160, and on stratigraphic geology more than 360. In addition to all this, there are more than 2000 pages of geologic matter relating to books and of letters communicated to the editors Silliman and Dana. We may summarize with

Doctor Merrill's statement in his well-known Contributions to the History of American Geology:

> "From its earliest inception geological notes and papers occupied a prominent place in its pages, and a perusal of the numbers from the date of issue down to the present time will, alone, afford a fair idea of the gradual progress of American geology."

Before presenting a synopsis of the more important steps in the progress of historical geology in America, it will be well to introduce a rapid survey of the rise of geology in Europe, for, after all, American geology grew out of that of England, France and Germany. This dependence was conspicuously true during the first four decades of the previous century. With the rise of the first New York State Survey (1836-1843) and that of Pennsylvania (1836-1844, 1858), American geology became more or less independent of Europe. Finally, this article will conclude with a survey of the rise of paleometeorology, paleogeography, evolution, and invertebrate paleontology.

The Rise of Geology in Europe.

Mineral Geology.—The geological sciences had their rise in the study of minerals as carried on by the German chemist and physician George Bauer (1494-1555), better known as Agricola. Bauer originated the critical study of minerals, but did not distinguish his "fossilia," the remains of organisms, from the inorganic crystal forms. Mineral geology endured until the close of the eighteenth century.

Cosmogonists.—Then came the expounders of the earth's origin, the cosmogonists of the sixteenth to the end of the eighteenth centuries. The fashion of this time was to write histories of the earth derived out of the imagination.

Earliest Historical Geology.—Even though Giovanni Arduino (1713-1795) of Padua was not the first to classify the rocks into three series according to their age, he did this more clearly than any one else before his time. The rocks about Verona he grouped in 1759 into Primary, Secondary, Tertiary, and Volcanic. This three-fold classification came into general use, though modified with time.

Early in the nineteenth century it had become plain that formations of very varying ages were included in each one of the three series. Through the study of the fossils and the recognition of the fact that mountain ranges have been raised at various times, causing younger fossiliferous strata to take on the characters of the Primary, it was seen that these terms of Arduino had lost their original significance.

The first one to describe in detail a local stratigraphic sequence was Johann Gottlob Lehmann (died 1767). In 1756 he published "one of the classics of geological literature," distinguishing clearly thirty successive sedimentary deposits, some of which he said had fossils, but he did not use them to distinguish the strata.

What Lehmann did for the Permian system, George Christian Füchsel (1722-1773) did even better for the Triassic of Thuringia, in 1762 and 1773. He pointed out not only the sequence, but also how the gently inclined strata rest upon the older upturned masses of the mountains; also that some formations have only marine fossils, while others have only terrestrial forms and thus indicate the proximity of land. The deformed strata he thought had fallen into the hollows within the earth, great caverns that had also consumed much of the oceanic waters and had in so doing greatly lowered the sea-level. It was Füchsel who first introduced the theory of universal formations, and who defined the term formation, using it as we now do, system or period. Even though Lehmann and Füchsel showed that there was a definite order and process in the formation of the earth's crust, their example was barren of followers until the beginning of the eighteenth century.

Wernerian Geology or Geognosy.—We come now to the time of Abraham Gottlob Werner (1749-1817), who from 1775 to 1817 was professor of mining and mineralogy in the Freiberg Academy of Mines. Geikie, in his most interesting Founders of Geology, says that Werner "bulks far more largely in the history of geology than any of those with whom up to the present we have been concerned—a man who wielded an enormous authority over the mineralogy and geology of his day." "Although he did great service by the precision of his lithological characters and by his insistence on the doctrine of geological succession, yet as regards geological theory, whether directly by his own teaching, or indirectly by the labors of his pupils and followers, much of his influence was disastrous to the higher interests of geology.''

Werner arranged the crust of the earth into a series of formations, as had been done previously by Lehmann and Füchsel, and one of his fundamental postulates was that all rocks were chemically precipitated in the ocean as ''universal formations.'' For this reason Werner's school were called the Neptunists. Nowhere, however, did he explain how and where the deep and primitive ocean had disappeared.

According to Werner, the first formed or oldest rocks were the chemically deposited Primitive strata, including granite and other igneous and metamorphic rocks. On these followed the Transition rocks, the earliest sediments of mechanical origin, and above them the Floetz rocks, a term for the horizontal stratified rocks. These last he said were partly of chemical but chiefly of mechanical origin. Last of all came the Alluvial series.

The existence of volcanoes had been pointed out long before Werner's time by the Italian school of geologists, but as for ''the universality and potency of what is now termed igneous action,'' all was ''brushed aside by the oracle of Freiberg.'' Reactions between the interior and exterior of our earth ''were utterly antagonistic to Werner's conception of the structure and history of the earth.'' To him, volcanoes were ''burning mountains'' that arose from the combustion of subterranean beds of coal, spontaneously ignited.

The breaking down of the Wernerian doctrines began with two of Werner's most distinguished pupils, D'Aubuisson de Voisins (1769-1819) and Von Buch. The former in 1803 had accepted Werner's aqueous origin of basalt, but after studying the celebrated and quite recent volcanic area of Auvergne he recanted in 1804. Here he saw the basaltic rocks lying upon and cutting through granite, and in places more than 1200 feet thick. ''If these basaltic rocks were lavas,'' says Geikie, ''they must, according to the Wernerian doctrine, have resulted from the combustion of beds of coal. But how could coal be supposed to exist under granite, which was the first chemical precipitate of a primeval ocean?''

Leopold von Buch (1774-1853), ''the most illustrious geologist that Germany has produced,'' after two years spent in Norway was satisfied ''that the rocks in the Christiania district could not be arranged according to the Wernerian plan, which there completely broke down. Von Buch found a mass of granite lying among fossiliferous limestones which were manifestly metamorphosed, and were pierced by veins of granite, porphyry, and syenite.'' Even so, he was not ready to abandon the teachings of his master. After a study of the mountain systems of Germany, however, ''he declared that the more elevated mountains had never been covered by the sea, as Werner had taught, but were produced by successive ruptures and uplifts of the terrestrial crust'' (Geikie).

Rise of Geology and Conformism.—Modern geology has its rise in James Hutton (1726-1797) of Edinburgh, Scotland. In 1785 and 1795, Hutton published his Theory of the Earth, with Proofs and Illustrations. His ''immortal theory'' is his only work on geology. ''Fortunately for Hutton's fame and for the onward march of geology, the philosopher numbered among his friends the illustrious mathematician and natural philosopher, John Playfair (1748-1819), who had been closely associated with him in his later years, and was intimately conversant with his geological opinions.'' In 1802, Playfair published his Illustrations of the Huttonian Theory of the Earth, of which Geikie says, ''Of this great classic it is impossible to speak too highly,'' as it is at the basis of all modern geology.

One of Hutton's fundamental doctrines is that the earth is internally hot and that in the past large masses of molten material, the granites, have been intruded into the crust. It was these igneous views that led to his followers being called the Plutonists. Another of his great doctrines was that ''the ruins of an earlier world lie beneath the secondary strata,'' and that they are separated by what is now known as unconformity. He clearly recognized a lost interval in the broken relation of the structures, and that the ruins, the detrital materials, of one world after another are superposed in the structure of the earth.

Hutton also held that the deformation of once horizontally deposited strata was probably brought about at different periods by great convulsions that shook the very foundations of the earth. After a convulsion, there was a long time of erosion, represented by the unconformity. Geikie says, "The whole of the modern doctrine of earth sculpture is to be found in the Huttonian theory."

The Lyellian doctrine of metamorphism had its origin in Hutton, for he showed that invading igneous granite had altered, through its heat and expanding power, the originally water-laid sediments, and that the schists of the Alps had been born of the sea like other stratified rocks.

Hutton is the father of the Uniformitarian principle, for he "started with the grand conception that the past history of our globe must be explained by what can be seen to be happening now, or to have happened only recently. The dominant idea in his philosophy is that the present is the key to the past." This principle has been impressed on all later geologists by Sir Charles Lyell, and is the chief cornerstone of modern geology.

The principle of uniformitarianism has underlain geologic interpretation since the days of Hutton, Playfair, and Lyell. However, it is often applied too rigidly in interpretations based upon the present conditions, because in the past there were long times when the topographic features of the earth were very different from those of to-day. Throughout the Paleozoic, and, less markedly, the Mesozoic, the oceans flooded the lands widely (at times over 60 per cent of the total area), highlands were inconspicuous, sediments far scarcer, and climates warm and equable throughout the world. Highland conditions, and especially the broadly emergent continents of the present, were only periodically present in the Paleozoic and then for comparatively short intervals between the periods. Therefore rates of denudation, solution, sedimentation, and evolution have varied greatly throughout the geological ages. These differences, however, relate to degrees of operation, and not to kinds of processes; but the differences in degree of operation react mightily on our views as to the age of the earth.

Geologic time had, for Hutton, no "vestige of a beginning, no prospect of an end." In other words, geologic time is infinite. He did not, however, discover a method by which the chronology of the earth could be determined.

First Important Text-books.—In 1822 appeared the ablest text-book so far published, and the pattern for most of the later ones, Outlines of the Geology of England and Wales, by W. D. Conybeare (1787-1857) and W. Phillips (1775-1828). "In this excellent volume all that was then known regarding the rocks of the country, from the youngest formations down to the Old Red Sandstone, was summarized in so clear and methodical a manner as to give a powerful impulse to the cultivation of geology in England" (Geikie). This book is reviewed at great length by Edward Hitchcock in the Journal (**7**, 203, 1824).

To indicate how far historical geology had progressed up to 1822 in England, a digest of the geological column as presented in this text-book is given in the following table, along with other information.

A text-book writer of yet greater influence was Charles Lyell (1797-1875), whose Principles of Geology appeared in three volumes between 1830 and 1833. This and his other books were kept up to date through many editions, and his Elements of Geology is, as Geikie says, "the hand book of every English geologist" working with the fossiliferous formations.

The Rise of Geology in North America.

The generating Centers.—In America, geology had its rise independently in three places: in the two scientific societies of Boston and Philadelphia, and dominantly in Benjamin Silliman of Yale College. Stated in another way, we may say that geology in America had its origin in the following pioneers and founders: first, in William Maclure at Philadelphia, and next in Benjamin Silliman at New Haven. Through the influence of the latter, Amos Eaton, the botanist, became a geologist and taught geology at Williams College and later at the Rensselaer School in Troy, New York. Through the same influence Rev. Edward Hitchcock also became a geologist and taught the subject after 1825 at Amherst College.

Silliman was the first to take up actively the teaching of mineralogy and geology based on collections of specimens. He spread the knowledge in popular lectures throughout the Eastern States, graduated many a student in the sciences, making of some of them professional teachers and geologists, provided all with a journal wherein they could publish their research, organized the first geological society and through his students the first

The Geological Column in 1822

Present American classification		Conybeare and Phillips 1822	C.&P. orders	Wernerian orders	Other writers
Psychozoic or Recent		Alluvial	Superior Order	Newest Floetz Class	Tertiary Class
Cenozoic	Pleistocene	Diluvial			
	Pliocene Miocene } Neogene	Upper Marine formation (Crag, Bagshot sand, and Isle of Wight) Freshwater formations			
	Oligocene Eocene } Paleogene	London Clay Plastic Clay			
Mesozoic	Cretaceous	Chalk	Supermedial Order	Floetz Classes	Secondary Classes
	Comanchian 1887	Beds between Chalk and Oolite Series (Chalk Marle, Green Sand, Weald Clay, Iron Sand)			
	Jurassic 1829	Upper Oolitic division (Purbeck beds, Portland Oolite, Kimmeridge Clay) Middle Oolitic division (Coral Rag, Oxford Clay) Lower Oolitic division (Cornbrash, Stonesfield Slate, Forest Marble, Great Oolite, Fullers' Earth, Inferior Oolite, Sand and Marlestone Lias			
	Triassic 1834	New Red Sandstone			
Paleozoic	Permian 1841	Magnesian Limestone		and	and
	Pennsylvanian 1891 Mississippian 1869	Coal Measures Millstone Grit and Shale Old Red Sandstone	Medial or Carboniferous Order	Transition	Intermediate
	Devonian 1839 Silurian 1835 Ordovician 1879 (=Lower Silurian 1835) Cambrian 1833	Unresolved			
Proterozoic	Keweenawan Animikian Huronian Sudburian } Huronian 1852	Submedial and		Primitive	Primitive
Archeozoic	Keewatin Coutchiching } Laurentian 1853	Inferior Orders			

official geological surveys, and by kind words and acts stimulated, fostered, and held together American scientific men for fifty years. Of him it has been truly said that he was "the guardian of American science from its childhood."

The American Academy in Boston.—The second oldest scientific society, but the first one to publish on geological subjects, was the American Academy of Arts and Sciences of Boston, instituted and publishing since 1780. Up to the time of the founding of this Journal, there had appeared in the publications of the American Academy about a dozen papers of a geologic character, none of which need to be mentioned here excepting one by S. L. and J. F. Dana, entitled "Outlines of the Mineralogy and Geology of Boston," published in 1818. This is an early and important step in the elucidation of one of the most intricate geologic areas, and is further noteworthy for its geologic map, the third one to appear, the older ones being by Maclure and Hitchcock (Merrill).

Early Geology in Philadelphia.—The oldest scientific society is the American Philosophical Society of Philadelphia, started by the many-sided Benjamin Franklin in 1769, and which has published since 1771. Up to the time of the founding of the Journal in 1818, there had appeared in the publications of this society thirteen papers of a geologic nature, nearly all small building stones in the rising geologic story of North America. The only fundamental ones were Maclure's Observations of 1809 and 1817. Later, in this same city, there was organized another scientific society that came to be for a long time the most active one in America. This was the Academy of Natural Sciences, started in 1812 with seven members, but it was not until 1817 and the election of William Maclure as its first president that the work of the Academy was of a far-reaching character. Here was built up not only a society for the advancement of the natural sciences and publications for the dissemination of such knowledge, but, what is equally important, the first large library and general museum.

William Maclure (1763-1840), correctly named by Silliman the "father of American geology," was born and educated in Scotland, and died near Mexico City. A merchant of London until 1796, when he had already amassed "a considerable fortune," he made a first short visit to New York City in 1782. In 1796 he again came to America, this time to become a citizen of this country and a liberal patron of science.

About 1803, single-handed and unsustained by government patronage, Maclure interested himself most zealously and efficiently in American geology. In 1809 he published his Observations on the Geology of the United States, Explanatory of a Geological Map. This work he revised "on a yet more extended scale," issuing it in 1817 with 130 pages of text, accompanied by a large colored geological map.

Silliman, the pioneer Promoter of Geology.—In 1806 when Benjamin Silliman (1779-1864) began actively to teach chemistry and mineralogy, all the sciences in America were in a very backward state, and the earth sciences were not recognized as such in the curricula of any of our colleges. Silliman gave his first lecture in chemistry on April 4, 1804. In the summer of that year, Yale College asked him to go to England to purchase material for the College, and great possibilities for broadening his knowledge now loomed before him. As Silliman himself (**43**, 225, 1842) has told the interesting story of his sojourn in England and Scotland, it is worth while to restate a part of it here.

"Passing over to England in the spring of 1805, and fixing my residence for six months in London, I found there no school, public or private, for geological instruction, and no association for the cultivation of the science, which was not even named in the English universities." In geology "Edinburgh was then far in advance of London . . . Prof. Jameson having recently returned from the school of Werner, fully instructed in the doctrines of his illustrious teacher, was ardently engaged to maintain them, and his eloquent and acute friend, the late Dr. John Murray, was a powerful auxiliary in the same cause; both of these philosophers strenuously maintaining the ascendancy of the aqueous over the igneous agencies, in the geological phenomena of our planet.

On the other hand, the disciples and friends of Dr. Hutton were not less active. He died in 1797, and his mantle fell upon Sir James Hall, who, with Prof. Playfair and Prof. Thomas Hope, maintained with signal ability, the igneous theory of Hutton. It did not become one who was still a youth and a novice, to enter the arena of the geological tournament where such powerful champions waged war; but it was very interesting to view the combat, well sustained as it was on both sides, and protracted, without a decisive issue, into a drawn battle . . .

The conflicts of the rival schools of Edinburgh—the Neptunists and the Vulcanists, the Wernerians and the Huttonians, were sustained with great zeal, energy, talent, and science; they were indeed marked too decidedly by a partisan spirit, but this very spirit excited untiring activity in discovering, arranging, and criticising the facts of geology. It was a transition period between the epoch of geological hypotheses and dreams, which had passed by, and the era of strict philosophical induction, in which the geologists of the present day are trained . . .

I was a diligent and delighted listener to the discussions of both schools. Still the igneous philosophers appeared to me to assume more than had been proved regarding internal heat. In imagination we were plunged into a fiery Phlegethon, and I was glad to find relief in the cold bath of the Wernerian ocean, where my predilections inclined me to linger.''

Silliman's Students and their Publications.—Silliman's first student to take up geology as a profession was Denison Olmstead (1791-1859), educator, chemist, and geologist, who was graduated from Yale in 1813. Four years later he was under special preparation with Silliman in mineralogy and geology, and in that year was appointed professor of chemistry in the University of North Carolina. In 1824-1825 Olmstead issued a Report on the Geology of North Carolina, which is the first official geological report issued by any state in America, ''a conspicuous and solitary instance,'' according to Hitchcock's review of it (**14**, 230, 1828), ''in which any of our state governments have undertaken thoroughly to develop their mineral resources.''

Amos Eaton (1776-1842), lawyer, botanist, surveyor, and one of the founders of American geology, was a graduate of Williams College in the class of 1799. He studied with Silliman in 1815, attending his lectures on chemistry, geology, and mineralogy. He also enjoyed access to the libraries of Silliman and of the botanist, Levi Ives, in which works on botany and materia medica were prominent, and was a diligent student of the College cabinet of minerals. He settled as a lawyer and land agent in Catskill, New York, and here in 1810 he gave a popular course of lectures on botany, believed to have been the first attempted in the United States.

In 1818 appeared Eaton's first noteworthy geological publication, the Index to the Geology of the Northern States, a text-book for the classes in geology at Williamstown. The controlling principle of this book was Wernerism, a false doctrine from which Eaton was never able to free himself. This book was "written over anew" and published in 1820.

While at Albany in 1818, Governor De Witt Clinton asked Eaton to deliver a course of lectures on chemistry and geology before the members of the legislature of New York. It is believed that Eaton is the only American having this distinction, and because of it he became acquainted with many leading men of the state, interesting them in geology and its application to agriculture by means of surveys. In this way was sown the idea which eventually was to fructify in that great official work: The Natural History of New York. (See **43**, 215, 1842; and Youmans' sketch of Eaton's life, Pop. Sci. Monthly, Nov. 1890.)

Edward Hitchcock (1793-1864), reverend, state geologist, college president, and another of the founders of American geology, was largely self-taught. Previous to 1825, when he entered the theological department of Yale College, he had met Amos Eaton, who interested him in botany and mineralogy, and between 1815 and 1819 he had made lists of the plants and minerals found about his native town, Deerfield, Massachusetts. Therefore, while studying theology at Yale it was natural for him also to take up mineralogy and geology with Silliman, whose acquaintance he had made at least as early as 1818.

Hitchcock, who was destined to be one of the most prominent figures of his time, was appointed in 1825 to the chair of chemistry and natural history at Amherst College. His first geologic paper, one of five pages, appeared in 1815. Three years later appeared his more important paper on the Geology and Mineralogy of a Section of Massachusetts, New Hampshire, and Vermont (**1**, 105, 436, 1818). This is also noteworthy for its geological map, the next one to be published after those of Maclure of 1809 and 1817. In 1823 came a still greater work, A Sketch of the Geology, Mineralogy, and Scenery of the Regions contiguous to the River Connecticut (**6**, 1, 200, 1823; **7**, 1, 1824). Here the map above referred to was greatly improved, and the survey was one of the most important of the older publications.

Youmans in his account of Hitchcock (Pop. Sci. Monthly, Sept. 1895) says:

"The State of Massachusetts commissioned him to make a geological survey of her territory in 1830. Three years were spent in the explorations, and the work was of such a high character that other States were induced to follow the example of Massachusetts . . . The State of New York sought his advice in the organization of a survey, and followed his suggestions, particularly in the division of the territory into four parts, and appointed him as the geologist of the first district. He entered upon the work, but after a few days of labor he found that he must necessarily be separated from his family, much to his disinclination. He also conceived the idea of urging a more thorough survey of his own State; hence he resigned his commission and returned home. The effort for a resurvey of Massachusetts was successful, and he was recommissioned to do the work. The results appeared in 1841 and 1844."

Oliver P. Hubbard was assistant to Silliman in 1831-1836, and then up to 1866 taught chemistry, mineralogy, and geology at Dartmouth College. James G. Percival was graduated at Yale in 1815, and in 1835 he and C. U. Shepard of Amherst College were appointed state geologists of Connecticut. Their report was issued in 1842.

James Dwight Dana (1813-1895) was undoubtedly the ablest of all of Silliman's students. Graduated at Yale in 1833, he spent fifteen months in the United States Navy as instructor in mathematics, cruising off France, Italy, Greece, and Turkey. In 1836 he was assistant to Silliman, and in 1837, at the age of twenty-four years, he published his widely used System of Mineralogy. Two years later Dana joined the Wilkes Exploring Expedition as mineralogist, returning to America in 1842; his geological results of this expedition were published in 1849. In 1863, during the Rebellion, he published his Manual of Geology, and through four editions it remained for forty years the standard text-book for American geologists.

First American Geological Society.—The founding in 1807 of the Geological Society of London, the parent of geological societies, undoubtedly had its stimulating effect on Silliman, and with his marked organizing ability he began to think of forming an American society of the same kind. This he brought about the year following the appearance of this Journal. that is, in 1819. The American Geological Society, begun in 1819 (**1**, 442, 1819), was terminated in 1830 (**17**, 202, 1830). The first meeting (September 6, 1819) and all the subsequent ones were held in the cabinet of Yale College. The brief records of the doings of this society are printed in volumes **1**, **10**, **15**, and **18** of the Journal. Silliman was the attraction at the meetings, surrounded by his mineral cabinet, and he gave "the true scientific dress to all the naked mineralogical subjects" discussed.

Wernerian Geology in North America.

The Father of American Geology.—Historical Geology begins in America with William Maclure's Observations on the Geology of the United States, issued in 1809. This was the first important original work on North American geology, and its colored geological map was the first one of the area east of the Mississippi River. The classification was essentially the Wernerian system. All of the strata of the Coastal Plain, now known to range from the Lower Cretaceous to Recent, were referred to the Alluvial. To the west, over the area of the Piedmont, were his Primitive rocks, while the older Paleozoic formations of the Appalachian ranges were referred to the Transition. West of the folded area, all was Floetz or Secondary, or what we now know as Paleozoic sedimentaries. The Triassic of the Piedmont area and that of Connecticut he called the Old Red Sandstone, and the coal formations of the interior region he said rested upon the Secondary. The second edition of the work in 1817 was much improved, along with the map, which was also printed on a more correct geographic base. (For greater detail, see Merrill, Contributions to the History of American Geology, 1906.)

Even though Maclure's geologic maps are much generalized, and the scheme of classification adopted a very broad one, they are in the main correct, even if they do emphasize unduly the rather simple geologic structure of North America. This fact is patent all through Maclure's description. Cleaveland also refers to it in his treatise of 1816, and Silliman in the opening volume of the Journal (**1**, 7, 1818) says: "The outlines of American geology appear to be particularly grand, simple, and instructive." Then, all the kinds of rocks were comprehended under four classes, Primitive, Transition, Alluvial, and Volcanic. It is also interesting to note here that in 1822 Maclure had lost faith in the aqueous origin of the igneous rocks and writes of the Wernerian system as "fast going out of fashion" (**5**, 197, 1822), while Hitchcock said about the same thing in 1825 (**9**, 146).

The Work of Eaton.—Amos Eaton, after traveling 10,000 miles and completing his Erie Canal Report in 1824, "reviewed the whole line several times," and published in 1828 in the Journal (**14**, 145) a paper on Geological Nomenclature, Classes of Rocks, etc. The broader classification is the Wernerian one of Primitive, Transition, and Secondary classes. Under the first two he has fossiliferous early Paleozoic formations, but does not know it, because he pays no attention anywhere to the detail of the entombed fossils, and all of his Secondary is what we now call Paleozoic. The correlations of the latter are faulty throughout.

Then came his paper of 1830, Geological Prodromus (**17**, 63), in which he says: "I intend to demonstrate . . . that all geological strata are arranged in five analogous series; and that each series consists of three formations; viz., the Carboniferous [meaning mud-stones], Quartzose, and Calcareous." We seem to see here expressed for the first time the idea of "cycles of sedimentation," but Eaton does not emphasize this idea, and the localities given for each "formation" of "analogous series" demonstrate beyond a doubt that he did not have a sedimentary sequence. The whole is simply a jumble of unrelated formations that happen to agree more or less in their physical characters.

"I intend to demonstrate," he says further, "that the detritus of New Jersey, embracing the marle, which contains those remarkable fossil relics, is antediluvial, or the genuine Tertiary formation." This correlation had been clearly shown by Finch in 1824 (**7**, 31) and yet both are in error in that they do not distinguish the included Cretaceous marls and greensands as something apart from the Tertiary.

One gets impatient with the later writings of Eaton, because he does not become liberalized with the progressive ideas in stratigraphic geology developing first in Europe and then in America, especially among the geologists of Philadelphia. Therefore it is not profitable to follow his work further.

Early American Text-books of Geology.—The first American text-book of geology bears the date of Boston

1816 and is entitled An Elementary Treatise on Mineralogy and Geology, its author being Parker Cleaveland of Bowdoin College. The second edition appeared in 1822. It also had a geologic map of the United States, practically a copy of Maclure's. To mineralogy were devoted 585 pages, and to geology 55, of which 37 describe rocks and 5 the geology of the United States. The chronology is Wernerian. Of "geological systems" there are two, "primitive and secondary rocks."

In 1818 appeared Amos Eaton's Index to the Geology of the Northern States, having 54 pages, and in 1820 came the second edition, "wholly written over anew," with 286 pages. The theory of the later edition is still that of Werner, with "improvements of Cuvier and Bakewell," and yet one sees nowadays but little in it of the far better English text-book. Eaton did very little to advance philosophic geology in America. What is of most value here are his personal observations in regard to the local geology of western Massachusetts, Connecticut, southwestern Vermont, and eastern New York (**1**, 69, 1819; also Merrill, p. 234).

We come now to the most comprehensive and advanced of the early text-books used in America. This is the third English edition of Robert Bakewell's Introduction to Geology (400 pages, 1829), and the first American edition "with an Appendix Containing an Outline of his Course of Lectures on Geology at Yale College, by Benjamin Silliman" (128 pages). Bakewell's good book is in keeping with the time, and while not so advanced as Conybeare and Phillips's Outlines of 1822, yet is far more so than Silliman's appendix. The latter is general and not specific as to details; it is still decidedly Wernerian, though in a modified form. Silliman says he is "neither Wernerian nor Huttonian," and yet his summary on pages 120 to 126 shows clearly that he was not only a Wernerian but a pietist as well.

Unearthing of the Cenozoic and Mesozoic in North America.

The Discerning of the Tertiary.—The New England States, with their essentially igneous and metamorphic formations, could not furnish the proper geologic environment for the development of stratigraphers and paleontologists. So in America we see the rise of such geologists first in Philadelphia, where they had easy access to the horizontal and highly fossiliferous strata of the coastal plain. The first one to attract attention was Thomas Say, after him came John Finch, followed by Lardner Vanuxem, Isaac Lea, Samuel G. Morton, and T. A. Conrad. These men not only worked out the succession of the Cenozoic and the upper part of the Mesozoic, but blazed the way among the Paleozoic strata as well.

Thomas Say (1787-1834), in 1819, was the first American to point out the chronogenetic value of fossils in his article, Observations on some Species of Zoophytes, Shells, etc., principally Fossil (**1**, 381). He correctly states that the progress of geology "must be in part founded on a knowledge of the different genera and species of reliquiæ, which the various accessible strata of the earth present." Say fully realizes the difficulties in the study of fossils, because of their fragmental character and changed nature, and that their correct interpretation requires a knowledge of similar living organisms.

The application of what Say pointed out came first in John Finch's Geological Essay on the Tertiary Formations in America (**7**, 31, 1824). Even though the paper is still laboring under the mineral system and does not discern the presence of Cretaceous strata among his Tertiary formations, yet Finch also sees that "fossils constitute the medals of the ancient world, by which to ascertain the various periods."

Finch now objects to the wide misuse in America of the term alluvial and holds that it is applied to what is elsewhere known as Tertiary. He says:

> "Geology will achieve a triumph in America, when the term alluvial shall be banished from her Geological Essays, or confined to its legitimate domain, and then her tertiary formations will be seen to coincide with those of Europe, and the formations of London, Paris, and the Isle of Wight, will find kindred associations in Virginia, the Carolinas, Georgias, the Floridas, and Louisiana."

The formations as he has them from the bottom upwards are: (1) Ferruginous sand, (2) Plastic clay, (3) Calcaire Silicieuse of the Paris Basin, (4) London Clay, (5) Calcaire Ostrée, (6) Upper marine formation, (7) Diluvial.

The grandest of these early stratigraphic papers, however, is that by Lardner Vanuxem (1792-1848), of only three pages, entitled "Remarks on the Characters and Classification of Certain American Rock Formations" (**16**, 254, 1829). Vanuxem, a cautious man and a profound thinker, had been educated at the Paris School of Mines. James Hall told the writer in a conversation that while the first New York State Survey was in operation, all of its members looked to Vanuxem for advice.

In the paper above referred to, Vanuxem points out in a very concise manner that:

> "The alluvial of Mr. Maclure . . . contains not only well characterized alluvion, but products of the tertiary and secondary classes. Littoral shells, similar to those of the English and Paris basins, and pelagic shells, similar to those of the chalk deposition or latest secondary, abound in it. These two kinds of shells are not mixed with each other; they occur in different earthy matter, and, in the southern states particularly, are at different levels. The incoherency or earthiness of the mass, and our former ignorance of the true position of the shells, have been the sources of our erroneous views."

The second error of the older geologists, according to Vanuxem, was the extension of the secondary rocks over "the western country, and the back and upper parts of New York." They are now called Paleozoic. Some had even tried to show the presence of Jurassic here because of the existence of oölite strata. "It was taken for granted, that all horizontal rocks are secondary, and as the rocks of these parts of the United States are horizontal in their position, so they were supposed to be secondary." He then shows on the basis of similar Ordovician fossils that the rocks of Trenton Falls, New York, recur at Frankfort in Kentucky, and at Nashville in Tennessee.

"It is also certain that an uplifting or downfalling force, or both, have existed, but it is not certain that either or both these forces have acted in a uniform manner. . . . Innumerable are the facts, which have fallen under my observation, which show the fallacy of adopting inclination for the character of a class," such as the Transition class of strata. He then goes on to say that in the interior of our country the so-called secondary rocks are horizontal and in the mountains to the east the same strata are highly inclined. "The analogy, or identity of rocks, I determine by their fossils in the first instance, and their position and mineralogical characters in the second or last instance."

It appears that Isaac Lea (1792-1886) in his Contributions to Geology, 1833, was the first to transplant to America Lyell's terms, Pliocene, Miocene, and Eocene, proposed the previous year. The celebrated Claiborne locality was made known to Lea in 1829, and in the work here cited he describes from it 250 species, of which 200 are new. The horizon is correlated with the London Clay and with the Calcaire Grossier of France, both of Eocene time (**25**, 413, 1834).

Timothy A. Conrad began to write about the American Tertiary in 1830, and his more important publications were issued at Philadelphia. His papers in the Journal begin with 1833 and the last one on the Tertiary is in 1846.

The Tertiary faunas and stratigraphy have been modernized by William H. Dall in his monumental work of 1650 pages and 60 plates entitled "Contributions to the Tertiary Fauna of Florida" (1885-1903). Here more than 3160 forms of the Atlantic and Gulf deposits are described, but in order to understand their relations to the fossil faunas elsewhere and to the living world, the author studied over 10,000 species. Since then, many other workers have interested themselves in the Tertiary problems. Much good work is also being done in the Pacific States where the sequence is being rapidly developed.

The Discerning of the Eastern Cretaceous.—The Cretaceous sequence was first determined by that "active and acute geologist," Samuel G. Morton (1799-1851), but that these rocks might be present along the Atlantic border had been surmised as early as 1824 by Edward Hitchcock (**7**, 216). Vanuxem, as above pointed out, indicated the presence of the Cretaceous in 1829. In this same year Morton proved its presence before the Philadelphia Academy of Natural Sciences.

Between 1830 and 1835 Morton published a series of papers in the Journal under the title "Synopsis of the Organic Remains of the Ferruginous Sand Formation of the United States, with Geological Remarks" (**17**, 274, et seq.). In these he describes the Cretaceous fossils and demonstrates that the "Diluvial" and Tertiary strata of the Atlantic border also have a long sequence of Cretaceous formations. In the opening paper he writes: "I consider the marl of New Jersey as referable to the great ferruginous sand series, which in Prof. Buckland's arrangement is designated by the name of green sand. . . . On the continent this series is called the ancient chalk . . . lower chalk,'' etc. Again, the marls of New Jersey are ''geologically equivalent to those beds which in Europe are interposed between the white chalk and the Oölites.'' This correlation is with the European Lower Cretaceous, but we now know the marls to be of Upper Cretaceous age. Although Eaton objected strenuously to Morton's correlation, we find M. Dufresnoy of France saying, ''Your limestone above green sand reminds me very much of the Mæstricht beds,'' a correlation which stands to this day (**22**, 94, 1832). In 1833 Morton announces that the Cretaceous is known all along the Atlantic and Gulf border, and in the Mississippi valley. ''The same species of fossils are found throughout,'' and none of them are known in the Tertiary. He now arranges the strata of the former ''Alluvial'' as follows:

Modern	Alluvial. Diluvial.	
Tertiary	Upper Tertiary (Upper Marine). Middle Tertiary (London Clay). Lower Tertiary (Plastic Clay).	
Secondary	Calcareous Strata Ferruginous Sand	Cretaceous group, or Ferruginous Sand series (**24**, 128).

Western Cretaceous.—In 1841 and 1843 J. N. Nicollet announced the discovery of Cretaceous in the Rocky Mountain area. Of 20 species of fossils collected by him, 4 were said to occur on the Atlantic border, and of the 200 forms of the Atlantic slope only 1 was found in Europe. Here we see pointed out a specific dissimilarity between the continents, and a similarity between the American areas of Cretaceous deposits (**41**, 181; **45**, 153).

The Cretaceous of the Rocky Mountains was clearly developed by F. V. Hayden in 1855-1888 and by F. B. Meek (1857-1876). Other workers in this field were Charles A. White (1869-1891), and R. P. Whitfield (1877-1889). Since 1891 T. W. Stanton has been actively interpreting its stratigraphy and faunas.

Cretaceous and Comanche of Texas.—The broader outlines of the Cretaceous of Texas had been described by Ferdinand Roemer in 1852 in his good work, Kreidebildungen von Texas, but it was not until 1887 that Robert T. Hill showed in the Journal (**33**, 291) that it included two great series, the Gulf series, or what we now call Upper Cretaceous, and a new one, the Comanche series. This was a very important step in the right direction. Since then the Comanche series has been regarded by some stratigraphers as of period value, while others call it Lower Cretaceous; the rest of the Texas Cretaceous is divided by Hill into Middle and Upper Cretaceous. On the other hand, Lower Cretaceous strata had been proved even earlier in the state of California, for here in 1869 W. M. Gabb (1839-1878) and J. D. Whitney (1819-1896) had defined their Shasta group, which was wholly distinct faunally from the Comanche of Texas and the southern part of the Great Plains country.

Jurassic and Triassic of the West.—In 1864, the Geological Survey of California proved the presence of marine Upper Triassic in that State, and since then it has been shown that not only is all of the Triassic present in Idaho (where it has been known since 1877), Oregon, Nevada, and California, but that the Upper Triassic is of very wide distribution throughout western North America. Jurassic strata, on the other hand, were not shown to be present in California until 1885, while in the Rocky Mountain area of the United States there was long known an unresolved series of "Red Beds" situated between the Carboniferous and Cretaceous. This gave rise to the "Red Bed problem," the history of which is given by C. A. White in the Journal (**17**, 214, 1879). In 1869, F. V. Hayden announced the discovery of marine Jurassic fossils in this series, and since then they have come to be known as the Sundance fauna, extending from southern Utah and Colorado into Alaska. Above lie the dinosaur-bearing fresh-water deposits, since 1894 known as the Morrison beds. In 1896, O. C. Marsh (1831-1899) announced the presence of Jurassic fresh-water strata along the Atlantic coast (**2**, 433), but to-day only a small part of them are regarded as of the age of the Morrison, while the far greater part are referred to the Comanche or Lower Cretaceous. The red beds below the Jurassic of the Rocky Mountain area have during the past twenty years been shown to be in part of Upper Triassic age and of fresh-water origin, while the greater lower part is connected with the Carboniferous series and is made up of brackish- and fresh-water deposits of probable Permian time.

Triassic of Atlantic States.—The fresh-water Triassic of the Atlantic border states was first mentioned by Maclure (1817), who regarded it as the equivalent of the Old Red Sandstone of Europe. In this he was followed by Hitchcock in 1823 (**6**, 39), the latter saying that above it lies "the coal formation," which is true for Europe, but in America the coal strata are older than these red beds, now known to be of Triassic age.

The first one to question this correlation was Alexandre Brongniart, who had received from Hitchcock rock specimens and a fossil fish which he erroneously identified with a Permian species, and accordingly referred the strata to the Permian (**3**, 220, 1821; **6**, 76, pl. 9, figs. 1, 2, 1823). The discerning Professor Finch in 1826 remarked that the red beds of Connecticut appear to belong "to the new or variegated sandstone," because of eight different criteria that he mentions. Of these, but two are of value in correlation, their "geological position" and the presence of bones other than fishes. In the Connecticut area, however, the geological position cannot be determined even to-day, and in Finch's time the bones of dinosaurs were unknown. Finch then goes on to point out the occurrences of Old Red Sandstone in Pennsylvania, but all of the places he refers to are either younger or older in time. Here we again see the fatality of trying to make positive correlations on the basis of lithology and color (**10**, 209, 1826). In 1835, however, Hitchcock showed that the bones that had been found in 1820 were those of a saurian, and accordingly referred the strata of the Connecticut valley to the New Red Sandstone, a term that then covered both the Permian and the Triassic. In 1842, W. B. Rogers referred the beds to the Jurassic, on the basis of plants from Virginia. In 1856, W. C. Redfield (1789-1857), because of the fishes, advocated a Lias, or Jurassic age, and proposed the name Newark group for all the Triassic deposits of the Atlantic border. More recently, on the basis of the plants studied by Newberry, Fontaine, Sturr, and Ward, and the vertebrates described by Marsh and Lull, the age has been definitely fixed as Upper Triassic (see Dana's Manual of Geology, 740, 1895).

Unearthing of the Paleozoic in North America.

Permian of the United States.—In Europe, previous to 1841, the formations now classed as Permian were included in the New Red Sandstone, and with the Carboniferous were referred to the Secondary. In that year Murchison proposed the period term Permian. In 1845 came the classic Geology of Russia in Europe and the Ural Mountains, by Murchison, Keyserling, and De Verneuil. In this great work the authors separated out of the New Red the Magnesian Limestone of Great Britain and the Rothliegende marls, Kupferschiefer, and Zechstein of Germany, and with other formations of the Urals in Russia, referred them to the Permian system. This step, one of the most discerning in historical geology, was all the more important because they closed the Paleozoic era with the Permian, beginning the Secondary, or Mesozoic, with the New Red Sandstone or the Triassic period. There is a good review of this work by D. D. Owen (1807-1860) in the Journal for 1847 (**3**, 153).

Owen, though accepting the Permian system, is not satisfied with its reference to the Paleozoic, and he sets the matter forth in the Journal (**3**, 365, 1847). He doubts "the propriety of a classification which throws the Permian and Carboniferous systems into the Paleozoic period." This is mainly because there is no "evidence of disturbance or unconformability" between the Permian and Triassic systems. Rather "there is so complete a blending of adjacent strata" that it is only in Russia that the Permian has been distinguished from the Triassic. This view of Owen's was not only correct for Russia but even more so for the Alps and for India, and it has taken a great deal of work and discussion to fix upon the disconformable contact that distinguishes the Paleozoic from the Mesozoic in these areas. In other words, there was here at this time no mountain making. Then Owen goes on to state that because the Permian of Europe has reptiles, he sees in them decisive Mesozoic evidence. "These are certainly strong arguments in favor of placing, not only the Permian, but also the Carboniferous group in the Mesozoic period, and terminating the Paleozoic division with the commencement of the coal measures." To this harking backward the geologists of the world have not agreed, but have followed the better views of Murchison and his associates.

In 1855 G. G. Shumard discovered, and in 1860 his brother B. F. Shumard (1820-1869) announced, the presence of Permian strata in the Guadalupe Mountains of Texas, and in 1902 George H. Girty (**14**, 363) confirmed this. Girty regards the faunas as younger than any other late Paleozoic ones of America, and says: "For this reason I propose to give them a regional name, which shall be employed in a force similar to Mississippian and Pennsylvanian. . . . The term Guadalupian is suggested."

G. C. Swallow (1817-1899) in 1858 was the first to announce the presence of Permian fossils in Kansas, and this led to a controversy between himself and F. B. Meek, both claiming the discovery. It is only in more recent years that it has been generally admitted that there is Permian in that state, in Oklahoma, and in Texas. This admission came the more readily through the discovery of many reptiles in the red beds of Texas, and through the work of C. A. White, published in 1891, The Texan Permian and its Mesozoic Types of Fossils (Bull. U. S. Geological Survey, No. **77**).

Carboniferous Formations.—The coal formations are noted in a general way throughout the earliest volumes of the Journal. The first accounts of the presence of coal, in Ohio, are by Caleb Atwater (**1**, 227, 239, 1819), and S. P. Hildreth (**13**, 38, 40, 1828). The first coal plants to be described and illustrated were also from Ohio, in an article by Ebenezer Granger in 1821 (**3**, 5-7). The anthracite field was first described in 1822 by Zachariah Cist (**4**, 1) and then by Benjamin Silliman (**10**, 331-351, 1826); that of western Pennsylvania was described by William Meade in 1828 (**13**, 32).

The Lower Carboniferous was first recognized by W. W. Mather in 1838 (**34**, 356). Later, through the work of Alexander Winchell (1824-1891), beginning in 1862 (**33**, 352) and continuing until 1871, and through the surveys of Iowa (1855-1858), Illinois (essentially the work of A. H. Worthen, 1858-1888), Ohio (1838, Mather, etc.), and Indiana (Owen, etc., 1838), there was eventually worked out the following succession:

Permian period.
- Upper Barren series.
  - Dunkard group.
  - Washington group.

Pennsylvanian period.
- Upper Productive Coal series. Monongahela series.
- Lower Barren Coal Measures. Conemaugh series.
- Lower Productive Coal Measures. Allegheny series.
- Pottsville series.

The New York System.—We now come to the epochal survey of the State of New York, one that established the principles of, and put order into, American stratigraphy from the Upper Cambrian to the top of the Devonian. No better area could have been selected for the establishing of this sequence. This survey also developed a stratigraphic nomenclature based on New York localities and rock exposures, and made full use of the entombed fossils in correlation. Incidentally it developed and brought into prominence James Hall, who continued the stratigraphic work so well begun and who also laid the foundation for paleontology in America, becoming its leading invertebrate worker.

This work is reviewed at great length in the Journal in the volumes for 1844-1847 by D. D. Owen. Evidently it followed too new a plan to receive fulsome praise from conservative Owen, as it should have. He remarks that the volumes "are not a little prolix, are voluminous and expensive, and do not give as clear and connected a view of the geological features of the state as could be wished. . . . We are of the opinion that before this work can become generally useful and extensively circulated, it must be condensed and arranged into one compendious volume" (**46**, 144, 1844). This was never done and yet the work was everywhere accepted at once, and to this end undoubtedly Owen's detailed review helped much.

The Natural History Survey of New York was organized in 1836 and completed in 1843. The state was divided into four districts, and to these were finally assigned the following experienced geologists. The southeastern part was named the First District, with W. W. Mather (1804-1859) as geologist; the northeastern quarter was the Second District, with Ebenezer Emmons (1799-1863) in charge; the central portion was the Third District, under Lardner Vanuxem (1792-1848); while the western part was James Hall's (1811-1898) Fourth District. Paleontology for a time was in charge of T. A. Conrad (1830-1877), the mineralogical and chemical work was in the hands of Lewis C. Beck; the botanist was John Torrey; and the zoologist James DeKay.

The New York State Survey published six annual reports of 1675 pages octavo, and four final geological reports with 2079 pages quarto. Finally in 1846 Emmons added another volume on the soils and rocks of the state, in which he also discussed the Taconic and New York systems; it has 371 pages. With the completion of the first survey, Hall took up his life work under the auspices of the state—his monumental work, Paleontology of New York, in fifteen quarto volumes of 4539 pages and 1081 plates of fossils. In addition to all this, there are his annual and other reports to the Regents of the State, so that it is safe to say that he published not less than 10,000 pages of printed matter on the geology and paleontology of North America.

In regard to this great series of works, all that can be presented here is a table of formations as developed by the New York State Survey. Practically all of its results and formation names have come into general use, with the exception of the Taconic system of Emmons and the division terms of the New York system. (See p. 71.)

The New York State Survey, begun in 1836, was continued by James Hall from 1843 to 1898. During this time he was also state geologist of Iowa (1855-1858) and Michigan (1862). Since 1898, John M. Clarke has ably continued the Geological Survey of New York, the state which continues to be, in science and more especially in geology and paleontology, the foremost in America.

Western Extension of the New York system.—Before Hall finished his final report, we find him in 1841 on "a tour of exploration through the states of Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, a part of Michigan, Kentucky, and Missouri, and the territories of Iowa and Wisconsin." This tour is described in the Journal (**42**, 51, 1842) under the caption "Notes upon the Geology of the Western States." His object was to ascertain how far the New York system as the standard of reference "was applicable in the western extension of the series." In a general way he was very successful in extending the system to the Mississippi River, and he clearly saw "a great diminution, first of

The Geological Column of the New York Geologists of 1842–1843, according to W. W. Mather 1842.

Quaternary system	Alluvial division. Quaternary division. Drift division.	
Tertiary system	These strata are included in the next lower division.	
Upper Secondary system	Long Island division. Equals the Tertiary and Cretaceous marls, sands, and clays of the coastal plain of New Jersey.	
	Trappean division. The Palisades Red Sandstone division.	New Red system of Emmons and Hall.

Coal system of Mather, and Carboniferous system of Hall.

Old Red system of Catskill Mountains of Emmons; Catskill division of Mather and Hall; and Catskill group of Vanuxem.

According to Hall 1843, and essentially Vanuxem 1842.

Erie division [Devonian]	Chemung, Portage or Nunda (divided into Cashaqua, Gardeau, Portage), Genesee, Tully, Hamilton (divided into Ludlowville, Encrinal, Moscow), and Marcellus.
Helderberg series [Devonian-Silurian]	Corniferous, Onondaga, Schoharie, Cauda-galli, Oriskany, Upper Pentamerus, Encrinal, Delthyris, Pentamerus, Waterlime, Onondaga salt group.
Ontario division [Silurian]	Niagara, Clinton, and Medina.
Champlain division [Silurian-Ordovician-Upper Cambrian]	Oneida or Shawangunk, Grey sandstone, Hudson River group, Utica, Trenton, Black River including Birdseye and Chazy, Calciferous sandrock, and Potsdam.

According to Emmons 1842, Mather 1843, Vanuxem 1842, Hall 1843.

Taconic system [Ordovician and Lower Cambrian]	Granular quartz, Stockbridge limestone, Magnesian slate, and Taconic slate.
Primary or Hypogene system	Metamorphic and Primary rocks.

sandy matter, and next of shale, as we go westward, and in the whole, a great increase of calcareous matter in the same direction.'' He also clearly noted the warped nature of the strata, the ''anticlinal axis,'' since known as the Cincinnati and Wabash uplifts and the Ozark dome.

Hall, however, fell into a number of flagrant errors because of a too great reliance on lithologic correlation and supposedly similar sequence. For instance, the Coal Measures of Pennsylvania were said to directly overlap the Chemung group of southern New York, and now he finds the same condition in Ohio, Indiana, and Illinois, failing to see that in most places between the top of the New York system and the Coal Measures lay the extensive Mississippian series, one that he generally confounded with the Chemung, or included in the ''Carboniferous group.'' He states that the Portage of New York is the same as the Waverly of Ohio, and at Louisville the Middle Devonian waterlime is correlated with the similar rock of the New York Silurian. Hall was especially desirous of fixing the horizon of the Middle Ordovician lead-bearing rocks of Illinois, Wisconsin, and Iowa, but unfortunately correlated them with the Niagaran, while the Middle Devonian about Columbus, Ohio, and Louisville, Kentucky, he referred to the same horizon. The Galena-Niagaran error was corrected in 1855, but the Devonian and Mississippian ones remained unadjusted for a long time, and in Iowa until toward the close of the nineteenth century.

Correlations with Europe.—The first effort toward correlating the New York system with those of Europe was made by Conrad in his Notes on American Geology in 1839 (**35**, 243). Here he compares it on faunal grounds with the Silurian system. A more sustained effort was that of Hall in 1843 (**45**, 157), when he said that the Silurian of Murchison was equal to the New York system and embraced the Cambrian, Silurian, and Devonian, which he considered as forming but one system. Hall in 1844 and Conrad earlier were erroneously regarding the Middle Devonian of New York (Hamilton) as ''an equivalent of the Ludlow rocks of Mr. Murchison'' (**47**, 118, 1844).

In 1846 E. P. De Verneuil spent the summer in America with a view to correlating the formations of the New

York system with those of Europe. At this time he had had a wide field experience in France, Germany, and Russia, was president of the Geological Society of France, and "virtually the representative of European geology" (**2**, 153, 1846). Hall says, "No other person could have presented so clear and perfect a coup d'oeil." De Verneuil's results were translated by Hall and with his own comments were published in the Journal in 1848 and 1849 under the title "On the Parallelism of the Paleozoic Deposits of North America with those of Europe." De Verneuil was especially struck with the complete development of American Paleozoic deposits and said it was the best anywhere. On the other hand, he did not agree with the detailed arrangement of the formations in the various divisions of the New York system, and Hall admitted altogether too readily that the terms were proposed "as a matter of concession, and it is to be regretted that such an artificial classification was adopted." De Verneuil's correlations are as follows:

The Lower Silurian system begins with the Potsdam, the analogue of the Obolus sandstone of Russia and Sweden. The Black River and Trenton hold the position of the Orthoceras limestones of Sweden and Russia, while the Utica and Lorraine are represented by the Graptolite beds of the same countries. Both correlations are in partial error. He unites the Chazy, Birdseye, and Black River in one series, and in another the Trenton, Utica, and Lorraine. Of species common to Europe and America he makes out seventeen.

In the Upper Silurian system, the Oneida and Shawangunk are taken out of the Champlain division, and, with the Medina, are referred to the Silurian, along with all of the Ontario division plus the Lower Helderberg. The Clinton is regarded as highest Caradoc or as holding a stage between that and the Wenlock. The Niagara group is held to be the exact equivalent of the Wenlock, "while the five inferior groups of the Helderberg division represent the rocks of Ludlow." We now know that these Helderberg formations are Lower Devonian in age. De Verneuil unites in one series the Waterlime, Pentamerus, Delthyris, Encrinal, and Upper Pentamerus. Of identical species there are forty common to Europe and America.

The Devonian system De Verneuil begins, "after much hesitation," with the Oriskany and certainly with the five upper members of Hall's Helderberg division, all of the Erie and the Old Red Sandstone. He also adjusts Hall's error by placing in the Devonian the Upper Cliff limestone of Ohio and Indiana, regarded by the former as Silurian. The Oriskany is correlated with the grauwackes of the Rhine, and the Onondaga or Corniferous with the lower Eifelian. Cauda-galli, Schoharie, and Onondaga are united in one series; Marcellus, Hamilton, Tully, and Genesee in another; and Portage and Chemung in a third. Of species common to Europe and America there are thirty-nine.

The Waverly of Ohio and that near Louisville, Kentucky, which Hall had called Chemung, De Verneuil correctly refers to the Carboniferous, but to this Hall does not consent. De Verneuil points out that there are thirty-one species in common between Europe and America. "And as to plants, the immense quantity of terrestrial species identical on the two sides of the Atlantic, proves that the coal was formed in the neighborhood of lands already emerged, and placed in similar physical conditions."

An analysis of the Paleozoic fossils of Europe and America leads De Verneuil to "the conviction that identical species have lived at the same epoch in America and in Europe, that they have had nearly the same duration, and that they succeeded each other in the same order." This he states is independent of the depth of the seas, and of "the upheavings which have affected the surface of the globe." The species of a period begin and drop out at different levels, and toward the top of a system the whole takes on the character of the next one. "If it happens that in the two countries a certain number of systems, characterized by the same fossils, are superimposed in the same order, whatever may be, otherwise, their thickness and the number of physical groups of which they are composed, it is philosophical to consider these systems as parallel and synchronous."

Because of the dominance of the sandstones and shales in eastern New York, De Verneuil holds that a land lay to the east. The many fucoids and ripple-marks from the Potsdam to the Portage indicated to him shallow water and nearness to a shore.

The Oldest Geologic Eras.—We have seen in previous pages how the Primitive rocks of Arduino and of Werner had been resolved, at least in part, into the systems of the Paleozoic, but there still remained many areas of ancient rocks that could not be adjusted into the accepted scheme. One of the most extensive of these is in Canada, where the really Primitive formations, of granites, gneisses, schists, and even undetermined sediments, abound and are developed on a grander scale than elsewhere, covering more than two million square miles and overlain unconformably by the Paleozoic and later rocks. The first to call attention to them was J. I. Bigsby, a medical staff officer of the British Army, in 1821 (**3**, 254). It was, however, William E. Logan (1798-1875), the "father of Canadian geology," who first unravelled their historical sequence. At first he also called them Primary, but after much work he perceived in them parallel structures and metamorphosed sediments, underlain by and associated with pink granites. For the oldest masses, essentially the granites, he proposed the term Laurentian system (1853, 1863) and for the altered and deformed strata, the name Huronian series (1857, 1863). Overlying these unconformably was a third series, the copper-bearing rocks. Since his day a great host of Canadian and American geologists have labored over this, the most intricate of all geology, and now we have the following tentative chronology (Schuchert and Barrell, **38**, 1, 1914):

Late Proterozoic era.
    Keweenawan, Animikian and Huronian periods.
Early Proterozoic era.
    Sudburian period or older Huronian.
Archeozoic era.
    Grenville series, etc.
Cosmic history.

The Taconic System Resurrected.

The Taconic system was first announced by Ebenezer Emmons in 1841, and clearly defined in 1842. It started the most bitter and most protracted discussion in the annals of American geology. After Emmons's subsequent publications had put the Taconic system through three phases, Barrande of Bohemia in 1860-1863 shed a great deal of new and correct light upon it, affirming in a series of letters to Billings that the Taconic fossils are like those of his Primordial system, or what we now call the Middle Cambrian (**31**, 210, 1861, et seq.).

In a series of articles published by S. W. Ford in the Journal between 1871 and 1886, there was developed the further new fact that in Rensselaer and Columbia counties, New York, the so-called Hudson River group abounds in "Primordial" fossils wholly unlike those of the Potsdam, and which Ford later on spoke of as belonging to "Lower Potsdam" time.

James D. Dana entered the field of the Taconic area in 1871 and demonstrated that the system also abounds in Ordovician fossiliferous formations. Then came the far-reaching work of Charles D. Walcott, beginning in 1886, which showed that all through eastern New York and into northern Vermont the Hudson River group and the Taconic system abound not only in Ordovician but also in Cambrian fossils. Finally in 1888 Dana presented a Brief History of Taconic Ideas, and laid away the system with these words (**36**, 27):

"It is almost fifty years since the Taconic system made its abrupt entrance into geological science. Notwithstanding some good points, it has been through its greater errors, long a hindrance to progress here and abroad . . . But, whether the evil or the good has predominated, we may now hope, while heartily honoring Professor Emmons for his earnest geological labors and his discoveries, that Taconic ideas may be allowed to be and remain part of the past."

As an epitaph Dana placed over the remains of the Taconic system the black-faced numerals **1841-1888**. That the remains of the system, however, and the term Taconic are still alive and demanding a rehearing is apparent to all interested stratigraphers. This is not the place to set the matter right, and all that can be done at the present time is to point out what are the things that still keep alive Emmons's system.

In the typical area of the Taconic system, i. e., in Rensselaer County, Emmons in 1844-1846 produced the fossils *Atops trilineatus* and *Elliptocephala asaphoides*. S. W. Ford, as stated above, later produced from the same general area many other fossils that he demonstrated to be older than the Potsdam sandstone. To this time he gave the name of Lower Potsdam, thus proving on paleontological grounds that at least some part of the Taconic system is older than the New York system, and therefore older than the Hudson River group of Ordovician age.

In 1888 Walcott presented his conclusions in regard to the sequence of the strata in the typical Taconic area and to the north and south of it. He collected Lower Cambrian fossils at more than one hundred localities "within the typical Taconic area," and said that the thickness of his "terrane No. 5" or "Cambrian (Georgia)," now referable to the Lower Cambrian, is "14,000 feet or more." He demonstrated that the Lower Cambrian is infolded with the Lower and Middle Ordovician, and confirmed Emmons's statement that the former rests upon his Primary or Pre-Cambrian masses. Elsewhere, he writes: "To the west of the Taconic range the section passes down through the limestone (3) [of Lower and Middle Ordovician age] to the hydromica schists (2) [whose age may also be of early Ordovician], and thence to the great development of slates and shales with their interbedded sparry limestones, calciferous and arenaceous strata, all of which contain more or less of the Olenellus . . . fauna." He then knew thirty-five species in Washington County, New York (**35**, 401, 1888).

Finally in 1915 Walcott said that in the Cordilleran area of America there was a movement that brought about changes "in the sedimentation and succession of the faunas which serve to draw a boundary line between the Lower and Middle Cambrian series. . . . The length of this period of interruption must have been considerable . . . and when connection with the Pacific was resumed a new fauna that had been developing in the Pacific was then introduced into the Cordilleran sea and constituted the Middle Cambrian fauna. The change in the species from the Lower to the Middle Cambrian fauna is very great." He then goes on to show that in the Appalachian geosyncline there was another movement that shut out the Middle Cambrian *Paradoxides* fauna of the Atlantic realm from this trough, and all deposition as well.

Conclusions.—Accordingly it appears that everywhere in America the Lower Cambrian formations are separated by a land interval of long duration from those of Middle Cambrian time. These formations therefore unite into a natural system of rocks or a period of time. Between Middle and Upper Cambrian time, however, there appears to be a complete transition in the Cordilleran trough, binding these two series of deposits into one natural or diastrophic system. Hence the writer proposes that the Lower Cambrian of America be known as the Taconic system. The Middle and Upper Cambrian series can be continued for the present under the term Cambrian system, a term, however, that is by no means in good standing for these formations, as will be demonstrated under the discussion of the Silurian controversy.

The Silurian Controversy.

Just as in America the base of the Paleozoic was involved in a protracted controversy, so in England the Cambrian-Silurian succession was a subject of long debate between Sedgwick and Murchison, and among the succeeding geologists of Europe. The history of the solution is so well and justly stated in the Journal by James D. Dana under the title "Sedgwick and Murchison: Cambrian and Silurian" (**39**, 167, 1890), and by Sir Archibald Geikie in his Text-book of Geology, 1903, that all that is here required is to briefly restate it and to bring the solution up to date.

Adam Sedgwick (1785-1873) and R. I. Murchison (1792-1871) each began to work in the areas of Cambria (Wales) and Siluria (England) in 1831, but the terms Cambrian and Silurian were not published until 1835. Murchison was the first to satisfactorily work out the sequence of the Silurian system because of the simpler structural and more fossiliferous condition of his area. Sedgwick, on the other hand, had his academic duties to perform at Cambridge University, and being an older and more conservative man, delayed publishing his final results, because of the further fact that his area was far more deformed and less fossiliferous. In 1834 they were working in concert in the Silurian area, and Sedgwick said: "I was so struck by the clearness of the natural sections and the perfection of his workmanship that I received, I might say, with implicit faith everything which he then taught me. . . . The whole 'Silurian system' was by its author placed *above* the great undulating slate-rocks of South Wales." At that time Murchison told Sedgwick that the Bala group of the latter, now known to be in the middle of the Lower Silurian, could not be brought within the limits of the Silurian system, and added, "I believe it to plunge under the true Llandeilo-flags," now placed next below the Bala and above the Arenig, which at the present is regarded as at the base of the Ordovician.

The Silurian system was defined in print by Murchison in July, 1835, the Upper Silurian embracing the Ludlow and Wenlock, while the Lower Silurian was based on the Caradoc and Llandeilo. Murchison's monumental work, The Silurian System, of 100 pages and many plates of fossils, appeared in 1838.

The Cambrian system was described for the first time by Sedgwick in August, 1835, but the completed work—a classic in geology—Synopsis of the Classification of the British Palæozoic Rocks, along with M'Coy's Descriptions of British Palæozoic Fossils, did not appear until 1852-1855. Sedgwick's original Upper Cambrian included the greater part of the chain of the Berwyns, where he said it was connected with the Llandeilo flags of the Silurian. The Middle Cambrian comprised the higher mountains of Cærnarvonshire and Merionethshire, and the Lower Cambrian was said to occupy the southwest coast of Cærnarvonshire, and to consist of chlorite and mica schists, and some serpentine and granular limestone. In 1853 it was seen that the fossiliferous Upper Cambrian included the Arenig, Llandeilo, Bala, Caradoc, Coniston, Hirnant, and Lower Llandovery. On the other hand, it was not until long after Murchison and Sedgwick passed away that the Middle and Lower Cambrian were shown to have fossils, but few of those that characterize what is now called Lower, Middle, and Upper Cambrian time.

Not until long after the original announcement of the Cambrian system did Sedgwick become aware "of the unfortunate mischief-involving fact" that the most fossiliferous portion of the Cambrian—the Upper Cambrian—and at that time the only part yielding determinable fossils, when compared with the Lower Silurian was seen to be an equivalent formation but with very different lithologic conditions. He began to see in 1842 that his Cambrian was in conflict with the Silurian system, and four years later there were serious divergencies of views between himself and Murchison. The climax of the controversy was attained in 1852, when Sedgwick was extending his Cambrian system upwards to include the Bala, Llandeilo, and Caradoc, a proceeding not unlike that of Murchison, who earlier had been extending his Silurian downward through all of the fossiliferous Cambrian to the base of the Lingula flags.

Dana in his review of the Silurian-Cambrian controversy states: "The claim of a worker to affix a name to a series of rocks first studied and defined by him cannot be disputed." We have seen that Murchison had priority of publication in his term Silurian over Sedgwick's Cambrian, but that in a complete presentation, both stratigraphically and faunally, the former had years of prior definition. What has even more weight is that geologists nearly everywhere had accepted Murchison's Silurian system as founded upon the Lower and Upper Silurian formations. A nomenclature once widely accepted is almost impossible to dislodge. However, in regard to the controversy it should not be forgotten that it was only Murchison's *Lower* Silurian that was in conflict with Sedgwick's *Upper* Cambrian. As for the rest of the Cambrian, that was not involved in the controversy.

Dana goes on to state that science may accept a name, or not, according as it is, or is not, needed. In the progress of geology, he thought that the time had finally been reached when the name Cambrian was a necessity, and he included both Cambrian and Silurian in the geological record. The "Silurian," however, included the Lower and Upper Silurian—not one system of rocks, but two.

It is now twenty-seven years since Dana came to this conclusion, at a time when it was believed that there was more or less continuous deposition not only between the formations of a system but between the systems themselves as well. To-day many geologists hold that in the course of time the oceans pulsate back and forth over the continents, and accordingly that the sequence of marine sedimentation in most places must be much broken, and to-day we know that the breaks or land intervals in the marine record are most marked between the eras, and shorter between all or at least most of the periods. Furthermore, in North America, we have learned that the breaks between the systems are most marked in the interior of the continent and less so on or toward its margins.

Hardly any one now questions the fact of a long land interval between the Lower Silurian and Upper Silurian in England, and it is to Sedgwick's credit that he was the first to point out this fact and also the presence of an unconformity. It therefore follows that we cannot continue to use Silurian system in the sense proposed by Murchison, since it includes two distinct systems or periods. Dana, in the last edition of his Manual of Geology (1895), also recognizes two systems, but curiously he saw nothing incongruous in calling them "Lower Silurian era" and "Upper Silurian era." It certainly is not conducive to clear thinking, however, to refer to two systems by the one name of Silurian and to speak of them individually as Lower and Upper Silurian, thus giving the impression that the two systems are but parts of one—the Silurian. Each one of the parts has its independent faunal and physical characters.

We must digress a little here and note the work of Joachim Barrande (1799-1883) in Bohemia. In 1846 he published a short account of the "Silurian system" of Bohemia, dividing it into étages lettered C to H. Between 1852 and 1883 he issued his "Système Silurien du Centre de la Bohème," in eighteen quarto volumes with 5568 pages of text and 798 plates of fossils—a monumental work unrivalled in paleontology. In the first volume the geology of Bohemia is set forth, and here we see that étages A and B are Azoic or pre-Cambrian, and C to H make up his Silurian system. Etage C has his "Primordial fauna," now known to be of Paradoxides or Middle Cambrian time, while D is Lower Silurian, E is Upper Silurian, F is Lower Devonian, and G and H are Middle Devonian. From this it appears that Barrande's Silurian system is far more extensive than that of Murchison, embracing twice as many periods as that of England and Wales.

About 1879 there was in England a nearly general agreement that Cambrian should embrace Barrande's Primordial or Paradoxides faunas, and in the North Wales area be continued up to the top of the Tremadoc slates. To-day we would include Middle and Upper Cambrian. Lower Cambrian in the sense of containing the Olenellus faunas was then unknown in Great Britain.

Lapworth, recognizing the distinctness of the Lower Silurian as a system, proposed in 1879 to recognize it as such, and named it Ordovician, restricting Silurian to Murchison's Upper Silurian. This term has not been widely used either in Great Britain or on the Continent, but in the last twenty years has been accepted more and more widely in America. Even here, however, it is in direct conflict with the term Champlain, proposed by the New York State Geologist in 1842.

In 1897 the International Geological Congress published E. Renevier's Chronographie Géologique, wherein we find the following:

Silurian Period.	Upper or Silurian (Murchison, restricted, 1835).	Ludlowian (Murchison 1839).
		Wenlockian (Murchison 1839).
		Landoverian (Murchison).
	Middle or Ordovician (Lapworth 1879).	Caradocian (Murchison 1839).
		Landeilian (Murchison 1839).
		Arenigian (Sedgwick 1847).
	Lower or Cambrian (Sedgwick, restricted, 1835).	Potsdamian (Emmons 1838).
		Menevian (Salter and Hicks 1865).
		Georgian (Hitchcock 1861).

Regarding this period, which, by the way, is not very unlike that of Barrande, Renevier remarks that it is "as important as the Cretaceous or the Jurassic. Lapworth even gives it a value of the first order equal to the Protozoic era."

In the above there is an obvious objection in the double usage of the term Silurian, and this difficulty was met later on in Lapparent's Traité by the proposal to substitute Gothlandian for Silurian. Of this change Geikie remarks: "Such an arrangement . . . might be adopted if it did not involve so serious an alteration of the nomenclature in general use." On the other hand, if diastrophism and breaks in the stratigraphic and faunal sequence are to be the basis for geologic time divisions, we cannot accept the above scheme, for it recognizes but one period where there are at least four in nature.

Conclusions.—We have arrived at a time when our knowledge of the stratigraphic and faunal sequence, plus the orogenic record as recognized in the principle of diastrophism, should be reflected in the terminology of the geologic time-table. It would be easy to offer a satisfactory nomenclature if we were not bound by the law of priority in publication, and if no one had the geologic chronology of his own time ingrained in his memory. In addition, the endless literature, with its accepted nomenclature, bars our way. Therefore with a view of creating the least change in geologic nomenclature, and of doing the greatest justice to our predecessors that the present conditions of our knowledge will allow, the following scheme is offered:

Silurian period. Llandovery to top of Ludlow in Europe. Alexandrian-Cataract-Medina to top of Manlius in America.
Champlain (1842) or Ordovician (1879) period. Arenig to top of Caradoc in Europe. Beekmantown to top of Richmondian in America.
Cambrian period. In the Atlantic realm, begins with the Paradoxides, and in the Pacific, with the Bathyuriscus and Ogygopsis faunas. The close is involved in Ulrich's provisionally defined Ozarkian system. When the latter is established, the Ozarkian period will hold the time between the Ordovician and the Cambrian.
Taconic period. For the world-wide Olenellus or Mesonacidæ faunas.

Paleogeography.

When geologists began to perceive the vast significance of Hutton's doctrine that "the ruins of an earlier world lie beneath the secondary strata," and that great masses of bedded rocks are separated from one another by periods of mountain making and by erosion intervals, it was natural for them to look for the lands that had furnished the débris of the accumulated sediments. In this way paleogeography had its origin, but it was at first of a descriptive and not of a cartographic nature.

The word paleogeography was proposed by T. Sterry Hunt in 1872 in a paper entitled "The Paleogeography of the North American Continent," and published in the Journal of the American Geographical Society for that year. It has to do, he says, with the "geographical history of these ancient geological periods." It was again prominently used by Robert Etheridge in his presidential address before the Geological Society of London in 1881. Since Canu's use of the term in 1896, it has been frequently seen in print, and now is generally adopted to signify the geography of geologic time.

The French were the first to make paleogeographic maps, and Jules Marcou relates in 1866 that Elie de Beaumont, as early as March, 1831, in his course in the College of France and at the Paris School of Mines, used to outline the relation of the lands and the seas in the center of Europe at the different great geologic periods.

His first printed paleogeographic map appeared in 1833, and was of early Tertiary time. Other maps by Beaumont were published by Beudant in 1841-1842. The Sicilian geologist Gemmellaro published six maps of his country in 1834, and the Englishman De La Beche had one in the same year. In America the first to show such maps was Arnold Guyot in his Lowell lectures of 1848. James D. Dana published three in the 1863 edition of his Manual of Geology. Of world paleogeographic maps, Jules Marcou produced the first of Jurassic time, publishing it in France in 1866, but the most celebrated of these early attempts was the one by Neumayr published in 1883 in connection with his Ueber klimatische Zonen während der Jura- und Kreidezeit.

The first geologist to produce a series of maps showing the progressive geologic geography of a given area was Jukes-Brown, who in the volume entitled "The Building of the British Isles," 1888, included fifteen such maps. Karpinsky published fourteen maps of Russia, and in 1896 Canu in his Essai de paléogéographie has fifty-seven of France and Belgium. Lapparent's Traité of 1906 is famous for paleogeographic maps, for he has twenty-three of the world, thirty-four of Europe, twenty-five of France, and ten taken from other authors. Schuchert in 1910 published fifty-two to illustrate the paleogeography of North America, and also gave an extended list of such published maps. Another article on the subject is by Th. Arldt, "Zur Geschichte der Paläogeographischen Rekonstructionen," published in 1914. Edgar Dacqué in 1913 also produced a list in his Paläogeographischen Karten, and two years later appeared his book of 500 pages, Grundlagen und Methoden der Paläogeographie, where the entire subject is taken up in detail.

Conclusions.—Since 1833 there have been published not less than 500 different paleogeographic maps, and of this number about 210 relate to North America. Nevertheless paleogeography is still in its infancy, and most maps embrace too much geologic time, all of them tens of thousands, and some of them millions of years. The geographic maps of the present show the conditions of the strand-lines of to-day, and those made fifty years ago have to be revised again and again if they are to be of value to the mariner and merchant. Therefore in our future paleogeographic maps the tendency must ever be toward smaller amounts of geologic time, if we are to show the actual relation of water to land and the movements of the periodic floodings. Moreover, the ancient shore lines are all more or less hypothetic and are drawn in straight or sweeping curves, unlike modern strands with their bays, deltas, and headlands, and the ancient lands are featureless plains. We must also pay more attention to the distribution of brackish- and fresh-water deposits. The periodically rising mountains will be the first topographic features to be shown upon the ancient lands, and then more and more of the drainage and the general climatic conditions must be portrayed. In the seas, depth, temperature, and currents are yet to be deciphered. Finally, other base maps than those of the geography of to-day will have to be made, allowing for the compression of the mountainous areas, if we are to show the true geographic configurations of the lands and seas of any given geologic time.

Paleometeorology.

In accordance with the Laplacian theory, announced at the beginning of the nineteenth century, all of the older geologists held that the earth began as a hot star, and that in the course of time it slowly cooled and finally attained its present zonal cold to tropical climatic conditions. That the earth had very recently passed through a much colder climate, a glacial one, came into general acceptance only during the latter half of the previous century.

Rise.—Our knowledge of glacial climates had its origin in the Alps, that wonderland of mountains and glaciers. The rise of this knowledge in the Alps is told in a charming and detailed manner by that erratic French-American geologist, Jules Marcou (1824-1898), in his Life, Letters, and Works of Louis Agassiz, 1896. He relates that the Alpine chamois hunter Perraudin in 1815 directed the attention of the engineer De Charpentier to the fact "that the large boulders perched on the sides of the Alpine valleys were carried and left there by glaciers." For a long time the latter thought the conclusion extravagant, and in the meantime Perraudin told the same thing to another engineer, Venetz. He, in 1829, convinced of the correctness of the chamois hunter's views, presented the matter before the Swiss naturalists then meeting at St. Bernard's. Venetz "told the Society that his observations led him to believe that the whole Valais has been formerly covered by an immense glacier and that it even extended outside of the canton, covering all the Canton de Vaud, as far as the Jura Mountains, carrying the boulders and erratic materials, which are now scattered all over the large Swiss valley." Eight years earlier, in 1821, similar views had been presented by the same modest naturalist before the Helvetic Society, but it was not until 1833 that De Charpentier found the manuscript and had it published. Venetz's conclusions were that all of the glaciers of the Bagnes valley "have very recognizable moraines, which are about a league from the present ice." "The moraines . . . date from an epoch which is lost in the night of time." Then in 1834 De Charpentier read a paper before the same society, meeting at Lucerne. "Seldom, if ever, has such a small memoir so deeply excited the scientific world. It was received at first with incredulity and even scorn and mockery, Agassiz being among its opponents." The paper was published in 1835, first at Paris, then at Geneva, and finally in Germany. It "attracted much attention, and the smile of incredulity with which it was received when read at Lucerne soon changed into a desire to know more about it."

Louis Agassiz (1807-1873), who had long been acquainted with his countryman, De Charpentier, spent several months with him in 1836, and together they studied the glaciers of the Alps. Agassiz was at first "adverse to the hypothesis, and did not believe in the great extension of glaciers and their transportation of boulders, but on the contrary, was a partisan of Lyell's theory of transport by icebergs and ice-cakes . . . but from being an adversary of the glacial theory, he returned to Neuchâtel an enthusiastic convert to the views of Venetz and De Charpentier. . . . With his power of quick perception, his unmatched memory, his perspicacity and acuteness, his way of classifying, judging and marshalling facts, Agassiz promptly learned the whole mass of irresistible arguments collected patiently during seven years by De Charpentier and Venetz, and with his insatiable appetite and that faculty of assimilation which he possessed in such a wonderful degree, he digested the whole doctrine of the glaciers in a few weeks.''

In July, 1837, Agassiz presented as his presidential address before the Helvetic Society his memorable ''Discours de Neuchâtel,'' which was ''the starting point of all that has been written on the Ice-age,''—a term coined at the time by his friend Schimper, a botanist. The first part of this address is reprinted in French in Marcou's book on Agassiz. The address was received with astonishment, much incredulity, and indifference. Among the listeners was the great German geologist Von Buch, who ''was horrified, and with his hands raised towards the sky, and his head bowed to the distant Bernese Alps, exclaimed: ''O Sancte de Saussure, ora pro nobis!'' Even De Charpentier ''was not gratified to see his glacial theory mixed with rather uncalled for biological problems, the connection of which with the glacial age was more than problematic.'' Agassiz was then a Cuvierian catastrophist and creationist, and advanced the idea of a series of glacial ages to explain the destruction of the geologic succession of faunas! Curiously, this theory was at once accepted by the American paleontologist T. A. Conrad (**35**, 239, 1839).

The classics in glacial geology are Agassiz's Etudes sur les Glaciers, 1840, and De Charpentier's Essai sur les Glaciers, 1841. Of the latter book, Marcou states that it has been said: ''It is impossible to be truly a geologist without having read and studied it.'' In the English language there is Tyndall's Glaciers of the Alps, 1860.

The progress of the ideas in regard to Pleistocene glaciation is presented in the following chapter of this number by H. E. Gregory.

Older Glacial Climates.—Hardly had the Pleistocene glacial climate been proved, when geologists began to point out the possibility of even earlier ones. An enthusiastic Scotch writer, Sir Andrew Ramsay, in 1855 described certain late Paleozoic conglomerates of middle England, which he said were of glacial origin, but his evidence, though never completely gainsaid, has not been generally accepted. In the following year, an Englishman, Doctor W. T. Blanford, said that the Talchir conglomerates of central and southern India were of glacial origin, and since then the evidence for a Permian glacial climate has been steadily accumulating. Africa is the land of tillites, and here in 1870 Sutherland pointed out that the conglomerates of the Karroo formation were of glacial origin. Australia also has Permian glacial deposits, and they are known widely in eastern Brazil, the Falkland Islands, the vicinity of Boston, and elsewhere. So convincing is this testimony that all geologists are now ready to accept the conclusion that a glacial climate was as wide-spread in early Permian time as was that of the Pleistocene.[1]

In South Africa, beneath the marine Lower Devonian, occurs the Table Mountain series, 5000 feet thick. The series is essentially one of quartzites, with zones of shales or slates and with striated pebbles up to 15 inches long. The latter occur in pockets and seem to be of glacial origin. There are here no typical tillites, and no striated undergrounds have so far been found. While the evidence of the deposits appears to favor the conclusion that the Table Mountain strata were laid down in cold waters with floating ice derived from glaciers, it is as yet impossible to assign these sediments a definite geologic age. They are certainly not younger than the Lower Devonian, but it has not yet been established to what period of the early Paleozoic they belong.

In southeastern Australia occur tillites of wide distribution that lie conformably beneath, but sharply separated from the fossiliferous marine Lower Cambrian strata. David (1907), Howchin (1908), and other Australian geologists think they are of Cambrian time, but to the writer they seem more probably late Proterozoic in age. In arctic Norway Reusch discovered unmistakable tillites in 1891, and this occurrence was confirmed by Strahan in 1897. It is not yet certainly known what their age is, but it appears to be late Proterozoic rather than early Paleozoic. Other undated Proterozoic tillites occur in China (Willis and Blackwelder 1907), Africa (Schwarz 1906), India (Vredenburg 1907), Canada (Coleman 1908), and possibly in Scotland.

The oldest known tillites are described by Coleman in

[1] For more detail in regard to these tillites and the older ones see Climates of Geologic Time, by Charles Schuchert, being Chapter XXI in Huntington's Climatic Factor as Illustrated in Arid America, Publication No. 192 of the Carnegie Institution of Washington, 1914. Also Arthur P. Coleman's presidential address before the Geological Society of America in 1915. Dry Land in Geology, published in the Society's Bulletin, 27, 175, 1916.

1907, and occur at the base of the Lower Huronian or in early Proterozoic time. They extend across northern Ontario for 1000 miles, and from the north shore of Lake Huron northward for 750 miles.

Fossils as Climatic Indexes.—Paleontologists have long been aware that variations in the climates of the past are indicated by the fossils, and Neumayr in 1883 brought the evidence together in his study of climatic zones mentioned elsewhere. Plants, and corals, cephalopods, and foraminifers among marine animals, have long been recognized as particularly good "life thermometers." In fact, all fossils are climatic indicators to some extent, and a good deal of evidence concerning paleometeorology has been discerned in them. This evidence is briefly stated in the paper by Schuchert already alluded to, and in W. D. Matthew's Climate and Evolution, 1915.

Sediments as Climatic Indexes.—Johannes Walther in the third part of his Einleitung—Lithogenesis der Gegenwart, 1894—is the first one to decidedly direct attention to the fact that the sediments also have within themselves a climatic record. In America Joseph Barrell has since 1907 written much on the same subject. On the other hand, the periodic floodings of the continents by the oceans, and the making of mountains, due to the periodic shrinkage of the earth, as expressed in T. C. Chamberlin's principle of diastrophism and in his publications since 1897, are other criteria for estimating the climates of the past.

Conclusions.—In summation of this subject Schuchert says:

"The marine 'life thermometer' indicates vast stretches of time of mild to warm and equable temperatures, with but slight zonal differences between the equator and the poles. The great bulk of marine fossils are those of the shallow seas, and the evolutionary changes recorded in these 'medals of creation' are slight throughout vast lengths of time that are punctuated by short but decisive periods of cooled waters and great mortality, followed by quick evolution, and the rise of new stocks. The times of less warmth are the *miotherm* and those of greater heat the *pliotherm* periods of Ramsay.

On the land the story of the climatic changes is different, but in general the equability of the temperature simulates that of the oceanic areas. In other words, the lands also had long-enduring times of mild to warm climates. Into the problem of land climates, however, enter other factors that are absent in the oceanic regions, and these have great influence upon the climates of the continents. Most important of these is the periodic warm-water inundation of the continents by the oceans, causing insular climates that are milder and moister. With the vanishing of the floods somewhat cooler and certainly drier climates are produced. The effects of these periodic floods must not be underestimated, for the North American continent was variably submerged at least seventeen times, and over an area of from 154,000 to 4,000,000 square miles.

When to these factors is added the effect upon the climate caused by the periodic rising of mountain chains, it is at once apparent that the lands must have had constantly varying climates. In general the temperature fluctuations seem to have been slight, but geographically the climates varied between mild to warm pluvial, and mild to cool arid. The arid factor has been of the greatest import to the organic world of the lands. Further, when to all of these causes is added the fact that during emergent periods the formerly isolated lands were connected by land bridges, permitting intermigration of the land floras and faunas, with the introduction of their parasites and parasitic diseases, we learn that while the climatic environment is of fundamental importance it is not the only cause for the more rapid evolution of terrestrial life . . .

Briefly, then, we may conclude that the markedly varying climates of the past seem to be due primarily to periodic changes in the topographic form of the earth's surface, plus variations in the amount of heat stored by the oceans. The causation for the warmer interglacial climates is the most difficult of all to explain, and it is here that factors other than those mentioned may enter.

Granting all this, there still seems to lie back of all these theories a greater question connected with the major changes in paleometeorology. This is: What is it that forces the earth's topography to change with varying intensity at irregularly rhythmic intervals? . . . Are we not forced to conclude that the earth's shape changes periodically in response to gravitative forces that alter the body-form?"

Evolution.

Modern evolution, or the theory of life continuously descending from life with change, may be said to have had its first marked development in Comte de Buffon (1707-1788), a man of wealth and station, yet an industrious compiler, a brilliant writer, and a popularizer of science. He was not, however, a true scientific investigator, and his monument to fame is his Histoire Naturelle, in forty-four volumes, 1749-1804. A. S. Packard in his book on Lamarck, his Life and Work, 1901, concludes in regard to Buffon as follows:

"The impression left on the mind, after reading Buffon, is that even if he threw out these suggestions and then retracted them, from fear of annoyance or even persecution from the bigots of his time, he did not himself always take them seriously, but rather jotted them down as passing thoughts . . . They appeared thirty-four years before Lamarck's theory, and though not epoch-making, they are such as will render the name of Buffon memorable for all time."

Chevalier de Lamarck (1744-1829) may justly be regarded as the founder of the doctrine of modern evolution. Previous to 1794 he was a believer in the fixity of species, but by 1800 he stood definitely in favor of evolution. Locy in his Biology and its Makers, 1908, states his theories in the following simplified form:

"Variations of organs, according to Lamarck, arise in animals mainly through use and disuse, and new organs have their origin in a physiological need. A new need felt by the animal [due to new conditions in its life, or the environment] expresses itself on the organism, stimulating growth and adaptations in a particular direction."

To Lamarck, "inheritance was a simple, direct transmission of those superficial changes that arise in organs within the lifetime of an individual owing to use and disuse." This part of his theory has come to be known as "the inheritance of acquired characters."

Georges Cuvier (1769-1832), a peer of France, was a decided believer in the fixity of species and in their creation through divine acts. In 1796 he began to see that among the fossils so plentiful about Paris many were of extinct forms, and later on that there was a succession of wholly extinct faunas. This at first puzzling phenomenon he finally came to explain by assuming that the earth had gone through a series of catastrophes, of which the Deluge was the most recent but possibly not the last. With each catastrophe all life was blotted out, and a new though improved set of organisms was created by divine acts. The Cuvierian theory of catastrophism was widely accepted during the first half of the nineteenth century, and in America Louis Agassiz was long its greatest exponent. It was this theory and the dominance of the brilliant Cuvier, not only in science but socially as well, that blotted out the far more correct views of the more philosophical Lamarck, who held that life throughout the ages had been continuous and that through individual effort and the inheritance of acquired characters had evolved the wonderful diversity of the present living world.

In 1830 there was a public debate at Paris between Cuvier and Geoffroy Saint-Hilaire, the one holding to the views of the fixity of species and creation, the other that life is continuous and evolves into better adapted forms. Cuvier, a gifted speaker and the greatest debater zoology ever had, with an extraordinary memory that never failed him, defeated Saint-Hilaire in each day's debate, although the latter was in the right.

A book that did a great deal to prepare the English-speaking people for the coming of evolution was "Vestiges of Creation," published in 1844 by an unknown author. In Darwin's opinion, "the work, from its powerful and brilliant style . . . has done excellent service . . . in thus preparing the ground for the reception of analogous views." This book was recommended to the readers of the Journal (**48**, 395, 1845) with the editorial remark that "we cannot subscribe to all of the author's views."

We can probably best illustrate the opinions of Americans on the question of evolution just before the appearance of Darwin's great work by directing attention to James D. Dana's Thoughts on Species (**24**, 305, 1857). After reading this article and others of a similar nature by Agassiz, one comes to the opinion that unconsciously both men are proving evolution, but consciously they are firm creationists. It is astonishing that with their extended and minute knowledge of living organisms and their philosophic type of mind neither could see the true significance of the imperceptible transitions between some species, which if they do not actually pass into, at least shade towards, one another.

Dana speaks of "the endless diversities in individuals" that compose a species, and then states that a living species, like an inorganic one, "is based on a specific amount or condition of concentered force defined in the act or law of creation." Species, he says, are permanent, and hybrids "cannot seriously trifle with the true units of nature, and at the best, can only make temporary variations." "We have therefore reason to believe from man's fertile intermixture, that he is one in species: and that all organic species are divine appointments which cannot be obliterated, unless by annihilating the individuals representing the species."

Through the activities of the French the world was prepared for the reception of evolution, and now it was already in the minds of many advanced thinkers. In 1860 Asa Gray sent to the editor of the Journal (**29**, 1) an article by the English botanist, Joseph D. Hooker, entitled "On the Origination and Distribution of Species," with these significant remarks:

"The essay cannot fail to attract the immediate and profound attention of scientific men . . . It has for some time been manifest that a re-statement of the Lamarckian hypothesis is at hand. We have this, in an improved and truly scientific form, in the theories which, recently propounded by Mr. Darwin, followed by Mr. Wallace, are here so ably and altogether independently maintained. When these views are fully laid before them, the naturalists of this country will be able to take part in the interesting discussion which they will not fail to call forth."

Hooker took up a study of the flora of Tasmania, of which the above cited article is but a chapter, with a view to trying out Darwin's theory, and he now accepts it. He says, "Species are derivative and mutable." "The limits of the majority of species are so undefinable that few naturalists are agreed upon them."

Asa Gray had received from Darwin an advance copy of the book that was to revolutionize the thought of the world, and at once wrote for the Journal a Review of Darwin's Theory on the Origin of Species by means of Natural Selection (**29**, 153, 1860). This is a splendid, critical but just, scientific review of Darwin's epoch-making book. Evidently views similar to those of the English scientist had long been in the mind of Gray, for he easily and quickly mastered the work. He is easy on Dana's Thoughts on Species, which were idealistic and not in harmony with the naturalistic views of Darwin. On the other hand, he contrasts Darwin's views at length with those of the creationists as exemplified by Louis Agassiz, and says "The widest divergence appears."

Gray says in part:

"The gist of Mr. Darwin's work is to show that such varieties are gradually diverged into species and genera through natural selection; that natural selection is the inevitable result of the struggle for existence which all living things are engaged in; and that this struggle is an unavoidable consequence of several natural causes, but mainly of the high rate at which all organic beings tend to increase.

Darwin is confident that intermediate forms must have existed; that in the olden times when the genera, the families and the orders diverged from their parent stocks, gradations existed as fine as those which now connect closely related species with varieties. But they have passed and left no sign. The geological record, even if all displayed to view, is a book from which not only many pages, but even whole alternate chapters have been lost out, or rather which were never printed from the autographs of nature. The record was actually made in fossil lithography only at certain times and under certain conditions (i. e., at periods of slow subsidence and places of abundant sediment); and of these records all but the last volume is out of print; and of its pages only local glimpses have been obtained. Geologists, except Lyell, will object to this,—some of them moderately, others with vehemence. Mr. Darwin himself admits, with a candor rarely displayed on such occasions, that he should have expected more geological evidence of transition than he finds, and that all the most eminent paleontologists maintain the immutability of species.

The general fact, however, that the fossil fauna of each period as a whole is nearly intermediate in character between the preceding and the succeeding faunas, is much relied on. We are brought one step nearer to the desired inference by the similar 'fact,' insisted on by all paleontologists, that fossils from two consecutive formations are far more closely related to each other, than are the fossils of two remote formations.

It is well said that all organic beings have been formed on two great laws; Unity of type, and Adaptation to the conditions of existence . . . Mr. Darwin harmonizes and explains them naturally. Adaptation to the conditions of existence is the result of Natural Selection; Unity of type, of unity of descent."

Gray's article was soon followed by another one from Agassiz on Individuality and Specific Differences among Acalephs, but the running title is "Prof. Agassiz on the Origin of Species" (**30**, 142, 1860). Agassiz stoutly maintains his well known views, and concludes as follows:

"Were the transmutation theory true, the geological record should exhibit an uninterrupted succession of types blending gradually into one another. The fact is that throughout all geological times each period is characterized by definite specific types, belonging to definite genera, and these to definite families, referable to definite orders, constituting definite classes and definite branches, built upon definite plans. Until the facts of Nature are shown to have been mistaken by those who have collected them, and that they have a different meaning from that now generally assigned to them, I shall therefore consider the transmutation theory as a scientific mistake, untrue in its facts, unscientific in its method, and mischievous in its tendency."

Dana, in reviewing Huxley's well known book, Man's Place in Nature (**35**, 451, 1863), holds that man is apart from brute nature because man exhibits "extreme cephalization" in that he has arms that no longer are used in locomotion but go rather with the head, and because he has a far higher mentality and speech. As for the Darwinian theory, the evidence, he says, "comes from lower departments of life, and is acknowledged by its advocates to be exceedingly scanty and imperfect."

The growth of evolution is set forth in the Journal in Asa Gray's article on Charles Darwin (**24**, 453, 1882), which speaks of the latter as "the most celebrated man of science of the nineteenth century," and, in addition, as "one of the most kindly and charming, unaffected, simple-hearted, and lovable of men." In regard to the rise of evolution in America, more can be had from Dana's paper on Asa Gray (**35**, 181, 1888). Here we read, as a sequel to his Thoughts on Species, that the "paper may be taken, perhaps, as a culmination of the past, just as the new future was to make its appearance." Finally, in this connection there should be mentioned O. C. Marsh's paper on Thomas Henry Huxley (**50**, 177, 1895), wherein is recorded the latter's share in the upbuilding of the evolutionary theory.

We have seen that originally Dana was a creationist, but in the course of his long and fruitful life he gradually became an evolutionist, and rather a Neo-Lamarckian than a Darwinian. This change may be traced in the various editions of his Manual of Geology, and in the last edition of 1895 he says his "speculative conclusions" of 1852 in regard to the origin of species are not "in accord with the author's present judgment." "The evidence in favor of evolution by variation is now regarded as essentially complete.'' On the other hand, while man is ''unquestionably'' closely related in structure to the man-apes, yet he is not linked to them but stands apart, through ''the intervention of a Power above Nature. . . . Believing that Nature exists through the will and ever-acting power of the Divine Being, and . . . that the whole Universe is not merely dependent on, but actually is, the Will of one Supreme Intelligence, Nature, with Man as its culminant species, is no longer a mystery.''

In America most of the paleontologists are Neo-Lamarckian, a school that was developed independently by E. D. Cope (1840-1897) through the vertebrate evidence, and by Alpheus Hyatt (1838-1902) mainly on the evidence of the ammonites. They hold that variations and acquired characters arise through the effects of the environment, the mechanics of the organism resulting from the use and disuse of organs, etc. One of the leading exponents of this school is A. S. Packard, whose book on Lamarck, His Life and Work, 1901, fully explains the doctrines of the Neo-Lamarckians.

The Growth of Invertebrate Paleontology.

How and by whom paleontology has been developed has been fully stated in the Journal in a very clear manner by Professor Marsh in his memorable presidential address of 1879, History and Methods of Palæontological Discovery (**18**, 323, 1879), and by Karl von Zittel in his most interesting book, History of Geology and Palæontology, 1901. In this discussion we shall largely follow Marsh.

The science of paleontology has passed through four periods, the first of them the long *Mystic period* extending up to the beginning of the seventeenth century, when the idea that fossils were once living things was only rarely perceived. The second period was the *Diluvial period* of the eighteenth century, when nearly everyone regarded the fossils as remains of the Noachian deluge. With the beginnings of the nineteenth century there arose in western Europe the knowledge that fossils are the ''medals of creation'' and that they have a chronogenetic significance; also that life had been periodically destroyed through world-wide convulsions in nature. From about 1800 to 1860 was the time of the creationists and catastrophists, which may be known as the *Catastrophic period.* The fourth period began in 1860 with Darwin's Origin of Species. Since that time the theory of evolution has pervaded all work in paleontology, and accordingly this time may be known as the *Evolutionary period.*

Mystic Period.—The Mystic period in paleontology begins with the Greeks, five centuries before the present era, and continues down to the beginning of the seventeenth century of our time. Some correctly saw that the fossils were once living marine animals, and that the sea had been where they now occur. Others interpreted fossil mammal bones as those of human giants, the Titans, but the Aristotelian view that they were of spontaneous generation through the hidden forces of the earth dominated all thought for about twenty centuries.

In the sixteenth century canals were being dug in Northern Italy, and the many fossils so revealed led to a fierce discussion as to their actual nature. Leonardo da Vinci (1452-1519) opposed the commonly accepted view of their spontaneous generation and said that they were the remains of once living animals and that the sea had been where they occur. "You tell me," he said, "that Nature and the influence of the stars have formed these shells in the mountains; then show me a place in the mountains where the stars at the present day make shelly forms of different ages, and of different species in the same place." However, nothing came of his teachings and those of his countryman Fracastorio (1483-1553), who further ridiculed the idea that they were the remains of the deluge. The first mineralogist, Agricola, described them as minerals—fossilia—and said that they arose in the ground from fatty matter set in fermentation by heat. Others said that they were freaks of nature. Martin Lister (1638-1711) figured fossils side by side with living shells to show that they were extinct forms of life. In the seventeenth century, and especially in Italy and Germany, many books were published on fossils, some with illustrations so accurate that the species can be recognized to-day. Finally, toward the close of this century the influence of Aristotle and the scholastic tendency to disputation came more or less to an end. Fossils were already to many naturalists once living plants and animals. Marsh states: "The many collections of fossils that had been brought together, and the illustrated works that had been published about them, were a foundation for greater progress, and, with the eighteenth century, the second period in the history of paleontology began.''

Diluvial Period.—During the eighteenth century many more books on fossils were published in western Europe, and now the prevalent explanation was that they were the remains of the Noachian deluge. For nearly a century theologians and laymen alike took this view, and some of the books have become famous on this account, but the diluvial views sensibly declined with the close of the eighteenth century.

The true nature of fossils had now been clearly determined. They were the remains of plants and animals, deposited long before the deluge, part in fresh water and part in the sea. ''Some indicated a mild climate, and some the tropics. That any of these were extinct species, was as yet only suspected.'' Yet before the close of the century there were men in England and France who pointed out that different formations had different fossils and that some of them were extinct. These views then led to many fantastic theories as to how the earth was formed—dreams, most of them have been called. Marsh says:

> ''The dominant idea of the first sixteen centuries of the present era was, that the universe was made for Man. This was the great obstacle to the correct determination of the position of the earth in the universe, and, later, of the age of the earth. . . . In a superstitious age, when every natural event is referred to a supernatural cause, science cannot live . . . Scarcely less fatal to the growth of science is the age of Authority, as the past proves too well. With freedom of thought, came definite knowledge, and certain progress;—but two thousand years was long to wait.''

One of the most significant publications of this period was Linnæus's Systema Naturæ, which appeared in 1735. In this work was introduced binomial nomenclature, or the system of giving each plant and animal species a generic and specific name, as *Felis leo* for the lion. The system was, however, not established until the tenth edition of the work in 1758, which became the starting point of zoological nomenclature. Since then there has been added another canon, the law of priority, which holds that the first name applied to a given form shall stand against all later names given to the same organism.

Catastrophic Period.—With the beginning of the nineteenth century there started a new era in paleontology, and this was the time when the foundations of the science were laid. The period continued for six decades, or until the time of the Origin of Species. Marsh says that now "method replaced disorder, and systematic study superseded casual observation." Fossils were accurately determined, comparisons were made with living forms, and the species named according to the binomial system. However, every species, recent and extinct, was regarded as a separate creation, and because of the usually sharp separation of the superposed fossil faunas and floras, these were held to have been destroyed through a series of periodic catastrophes of which the Noachian deluge was the last.

Lamarck between 1802 and 1806 described the Tertiary shells of the Paris basin. Comparing them with the living forms, he saw that most of the fossils were of extinct species, and in this way he came to be the founder of modern invertebrate paleontology. He also maintained after 1801 that life has been continuous since its origin and that nature has been uniform in the course of its development. Marsh adds:

> "His researches on the invertebrate fossils of the Paris Basin, although less striking, were not less important than those of Cuvier on the vertebrates; while the conclusions he derived from them form the basis of modern biology."
>
> "Lamarck was the prophetic genius, half a century in advance of his time."

Cuvier established comparative anatomy and vertebrate paleontology, and was one of the first to point out that fossil animals are nearly all extinct forms. He came to the latter conclusion in 1796 through a study of fossil elephants found in Europe. "Cuvier enriched the animal kingdom by the introduction of fossil forms among the living, bringing all together into one comprehensive system." This opened to him entirely new views respecting the theory of the earth, and he devoted more than twenty-five years to developing the theories of special creation and catastrophism, described in his Discourse on the Revolutions of the Surface of the Globe. "With all his knowledge of the earth, he could not free himself from tradition, and believed in the universality and power of the Mosaic deluge. Again, he refused to admit the evidence brought forward by his distinguished colleagues against the permanence of species, and used all his great influence to crush out the doctrine of evolution, then first proposed'' (Marsh).

In England it was William Smith (1769-1839) who independently discovered the chronogenetic significance of fossils, and in their stratigraphic superposition indicated the way for the study of historical geology. He first published on this matter in 1799, but his completed statements came in works entitled ''Strata identified by Organized Fossils,'' 1816-1820, and ''Stratigraphical System of Organized Fossils,'' 1817.

Invertebrate paleontology in America during the Catastrophic period had its beginning in Lesueur, who in 1818 described the Ordovician gastropod *Maclurites magna.* All of the paleontologists of this time were satisfied to describe species and genera and to ascertain in a broad way the stratigraphic significance of the fossil faunas and floras. James Hall in 1854 (**17**, 312) knew of 1588 species, described and undescribed, in the New York system, while in England Morris listed in that year 8300 Paleozoic forms. In 1856 Dana recites the known fossil species as follows (**22**, 333): The whole number of known American species of animals of the Permian to Recent is about 2000; while in Britain and Europe, there were over 20,000 species. In the Permian we have none, while Europe has over 200 species. In the Triassic we have none, Europe 1000 species; Jurassic 60, Europe over 4000; Cretaceous 350 to 400, Europe about 6000; Tertiary hardly 1500, Europe about 8000. Since that time nearly all of the larger American Paleozoic faunas have been developed, but there are thousands of species yet to be described. Who the more prominent American paleontologists of this period were has been told in the section on the development of the geological column.

The grander paleontologic results of the Catastrophic period have been so well stated by Marsh that it is worth our while to repeat them here:

''It had now been proved beyond question that portions at least of the earth's surface had been covered many times by the sea, with alternations of fresh water and of land; that the strata thus deposited were formed in succession, the lowest of the series being the oldest; that a distinct succession of animals and plants had inhabited the earth during the different geological periods; and that the order of succession found in one part of the earth was essentially the same in all. More than 30,000 new species of extinct animals and plants had now been described. It had been found, too, that from the oldest formations to the most recent, there had been an advance in the grade of life, both animal and vegetable, the oldest forms being among the simplest, and the higher forms successively making their appearance.

It had now become clearly evident, moreover, that the fossils from the older formations were all extinct species, and that only in the most recent deposits were there remains of forms still living . . . Another important conclusion reached, mainly through the labors of Lyell, was, that the earth had not been subjected in the past to sudden and violent revolutions; but the great changes wrought had been gradual, differing in no essential respect from those still in progress. Strangely enough, the corollary to this proposition, that life, too, had been continuous on the earth, formed at that date no part of the common stock of knowledge. In the physical world, the great law of 'correlation of forces' had been announced, and widely accepted; but in the organic world, the dogma of the miraculous creation of each separate species still held sway."

Evolutionary Period.—This period begins with 1860 and the publication of Darwin's Origin of Species (late in 1859). It is the period of modern paleontology, and is dominated by the belief that universal laws pervade not only inorganic matter, but all life as well. Louis Agassiz had been in America fourteen years when Darwin's book appeared, and his wonderful influence in bringing the zoology of our country to a high stand and the further influence he exerted through his students was bound to react beneficially on invertebrate paleontology. Shortly after the beginning of this period, or in 1867, Alpheus Hyatt, one of Agassiz's students, began to apply the study of embryology to fossil cephalopods, showing clearly that these shells retain a great deal of their growth stages or ontogeny. This method of study was then followed by R. T. Jackson, C. E. Beecher, and J. P. Smith, and has been productive of natural classifications of the Cephalopoda, Brachiopoda, Trilobita, and Echinoidea.

The dominant invertebrate paleontologist of this period was of course James Hall, who described about 5000 species of American Paleozoic fossils. He also built up the New York State Museum, while around his private collections of fossils have been developed the American Museum of Natural History in New York City and the Walker Museum at the University of Chicago. In his most important laboratory of paleontology at Albany, there have been trained either wholly or in part the following paleontologists: F. B. Meek, C. A. White, R. P. Whitfield, C. D. Walcott, C. E. Beecher, John M. Clarke, and Charles Schuchert.

In Canada, through the work of the Geological Survey of the Dominion, came the paleontologists Elkanah Billings and, later on, J. F. Whiteaves. The "father of Canadian paleontology," Sir William Dawson, who developed independently, was active in all branches of the science and did much to unravel the geology of eastern Canada. No organism has been more discussed and more often rejected and accepted as a fossil than his "dawn animal of Canada," *Eozoon canadense,* first described in 1865. His son, George M. Dawson, was one of the directors of the Geological Survey of Canada. Finally the extensive paleontology of the Cambrian of Canada was worked out by another self-made paleontologist, G. F. Matthew.

Paleobotany.—American paleobotany was developed during this, the fourth period, through the state and national surveys, first in Leo Lesquereux, a Swiss student induced by Agassiz to come to America, and in J. S. Newberry. The second generation of paleobotanists is represented by Lester F. Ward and W. N. Fontaine, and the third generation, the present workers, includes F. H. Knowlton, David White, Arthur Hollick, and E. W. Berry. A new line of paleobotanical work, the histology of woody but pseudomorphous remains, has been developed by G. R. Wieland.

The grander results of the study of paleontology during the evolutionary period may be summed up with the conclusions of Marsh:

"One of the main characteristics of this epoch is the belief that all life, living and extinct, has been evolved from simple forms. Another prominent feature is the accepted fact of the great antiquity of the human race. These are quite sufficient to distinguish this period sharply from those that preceded it.

Charles Darwin's work at once aroused attention, and brought about in scientific thought a revolution which "has influenced paleontology as extensively as any other department of science . . . In the [previous period] species were represented independently by parallel lines; in the present period, they are indicated by dependent, branching lines. The former was the analytic, the latter is the synthetic period.''

Synthetic Period.—What is to be the next trend in paleontology? Clearly it is to be the Synthetic period, one that Marsh in 1879 indicated in these words: ''But if we are permitted to continue in imagination the rapidly converging lines of research pursued to-day, they seem to meet at the point where organic and inorganic nature become one. That this point will yet be reached, I cannot doubt.''

This Synthetic period, foreshadowed also in Herbert Spencer's Synthetic Philosophy, has not yet arrived, but before long another great leader will appear. We have the prophecy of his coming in such books as The Fitness of the Environment, by Lawrence J. Henderson, 1913; The Origin and Nature of Life, by Benjamin Moore, 1913; The Organism as a Whole, by Jacques Loeb, 1916; and The Origin and Evolution of Life, by Henry F. Osborn, 1917.

In all nature, inorganic and organic, there is continuity and consistency, beauty and design. We are beginning to see that there are eternal laws, ever interacting and resulting in progressive and regressive evolutions. The realization of these scientific revelations kindles in us a desire for more knowledge, and the grandest revelations are yet before us in the synthesis of the sciences.

ART. III.—*A Century of Geology.—Steps of Progress in the Interpretation of Land Forms;* by HERBERT E. GREGORY.

The essence of physiography is the belief that land forms represent merely a stage in the orderly development of the earth's surface features; that the various dynamic agents perform their characteristic work throughout all geologic time. The formulation of principle and processes of earth sculpture was, therefore, impossible on the hypothesis of a ready-made earth whose features were substantially unchangeable, except when modified by catastrophic processes. In 1821, J. W. Wilson wrote in this Journal: "Is it not the best theory of the earth, that the Creator, in the beginning, at least at the general deluge, formed it with all its present grand characteristic features?"[1] If so, a search for causes is futile, and the study of the work performed by streams and glaciers and wind is unprofitable. The belief in the Deluge as the one great geological event in the history of the earth has brought it about that the speculations of Aristotle, Herodotus, Strabo, and Ovid, and the illustrious Arab, Avicenna (980-1037), unchecked by appeal to facts but also unopposed by priesthood or popular prejudice, are nearer to the truth than the intolerant controversial writings of the intellectual leaders whose touchstone was orthodoxy. A few thinkers of the 16th century revolted against the interminable repetition of error, and Peter Severinus (1571) advised his students: "Burn up your books . . . buy yourselves stout shoes, get away to the mountains, search the valleys, the deserts, the shores of the seas. . . . In this way and no other will you arrive at a knowledge of things." But the thorough-going "diluvialist" who believed that a million species of animals could occupy a 450-foot Ark, but not that pebbles weathered from rock or that rivers erode, had no use for his powers of observation.

Sporadic germs of a science of land forms scattered through the literature of the 17th and 18th centuries found an unfavorable environment and produced inconspicuous growths. Even their sponsors did little to

[1] Numbers refer to titles listed in the Bibliography at the end of this article.

cultivate them. Steno (1631-1687) mildly suggested that surface sculpturing, particularly on a small scale, is largely the work of running water, and Guettard (1715-1786), a truly great mind, grasped the fundamental principles of denudation and successfully entombed his views as well as his reputation in scores of books and volumes of cumbrous diffuse writing.

At the beginning of the 19th century a sufficient body of principles had been established to justify the recognition of an earth science, geology, and the 195 volumes of the Journal thus far published carry a large part of the material which has won approval for the new science and given prominence to American thought. From the pages in the Journal, the progress of geology may be illustrated by tracing the fluctuation in the development of fact and theory as relates to valleys and glacial features, the subjects to which this chapter is devoted.

The Interpretation of Valleys.

The Pioneers.

Desmarest (1725-1815) might be styled the father of physiography. By concrete examples and sound induction he established (1774) the doctrine that the valleys of central France are formed by the streams which occupy them. He also made the first attempt to trace the history of a landscape through its successive stages on the basis of known causes. His methods and reasoning are practically identical with those of Dutton working in the ancient lavas of New Mexico; and Whitney's description of the Table Mountains of California might well have appeared in Desmarest's memoirs.[2] The teachings of Desmarest were strengthened and expanded by DeSaussure (1740-1799), the sponsor for the term, "Geology," (1779) who saw in the intimate relation of Alpine streams and valleys the evidence of erosion by running water (1786).

The work of these acknowledged leaders of geological thought attracted singularly little attention on the Continent, and Lamarck's volume on denudation (Hydrogéologie), which appeared in 1802, although an important contribution, sank out of sight. But the seed of the French school found fertile ground in Edinburgh, the center of the geological world during the first quarter of the 19th century. Hutton's "Theory of the Earth, with Proofs and Illustrations," in which the guidance of DeSaussure and Desmarest is gratefully acknowledged, appeared in 1795. The original publication aroused only local interest, but when placed in attractive form by Playfair's "Illustrations of the Huttonian Theory" (1802), the problem of the origin and development of land forms assumed a commanding position in geological thought. Hutton was peculiarly fortunate in his environment. He had the support and assistance of a group of able scientific colleagues as well as the bitter opposition of Jameson and of the defenders of orthodoxy. His views were discussed in scientific publications and found their way to literary and theological journals. Hutton's conception of the processes of land sculpture—slow upheaving and slow degradation of mountains, differential weathering, and the carving of valleys by streams—has a very modern aspect. Playfair's book would scarcely be out of place in a 20th century class room. The following paragraphs are quoted from it:[3]

". . . A river, of which the course is both serpentine and deeply excavated in the rock, is among the phenomena, by which the slow waste of the land, and also the cause of that waste, are most directly pointed out.

The structure of the vallies among mountains, shews clearly to what cause their existence is to be ascribed. Here we have first a large valley, communicating directly with the plain, and winding between high ridges of mountains, while the river in the bottom of it descends over a surface, remarkable, in such a scene, for its uniform declivity. Into this, open a multitude of transverse or secondary vallies, intersecting the ridges on either side of the former, each bringing a contribution to the main stream, proportioned to its magnitude; and, except where a cataract now and then intervenes, all having that nice adjustment in their levels, which is the more wonderful, the greater the irregularity of the surface. These secondary vallies have others of a smaller size opening into them; and, among mountains of the first order, where all is laid out on the greatest scale, these ramifications are continued to a fourth, and even a fifth, each diminishing in size as it increases in elevation, and as its supply of water is less. Through them all, this law is in general observed, that where a higher valley joins a lower one, of the two angles which it makes with the latter, that which is obtuse is always on the descending side; . . . what else but the water itself, working its way through obstacles of unequal resistance, could have opened or kept up a communication between the inequalities of an irregular and alpine surface . . .

. . . The probability of such a constitution [arrangement of valleys] having arisen from another cause, is, to the probability of its having arisen from the running of water, in such a proportion as unity bears to a number infinitely great.

. . . With Dr. Hutton, we shall be disposed to consider those great chains of mountains, which traverse the surface of the globe, as cut out of masses vastly greater, and more lofty than any thing that now remains.

From this gradual change of lakes into rivers, it follows, that a lake is but a temporary and accidental condition of a river, which is every day approaching to its termination; and the truth of this is attested, not only by the lakes that have existed, but also by those that continue to exist.''

Steps Backward.

Even Hutton's clear reasoning, firmly buttressed by concrete examples, was insufficient to overcome the belief in ready-made or violently formed valleys and original corrugations and irregularities of mountain surface. The pages of the Journal show that the principles laid down by Playfair were too far in advance of the times to secure general acceptance. In the first volume of the Journal, the gorge of the French Broad River is assigned by Kain to ''some dreadful commotion in nature which probably shook these mountains to their bases,''[4] and the gorge of the lower Connecticut is considered by Hitchcock (1824)[5] as a breach which drained a series of lakes ''not many centuries before the settlement of this country.'' The prevailing American and English view for the first quarter of the 19th century is expressed in the reviews in this Journal, where the well-known conclusions of Conybeare and Phillips that streams are incompetent to excavate valleys are quoted with approval and admiration is expressed for Buckland's famous ''Reliquiæ Diluvianæ,'' a 300-page quarto volume devoted to proof of a deluge. The professor at Yale, Silliman, and the professor at Oxford, Buckland, saw that an acceptance of Hutton's views involved a repudiation of the Biblical flood, and much space is devoted to combating these ''erroneous'' and ''unscientific'' views. For example, Buckland says:[6]

''. . . The general belief is, that existing streams, avalanches and lakes, bursting their barriers, are sufficient to account for all their phenomena, and not a few geologists, especially those of the Huttonian school, at whose head is Professor Playfair, have till recently been of this opinion. . . . But it is now very clear to almost every man, who impartially examines the facts in regard to existing vallies, that the causes now in action, mentioned above, are altogether inadequate to their production; nay, that such a supposition would involve a physical impossibility. We do not believe that one-thousandth part of our present vallies were excavated by the power of existing streams. . . . In very many cases of large rivers, it is found, that so far from having formed their own beds, they are actually in a gradual manner filling them up.

Again; how happens it that the source of a river is frequently below the head of a valley, if the river excavated that valley?

The most powerful argument, however, in our opinion, against the supposition we are combating, is the phenomena of transverse and longitudinal valleys; both of which could not possibly have been formed by existing streams.''

Phillips writes in 1829:[7] ''The excavation of valleys can be ascribed to no other cause than a great flood of water which overtopped the hills, whose summits those vallies descend.''

Faith in Noah's flood as the dominant agent of erosion rapidly lost ground through the teaching of Lyell after 1830, but the theory of systematic development of landscapes by rivers gained little. In fact, Scrope in 1830,[8] in showing that the entrenched meanders of the Moselle prove gradual progressive stream work was in advance of his English contemporary. Judged by contributions to the Journal, Lyell's teaching served to standardize American opinion of earth sculpture somewhat as follows: The ocean is the great valley maker, but rivers also make them; the position of valleys is determined by original or renewed surface inequalities or by faulting; exceptional occurrences—earthquakes, bursting of lakes, upheavals and depressions—have played an important part. Hayes (1839)[9] thought that the surface of New York was essentially an upraised sea-bottom modified by erosion of waves and ocean currents. Sedgwick (1838)[10] considered high-lying lake basins proof of valleys which were shaped under the sea. Many of the valleys in the Chilian Cordillera were thought by Darwin (1844) to have been the work of waves and tides, and water gaps are ascribed to currents ''bursting through the range at those points where the strata have been least inclined and the height consequently is less." Speaking of the magnificent stream-cut canyons of the Blue Mountains of New South Wales, gorges which lead to narrow exits through monoclines, Darwin says: "To attribute these hollows to alluvial action would be preposterous."[11]

The influence of structure in the formation of valleys is emphasized by many contributors to the Journal. Hildreth in 1836, in a valuable paper,[12] which is perhaps the first detailed topographic description of drainage in folded strata, expresses the opinion that the West Virginia ridges and valleys antedated the streams and that water gaps though cut by rivers involve pre-existing lakes. Geddes (1826)[13] denied that Niagara River cut its channel and speaks of valleys which "were valleys e'er moving spirit bade the waters flow." Conrad (1839)[14] discussed the structural control of the Mohawk, the Ohio, and the Mississippi, and Lieutenant Warren (1859)[15] concluded that the Niobrara must have originated in a fissure. According to Lesley (1862)[16] the course of the New River across the Great Valley and into the Appalachians "striking the escarpment in the face" is determined by the junction of anticlinal structures on the north with faulted monoclines toward the south; a conclusion in harmony with the views of Edward Hitchcock (1841)[17] that major valleys and mountain passes are structural in origin and that even subordinate folds and faults may determine minor features. "Is not this a beautiful example of prospective benevolence on the part of the Deity, thus, by means of a violent fracture of primary mountains, to provide for easy intercommunication through alpine regions, countless ages afterwards!" The extent of the wandering from the guidance of DeSaussure and Playfair after the lapse of 50 years is shown by students of Switzerland. Alpine valleys to Murchison (1851) were bays of an ancient sea; Schlaginweit (1852) found regional and local complicated crustal movements a satisfactory cause, and Forbes (1863) saw only glaciers.

Valleys Formed by Rivers.

One strong voice before 1860 appears to have called Americans back to truths expounded by Desmarest and Hutton. Dana in 1850[18] amply demonstrated that valleys on the Pacific Islands owe neither their origin, position or form to the sea or to structural factors. They are the work of existing streams which have eaten their way headwards. Even the valleys of Australia cited by Darwin as type examples of ocean work are shown to be products of normal stream work. Dana went further and gave a permanent place to the Huttonian idea that many bays, inlets, and fiords are but the drowned mouths of stream-made valleys. In the same volume in which these conclusions appeared, Hubbard (1850)[19] announced that in New Hampshire the "deepest valleys are but valleys of erosion." The theory that valleys are excavated by streams which occupy them was all but universally accepted after F. V. Hayden's description[20] of Rocky Mountain gorges (1862) and Newberry's interpretation of the canyons of Arizona (1862); but the scientific world was poorly prepared for Newberry's statement:[21]

"Like the great canons of the Colorado, the broad valleys bounded by high and perpendicular walls *belong to a vast system of erosion, and are wholly due to the action of water.* . . . The first and most plausible explanation of the striking surface features of this region will be to refer them to that embodiment of resistless power—the sword that cuts so many geological knots—volcanic force. The Great Cañon of the Colorado would be considered a vast fissure or rent in the earth's crust, and the abrupt termination of the steps of the table-lands as marking lines of displacement. This theory though so plausible, and so entirely adequate to explain all the striking phenomena, lacks a single requisite to acceptance, and that is *truth.*"

With such stupendous examples in mind, the dictum of Hutton seemed reasonable: "there is no spot on which rivers may not formerly have run."

Denudation by Rivers.

The general recognition of the competency of streams to form valleys was a necessary prelude to the broader view expressed by Jukes (1862)[22]

"The surfaces of our present lands are as much carved and sculptured surfaces as the medallion carved from the slab, or the statue sculptured from the block. They have been gradually reached by the removal of the rock that once covered them, and are themselves but of transient duration, always slowly wasting from decay."

Contributions to the Journal between 1850 and 1870 reveal a tendency to accept greater degrees of erosion by rivers, but the necessary end-product of subaërial erosion—a plain—is first clearly defined by Powell in 1875.[23] In formulating his ideas Powell introduced the term "base-level," which may be called the germ word out of which has grown the "cycle of erosion," the master key of modern physiographers. The original definition of base-level follows:

"We may consider the level of the sea to be a grand base-level, below which the dry lands cannot be eroded; but we may also have, for local and temporary purposes, other base-levels of erosion, which are the levels of the beds of the principal streams which carry away the products of erosion. (I take some liberty in using the term 'level' in this connection, as the action of a running stream in wearing its channel ceases, for all practical purposes, before its bed has quite reached the level of the lower end of the stream. What I have called the base-level would, in fact, be an imaginary surface, inclining slightly in all its parts toward the lower end of the principal stream draining the area through which the level is supposed to extend, or having the inclination of its parts varied in direction as determined by tributary streams.)"

Analysis of Powell's view has given definiteness to the distinction between "base-level," an imaginary plane, and "a nearly featureless plain," the actual land surface produced in the last stage of subaërial erosion.

Following their discovery in the Colorado Plateau Province, denudation surfaces were recognized on the Atlantic slope and discussed by McGee (1888),[24] in a paper notable for the demonstration of the use of physiographic methods and criteria in the solution of stratigraphic problems. Davis (1889)[25] described the upland of southern New England developed during Cretaceous time, introducing the term "peneplain," "a nearly featureless plain." The short-lived opposition to the theory of peneplanation indicates that in America at least the idea needed only formulation to insure acceptance.

It is interesting to note that surfaces now classed as peneplains were fully described by Percival (1842),[26] who assigned them to structure, and by Kerr (1880),[27] who considered glaciers the agent. In Europe "plains of denudation" have been clearly recognized by Ramsay (1846), Jukes (1862), A. Geikie (1865), Foster and Topley (1865), Maw (1866), Wynne (1867), Whitaker (1867), Macintosh (1869), Green (1882), Richthofen (1882), but all of them were looked upon as products of marine work, and writers of more recent date in England seem reluctant to give a subordinate place to the erosive power of waves. Americans, on the other hand, have been thinking in terms of rivers, and the great contribution of the American school is not that peneplains exist, but that they are the result of normal subaërial erosion. More precise field methods during the past decade have revealed the fact that no one agent is responsible for the land forms classed as peneplains; that not only rivers and ocean, but ice, wind, structure, and topographic position must be taken into account.

The recognition of rivers as valley-makers and of the final result of stream work necessarily preceded an analysis of the process of subaërial erosion. The first and last terms were known, the intermediate terms and the sequence remained to be established. A significant contribution to this problem was made by Jukes (1862).[22]

> ". . . I believe that the lateral valleys are those which were first formed by the drainage running directly from the crests of the chains, the longitudinal ones being subsequently elaborated along the strike of the softer or more erodable beds exposed on the flanks of those chains."

Powell's discussion of antecedent and consequent drainage (1875) and Gilbert's chapter on land sculpture in the Henry Mountain report (1880) are classics, and McGee's contribution[28] contains significant suggestions. but the master papers are by Davis,[29] who introduces an analysis of land forms based on structure and age by the statement:

> "Being fully persuaded of the gradual and systematic evolution of topographical forms it is now desired . . . to seek the causes of the location of streams in their present courses; to go back if possible to the early date when central Pennsylvania was first raised from the sea, and trace the development of the several river systems then implanted upon it from their ancient beginning to the present time."

That such a task could have been undertaken a quarter of a century ago and to-day considered a part of everyday field work shows how completely the lost ground of a half-century has been regained and how rapid the advance in the knowledge of land sculpture since the canyons of the Colorado Plateau were interpreted.

Features Resulting from Glaciation.

The Problem Stated.

Early in the 19th century when speculation regarding the interior of the earth gave place in part to observations of the surface of the earth, geologists were confronted with perhaps the most difficult problem in the history of the science. As stated by the editor of the Journal in 1821:[30]

> "The almost universal existence of rolled pebbles, and boulders of rock, not only on the margin of the oceans, seas, lakes, and rivers; but their existence, often in enormous quantities, in situations quite removed from large waters; inland,—in high banks, imbedded in strata, or scattered, occasionally, in profusion, on the face of almost every region, and sometimes on the tops and declivities of mountains, as well as in the vallies between them; their entire difference, in many cases, from the rocks in the country where they lie—rounded masses and pebbles of primitive rocks being deposited in secondary and alluvial regions, and vice versa; these and a multitude of similar facts have ever struck us as being among the most interesting of geological occurrences, and as being very inadequately accounted for by existing theories."

The phenomena demanding explanation — jumbled masses of "diluvium," polished and striated rock, bowlders distributed with apparent disregard of topography—were indeed startling. Even Lyell, the great exponent of uniformitarianism, appears to have lost faith in his theories when confronted with facts for which known causes seemed inadequate. The interest aroused is attested by 31 titles in the Journal during its first two decades, articles which include speculations unsupported by logic or fact, field observation unaccompanied by explanation, field observation with fantastic explanation, *ex-cathedra* pronouncements by prominent men, sound reasoning from insufficient data, and unclouded recognition of cause and effect by both obscure and prominent men. With little knowledge of glaciers, areal geology, or of structure and composition of drift, all known forces were called in: normal weathering, catastrophic floods, ocean currents, waves, icebergs, glaciers, wind, and even depositions from a primordial atmosphere (Chabier, 1823). Human agencies were not discarded. Speaking of a granite bowlder at North Salem, New York, described by Cornelius (1820)[31] as resting on limestone, Finch (1824)[32] says: "it is a magnificent cromlech and the most ancient and venerable monument which America possesses." In the absence of a known cause, catastrophic agencies seem reasonable.

The Deluge.

In the seventh volume of the Journal (1824)[33] we read:

"After the production of these regular strata of sand, clay, limestone, &c. came a terrible irruption of water from the north, or north-west, which in many places covered the preceding formations with diluvial gravel, and carried along with it those immense masses of granite, and the older rocks, which attest to the present day the destruction and ruin of a former world."

Another author remarks:

"We find a mantle as it were of sand and gravel indifferently covering all the solid strata, and evidently derived from some convulsion which has lacerated and partly broken up those strata. . . ."

The catastrophe favored by most geologists was floods of water violently released—"we believe," says the editor, "that all geologists agree in imputing . . . the diluvium to the agency of a deluge at one period or another."[34] Such conclusions rested in no small way upon Hayden's well-known treatise on surficial deposits (1821),[35] a volume which deserves a prominent place in American geological literature. Hayden clearly distinguished the topographic and structural features of the drift but found an adequate cause in general wide-spread currents which "flowed impetuously across the whole continent . . . from north east to south west." In reviewing Hayden's book Silliman remarks:

"The general cause of these currents Mr. Hayden concludes to be the deluge of Noah. While no one will object to the propriety of ascribing very many, probably most of our alluvial features, to that catastrophe, we conceive that neither Mr. Hayden, nor any other man, is bound to prove the immediate physical cause of that vindictive infliction.

We would beg leave to suggest the following as a cause which *may* have aided in deluging the earth, and which, were there occasion, *might* do it again.

The existence of enormous caverns in the bowels of the earth, (so often imagined by authors,) appears to be no very extravagant assumption. It is true it cannot be proved, but in a sphere of eight thousand miles in diameter, it would appear in no way extraordinary, that many cavities might exist, which collectively, or even singly, might well contain much more than all our oceans, seas, and other superficial waters, none of which are probably more than a few miles in depth. If these cavities communicate in any manner with the oceans, and are (as if they exist at all, they probably are,) filled with water, there exist, we conceive, agents very competent to expel the water of these cavities, and thus to deluge, at any time, the dry land.''

The teachings of Hayden were favorably received by Hitchcock, Struder, and Hubbard, and many Europeans. They found a champion in Jackson, who states (1839):[36]

''From the observations made upon Mount Ktaadn, it is proved, that the current did rush over the summit of that lofty mountain, and consequently the diluvial waters rose to the height of more than 5,000 feet. Hence we are enabled to prove, that the ancient ocean, which rushed over the surface of the State, was at least a mile in depth, and its transporting power must have been greatly increased by its enormous pressure.''

Gibson, a student of western geology, reaches the same conclusion (1836):[37]

''That a wide-spread current, although not, as imagined, fed from an inland sea, once swept over the entire region between the Alleghany and the Rocky Mountains is established by plenary proof.''

Professor Sedgwick (1831) thought the sudden upheaval of mountains sufficient to have caused floods again and again. The strength of the belief in the Biblical flood, during the first quarter of the 19th century, may be represented by the following remarks of Phillips (1832):[38]

''Of many important facts which come under the consideration of geologists, the 'Deluge' is, perhaps, the most remarkable; and it is established by such clear and positive arguments, that if any one point of natural history may be considered as proved, the deluge must be admitted to have happened, because it has left full evidence in plain and characteristic effects *upon the surface of the earth.''*

However, the theory of deluges, whether of ocean or land streams, did not hold the field unopposed. In 1823, Granger,[39] an observer whose contributions to science total only six pages, speaks of the striæ on the shore of Lake Erie as

"having been formed by the powerful and continued attrition of some hard body. . . . To me, it does not seem possible that water under any circumstances, could have effected it. The flutings in width, depth, and direction, are as regular as if they had been cut out by a grooving plane. This, running water could not effect, nor could its operation have produced that glassy smoothness, which, in many parts, it still retains."

Hayes and also Conrad expressed similar views in the Journal 16 years later.

The idea that ice was in some way concerned with the transportation of drift has had a curious history. The first unequivocal statement, based on reading and keen observation, was made in the Journal by Dobson in 1826:[40]

"I have had occasion to dig up a great number of bowlders, of red sandstone, and of the conglomerate kind, in erecting a cotton manufactory; and it was not uncommon to find them worn smooth on the under side, as if done by their having been dragged over rocks and gravelly earth, in one steady position. On examination, they exhibit scratches and furrows on the abraded part; and if among the minerals composing the rock, there happened to be pebbles of feldspar, or quartz, (which was not uncommon,) they usually appeared not to be worn so much as the rest of the stone, preserving their more tender parts in a ridge, extending some inches. When several of these pebbles happen to be in one block, the preserved ridges were on the same side of the pebbles, so that it is easy to determine which part of the stone moved forward, in the act of wearing.

These bowlders are found, not only on the surface, but I have discovered them a number of feet deep, in the earth, in the hard compound of clay, sand, and gravel. . . .

I think we cannot account for these appearances, unless we call in the aid of ice along with water, and that they have been worn by being suspended and carried in ice, over rocks and earth, under water."

In Dobson's day the hypothesis of "gigantic floods," "debacles," "resistless world-wide currents," was so firmly entrenched that the voice of the observant layman found no hearers, and a letter from Dobson to Hitchcock written in 1837 and containing additional evidence and argument remained unpublished until Murchison, in 1842,[41] paid his respects to the remarkable work of a remarkable man.*

"I take leave of the glacial theory in congratulating American science in having possessed the original author of the best glacial theory, though his name had escaped notice; and in recommending to you the terse argument of Peter Dobson, a previous acquaintance with which might have saved volumes of disputation on both sides of the Atlantic."

Glaciers vs. Icebergs.

The glacial theory makes its way into geological literature with the development of Agassiz (1837) of the views of Venetz (1833) and Charpentier (1834), that the glaciers of the Alps once had greater extent. The bold assumption was made that the surface of Europe as far south as the shores of the Mediterranean and Caspian seas was covered by ice during a period immediately preceding the present. The kernel of the present glacial theory is readily recognizable in these early works, but it is wrapped in a strange husk: it was assumed that the Alps were raised by a great convulsion under the ice and that the erratics slid to their places over the newly made declivities. The publication of the famous "Etudes sur les Glaciers" (1840), remarkable alike for its clarity, its sound inductions, and wealth of illustrations, brought the ideas of Agassiz more into prominence and inaugurated a 30-years' war with the proponents of currents and icebergs. The outstanding objections to the theory were the requirement of a frigid climate and the demand for glaciers of continental dimensions; very strong objections, indeed, for the time when fossil evidence was not available, the great polar ice sheets were unexplored, and the distinction between till and water-laid drift had not been established.

The glacial theory was cordially adopted by Buckland (1841)[42] and in part by Lyell in England but viewed with suspicion by Sedgwick, Whewell, and Mantell. In America the response to the new idea was immediate. Hitchcock (1841)[17] concludes an able dis-

* Peter Dobson (1784-1878) came to this country from Preston, England, in 1809 and established a cotton factory at Vernon, Conn.

cussion with the statement: "So remarkably does it solve most of the phenomena of diluvial action, that I am constrained to believe its fundamental principles to be founded in truth."

The theory formed the chief topic of discussion at the third and fourth meetings of the Association of American Geologists and Naturalists (1842, 1843) under the lead of a committee on drift consisting of Emmons, W. B. Rogers, Vanuxem, Nicollet, Jackson, and J. L. Hayes. The result of these discussions was a curious reaction. Hitchcock complained that he "had been supposed to be an advocate for the unmodified glacial theory, but he had never been a believer in it," and Jackson spoke for a number of men when he stated:[43]

"This country exhibits no proofs of the glacial theory as taught by Agassiz but on the contrary the general bearing of the facts is against that theory. . . . Many eminent men incautiously embraced the new theory, which within two or three years from its promulgation, had been found utterly inadequate, and is now abandoned by many of its former supporters."

Out of this symposium came also the strange contribution of H. D. Rogers (1844),[44] who cast aside the teachings of deduction and observation and returned to the views of the Medievalists.

"If we will conceive, then, a wide expanse of waters, less perhaps than one thousand feet in depth, dislodged from some high northern or circumpolar basin, by a general lifting of that region of perhaps a few hundred feet, and an equal subsidence of the country south, and imagine this whole mass converted by earthquake pulsations of the breadth which such undulations have, into a series of stupendous and rapid-moving waves of translation, helped on by the still more rapid flexures of the floor over which they move, and then advert to the shattering and loosening power of the tremendous jar of the earthquake, we shall have an agent adequate in every way to produce the results we see, to float the northern ice from its moorings, to rip off, assisted with its aid, the outcrops of the hardest strata, to grind up and strew wide their fragments, to scour down the whole rocky floor, and, gathering energy with resistance, to sweep up the slopes and over the highest mountains."

Because of the prominence of their author, Rogers's views exerted some influence and seemingly received support from England through the elaborate mathematic discussions of Whewell (1848), who considered the drift as "irresistible proof of paroxysmal action," and Hopkins (1852), who contended for "currents produced by repeated elevatory movements."

After his arrival in America (1846), Agassiz's influence was felt, and his paper on the erratic phenomena about Lake Superior (1850),[45] in which he called upon the advocates of water-borne ice to point out the barrier which caused the current to subside, produced a salutary effect; yet Desor (1852)[46] states that in the region described by Agassiz "the assumption [of a general ice cap] is no longer admissible," and that the bowlders on Long Island "were transported on ice rafts along the sea shore and stranded on the ridges and eminences which were then shoals along the coast." Twenty years of discussion were insufficient to establish the glacial theory either in Europe or America. The consensus of opinion among the more advanced thinkers in 1860 is expressed by Dana:[47]

"In view of the whole subject, it appears reasonable to conclude that the Glacier theory affords the best and fullest explanation of the phenomena over the general surface of the continents, and encounters the fewest difficulties. But icebergs have aided beyond doubt in producing the results along the borders of the continents, across ocean-channels like the German Ocean and the Baltic, and possibly over great lakes like those of North America. Long Island Sound is so narrow that a glacier may have stretched across it."

Papers in the Journal of 1860-70 show a prevailing belief in icebergs, but the evidence for land ice was accumulating as the deposits became better known, and in 1871 field workers speak in unmistakable tones:[48]

"It is still a mooted question in American geology whether the events of the Glacial era were due to *glaciers* or *icebergs*. . . . American geologists are still divided in opinion, and some of the most eminent have pronounced in favor of icebergs.

Since, then, icebergs cannot pick up masses tons in weight from the bottom of a sea, or give a general movement southward to the loose material of the surface; neither can produce the abrasion observed over the rocks under its various conditions; and inasmuch as all direct evidence of the submergence of the land required for an iceberg sea over New England fails, the conclusion appears inevitable that icebergs had nothing to do with the drift of the New Haven region, in the Connecticut valley; and, therefore, that the Glacial era in central New England was a *Glacier* era."

Matthew (1871)[49] reached the same conclusion for the Lower Provinces of Canada. In spite of the increasing clarity of the evidence, the battle for the glacial theory was not yet won. The remaining opponents though few in number were distinguished in attainments. Dawson clung to the outworn doctrine until his death in 1899.

An interesting feature of the history of glacial theories is the calculation by Maclaren (1842)[50] that the amount of water abstracted from the seas to form the hypothetical ice sheet would lower the ocean-level 350 feet—an early form of the glacial control hypothesis (see Daly[51]).

Extent of Glacial Drift.

By the middle of the 19th century, it was recognized that the "drift," whatever its origin, was not of world-wide extent. In America its characteristic features were found best developed north of latitude 40 degrees; in Europe, the Alps, the Scottish Highlands, and Scandinavia were recognized as type areas. The limits were unassigned, partly because the field had not been surveyed, but largely because criteria for the recognition of drift had not been established. The well-known hillocks and ridges of "diluvium" and "alluvium" and "drift" of New Jersey and Ohio, and the mounds of the Missouri Cotou elaborately described by Catlin (1840)[52] bore little resemblance to the walls of unsorted rock which stand as moraines bordering Alpine glaciers. The Orange sand of Mississippi was included in the drift by Hilgard (1866),[53] and the gravels at Philadelphia by Hall (1876).[54] Stevens (1873)[55] described trains of glacial erratics at Richmond, Virginia, and Wm. B. Rogers (1876)[56] accounts for certain deposits in the Potomac, James, and Roanoke rivers by the presence of Pleistocene ice tongues or swollen glacial rivers, and remarks: "It is highly probable that glacial action had much to do with the original accumulation of the rocky debris on the flanks of the Blue Ridge, and in the Appalachian valleys beyond." Kerr (1881)[57] referred the ancient erosion surface of the Piedmont belt in North Carolina to glacial denudation, De la Beche compared the drift of Jamaica with that of New England, and Agassiz interpreted soils of Brazil as glacial.

The first detailed description and unequivocal interpretation of either terminal or recessional moraines is from the pen of Gilbert (1871),[58] geologist of the Ohio Survey. In discussing the former outlet of Lake Erie through the Fort Wayne channel, Gilbert writes:

"The page of history recorded in these phenomena is by no means ambiguous. The ridges, or, more properly, the ridge which determines the courses of the St. Joseph and St. Marys rivers is a buried terminal moraine of the glacier that moved southwestward through the Maumee valley. The overlying Erie Clay covers it from sight, but it is shadowed forth on the surface of that deposit, as the ground is pictured through a deep and even canopy of snow. Its irregularly curved outline accords intimately with the configuration of the valley, and with the direction of the ice markings; its concavity is turned toward the source of motion; its greatest convexity is along the line of least resistance.

South of the St. Marys river are other and numerous moraines accompanied by glacial striæ. Their character and courses have not yet been studied; but their presence carries the mind back to an epoch of the cold period, when the margin of the ice-field was farther south, and the glacier of the Maumee valley was merged in the general mass. As the mantle of ice grew shorter—and, in fact, at every stage of its existence—its margin must have been variously notched and lobed in conformity with the contour of the country, the higher lands being first laid bare by the encroaching secular summer. Early in the history of this encroachment the glacier of the Maumee valley constituted one of these lobes, and has recorded its form in the two moraines that I have described."

Three years after the recognition of moraines in the Maumee valley, Chamberlin (1874)[59] showed that the seemingly disorganized mounds and basins and ridges known as the Kettle range of Wisconsin is the terminal moraine of the Green Bay glacier. At an earlier date (1864) Whittlesey interpreted the kettles of the Wisconsin moraine as evidence of ice blocks from a melting glacier and presented a map showing the "southern limit of boulders and coarse drift." In 1876 attention was called to the terminal moraine of New England by G. Frederick Wright, who assigns the honor of discovery to Clarence King.

With the observations of Gilbert, Chamberlin, and King in mind, the terminal moraine was traced by various workers across the United States and into

Canada and the extent of glacial cover revealed. Following 1875 the pages of the Journal contain many contributions dealing with the origin and structure of moraines, eskers, kames, and drumlins. Before 1890 twenty-eight papers on the glacial phenomena of the Erie and Ohio basin alone had appeared. By 1900 substantial agreement had been reached regarding the significant features of the drift, the outline history of the Great Lakes had been written, and the way had been paved for stratigraphic studies of the Pleistocene, which bulk large in the pages of the Journal for the last two decades.

Epochs of Glaciation.

For a decade following the general acceptance of the glacial origin of "diluvium," the deposits were embraced as "drift" and treated as the products of one long period of glacial activity, and throughout the controversy of iceberg and glacier the unity of the glacial period was unquestioned. Beds of peat and fossiliferous lacustrine deposits in Switzerland, England, and in America and the recognition of an "upper" and a "lower" diluvium by Scandinavian geologists suggested two epochs, and as the examples of such deposits increased in number and it became evident that the plant fossils represented forms demanding a genial climate and that the phenomena were seen in many countries, the belief grew that minor fluctuations or gradual recession of an ice sheet were inadequate to account for the phenomena observed.

It is natural that this problem should have found its solution in America, where the Pleistocene is admirably displayed, and where the State and Federal surveys were actively engaged in areal mapping. In 1883 Chamberlin[60] presented his views under the bold title, "Preliminary Paper on the Terminal Moraine of the Second Glacial Epoch," and the existence of deposits of two or more ice sheets and the features of interglacial periods were substantially established by the interesting debate in the Journal led by Chamberlin, Wright, Upham and Dana.[61] Contributions since 1895 have been concerned with the degree rather than the fact of complexity, and continued study has resulted in the general recognition of five glacial stages in North America and four in Europe.

The Loess as a Glacial Deposit.

A curious side-product of the study of glaciation in North America is the controversy over the origin of loess. The interest aroused is indicated by scores of papers in American periodicals and State reports of the last quarter of the 19th century—papers which bear the names of prominent geologists.

The "loess" in the valley of the Rhine had long been known, but the subject assumed prominence by the publication in 1866 of Pumpelly's Travels in China.[62] Widespread deposits 200 to 1,000 feet thick were described as very fine-grained yellowish earth of distinctive structure without stratification but penetrated by innumerable tubes and containing land or fresh-water shells. Pumpelly considered these deposits lacustrine, a view which found general acceptance though combated by Kingsmill (1871),[63] who argued for marine deposition. Baron Von Richthofen's classic on China, which appeared in 1877, amplifies the observations of Pumpelly and marshals the evidence to support the hypothesis that the loess is wind-laid both on dry land and within ancient salt lakes. The conclusions of Von Richthofen were adopted by Pumpelly whose knowledge of the Chinese deposits, supplemented by studies in Missouri, of which State he was director of the Geological Survey in 1872-73, placed him in position to form a correct judgment. He says:[64]

> "Recognizing from personal observation the full identity of character of the loess of northern China, Europe and the Missouri Valley, I am obliged to reject my own explanation of the origin of the Chinese deposits, and to believe with Richthofen that the true loess, wherever it occurs, is a sub-aerial deposit, formed in a dry central region, and that it owes its structure to the formative influence of a steppe vegetation.
>
> The one weak point of Richthofen's theory is in the evident inadequacy of the current disintegration as a source of material. When we consider the immense area covered by loess to depths varying from 50 to 2,000 feet, and the fact that this is only the very finest portion of the product of rock-destruction, and again that the accumulation represents only a very short period of time, geologically speaking, surely we must seek a more fertile source of supply than is furnished by the current decomposition of rock surface.
>
> It seems to me that there are two important sources: I. The silt brought by rivers, many of them fed by the products of glacial attrition flowing from the mountains into the central

region. Where the streams sink away, or where the lakes which receive them have dried up, the finer products of the erosion of a large territory are left to be removed in dust storms.

II. The second . . . source is the residuary products of a secular disintegration.''

The evidence presented by Pumpelly for the eolian origin of loess—structure, texture, composition, fossil content and topographic position—is complete, and to him belongs the credit for the correct interpretation of the Mississippi valley deposits. Unfortunately his contribution came at a time when the geologists of the central States were intent on tracing the paths and explaining the work of Pleistocene glaciers, and the belief was strong that loess was some phase of glacial work. Its position at the border of the Iowan drift so obviously suggests a genetic relation that the fossil evidence of steppe climate suggested by Binney in 1848[65] was minimized. Students of Pleistocene geology in Minnesota, Iowa, Nebraska, Missouri, although less vigorous in expression, were substantially in agreement with Hilgard (1879).[66] ''The sum total of anomalous conditions required to sustain the eolian hypothesis partakes strongly of the marvellous.'' The last edition of Dana's Manual, 1894, and of LeConte's Geology, 1896, the two most widely used text books of their time, oppose the eolian theory, and Chamberlin, in 1897,[67] states: ''the aqueous hypothesis seems best supported so far as concerns the deposits of the Mississippi Valley and western Europe'' (p. 795). Shimek, in papers published since 1896 has shown that aquatic and glacial conditions can not account for the loess fossils, and the return to the views of Pumpelly that the loess was deposited on land by the agency of wind in a region of steppe vegetation is now all but universal.

Glacial Sculpture.

Within the present generation sculpture by glaciers has received much attention and has involved a reconsideration of the ability of ice to erode which in turn involves a crystallization of views of the mechanics of moving ice. The evidence for glacier erosion has remained largely physiographic and rests on a study of land forms. In fact, the inadequacy of structural features or of river corrasion to account for flat-floored, steep-walled gorges, hanging valleys, and many lake basins, rather than a knowledge of the mechanics of ice has led to the present fairly general belief that glaciers are powerful agents of rock sculpture. The details of the process are not yet understood.

Erosion by glaciers enters the arena of active discussion in 1862-63. The possibility had been suggested by Esmark (1827) and by Dana (1849) in the description of fiords and by Hind (1855) with reference to the origin of the Great Lakes. It appears full-fledged in Ramsay's classic, which was published simultaneously in England and in America.[68] The argument runs as follows: There is a close association of ancient glaciers and lakes especially in mountains; glaciers are amply able to erode; evidences of faulting, special subsidence, river erosion, and marine erosion are absent from the lake basins of Switzerland and Great Britain. To quote Ramsay:

"It required a solid body grinding steadily and powerfully in direct and heavy contact with and across the rocks to scoop out deep hollows, the situations of which might either be determined by unequal hardness of the rocks, by extra weight of ice in special places, or by accidental circumstances, the clue to which is lost from our inability perfectly to reconstruct the original forms of the glaciers."

"I believe with the Italian geologists, that all that the glaciers as a whole effected was only slightly to deepen these valleys and materially to modify their general outlines, and, further (a theory I am alone responsible for), to deepen them in parts more considerably when, from various causes, the grinding power of the ice was unusually powerful, especially where, as in the lowlands of Switzerland, the Miocene strata are comparatively soft."

Whittlesey (1864)[69] considered that the rock-bound lakes and narrow bays near Lake Superior were partly excavated by ice. LeConte (1875)[70] records some significant observations in a pioneer paper on glacier erosion which has not received adequate recognition. He says:

". . . I am convinced that a glacier, by its enormous pressure and resistless onward movement, is *constantly breaking off large blocks* from its bed and bounding walls. Its erosion is not only a grinding and scoring, but also a *crushing and breaking.* It makes by its erosion not only rock-meal, but also large *rock-*

chips. . . . Its erosion is a constant process of alternate *rough hewing* and *planing.*

If Yosemite were unique, we might suppose that it was formed by violent cataclysms; but *Yosemite is not unique* in *form* and therefore probably not in *origin.* There are many Yosemites. It is more philosophical to account for them by the *regular* operation of known causes. I must believe that all these deep perpendicular slots have been sawn out by the action of glaciers; the *peculiar verticality of the walls having been determined by the perpendicular cleavage structure.*" . . . A lake in Bloody Canyon "is a *pure rock basin scooped out by the glacier* at this place. . . . These ridges [separating Hope, Faith, and Charity valleys] are in fact the lips of consecutive lake basins scooped out by ice.

. . . Water tends to form deep V-shaped canons, while ice produces broad valleys with lakes and meadows. . . . I know not how general these distinctions may be, but certainly the Coast range of this State is characterized by rounded summits and ridges, and deep V-shaped canons, while the high Sierras are characterized on the contrary by sharp, spire-like, comb-like summits, and broad valleys; and this difference I am convinced is due in part at least to the action of water on the one hand, and of ice on the other."

King (1878)[71] assigned to glacial erosion a commanding position in mountain sculpture. In regard to the Uintas, he says:

"Glacial erosion has cut almost vertically down through the beds carving immense amphitheatres with basin bottoms containing numerous Alpine lakes. . . . Post-glacial erosion has done an absolutely trivial work. There is not a particle of direct evidence, so far as I can see, to warrant the belief that these U-shaped canons were given their peculiar form by other means than the actual ploughing erosion of glaciers. . . ."

These contributions from the Cordilleras corroborating the conclusions of Ramsay (1862), Tyndall (1862), Jukes (1862), Hector (1863), Logan (1863), Close (1870), and James Geikie (1875), made little impression. The views of Lyell (1833), Ball (1863), J. W. Dawson (1864), Falconer (1864), Studer (1864), Murchison (1864, 1870), Ruskin (1865), Rutimeyer (1869), Whymper (1871), Bonney (1873), Pfaff (1874), Gurlt (1874), Judd (1876), prevailed, and the conclusions of Davis in 1882[72] fairly expressed the prevailing belief in Europe and in America:

"The amount of glacial erosion in the central districts has been very considerable, but not greatly in excess of pre-glacial soils and old talus and alluvial deposits. Most of the solid rock that was carried away came from ledges rather than from valleys; and glaciers had in general a smoothing rather than a roughening effect. In the outer areas on which the ice advanced it only rubbed down the projecting points; here it acted more frequently as a depositing than as an eroding agent."

During the past quarter-century the cleavage in the ranks of geologists, brought about by Ramsay's classic paper, has remained. Fairchild and others in America, Heim, Bonney, and Garwood in Europe argue for insignificant erosion by glaciers; and Gannet, Davis, Gilbert, Tarr in America followed by Austrian workers present evidence for erosion on a gigantic scale. A perusal of the voluminous literature in the Journal and elsewhere shows that the difference of opinion is in part one of terms, the amount of erosion rather than the fact of erosion; it also arises from failure to differentiate the work of mountain glaciers and continental ice sheets, of Pleistocene glaciers and their present diminished representatives. The irrelevant contribution of physicists has also made for confusion.

It is interesting to note that the criteria for erosion of valleys by glaciers has long been established and by workers in different countries. Ramsay (1862) in England outlined the problem and presented generalized evidence. Hector (1863) in New Zealand pointed out the significance of discordant drainage, the "hanging valleys" of Gilbert. The U-form, the broad lake-dotted floor, and the presence of cirques and the process of plucking were probably first described by LeConte (1873) in America. The truncation of valley spurs by glaciers pointed out by Studer in the Kerguelen Islands (1878) was used by Chamberlin (1883) as evidence of glacial scouring.

Conclusion.

During the past century many principles of land sculpture have emerged from the fog of intellectual speculation and unorganized observation and taken their place among generally accepted truths. Many of them are no longer subjects of controversy. Erosion has found its place as a major geologic agent and has given a new conception of natural scenery. Lofty mountains are no longer "ancient as the sun," they are youthful features in process of dissection; valleys and canyons are the work of streams and glaciers; fiords are erosion forms; waterfalls and lakes are features in process of elimination; many plains and plateaus owe their form and position to long-continued denudation. Modern landscapes are no longer viewed as original features or the product of a single agent acting at a particular time, but as ephemeral forms which owe their present appearance to their age and the particular forces at work upon them as well as to their original structure.

It is interesting to note the halting steps leading to the present viewpoint, to find that decades elapsed between the formulation of a theory or the recording of significant facts and their final acceptance or rejection, and to realize that the organization of principles and observations into a science of physiography has been the work of the present generation. Progress has been conditioned by a number of factors besides the intellectual ability of individual workers.

The influence of locality is plainly seen. Convincing evidence of river erosion was obtained in central France, the Pacific Islands, and the Colorado Plateau—regions in which other causes were easily eliminated. Sculpture by glaciers passed beyond the theoretical stage when the simple forms of the Sierras and New Zealand Alps were described. The origin of loess was first discerned in a region where glacial phenomena did not obscure the vision. The complexity of the Glacial period asserted by geologists of the Middle West was denied by eastern students. The work of waves on the English coast impressed British geologists to such an extent that plains of denudation and inland valleys were ascribed to ocean work.

In the establishment of principles, the friendly interchange of ideas has yielded large returns. Many of the fundamental conceptions of earth sculpture have come from groups of men so situated as to facilitate criticism. It is impossible, even if desirable, to award individual credit to Venetz, Charpentier, and Agassiz in the formulation of the glacial theory; and the close association of Agassiz and Dana in New England and of Chamberlin and Irving in Wisconsin was undoubtedly helpful in establishing the theory of continental glaciation. From the intimate companionship in field and laboratory of Hutton, Playfair and Hope, arose the profound influence of the Edinburgh school, and the sympathetic coöperation of Powell, Gilbert, and Dutton has given to the world its classics in the genetic study of land forms.

The influence of ideas has been closely associated with clarity, conciseness, and attractiveness of presentation. Hutton is known through Playfair, Agassiz's contributions to glacial geology are known to every student, while Venetz, Charpentier, and Hugi are only names. Cuvier's discourses on dynamical geology were reprinted and translated into English and German, but Lamarck's "Hydrogéologie" is known only to book collectors. The verbose works of Guettard, although carrying the same message as Playfair's "Illustrations" and Desmarest's "Memoirs," are practically unknown, as is also Horace H. Hayden's treatise (1821) on the drift of eastern North America. It has been well said that the world-wide influence of American physiographic teaching is due in no small part to the masterly presentations of Gilbert and Davis.

It is surprising to note the delays, the backward steps, and the duplication of effort resulting from lack of familiarity with the work of the pioneers. Sabine says in 1864:[73]

> "It often happens, not unnaturally, that those who are most occupied with the questions of the day in an advancing science retain but an imperfect recollection of the obligations due to those who laid the first foundations of our subsequent knowledge."

The product of intellectual effort appears to be conditioned by time of planting and character of soil as well as by quantity of seed. For example: Erosion by rivers was as clearly shown by Desmarest as by Dana and Newberry 50 years later. Criteria for the recognition of ancient fluviatile deposits were established by James Deane in 1847 in a study of the Connecticut Valley Triassic. Agassiz's proof that ice is an essential factor in the formation of till is substantially a duplication of Dobson's observations (1826).

The volumes of the Journal with their very large number of articles and reviews dealing with geology show that the interpretation of land forms as products of subaërial erosion began in France and French Switzerland during the later part of the 18th century as a phase of the intellectual emancipation following the Revolution. Scotland and England assumed the leadership for the first half of the 19th century, and the first 100 volumes of the Journal show the profound influence of English and French teaching. In America, independent thinking, early exercised by the few, became general with the establishment of the Federal survey, the increase in university departments, geological societies and periodicals, and has given to Americans the responsibilities of teachers.

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

[1] Wilson, J. W., Bursting of lakes through mountains, this Journal, 3, 253, 1821.

[2] Whitney, J. D., Progress of the Geological Survey of California, this Journal, 38, 263-264, 1864.

[3] Playfair, John, Illustrations of the Huttonian theory of the earth, Edinburgh, 1802.

[4] Kain, J. H., Remarks on the mineralogy and geology of northwestern Virginia and eastern Tennessee, this Journal, **1**, 60-67, 1819.

[5] Hitchcock, Edward, Geology, etc., of regions contiguous to the Connecticut, this Journal, 7, 1-30, 1824.

[6] Buckland, Wm., Reliquiæ diluvianæ, this Journal, **8**, 150, 317, 1824.

[7] Phillips, John, Geology of Yorkshire, this Journal, **21**, 17-20, 1832.

[8] Scrope, G. P., Excavation of valleys, Geol. Soc., London, No. 14, 1830.

[9] Hayes, G. E., Remarks on geology and topography of western New York, this Journal, 35, 88-91, 1839.

[10] Seventh Meeting of the British Association for the Advancement of Science, this Journal, 33, 288, 1838.

[11] Darwin, Charles, Geological observations on the volcanic islands and parts of South America, etc., second part of the Voyage of the "Beagle," during 1832-1836. London, 1844.

[12] Hildreth, S. P., Observations, etc., valley of the Ohio, this Journal, 29, 1-148, 1836.

[13] Geddes, James, Observations on the geological features of the south side of Ontario valley, this Journal, **11**, 213-218, 1826.

[14] Conrad, T. A., Notes on American geology, this Journal, 35, 237-251, 1839.

[15] Warren, G. K., Preliminary report of explorations in Nebraska and Dakota, this Journal, 27, 380, 1859.

[16] Lesley, J. P., Observations on the Appalachian region of southern Virginia, this Journal, 34, review, 413-415, 1862.

[17] Hitchcock, Edward, First anniversary address before the Association of American Geologists, this Journal, **41**, 232-275, 1841.

[18] Dana, J. D., On denudation in the Pacific, this Journal, 9, 48-62, 1850.
————, On the degradation of the rocks of New South Wales and formation of valleys, this Journal, 9, 289-294, 1850.

[19] Hubbard, O. P., On the condition of trap dikes in New Hampshire an evidence and measure of erosion, this Journal, 9, 158-171, 1850.

[20] Hayden, F. V., Some remarks in regard to the period of elevation of the Rocky Mountains, this Journal, 33, 305-313, 1862.

[21] Newberry, J. S., Colorado River of the West, this Journal, 33, review, 387-403, 1862.

[22] Jukes, J. B., Address to the Geological Section of the British Association at Cambridge, Quart. Jour. Geol. Soc., 18, 1862, this Journal, 34, 439, 1862.

[23] Powell, J. W., Exploration of the Colorado River of the West, 1875. For Powell's preliminary article see this Journal, 5, 456-465, 1873.

[24] McGee, W. J., Three formations of the Middle Atlantic slope, this Journal, 35, 120, 328, 367, 448, 1888.

[25] Davis, W. M., Topographic development of the Triassic formation of the Connecticut Valley, this Journal, 37, 423-434, 1889.

[26] Percival, J. G., Geology of Connecticut, 1842.

[27] Kerr, W. C., Origin of some new points in the topography of North Carolina, this Journal, 21, 216-219, 1881.

[28] McGee, W. J., The classification of geographic forms by genesis, Nat. Geogr. Mag., 1, 27-36, 1888.

[29] Davis, W. M., The rivers and valleys of Pennsylvania, Nat. Geogr. Mag., 1, 183-253, 1889.

————, The rivers of northern New Jersey with notes on the classification of rivers in general, ibid., 2, 81-110, 1890.

[30] Silliman, Benjamin, Notice of Horace H. Hayden's geological essays, this Journal, 3, 49, 1821.

[31] Cornelius, Elias, Account of a singular position of a granite rock, this Journal, 2, 200-201, 1820.

[32] Finch, John, On the Celtic antiquities of America, this Journal, 7, 149-161, 1824.

[33] Finch, John, Geological essay on the Tertiary formations in America, this Journal, 7, 31-43, 1824.

[34] Conybeare and Phillips, Outlines of the geology of England and Wales, this Journal, 7, 210, 211, 1824.

[35] Hayden, Horace H., Geological essays, 1-412, 1821, this Journal, 3, 47-57, 1821.

[36] Jackson, C. T., Reports on the geology of the State of Maine, and on the public lands belonging to Maine and Massachusetts, this Journal, 36, 153, 1839.

[37] Gibson, J. B., Remarks on the geology of the lakes and the valley of the Mississippi, this Journal, 29, 201-213, 1836.

[38] Phillips, John, Geology of Yorkshire, this Journal, 21, 14-15, 1832.

[39] Granger, Ebenezer, Notice of a curious fluted rock at Sandusky Bay, Ohio, this Journal, 6, 180, 1823.

[40] Dobson, Peter, Remarks on bowlders, this Journal, 10, 217-218, 1826.

[41] Murchison, R. I., Address at anniversary meeting of the Geological Society of London, this Journal, 43, 200-201, 1842.

[42] Buckland, W., On the evidence of glaciers in Scotland and the north of England, Proc. London Geol. Soc., 3, 1841.

[43] Third annual meeting of the Association of American Geologists and Naturalists, this Journal, 43, 154, 1842; Abstract of proceedings of the fourth session of the Association of American Geologists and Naturalists, ibid., 45, 321, 1843.

[44] Rogers, H. D., Address delivered before Association of American Geologists and Naturalists, this Journal, 47, 275, 1844.

[45] Agassiz, Louis, The erratic phenomena about Lake Superior, this Journal, 10, 83-101, 1850.

[46] Desor, E., On the drift of Lake Superior, this Journal, 13, 93-109, 1852; Post-Pliocene of the southern States, etc., 14, 49-59, 1852.

[47] Dana, J. D., Manual of geology, 546, Philadelphia, 1863.

[48] Dana, J. D., on the Quaternary, or post-Tertiary of the New Haven region, this Journal, 1, 1-5, 1871.

[49] Matthew, G. F., Surface geology of New Brunswick, this Journal, 2, 371-372, 1871.

[50] Maclaren, Charles, The glacial theory of Prof. Agassiz, this Journal, **42**, 365, 1842.
[51] Daly, R. A., Problems of the Pacific Islands, this Journal, **41**, 153-186, 1916.
[52] Catlin, George, Account of a journey to the Côteau des Prairies, this Journal, **38**, 138-146, 1840.
[53] Hilgard, E. W., Remarks on the drift of the western and southern States and its relation to the glacier and ice-berg theories, this Journal, **42**, 343-347, 1866.
[54] Hall, C. E., Glacial phenomena along the Kittatinny or Blue Mountain, Pennsylvania, this Journal, **11**, review, 233, 1876.
[55] Stevens, R. P., On glaciers of the glacial era in Virginia, this Journal, **6**, 371-373, 1873.
[56] Rogers, W. B., On the gravel and cobble-stone deposits of Virginia and the Middle States, Proc. Boston Soc. Nat. Hist., **18**, 1875; this Journal, **11**, 60-61, 1876.
[57] Kerr, W. C., Origin of some new points in the topography of North Carolina, this Journal, **21**, 216-219, 1881.
[58] Gilbert, G. K., On certain glacial and post-glacial phenomena of the Maumee valley, this Journal, **1**, 339-345, 1871.
[59] Chamberlin, T. C., On the geology of eastern Wisconsin, Geol. of Wisconsin, **2**, 1877; this Journal, **15**, 61, 406, 1878.
[60] Chamberlin, T. C., Preliminary paper on the terminal moraine of the second glacial epoch, U. S. Geol. Survey, Third Ann. Rept., 291-402, 1883.
[61] Wright, G. F., Unity of the glacial epoch, this Journal, **44**, 351-373, 1892.
Upham, Warren, The diversity of the glacial drift along its boundary, ibid., **47**, 358-365, 1894.
Wright, G. F., Theory of an interglacial submergence in England, ibid., **43**, 1-8, 1892.
Chamberlin, T. C., Diversity of the glacial period, ibid., **45**, 171-200, 1893.
Dana, J. D., On New England and the upper Mississippi basin in the glacial period, ibid., **46**, 327-330, 1893.
Wright, G. F., Continuity of the glacial period, ibid., **47**, 161-187, 1894.
Chamberlin, T. C. and Leverett, F., Further studies of the drainage features of the upper Ohio basin, ibid., **47**, 247-282, 1894.
[62] Pumpelly, Raphael, Geological researches in China, Japan, and Mongolia, Smithsonian Contributions, No. **202**, 1866.
[63] Kingsmill, T. W., The probable origin of "loess" in North China and eastern Asia, Quart. Jour. Geol. Soc., **27**, No. 108, 1871.
[64] Pumpelly, Raphael, The relation of secular rock-disintegration to loess, glacial drift and rock basins, this Journal, **17**, 135, 1879.
[65] Binney, A., Some geologic features at Natchez on the Mississippi River, Proc. Boston Soc. Nat. Hist., **2**, 126-130, 1848.
[66] Hilgard, E. W., The loess of Mississippi Valley, and the eolian hypothesis, this Journal, **18**, 106-112, 1879.
[67] Chamberlin, T. C., Supplementary hypothesis respecting the origin of the loess of the Mississippi Valley, Jour. Geol., **5**, 795-802, 1897.
[68] Ramsay, A. C., On the glacial origin of certain lakes in Switzerland, the Black Forest, Great Britain, Sweden, North America, and elsewhere, Quart. Jour. Geol. Soc., 1862; this Journal, **35**, 324-345, 1863. Preliminary statements of this theory appeared in 1859 and 1860.
[69] Whittlesey, Charles, Smithsonian Contributions, No. **197**, 1864.
[70] LeConte, Joseph, On some of the ancient glaciers of the Sierras, this Journal, **5**, 325-342, 1873, **10**, 126-139, 1875.
[71] King, Clarence, U. S. Geol. Expl. 40th Par., **1**, 459-529, 1878.
[72] Davis, W. M., Glacial erosion, Proc. Boston Soc. Nat. Hist., **22**, 58, 1882.
[73] Sabine, Sir Edward, Address of the president of the Royal Society, this Journal, **37**, 108, 1864.

ART. IV.—GEOLOGY continued; *The Growth of Knowledge of Earth Structure;* by JOSEPH BARRELL.

INTRODUCTION.

The Intellectual Viewpoint in 1818.

In 1818, the year of the founding of this Journal, the natural sciences were still in their infancy in Europe. Geology was still subordinate to mineralogy, was hardly recognized as a distinct science, and consisted in little more than a description of the character and distribution of minerals and rocks. America was remote from the Old World centers of learning. The energy of the young nation was absorbed in its own expansion, and but a few of those who by aptitude were fitted to increase scientific knowledge were even conscious of the existence of such a field of endeavor. Under these circumstances the educative field open to a journal of science in the United States was an almost virgin soil. Original contributions could most readily be based upon the natural history of the New World, and the founder of the Journal showed insight appreciative of the situation in stating in the "Plan of the Work" in the introduction to the first volume that "It will be a leading object to illustrate AMERICAN NATURAL HISTORY, and especially our MINERALOGY and GEOLOGY.

At this time educated people were still satisfied that the whole knowledge of the origin and development of the earth so far as man could or should know it was embraced in the Book of Genesis. They were inclined to look with misgiving at attempts to directly interrogate the earth as to its history. Philosophers such as Descartes and Liebnitz, the cosmogonists de Maillet and Buffon had been less instrumental in developing science than in fitting a few facts and many speculations to their systems of philosophy. By the opening of the nineteenth century, however, men of learning were coming to appreciate that the way to advance science was to experiment and observe, to collect facts and discourage unfounded speculation. Silliman's insight into the needs of geologic science is shown in the following quotation (**1**, pp. 6, 7, 1818):

"Our geology, also, presents a most interesting field of inquiry. A grand outline has recently been drawn by Mr. Maclure, with a masterly hand, and with a vast extent of personal observation and labour: but to fill up the detail, both observation and labour still more extensive are demanded; nor can the object be effected, till more good geologists are formed, and distributed over our extensive territory.

To account for the formation and changes of our globe, by excursions of the imagination, often splendid and imposing, but usually visionary, and almost always baseless, was, till within half a century, the business of geological speculations; but this research has now assumed a more sober character; the science of geology has been reared upon numerous and accurate observations of *facts;* and standing thus upon the basis of induction, it is entitled to a rank among those sciences which Lord Bacon's Philosophy has contributed to create. Geological researches are now prosecuted by actually exploring the structure and arrangement of districts, countries, and continents. The obliquity of the strata of most rocks, causing their edges to project in many places above the surface; their exposure, in other instances on the sides or tops of hills and mountains; or, in consequence of the intersection of their strata, by roads, canals, and river-courses, or by the wearing of the ocean; or their direct perforation, by the shafts of mines; all these causes, and others, afford extensive means of reading the interior structure of the globe.

The outlines of American geology appear to be particularly grand, simple, and instructive; and a knowledge of the important facts, and general principles of this science, is of vast practical use, as regards the interests of agriculture, and the research for useful minerals. Geological and mineralogical descriptions, and maps of particular states and districts, are very much needed in the United States; and to excite a spirit to furnish them will form one leading object of this Journal."

The Prolonged Influence of outgrown Ideas.

Those interested in any branch of science should, as a matter of education, read the history of that special subject. A knowledge of the stages by which the present development has been attained is essential to give a proper perspective to the literature of each period. Much of the existing terminology is an inheritance from the first attempts at nomenclature, or may rest upon theories long discarded. Popular notions at variance with advanced teaching are often the forgotten inheritance of a past generation.

Gneiss, trap, and Old Red Sandstone are names which we owe to Werner. The "Tertiary period" and "drift" are relics of an early terminology. The geology of tourist circulars still speaks of canyons as made by "convulsions of nature." Popular writers still attribute to geologists a belief in a molten earth covered by a thin crust. Within the present century the eighteenth century speculations of Werner and his predecessors, postulating a supposed capacity of water to seep through the crust into the interior of the earth, resulting in a hypothetical progressive desiccation of the surface, views long abandoned by most modern geologists, have been revived by an astronomer into a theory of "planetology."

A review of the literature of a century brings to light certain tendencies in the growth of science. Each decade has witnessed a larger accumulation of observed facts and a fuller classification of these fundamental data, but the pendulum of interpretative theory swings away from the path of progress, now to one side, now to the other, testing out the proper direction. For decades the understanding of certain classes of facts may be actually retrogressive. A retrospect shows that certain minds, keen and unfettered by a prevailing theory, have in some directions been in advance of their generation. But the judgment of the times had not sufficient basis in knowledge for the separation and acceptance of their truer views from the contemporaneous tangle of false interpretations.

An interesting illustration of these statements regarding the slow settling of opinion may be cited in regard to the significance of the dip of the Triassic formations of the eastern United States. The strata of the Massachusetts-Connecticut basin possess a monoclinal easterly dip which averages about 20 degrees to the east. Those of the New Jersey-Pennsylvania-Virginia basin possess a similar dip to the northwest. Both basins are cut by great faults and the dip is now accepted by practically all geologists as due to rotation of the crust blocks away from a geanticlinal axis between the two basins. Edward Hitchcock, whose work from the first shows an interpretative quality in advance of his time, states in 1823 (**6**, 74) regarding the dip of the Connecticut valley rocks:

"There is reason to believe that Mount Toby, the strata of which are almost horizontal, exhibits the original dip of these rocks, and that those cases in which they are more highly inclined are the result of some Plutonian convulsion. Such irregularity in the dip of coal fields is no uncommon occurrence."

In Hitchcock's Geology of Massachusetts, published in 1833, ten years later, geological structure sections of the Connecticut Valley rocks are given, the facts are discussed in detail and the dip ascribed to the elevatory forces. He says (l. c., pp. 213, 223):

"If it were possible to doubt that the new red sandstone formation was deposited from water, the surface of some of the layers of this shale would settle the question demonstrably. For it exhibits precisely those gentle undulations, which the loamy bottom of every river with a moderate current, presents. (No. 198.) But such a surface could never have been formed while the layers had that high inclination to the horizon, which many of them now present: so that we have here, also, decisive evidence that they have been elevated subsequently to their deposition. . . .

The objection of a writer in the American Journal of Science, that such a height of waters as would deposit Mount Toby, must have produced a lake nearly to the upper part of New Hampshire, in the Connecticut Valley, and thus have caused the same sandstone to be produced higher up that valley than Northfield, loses its force, when it is recollected that this formation was deposited before its strata were elevated. For the elevating force undoubtedly changed the relative level of different parts of the country. In this case, the disturbing force must have acted beneath the primary rocks. And besides, we have good evidence which will be shown by and by, that our new red sandstone was formed beneath the ocean. We cannot then reason on this subject from present levels."

In 1840, H. D. Rogers, a geologist who has acquired a more widely known name than Hitchcock, but who in reality showed an inferior ability in interpretation, made the following statements in explanation of the regional monoclinal dip of the New Jersey Triassic rocks averaging 15 to 20 degrees to the northwest:[1]

"Their materials give evidence of having been swept into this estuary, or great ancient river, from the south and southeast, by a current producing an almost universal dip of the beds towards the northwest, a feature clearly not caused by any uplifting agency, but assumed originally at the time of their

[1] H. D. Rogers, Geology of New Jersey, Final Report, p. 115, 1840.

deposition, in consequence of the setting of the current from the opposite or southeastern shore.''

In 1842, at the third annual meeting of the Association of American Geologists both H. D. and W. B. Rogers argued (**43**, 170, 1842) against Sir Charles Lyell and E. Hitchcock that the present dip of the Triassic was the original slope of deposition, stating among other reasons that the footprints impressed upon the sediments often showed a slipping and a pushing of the soft clay in the direction of the downhill slope. In 1858 H. D. Rogers still held to the same views of original dip,[2] notwithstanding that a moderate amount of observation on the mud-cracked and rain-pitted layers would have supplied the proof that such must have dried as horizontal surfaces. The idea of inclined deposition is not yet wholly dead as it has been suggested more than once within the present generation as a means of escaping from the necessity of accepting the very great thicknesses of this and similar formations. Thus, as Brögger has remarked in another connection,—the ghosts of the old time stand ever ready to reappear.

In the present essay on the rise of structural geology as reflected through a century of publication in this Journal, attention will be given especially to two fields, that of structures connected with igneous rocks and that of structures connected with mountain making, and emphasis will be placed upon the growth of understanding rather than upon the accumulating knowledge of details. The growth in both of these divisions of structural geology is well illustrated in the volumes of the Journal.

Structures and Relationships of Igneous Rocks.

Opposed Interpretations of Plutonists and Neptunists.

During the first quarter of the nineteenth century the geologic controversy between the Plutonists and Neptunists was at its height; the Plutonists, following the Scotchman, Hutton, holding to the igneous origin of basalt and granite, the Neptunists, after their German master, Werner of Freiberg, maintaining that these rocks had been precipitated from a primitive universal ocean. The Plutonists, although time has shown them to

[2] H. D. Rogers, Geology of Pennsylvania, vol. 2, pt. II, pp. 761, 762, 1858.

have been correct in all essential particulars, were for a generation submerged under the propaganda carried forward by the disciples of Werner. The "Illustrations of the Huttonian Theory of the Earth," a remarkable classic, worthy of being studied to-day as well as a century ago, was published in 1802 by John Playfair, professor of mathematics in the University of Edinburgh and a friend of Hutton, who had died five years previously. This volume was opposed by Robert Jameson, professor of natural philosophy in the same university, who had absorbed the ideas of the German school while at Freiberg and published in 1808 a volume on the "Elements of Geognosy," in which the philosophy of Werner is followed throughout and even obsidian and pumice are argued to be aqueous precipitates. The authority of the Wernerian autocracy caused its nomenclature to be adopted in the new world, but strong evidence against its interpretations was to be found in the actual structural relations displayed by the igneous rocks.

Contributions on Volcanic and Intrusive Rocks.

The accumulation and study of facts constituted the best cure for an erroneous theory. The publications of the Journal contributed toward this end by articles along several lines, the most original contributions were those which dealt with the areal and structural geology of eastern North America, but equally valuable at that time for the broadening of scientific interest were the studies on the volcanic activities of the Hawaiian Islands, published through many years. Perhaps most valuable from the educative standpoint were the extensive republications in the Journal of the more important European researches, making them accessible to American readers. In volume **13** (1828), for example, a digest of Scrope's work on volcanoes is given, covering forty pages; and of Daubeny on active and extinct volcanoes, running over seventy-five pages and extending into vol. **14**. Through these comprehensive studies the nature of volcanic action became generally understood during the first half of the nineteenth century and the original publications in the Journal were valuable in giving a knowledge of the activities of the Hawaiian volcanoes.

Early in the nineteenth century the whole of America still remained to be explored by the geologist. The regions adjacent to the centers of learning were among the first to receive attention and the Triassic basin of Connecticut and Massachusetts yielded information in regard to the nature of igneous intrusion. This basin, of unmetamorphic shales and sandstones, is occupied by the Connecticut River except at its southern end. The Formation contains within it sills, dikes, and outflows of basaltic rocks which because of their superior resistance to erosion constitute prominent hills, in places bounded by cliffs.

Silliman in 1806[3] described East Rock, New Haven, Connecticut, as a whinstone, trap, or basalt, and accounted for its presence on the supposition that it had:

> "actually been melted in the bowels of the earth and ejected among the superior strata by the force of subterraneous fire, but never erupted like lava, cooling under the pressure of the superincumbent strata and therefore compact or nonvesicular, its present form being due to erosion."

In these conclusions Silliman was correct. With but a limited amount of experience he was able to discriminate between the intrusive and effusive rocks and saw that the prominence of this hill was due to the erosion of the sediments which once surrounded it.

An extensive paper on the geology of this region was published by Edward Hitchcock in 1823,[4] then just thirty years of age. This paper shows the evidence of extensive field observations, and his comments in regard to the trap and granite are of interest. Hitchcock gives five pages to the subject of "Greenstone Dykes in Old Red Sandstone" (**6**, 56-60, 1823) and makes the following statements:

> "Professor Silliman conducted me to an interesting locality of these in East-Haven. They occur on the main road from New-Haven to East-Haven, less than half a mile from Tomlinson's bridge . . . (p. 56).
>
> They are an interesting feature in our geology, and deserve more attention; and it is peculiarly fortunate that they should be situated so near a geological school and the first mineral cabinet in our country . . . (p. 58).

[3] Connecticut Academy of Arts and Sciences, 1810; quoted by G. P. Merrill in Contributions to the History of North American geology, Ann. Rpt. Smithsonian Institution for 1904, p. 216.

[4] A Sketch of the geology, mineralogy, and scenery of the regions contiguous to the river Connecticut; with a geological map and drawings of organic remains; and occasional botanical notices, this Journal, **6**, 1-86, 201-236, 1823; **7**, 1-30, 1824.

Origin of Greenstone.

Does the greenstone of the Connecticut afford evidence in favour of the Wernerian or of the Huttonian theory of its origin? Averse as I feel to taking a side in this controversy, I cannot but say, that the man who maintains, in its length and breadth, the original hypothesis of Werner in regard to the aqueous deposition of trap, will find it for his interest, if he wishes to keep clear of doubts, not to follow the example of D'Aubuisson, by going forth to examine the greenstone of this region, lest, like that geologist, he should be compelled, not only to abandon his theory, but to write a book against it. Indeed, when surveying particular portions of this rock, I have sometimes thought Bakewell did not much exaggerate when he said in regard to Werner's hypothesis, that, 'it is hardly possible for the human mind to invent a system more repugnant to existing facts.'

On the other hand, the Huttonian would doubtless have his heart gladdened, and his faith strengthened by a survey of the greater part of this rock. As he looked at the dikes of the old red sandstone, he would almost see the melted rock forcing its way through the fissures; and when he came to the amygdaloidal, especially to that variety which resembles lava, he might even be tempted to apply his thermometer to it, in the suspicion that it was not yet quite cool . . . (p. 59).

By treating the subject in this manner I mean no disrespect to any of the distinguished men who have adopted either side of this question. To President Cooper especially, who regards the greenstone of the Connecticut as volcanic, I feel much indebted for the great mass of facts he has collected on the subject. And were I to adopt any hypothesis in regard to the origin of our greenstone, it would be one not much different from his" (p. 60).

By 1833 and more clearly in 1841 Hitchcock had come to recognize the distinction between intrusive and extrusive basaltic sheets in the Connecticut valley. Dawson also came to regard the Acadian sheets as extrusive, and Emerson in 1882 recalled again the evidence for Massachusetts (**24**, 195, 1882). Davis, however, went a step further and by applying distinctive criteria not only separated intrusive and extrusive sheets throughout the whole Triassic area, but by using basalt flows as stratigraphic horizons unraveled for the first time the system of faults which cut the Triassic system. His preliminary paper (**24**, 345, 1882) was followed by many others.

From 1880 onward begins the period of precise structural field work. The older geologists mostly conceived their work after reconnaissance methods. From 1870 to

1880 a group of younger men entered geology who paid close attention to the solid geometry and mechanics of earth structures. In their hands physical and dynamical geology began to assume the standing of a precise and quantitative science. In the field of intrusive rocks the opening classic was by Gilbert, who in his volume on the geology of the Henry Mountains, published in 1880, made laccoliths known to the world. With the beginning of this new period we may well leave the subject of intrusive rocks and turn to the progress of knowledge in regard to those deeper and vaster bodies now known as batholiths. These, since erosion does not expose their bottoms, Daly separates from intrusives and classifies as subjacent. The batholiths consist typically of granite and granodiorite, and introduce us to the problem of granite.

Views on the Structural Relations of Granite.

Conscientious field observations were sufficient to establish the true nature of the intrusive and extrusive rocks. The case was very different, however, with the nature and relations of the great bodies of granite, which may be taken in the structural sense as including all the visibly crystalline acidic and intermediate rocks, known more specifically as granite, syenite, and diorite.

The large bodies of granite, structurally classified as stocks, or batholiths, commonly show wedges, tongues, or dike networks cutting into the surrounding rocks. The relations, however, are not all so simple as this. Granites may cover vast areas, they are usually the older rocks, they are generally associated with regional metamorphism of the intruded formations, which metamorphism is now understood to be due chiefly to the heat and mineralizers given off from the granite magma, associated with mashing and shearing of the surrounding rocks. The granite was often injected in successive stages which alternated with the stages of regional mashing. A parallel or gneissic structure is thus developed which is in part due to mashing, in part to igneous injection. Where the ascent of heat into the cover is excessive, or where blocks are detached and involved in the magma, the latter may dissolve some of the older cover rocks, even where these were of sedimentary origin.

Thus between mashing, injection, and assimilation the genetic relationships of a batholith to its surroundings are in many instances obscure. Nevertheless, attention to the larger relations shows that the molten magma originated at great depths in the earth's crust, far below the bottoms of geosynclines, and consists of primary igneous material, not of fused sediments. From those depths it has ascended by various processes into the outer crust, where it crystallized into granite masses, to be later exposed by erosion. The amount of material which can be dissolved and assimilated must be small in comparison with the whole body of the magma. The original composition of the magma was probably basic, nearer that of a basalt than that of a granite. Differentiation of the molten mass is thought to cause the upper and lower parts of the chamber to become unlike, the lighter and more acidic portion giving rise to the great bodies of granite. With the exception of certain border zones the whole, however, is regarded as igneous rock risen from the depths.

The complex border relations, but more particularly certain academic hypotheses, led to a period of misunderstanding and retrogression in regard to the nature of granites. It constitutes an interesting illustration of the possibility of a wrong theory leading interpretation astray, chiefly through the magnification of minor into major factors. This history illustrates the dangers of qualitative science as compared to quantitative, of a single hypothesis as matched against the method of multiple working hypothesis. This flux of opinion in regard to the nature of granites may be traced through the volumes of the Journal.

E. Hitchcock in 1824 (**6**, 12) noted that in places granite appeared bedded, but in other places existed in veins which cut obliquely across the strata. Silliman, although careful not to deny the aqueous origin of some basalts, yet held that the field evidence of New England indicates for that region the igneous or Huttonian origin of trap and granite (**7**, 238, 1824).

In 1832 the following article by Hitchcock appeared in the Journal (**22**, 1, 70):

Report on the Geology of Massachusetts; examined under the direction of the Government of that State, during the years

1830 and 1831; by Edward Hitchcock, Prof. of Chemistry and Natural History in Amherst College.

A footnote adds that this is "published in this Journal by consent of the Government of Massachusetts, and intended to appear also in a separate form, and to be distributed among the members of the Legislature of the same State, about the time of its appearance in this work. It is, we believe, the first example in this country, of the geological survey of an entire State."

This article includes a geological map of the state and covers the subject of economic geology. The report brought forth the following remarks from a French reviewer in the *Revue Encyclopédique,* Aug. 1832, quoted in the Journal (**23**, 389, 1833):

"A single glance at this report, is sufficient to convince any one of the utility of such a work, to the state which has undertaken it; and to regret that there is so very small a part of the French territory, whose geological constitution is as well known to the public, as is now the state of Massachusetts. France has the greater cause to regret her being distanced in this race by America, from her having a corps of mining engineers, who if they had the means, would, in a very short time furnish a work of the same kind, still more complete, of each of the departments."

The complete report published in 1833 is a work of 700 pages. Pages 465 to 517 are devoted to the subject of granite. Numerous detailed sketches are given showing contact relations. Nine pages are given to theoretical considerations and many lines of proof are given that granite is an igneous rock, molten from the internal heat of the earth, and intruded into the sedimentary strata. His statement is the clearest published in the world, so far as the writer is aware, up to that date, and marks Edward Hitchcock as one of the leading geologists of his generation in Europe as well as America. Unfortunately his views were largely lost to sight during the following generation.

In 1840 the first American edition of Mantell's Wonders of Geology gave currency to the idea that granite is proved to be of all geological ages up to the Tertiary (**39**, 6, 1840). In 1843 J. D. Dana pointed out (**45**, 104) that schistosity was no evidence of sedimentary origin. He regarded most granites as igneous as shown by their structural relations, but considers that some may have had a sedimentary origin.

Rise and Decline of the Metamorphic Theory of Granite.

Up to 1860 granite was regarded on the basis of the facts of the field as essentially an intrusive rock, but gneiss as a metamorphic product mostly of sedimentary origin. It seemed as though sound methods of research and interpretation were securely established. Nevertheless, a new era of speculation and a modified Wernerism arose at that time with a paper by T. Sterry Hunt, marking a retrogression in the theory of granite which lasted until his death in 1892.

In November, 1859, Hunt read before the Geological Society of London a paper on "Some Points in Chemical Geology" in which he announced that igneous rocks are in all cases simply fused and displaced sediments, the fusion taking place by the rise of the earth's internal heat into deeply buried and water-soaked masses of sediments (see **30**, 133, 1860). The germ of this idea of aqueo-igneous fusion was far older, due to Babbage and John Herschel, neither of them geologists, but such sweeping extensions of it had never before been published. Hunt had the advantage of a wide acquaintanceship with geological literature and chemistry. He wrote plausibly on chemical and theoretical geology, but his views were not controlled by careful field observations. In fact he wrote confidently on regions which apparently he had never seen and where a limited amount of field work would have shown him to have been fundamentally in error. A man of egotistical temperament, he sought to establish priority for himself in many subjects and in order to cover the field made many poorly founded assertions. Building on to another Wernerian idea, he held that many metamorphic minerals had a chronologic value comparable to fossils—staurolite for example indicating a pre-Silurian age—and on this basis divided the crystalline rocks into five series. Although there is much of value buried in Hunt's work it is difficult to disentangle it, with the result that his writings were a disservice to the science of geology. Although carrying much weight in his lifetime, they have passed with his death nearly into oblivion.

Marcou, with a limited knowledge of American geology, and but little respect for the opinions of others, had published a geologic map of the United States containing gross errors. In support of his views he read in November, 1861, a paper on the Taconic and Lower Silurian Rocks of Vermont and Canada. In the following year he was severely reviewed by "T," who states positively in controverting Marcou (**33**, 282, 283, 1862) that "the granites (of the Green Mountains) are evidently strata altered in place."

"Mr. Marcou should further be informed that the granites of the Alpine summits, instead of being, as was once supposed, eruptive rocks, are now known to be altered strata of newer Secondary and Tertiary age. A simple structure holds good in the British Islands, where as Sir Roderick Murchison has shown in his recent Geological map of Scotland, Ben Nevis and Ben Lawers are found to be composed of higher strata, lying in synclinals. This great law of mountain structure would alone lead us to suppose that the gneiss of the Green mountains, instead of being at the base, is really at the summit of the series.

. . .

We cannot here stop to discuss Mr. Marcou's remark about 'the unstratified and oldest crystalline rocks of the White mountains' which he places beneath the lower Taconic series. Mr. Lesley has shown that these granites are stratified, and with Mr. Hunt, regards them as of Devonian Age. (This Journal, vol. **31**, p. 403.) Mr. Marcou has come among us with notions of mountains upheaved by intrusive granites, and similar antiquated traditions, now, happily for science, well nigh forgotten."

It is seen that Marcou, notwithstanding the general character of his work, happened to be nearer right in some matters than were his critics, and that "T" had adopted to the limit the views of Hunt.

The recovery of geology from this period of confusion was partly owing to the slow accumulation of opposed facts; especially to a recognition of the fact that the overplaced relation of the granite gneisses in western Scotland was due to great overthrusts; also to the evidence of the clearly intrusive nature of many of the Cordilleran granites. The recovery of a sounder theory was hastened, however, by the application of criticisms by J. D. Dana in the Journal. In 1866 (**42**, 252) Dana pointed out that sedimentary rocks in Pennsylvania, in Nova Scotia, and other regions which had been buried to a depth of at least 16,000 feet are not metamorphic. Mere depth of burial of sediments was not sufficient therefore to produce metamorphism and aqueo-igneous fusion. The baseless and speculative character of the use of minerals as an index of age and of Hunt's interpretation of New England geology in general was shown by Dana in 1872 (**3**, 91). The following year Dana pointed out clearly that igneous eruptions in general have been derived from a deep-seated source and did not come from the aqueo-igneous fusion of sediments. As to gradations between true igneous rocks and fused and displaced sediments he makes the following statements (**6**, 114, 1873):

"Again, the plastic rock-material that may be derived from the fusion or semifusion of the supercrust, (that is, of rocks originally of sedimentary origin,) gives rise to "igneous" rocks often not distinguishable from other igneous rocks, when it is ejected through fissures far from its place of origin; while crystalline rocks are simply *metamorphic* if they remain in their original relations to the associated rocks, or nearly so.

Between these latter igneous rocks and the metamorphic there may be indefinite gradations, as claimed by Hunt. But if our reasonings are right, the great part of igneous rocks can be proved to have had no such supercrust origin. The argument from the presence of moisture or of hydrous minerals in such rocks in favor of their origin from the fusion of sediments has been shown to be invalid."

The injected marginal rocks and the post-intrusive metamorphism of most of the New England granites has, however, obscured more or less their real igneous nature so that the gradation from metamorphic sediments through igneous gneisses to granites could be read in either direction. These features misled Dana who accepted the prevailing idea of the general metamorphic origin of granite. Dana makes the following statement (**6**, 164, 1873):

"But Hunt is right in holding that in general granite and syenite (the quartz-bearing syenite) are undoubtedly metamorphic rocks where not vein-formations, as I know from the study of many examples of them in New England; and the veins are results of infiltration through heated moisture from the rocks adjoining some part of the opened fissures they fill."

Granite, although regarded at this time as the extreme of the metamorphic series and originating from sediments, was looked upon as typically Archean in age, though in some cases younger. Such a doctrine permitted such extreme misinterpretations as that of

Clarence King and S. F. Emmons on the nature of the intrusive granite of the Little Cottonwood canyon in the Wahsatch Range. This body cuts across 30,000 feet of Paleozoic rocks and to the careful observer, as later admitted by Emmons, shows clear evidence of its transgressive nature. But at that time it was generally considered that granite mountains were capable of resisting the erosion of all geological time. Consequently it did not seem incredible to King and his associates that here a great granite range of Archean origin had stood up through Paleozoic time until gradual subsidence had permitted it to be buried beneath 30,000 feet of sediments.[5]

It may seem to the present day reader that such a misinterpretation, doing violence to fundamental geologic knowledge as now recognized, was inexcusable; but in the light of the history of geology as here detailed it is seen to have been the interpretation natural to that time. It is true that a careful examination of the facts of that very field would have proved the post-Paleozoic and intrusive nature of that great granite body now known as the Little Cottonwood batholith, but Emmons has explained the rapid and partial nature of the observations which they were compelled to make in order to keep up to their schedule of progress (**16**, 139, 1903).

Whitney had found some years earlier that the granites of the Sierra Nevada were igneous rocks intrusive into the Triassic and Jurassic strata. The Lake Superior geologists began to show in the eighties that granite was there an intrusive igneous rock. R. D. Irving and Wadsworth noted these relations. Lawson in 1887 pointed out emphatically (**33**, 473) that the granites of the Rainy Lake region, although basal, were younger than the schists which lay above them. The granite-gneisses he held were of clearly the same igneous origin as the granites and neither gave any field evidence of being fused and displaced sediments. From this time forward the truly igneous nature of granite became increasingly accepted until now the notion of its being made of sedimentary rocks softened and recrystallized by the rise of the isogeotherms through deep burial is as obsolete as the still older doctrine of the Neptunists that

[5] Clarence King, U. S. Geol. Exploration of the Fortieth Parallel, vol. 1, pp. 16, 44-48, 1878.

granite was laid down as a crystalline precipitate on the floor of the primitive ocean.

The recognition of the truly igneous nature of granites has been followed in the present generation by a series of studies on their structural relations and mode of genesis. A number of important initial articles on various aspects of structure and contact relations have appeared in the Journal, but this sketch of the history of the subject may well stop with the introduction to this modern period.

Orogenic Structures.

Views of Plutonists and Neptunists.

Orogenic structures are, as the name implies, those connected with the birth of mountains. Nearly synonymous terms are deformative or secondary structures. On a small scale this division embraces the phenomena exposed in the rock ledge or quarry face, or in the dips and dislocations varying from one exposure to another. These structures include faults, folds, and foliation. On a larger scale are included the relations of the different ranges of a mountain system to each other, relations to previous geologic history, relations to the earth as a whole, and to the forces which have generated the structures.

In order to see the stage of development of this subject in 1818 and its progress as reflected through the publications of a century, more particularly in this Journal, it is desirable to turn again to those two treatises emanating from Edinburgh at the beginning of the nineteenth century and representing two opposite schools of thought, the Plutonists and Neptunists.

Playfair, in 1802, devotes nineteen pages to the subject of the inflection and elevation of strata.[6] He places emphasis on the characteristic parallelism of the strike of the folds throughout a region, as shown through the intersection of the folds by a horizontal plane of erosion. He contrasts this with the arches shown in a transverse section and enlarges on our ability to study the deeply buried strata through the denudation of the folded structure. He argues from these relations that the structures can not be explained by the vague appeal of the

[6] Illustrations of the Huttonian Theory of the Earth, pp. 219-238, 1802.

Neptunists to forces of crystallization, to slopes of original deposition, or to sinking in of the roofs of caverns. The causes he argues were heat combined with pressure. As to the directions in which the pressure acted he is not altogether clear, but apparently regards the pressure as acting in upward thrusts against the sedimentary planes, the latter yielding as warped surfaces. His method of presentation is that of inductive reasoning from facts, but he stopped short of the conception of horizontal compression through terrestrial contraction.

Jameson, professor of natural history in the same university, in 1808 contemptuously ignores the work of Hutton and Playfair in what he calls the "*monstrosities* known under the name of Theories of the Earth." In a couple of pages he confuses and dismisses the whole subject of deformation. He states:[7]

"It is therefore a fact, that all inclined strata, with a very few exceptions, have been formed so originally, and do not owe their inclination to a subsequent change.

When we examine the structure of a mountain, we must be careful that our observations be not too micrological, otherwise we shall undoubtedly fail in acquiring a distinct conception of it. This will appear evident when we reflect that the geognostic features of Nature are almost all on the great scale. In no case is this rule to be more strictly followed than in the examination of the stratified structure.

By not attending to this mode of examination, geognosts have fallen into numberless errors, and have frequently given to extensive tracts of country a most irregular and confused structure. Speculators building on these errors have represented the whole crust of the globe as an irregular and unseemly mass. It is indeed surprising, that men possessed of any knowledge of the beautiful harmony that prevails in the structure of organic beings could for a moment believe it possible, that the great fabric of the globe itself,—that magnificent display of Omnipotence,—should be destitute of all regularity in its structure, and be nothing more than a heap of ruins."

This was the attitude of a leader of British opinion toward the subject of deformational geology from which the infant science had to recover before progress could be made. The early maps were essentially mineralogical and lithological. The order of superposition and the consequent sequence of age was regarded as settled by Werner in Germany and not requiring investigation in

[7] Robert Jameson, Elements of Geognosy, pp. 55-57, 1808.

America. The early examples of structure were sections drawn with exaggerated vertical scales and those of Maclure do not show detail.

Recognition of Appalachian Structures.

Following the founding of the Journal in 1818 there is observable a growth in the quality and detail of geological mapping. Dr. Aiken, professor of natural philosophy and chemistry in Mt. St. Mary's College, published in the Journal in 1834 (**26**, 219) a vertical section extending between Baltimore and Wheeling, a distance of nearly 250 miles, on a scale of about 7 miles per inch. The succession of rocks is carefully shown and the direction of dip, but no attempt is made to show the underground relations, the stratigraphic sequence, and the folded structures which are so clear in that Appalachian section. The text also shows that the author had not recognized the folded structure. Furthermore, where the folds cease at the Alleghany mountain front, the flat strata are shown as resting unconformably on the folded rocks to the east.

R. C. Taylor, geologist, civil and mining engineer, was from 1830 to 1835 the leading student of Pennsylvanian geology as shown by the publication in 1835 of four papers aggregating over 80 pages in the Transactions of the Geological Society of Pennsylvania. His work is noticeable for accuracy in detail and no doubt was influential in setting a high standard for the state geological survey which immediately followed.

H. D. and W. B. Rogers have been given credit in this country, and in Europe also, as being the leading expounders of Appalachian structure. Merrill speaks of H. D. Rogers as unquestionably the leading structural geologist of his time.[8] To the writer, this attributed position appears to be due to his opportunities rather than to scientific acumen. The magnificent but readily decipherable folded structure of Pennsylvania, the relationships of coal and iron to this structure, the considerable sums of money appropriated, and the work of a corps of able assistants were factors which made it comparatively easy to reach important results. In ability to

[8] G. P. Merrill, Contributions to the History of American Geology. Report of the U. S. National Museum for 1904, p. 328.

weigh facts and interpret them Edward Hitchcock showed much more insight than H. D. Rogers, while in the philosophic and comprehensive aspects of the subject J. D. Dana far outranks him.

H. D. Rogers in his first report on the geological survey of New Jersey, 1836, recognizes that the Cambro-Silurian limestones (lower Secondary limestones) were deposited as nearly horizontal beds and the ridges of pre-Cambrian gneiss (Primary) had been pushed up as anticlinal axes (p. 128). He also clearly recognized the distinction between slaty cleavage and true dip as shown in the Ordovician slates (p. 97). Between 1836 and 1840 he had learned a great deal on the nature of folds as is shown in his Pennsylvania report for 1839 and the structure sections in his New Jersey report for 1840.

R. C. Taylor, who had now become president of the board of directors of the Dauphin and Susquehanna Coal Company, published in the Journal in 1841 (**41**, 80) an important paper entitled "Notice of a Model of the Western portion of the Schuylkill or Southern Coal Field of Pennsylvania, in illustration of an Address to the Association of American Geologists, on the most appropriate modes for representing Geological Phenomena." In this paper he calls attention to the value of modeling as a means of showing true relations in three dimensions. He condemns the custom prevalent among geologists of showing structure sections with an exaggerated vertical scale with its resultant topographic and structural distortions. Taylor was widely acquainted with the structure of Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia.

Nature of Forces Producing Folding.

In 1825 Dr. J. H. Steele sent to Professor Silliman two detailed drawings and description of an overturned fold at Saratoga Lake, New York. As to the significance of this feature Steele makes the following statement (**9**, 3, 1825):—

"It is impossible to examine this locality without being strongly impressed with the belief that the position which the strata here assume could not have been effected in any other way than by a power operating from beneath upwards and at the same time possessing a progressive force; something analogous to what takes place in the breaking up of the ice of large rivers. The continued swelling of the stream first overcomes the resistance of its frozen surface and having elevated it to a certain extent, it is forced into a vertical position, or thrown over upon the unbroken stratum behind, by the progressive power of the current.''

So far as the present writer is aware this is the first recognition in geological literature of the evidence of a horizontally compressive and overturning force as a cause of folding.

To E. Hitchcock belongs the credit of being the first to describe overturning and inversion of strata on a large scale, but without clearly recognizing it as such. In western Massachusetts metamorphism is extreme in the lower Paleozoic rocks in the vicinity of the overthrust mass of Archean granite-gneiss which constitutes the Hoosic range. The Paleozoic rocks of the valley to the west are overturned and appear to dip beneath the older rocks. Farther west the metamorphism fades out and the series assumes a normal position. Such an inverted relation, up to that time unknown, is described in 1833 as follows by Hitchcock in his Geology of Massachussetts (pp. 297, 298):

''But a singular anomaly in the superposition of the series of rocks above described, presents a great difficulty in this case. The strata of these rocks almost uniformly dip to the east: that is, the newer rocks seem to crop out beneath the older ones; so that the saccharine limestone, associated with gneiss in the eastern part of the range, seems to occupy the uppermost place in the series. Now as superposition is of more value in determining the relative ages of rocks than their mineral characters, must we not conclude that the rocks, as we go westerly from Hoosac mountain, do in fact belong to older groups? The petrifactions which some of them contain, and their decidedly fragmentary character, will not allow such a supposition to be indulged for a moment. It is impossible for a geologist to mistake the evidence, which he sees at almost every step, that he is passing from older to newer formations, just as soon as he begins to cross the valley of Berkshire towards the west. We are driven then to the alternative of supposing, either that there must be a deception in the apparent outcrop of the newer rocks from beneath the older, or that the whole series of strata has been actually thrown over, so as to bring the newest rocks at the bottom. The latter supposition is so improbable that I cannot at present admit it.''

Hitchcock tried to reconcile the evidence by a series of unconformities and inclined deposition, but finds the solution unsatisfactory.

In this same year, 1833, Elie de Beaumont, a distinguished French geologist, published his theory of the origin of mountains. He advanced the idea that since the globe was cooling it was condensing, and the crust, already cool, must suffer compression in adjusting itself to the shrinking molten interior. He concluded from the evidence shown in Europe that the collapse of the crust occurred violently and rapidly at widely spaced intervals of time. This hypothesis introduced the idea of mountain folding by horizontal compressive forces. The theoretical paper of de Beaumont, together with further observations by Hitchcock and others, led the latter in 1841 to a final belief in the inversion of strata on a large scale by horizontal compression. His conclusions are expressed in an important paper published in the Journal (**41**, 268, 1841) and given on April 8, 1841, as the First Anniversary Presidential Address before the Association of American Geologists. This comprehensive summary of American geology occupies 43 pages. Three pages are given to the inverted structure of the Appalachians from which the following paragraphs may be quoted:

"We have all read of the enormous dislocations and inversions of the strata of the Alps; and similar phenomena are said to exist in the Andes. Will it be believed, that we have an example in the United States on a still more magnificent scale than any yet described? . . .

Let us suppose the strata between Hudson and Connecticut rivers, while yet in the plastic state, (and the supposition may be extended to any other section across this belt of country from Canada to Alabama,) and while only slightly elevated, were acted upon by a force at the two rivers, exerted in opposite directions. If powerful enough, it might cause them to fold up into several ridges; and if more powerful along the western than the eastern side, they might fall over so as to take an inverted dip, without producing any remarkable dislocations, while subsequent denudation would give to the surface its present outline. . . .

Fourthly, we should readily admit that such a plication and inversion of the strata might take place on a small scale. If for instance, we were to press against the extremities of a series of plastic layers two feet long, they could easily be made to assume the position into which the rocks under consideration are thrown. Why then should we not be equally ready to admit that this might as easily be done, over a breadth of fifty miles, and a length of twelve hundred, provided we can find in nature, forces sufficiently powerful? Finally, such forces do exist in nature, and have often been in operation."

The advanced nature of these conceptions may be appreciated by contrasting them with those put forth by H. D. and W. B. Rogers on April 29, 1842, before the third annual meeting of the same body (**43**, 177, 1842) and repeated by them before the British Association at Manchester two months later. In their own words, the Rogers brothers from their studies on the folds shown in Pennsylvania and Virginia, conceived mountain folds in general to be produced by much elastic vapor escaping through many parallel fissures formed in succession, producing violent propulsive wave oscillations on the surface of the fluid earth beneath a thin crust. Thus actual billows are assumed to have rolled along through the crust. They did not think tangential pressure alone could produce folds. Such pressures were regarded as secondary, produced by the propagation of the waves and the only expression of tangential forces which they admitted was to fix the folds and hold them in position after the violent oscillation had subsided (**44**, 360, 1843). The leading British geologists De la Beche and Sedgwick criticized adversely this remarkable theory, stating that they could see no such analogy in mountain folds to violent earthquake waves and that in their opinion the slow application of tangential force was sufficient to account for the phenomena (**44**, 362-365, 1843).

H. D. Rogers in the prosecution of the geological survey of Pennsylvania displayed notable organizing ability and persistence in accomplishment, even to advancing personally considerable sums of money, trusting to the state legislature to later reimburse him. Finally, after many delays by the state, the publication was placed directly in his charge and he produced in 1858 a magnificent quarto work of over 1,600 pages, handsomely illustrated, and accompanied by an atlas. It is excellent from the descriptive standpoint, standing in the first class. Measured as a contribution to the theory of dynamical geology, the explanatory portions were, however, thirty years behind the times. The same hypotheses are put forth in 1858 as in 1842. There is no acceptance of the views of Lyell concerning the uniformitarian principles expounded by this British leader in 1830, or of the nature of orogenic forces as published by Elie de Beaumont in 1833. Rogers rejects the view that cleavage is due to compression and suggests "that both cleavage and foliation are due to the parallel transmission of planes or waves of heat, awakening the molecular forces, and determining their direction.[9] Thus a mere maze of words takes the place of inductive demonstrations already published.

In following the play of these opposing currents of geologic thought we reach now the point where a period of brilliant progress in the knowledge of mountains and of continental structures begins in the work of J. D. Dana. In 1842 Dana returned from the Wilkes Exploring Expedition and the following year began the publication of the series of papers which for the next half century marked him as the leader in geologic theory in America. His work is of course to be judged against the background of his times. His papers mark distinct advances in many lines and are characterized throughout by breadth of conception and especially by clear and logical thinking. His work was published very largely in the Journal, of which after a few years he became chief editor. His first contribution on the subject of mountain structures, entitled "Geological results of the earth's contraction in consequence of cooling," was published in 1847 (**3**, 176). The evidence of horizontal pressure was first perceived in France as shown by the features of the Alps. Elie de Beaumont connected it, by means of the theory of a cooling and contracting globe, with the other large fact of the increase of temperature with descent in the crust. Dana credits the Rogers brothers with first making known the folded structures of the Appalachians, but objects to their interpretation of origin. He showed by means of diagrams that the folds are to be explained by lateral pressure, the direction of overturning indicating the direction from which the driving force proceeded.

The Rogers brothers and especially James Hall, in working out the Appalachian stratigraphy, had noted that the formations, although accumulating to a maximum thickness of between 30,000 and 40,000 feet, showed

[9] H. D. Rogers, Geology of Pennsylvania, vol. 2, p. 916, 1858.

evidences that the successive formations were deposited in shallow water. It suggested to them that the weight of the accumulating sediments was the cause of subsidence, each foot of sediment causing a foot of down sinking. This idea has continued to run through various text books in geology for half a century, yet Dana early saw the fallacy and in 1863 in the first edition of his Manual of Geology (p. 717) states "whether this is an actual cause or not in geological dynamics is questionable." In 1866 in an important article on "Observations on the origins of some of the earth's features," Dana deals more fully and finally with this subject (**42**, 205, 252, 1866). He shows that such an effect of accumulating sediment postulates a delicate balance, a very thin crust and no resistance below. If such a weakness were granted it would be impossible for the earth to hold up mountains. Furthermore such subsidence was not regular during its progress and finally in the long course of geologic time gave place to a reverse movement of elevation.

Hall had pointed out the fact that the sediments were thickest on the east in the region of mountain folding and thinned out to a fraction of this thickness in the broad Mississippi basin. Hall argued that the mere subsidence of the trough would produce the observed folding and that the folding was unrelated to mountain making or crustal shortening. In supposed proof he cited the fact that the Catskills consist of unfolded rock, are higher than the folded region to the south, and nearly as high as the highest metamorphic mountains to the east.[10] Hall and all his contemporaries were handicapped in their geological theories by a complete inappreciation of the importance of subaërial denudation. For subscribing to these errors of their time even the ablest men should not be held responsible. Hall was the most forcible personality in geology in his generation. His contributions to paleontology were superb. His perception of the relation existing between troughs of thick sediments and folded structures was a contribution of the first importance; yet in the structural field his argument as to the production of the Appalachian folds by mere subsidence during deposition indicates a remarkable inability to apply the logical consequences of his hypothesis to the

[10] James Hall, Natural History of New York, Paleontology, vol. 3, pp. 51-73, 1859.

nature of the folds as already made known by the Rogers. Dana pointed out in reply to Hall that the folding did not correspond to the requirements of Hall's hypothesis, especially as the folding took place not during, but after the close of the vast Paleozoic deposition. Dana states in conclusion on Hall's hypothesis (**42**, 209, 1866) that "It is a theory of the origin of mountains with the origin of mountains left out."

The Theory of Geosynclines and Geanticlines.

The fact that systems of folded strata lie along axes of especially thick sediments and that this implied subsidence during deposition was Hall's contribution to geologic theory, but curiously enough he failed, as shown, to connect it with the subsequent nature of mountain folding. He did not see why such troughs should be weak to resist horizontal compression. The clear recognition of this relationship was the contribution of Le Conte, who in a paper on "A theory of the formation of the great features of the earth's surface" (**4**, 345, 460, 1872), reached the conclusion that "mountain chains are formed by the mashing together and the up-swelling of sea bottoms where immense thicknesses of sediment have accumulated."

As to the cause why mashing should take place along troughs of thick sediments Le Conte adopts the hypothesis of aqueo-igneous fusion proposed independently long before by Babbage and Herschel and elaborated into a theory of igneous rocks by Hunt. Under this view, as the older sediments became deeply buried, the heat of the earth's interior ascended into them, and since they included the water of sedimentation a softening and metamorphism resulted. Dana had shown, however, six years previously (**42**, 252, 1866), as the following quotation will indicate, that metamorphism of sediments required more than deep burial and that no such weakening as was postulated by Herschel had occurred:

"The correctness of Herschel's principle cannot be doubted. But the question of its actual agency in ordinary metamorphism must be decided by an appeal to facts; and on this point I would here present a few facts for consideration.

The numbers and boldness of the flexures in the rocks of most metamorphic regions have always seemed to me to bear against the view that the heat causing the change had ascended by the very quiet method recognized in this theory. . . .

But there are other facts indicating a limited sufficiency to this means of metamorphism. These are afforded by the great faults and sections of strata open to examination. In the Appalachian region, both of Virginia and Pennsylvania, faults occur, as described by the Professors Rogers, and by Mr. J. P. Lesley, which afford us important data for conclusions. Mr. Lesley, an excellent geologist and geological observer, who has explored personally the regions referred to, states that at the great fault of Juniata and Blair Cos., Pennsylvania, the rocks of the Trenton period are brought up to a level with those of the Chemung, making a dislocation of at least 16,000, and probably of 20,000, feet. And yet the Trenton limestone and Hudson River shales are not metamorphic. Some local cases of alteration occur there, including patches of roofing slate; but the greater part of the shales are no harder than the ordinary shales of the Pennsylvania Coal formation.

At a depth of 16,000 feet the temperature of the earth's crust, allowing an increase of 1° F. for 60 feet of descent, would be about 330° F.; or with 1° F. for 50 feet, about 380° F.—either of which temperatures is far above the boiling point of water; and with the thinner crust of Paleozoic time the temperature at this depth should have been still higher. But, notwithstanding this heat, and also the compression from so great an overlying mass, the limestones and shales are not crystalline. The change of parts of the shale to roofing slate is no evidence in favor of the efficiency of the alleged cause; for such a cause should act uniformly over great areas."

The next contribution to the theory of orogeny was a series of papers published in 1873 by Dana, entitled "On some results of the earth's contraction from cooling, including a discussion on the origin of mountains and the nature of the earth's interior."[11] This contribution, viewed as a whole, ranks among the first half dozen papers on the science of mountains. The following quoted paragraphs give a view of the scope of this article:

"Kinds and Structure of Mountains."

"While mountains and mountain chains all over the world, and low lands, also, have undergone uplifts, in the course of their long history, that are not explained on the idea that all mountain elevating is simply what may come from plication or crushing, the *component parts* of mountain chains, or those

[11] This Journal, 5, 423-443, 474, 475; 6, 6-14, 104-115, 161-172, 304, 381, 382, 1873.

simple mountains or mountain ranges that are the product of one *process of making*—may have received, *at the time of their original making,* no elevation beyond that resulting from plication.

This leads us to a grand distinction in orography, hitherto neglected, which is fundamental and of the highest interest in dynamical geology; a distinction between—

1. A simple or *individual* mountain mass or range, which is the result of *one process of making,* like an individual in any process of evolution, and which may be distinguished as a *monogenetic* range, being *one in genesis;* and

2. A composite or *polygenetic* range or chain, made up of two or more monogenetic ranges combined.

The Appalachian chain—the mountain region along the Atlantic border of North America—is a *polygenetic* chain; it consists, like the Rocky and other mountain chains, of several *monogenetic* ranges, the more important of which are: 1. The Highland range (including the Blue Ridge or parts of it, and the Adirondacks also, if these belong to the same process of making) pre-Silurian in formation; 2. The Green Mountain range, in western New England and eastern New York, completed essentially after the Lower Silurian era or during its closing period; 3. The Alleghany range, extending from southern New York southwestward to Alabama, and completed immediately after the Carboniferous age.

The making of the Alleghany range was carried forward at first through a long-continued subsidence—a *geosynclinal* (not a *true* synclinal, since the rocks of the bending crust may have had in them many true or simple synclinals as well as anticlinals), and a consequent accumulation of sediments, which occupied the whole of Paleozoic time; and it was completed, finally, in great breakings, faultings and foldings or plications of the strata, along with other results of disturbance.

"These examples exhibit the characteristics of a large class of mountain masses or ranges. A geosynclinal accompanied by sedimentary depositions, and ending in a catastrophe of plications and solidification, are the essential steps, while metamorphism and igneous ejections are incidental results. The process is one that produces final stability in the mass and its annexation generally to the more stable part of the continent, though not stable against future oscillations of level of *wider range,* nor against denudation.

It is apparent that in such a process of formation elevation by direct uplift of the underlying crust has no necessary place. The attending plications may make elevations on a vast scale and so also may the shoves upward along the lines of fracture, and crushing may sometimes add to the effect; but elevation from an upward movement of the downward bent crust is only an incidental concomitant, if it occur at all.

We perceive thus where the truth lies in Professor Le Conte's important principle. It should have in view alone *monogenetic* mountains and these only *at the time of their making.* It will then read, plication and shovings along fractures being made more prominent than crushing:

Plication, shoving along fractures and crushing are the true sources of the elevation that takes place *during the making* of geosynclinal monogenetic mountains.

And the statement of Professor Hall may be made right if we recognize the same distinction, and, also, reverse the order and causal relation of the two events, accumulation and subsidence; and so make it read:

Regions of monogenetic mountains were, previous, and preparatory, to the making of the mountains, areas each of a slowly progressing geosynclinal, and, *consequently,* of thick accumulations of sediments.

The prominence and importance in orography of the mountain individualities described above as originating through a geosynclinal make it desirable that they should have a distinctive name; and I therefore propose to call a mountain range of this kind a *synclinorium,* from *synclinal* and the Greek ὄρος, mountain.

This brings us to another important distinction in orographic geology—that of a second kind of monogenetic mountain. The *synclinoria* were *made through a progressing geosynclinal.* Those of the second kind, here referred to, were *produced by a progressing geanticlinal.* They are simply the upward bendings in the oscillations of the earth's crust—the geanticlinal waves, and hardly require a special name. Yet, if one is desired, the term *anticlinorium,* the correlate of *synclinorium,* would be appropriate. Many of them have disappeared in the course of the oscillations; and yet, some may have been for a time—perhaps millions of years—respectable mountains.

The geosynclinal ranges or synclinoria have experienced in almost all cases, since their completion, true elevation through great geanticlinal movements, but movements that embraced a wider range of crust than that concerned in the preceding geosynclinal movements, indeed a range of crust that comes strictly under the designation of a polygenetic mass."

"The Condition of the Earth's Interior."

"The condition of the earth's interior is not among the geological results of contraction from cooling. But these results offer an argument of great weight respecting the earth's interior condition, and make it desirable that the subject should be discussed in this connection. Moreover, the facts throw additional light on the preceding topic—the origin of mountains.

It seems now to be demonstrated by astronomical and physical arguments—arguments that are independent, it should be noted, of direct geological observation—that the interior of our globe is essentially solid. But the great oscillations of the earth's surface, which have seemed to demand for explanation a liquid interior, still remain facts, and present apparently a greater difficulty than ever to the geologist. Professor Le Conte's views, in volume iv, were offered by him as a method of meeting this difficulty; yet, as he admits in his concluding remarks, the oscillations over the interior of a continent, and the fact of the greater movements on the borders of the larger ocean, were left by him unexplained. Yet these oscillations are not more real than the changes of level or greater oscillations which occurred along the sea border, where mountains were the final result; and this being a demonstrated truth, no less than the general solidity of the earth's interior, the question comes up, how are the two truths compatible?

The geological argument on the subject (the only one within our present purpose) has often been presented. But it derives new force and gives clearer revelations when the facts are viewed in the light of the principles that have been explained in the preceding part of this memoir.

The Appalachian subsidence in the Alleghany region of 35,000 to 40,000 feet, going on through all the Paleozoic era, was due, as has been shown, to an actual sinking of the earth's crust through lateral pressure, and not to local contraction in the strata themselves or the terranes underneath. But such a subsidence is not possible, unless seven miles—that is, seven miles in maximum depth and over a hundred in total breadth—unless seven miles of *something* were removed, in its progress, from the region beneath.

If the matter beneath was not aërial, then liquid or viscous rock was pushed aside. This being a fact, it would follow that there existed, underneath a crust of unascertained thickness, a sea or lake of mobile (viscous or plastic) rock, as large as the sinking region; and also that this great viscous sea continued in existence through the whole period of subsidence, or, in the case of the Alleghany region, through all Paleozoic time—an era estimated on a previous page to cover at least thirty-five millions of years, if time since the Silurian age began embraced fifty millions of years.

"The facts thus sustain the statement that lateral pressure produced not only the subsidence of the Appalachian region through the Paleozoic, but also, cotemporaneously, and as its essential prerequisite, the rising of a sea-border elevation, or geanticlinal, parallel with it; and that both movements demanded the existence beneath of a great sea of mobile rock."

The recognition of regional *warping* as a major factor in the larger structure of mountain systems, and the expression of that factor in the terms geosyncline and geanticline forms a notable advance in geologic thought. Subsequent folding on a regional scale results in the development of synclinoria and anticlinoria. Van Hise has given these latter terms wide currency, but apparently inadvertently has used synclinorium in a different sense than that in which Dana defined it. Dana gave the word to a mountain range made by the mashing and uplift of a geosyncline, Van Hise defines it as a downfold of a large order of magnitude, embracing anticlines and synclines within it; anticlinorium he uses for a corresponding up fold.[12] Rice has called attention to this change of definition,[13] but Van Hise's usage is likely to prevail, since they are needed terms for the larger mountain structure and do not require a determination of the previous limits of upwarp and downwarp,—of original denudation and deposition. Furthermore, a geosyncline in mountain folding may have one side uplifted, the other side depressed and there are reasons for regarding the folds of Pennsylvania, Dana's type synclinorium, as representing but the western and downfolded side of the Paleozoic geosyncline. Under that view the folded Appalachians of Pennsylvania constitute a synclinorium in both the sense of Dana and Van Hise.

The Ultimate Cause of Crustal Compression.

The next important advance in the theory of mountains was made by C. E. Dutton who in 1874 published in the Journal (**8**, 113-123) an article entitled "A criticism upon the contractional hypothesis." Dutton gives reasons for holding that the amount of folding and shortening exhibited in mountain ranges, especially those of Tertiary date, is very much greater in magnitude and is different in nature and distribution from that which would be given by the surficial cooling of the globe. The following quotations cover the principal points in the argument:

[12] C. R. Van Hise, Principles of North American Pre-Cambrian Geology, U. S. Geol. Surv., 16th Ann. Report, pt. I, pp. 607-612, 1896.

[13] W. N. Rice, On the use of the words synclinorium and anticlinorium, Science, **23**, 286, 287, 1906.

"The argument for the contractional hypothesis presupposes that the earth-mass may be considered as consisting of two portions, a cooled exterior of undetermined (though probably comparatively small) depth, inclosing a hot nucleus. . . . The secular loss of heat, it is assumed, would be greater from the hot nucleus than from the exterior, and the greater consequent contraction of the nucleus would therefore gradually withdraw the support of the exterior, which would collapse. The resulting strains upon the exterior would be mainly tangential. Owing to considerable inequalities in the ability of different portions to resist the strains thus developed, the yielding would take place at the lines, or regions of least resistance, and the effects of the yielding would be manifested chiefly, or wholly, at those places, in the form of mountain chains, or belts of table-lands, and in the disturbances of stratification. The primary division of the surface into areas of land and water are attributed to the assumed smaller conductivity of materials underlying the land, which have been left behind in the general convergence of the surface toward the center. Regarding these as the main and underlying premises of the contractional argument, it is considered unnecessary to state the various subsidiary propositions which have been advanced to explain the determination of this action to particular phenomena, since the main proposition upon which they are based is considered untenable.

There can be no reasonable doubt that the earth-mass consists of a cooled exterior inclosing a hot nucleus, and a necessary corollary to this must be secular cooling, probably accompanied by contraction of the cooling portions. But when we apply the known laws of thermal physics to ascertain the rate of this cooling, and its distribution through the mass, the objectionable character of the contractional hypothesis becomes obvious.

That Fourier's theorem, under the general conditions given, expresses the normal law of cooling, is admitted by all mathematicians who have examined it. The only ground of controversy must be upon the values to be assigned to the constants. But there seem to be no values consistent with probability which can be of help to the contractional hypothesis. The application of the theorem shows that below 200 or 300 miles the cooling has, up to the present time, been extremely little. . . . At present, however, the unavoidable deduction from this theorem is that the greatest possible contraction due to secular cooling is insufficient in amount to account for the phenomena attributed to it by the contractional hypothesis.

The determination of plications to particular localities presents difficulties in the way of the contractional hypothesis which have been underrated. It has been assumed that if a contraction of the interior were to occur, the yielding of the outer crust would take place at localities of least resistance. But this could be true only on the assumption that the crust could have a horizontal movement in which the nucleus does not necessarily share. A vertical section through the Appalachian region and westward to the 100th meridian shows a surface highly disturbed for about two hundred and fifty miles, and comparatively undisturbed for more than a thousand. No one would seriously argue that the contraction of the nucleus had been confined to portions underlying the disturbed regions: yet if the contraction was general, there must have been a large amount of slip of some portion of the undisturbed segment over the nucleus. Such a proposition would be very difficult to defend, even if the premises were granted. It seems as if the friction and adhesion of the crust upon the nucleus had been overlooked. Nor could this be small, even though the crust rested upon liquid lava. The attempts which some eminent geologists have recently made to explain surface corrugation by this method clearly show a neglect on their part to analyze carefully the system of forces which a contraction of the nucleus would generate in the crust. Their discussions have been argumentative and not analytical. The latter method of examination would have shown them certain difficulties irreconcilable with their knowledge of facts. Adopting the argumentative mode, and in conformity with their view regarding the exterior as a shell of insufficient coherence to sustain itself when its support is sensibly diminished, the tendency of corrugation to occur mainly along certain belts, with series of parallel folds, is not explained by assuming that these localities are regions of weakness. For a shrinkage of the nucleus would throw each elementary portion of the crust into a state of strain by the action of forces in all directions within its own tangent plane. A relief by a horizontal yielding in one direction would by no means be a general relief.''

Dutton's criticisms robbed the current hypothesis of mountain-making of its conventional basis without providing a new foundation. It was a quarter of a century in advance of its time, has been seldom cited, and seems to have had but little direct influence in shaping subsequent thought. It, however, gave direction to Dutton's views, and his later papers were far-reaching in their influence.

If contraction from external cooling is not the cause of the compressive forces it is necessary to seek another cause. Two years later, in 1876, Dutton attempted to provide an answer to this open question.[14] A review of this paper, evidently by J. D. Dana, is given in the Journal. The following explanations of Dutton's theory and

[14] C. E. Dutton, Critical observations on theories of the earth's physical evolution, The Penn Monthly, May and June, 1876.

of Dana's comments upon it are contained in a few paragraphs from this review (**12**, 142, 1876).

"Captain Dutton presents in this paper the views brought out in his article in volume viii of this Journal, with fuller illustrations, and adds explanations of his theory of the origin of mountains. The discussion should be read by all desiring to reach right conclusions, it presenting many arguments from physical considerations against the contraction-theory, or that of the uplifting and folding of strata through lateral pressure. There is much to be learned before any theory of mountain-making shall have a sufficient foundation in observed facts to demand full confidence, and Captain Dutton merits the thanks of geologists for the aid he has given them toward reaching right conclusions. His discussions are not free from misunderstandings of geological facts, and if they fail to be finally received it will be for this reason.

We here give in a brief form, and nearly in his own words, the principal points in his theory of mountain-making as explained in the later part of his memoir.

Accepting the proposition that there is a plastic condition of rock beneath the earth's crust and that metamorphism is a 'hydrothermal process,' and believing that 'the penetration of water to profound depths [in the earth's crust] is a well sustained theory,' he says that great pressure and a temperature approaching redness are essential conditions of metamorphism. . . . 'The heaviest portion would sink into the lighter colloid mass underneath, protruding it laterally beneath the lighter portions where, by its lighter density, it tends to accumulate.' He adds: 'The resulting movements would be determined, first, by the amount of difference in the densities of the upper and lower masses, and, second, by inequalities in the thickness of the strata: the forces now become adequate to the building of mountains and the plication of strata, and their modes of operation agree with the classes of facts already set forth as the concomitants of those features.'

The views are next applied to a system of plications. 'It has been indicated that plications occur where strata have rapidly accumulated in great volume and in elongated narrow belts; that the axes of plications are parallel to the axes of maximum deposit; and that the movements immediately followed the deposition'—the case of the Appalachians being an example in which the accumulations averaged 40,000 feet. He observes: 'Wherever the load of sediments becomes heaviest, there they sink deepest, protruding the colloid magma beneath them to the adjoining areas, which are less heavily weighted, forming at once both synclinals and anticlinals.'

With regard to this new theory, we might reasonably question the existence of the colloid magma—a condition fundamental to the theory—and his evidence that water penetrates to profound depths in the earth's crust sufficient to make hydrous rocks. We might ask for evidence that the rocks beneath the Cretaceous and Tertiary. and other underlying strata of the Uintahs, were in such a colloid state, and this so near the surface, that the 'beds subsided by their gross weight as rapidly as they grew.'

Again, he says that the movements of mountain-making 'immediately followed the deposition.' 'Immediately' sounds quick to one who appreciates the slowness of geological changes. The Carboniferous age was very long; and somewhere in that part of geological time, either before the age had fully ended, or some time after its close, the epoch of catastrophe began."

We see foreshadowed in this paper the theory of isostasy, or condition of vertical equilibrium in the crust which Dutton published in 1889. This theory has borne remarkable fruit, but Dutton attempted to link to it the horizontally compressive forces which have produced folding and overthrusting. Willis in 1907[15] and Hayford in 1911, overlooking Dana's objections, have attempted to make a lateral isostatic undertow the cause of all horizontal movements in the crust, adopting the mechanism of Dutton. The present writer, although accepting the principle of isostasy as an explanation of broad vertical movements, has published papers which go to show the inadequacy of this hypothesis of lateral pressure; inadequate in time relation, in amount, and in expression.[16]

In 1903 it was determined by several physicists that the materials of the earth's crust were radioactive and must generate throughout geologic time a quantity of heat which perhaps equalled that lost by radiation into space. By 1907 this had become demonstrated. The remarkable conclusion had been reached that the earth, although losing heat, is not a cooling globe. Dutton's contentions against mountain growth through external cooling and contraction were thus unexpectedly, through a wholly new branch of knowledge, demonstrated to be true.

Nevertheless, all students of orogeny are agreed that profound compressive forces have been the chief agents in developing mountain structures. Chamberlin was the first to arrive at the idea that the shrinkage may originate in the deeper portions of the earth under the

[15] B. Willis, Research in China, vol. 2, 1907.

[16] Joseph Barrell, Science, 39, 259, 260, 1909; Jour. Geol., 22, 672-683, 1914.

urgency of the enormous pressures, apparently by giving rise to slow recombinations of matter into denser forms.[17]

The New Era in the Interpretation of Mountain Structures.

In the meantime, between 1874 and 1904, another advance in the knowledge of mountain structures was taking place in Europe. Suess studied the distribution of mountain arcs over the earth and dwelt upon the prevalence of overthrust structures; the backland being thrust toward and over the foreland, the rise of the mountain arc or geanticline depressing the foredeep or geosyncline. Bertrand and Lugeon from 1884 to 1900 were reinterpreting the Alpine structures on this basis. They showed that the whole mountain system had been overturned and overthrust from the south to an almost incredible degree. Enormous denudation had later dissevered the northern outlying portions and given rise to "mountains without roots,"—isolated outliers, consisting of overturned masses of strata which had accumulated as sediments far to the southward in another portion of the ancient geosyncline.

On a smaller scale similar phenomena are exhibited in the Appalachians. Willis showed that the deep subsidence of the center of the geosyncline gave an initial dip which determined the position of yielding under compression. Laboratory experiments brought out the weakness of the stratigraphic structure to resist horizontal compression. The nature of the stratigraphic series was shown to determine whether the yielding would be by mashing, competent folding, or breakage and overthrust. The problem of mountain structures was thus brought into the realm of mechanics. These results were published in three sources in 1893,—the Transactions of the American Institute of Mining Engineers, the thirteenth annual report of the United States Geological Survey, and this Journal (**46**, 257, 1893).

Finally should be noted the contributions of the Lake Superior school of geology, in which the work of Van Hise stands preëminent. Under the economic stimulus given by the discovery and development of enormously rich bodies of iron ore, hidden under Pleistocene drift and involved in the complex structures of vanished moun-

[17] T. C. Chamberlin, Geology, vol. 1, pp. 541, 542, 1904.

tain systems of ancient date, structural geology and metamorphism have become exact sciences to be drawn upon in the search for mineral wealth and yielding also rich returns in a fuller knowledge of early periods of earth history.

Crust Movements as revealed by Physiography.

During the last quarter of the nineteenth century another division of geology, dominantly American, was taking form and growth,—the science of land forms,—physiography. The history of that development is treated by Gregory in the preceding chapter but some of its bearings upon theory, in so far as they affect the subject of mountain origin, are necessarily given here.

Powell, Dutton, and Gilbert in their explorations of the West saw the stupendous work of denudation which had been carried to completion again and again during the progress of geologic time. The mountain relief consequently may be much younger than the folding of the rocks, and may be largely or even wholly due to recurrent plateau movement, a doctrine to which Dana had previously arrived. But the introduction of the idea of the peneplain opened up a new field for exploration in the nature and date of crust movements. Davis by this means began to study the later chapters of Appalachian history, the most important early paper being published in 1891.[18] Since then Davis, Willis, and many others have found that, girdling the world, a large part of the mountainous relief is due to vertical elevatory forces acting over regions of previous folding and overthrust. In addition, great plateau areas of unfolded rocks have been bodily lifted one to two miles, or more, above their earlier levels. They may be broad geanticlinal arches or bounded by the walls of profound fractures.

The linear mountain systems made from deep troughs of sediments have come then to be recognized as but one of several classes of mountains. This class, from its clear development in the Appalachians, and the fact that many of the laws of mountain structure pertaining to it were first worked out there, has been called by Powell the Appalachian type (**12**, 414, 1876). A classification of

[18] W. M. Davis, The geological dates of origin of certain topographic forms on the Atlantic slope of the United States, Geol. Soc. Am. Bull., 2, 541-542, 545-586, 1891.

mountain systems was proposed by him in which mountains are classified into two major divisions, those composed of sedimentary strata altered or unaltered, and those composed in whole or in part of extravasated material. The first class he subdivides into six sub-classes of which the folded Appalachians illustrate one. It appears to the writer that Powell's classification gives disproportionate importance to certain types which he described; but nevertheless, the fact that such a classification was made, indicates the growth of a more comprehensive knowledge of mountains,—their origin, structure, and history.

Relations of Crust Movements to Density and Equilibrium.

A recent important development in the fields of geophysics and major crust movements consists in the incorporation into geology of the doctrine of isostasy. The evidence was developed in the middle of the nineteenth century by the geodetic survey of India which indicated that the Himalayas did not exert the gravitative influence that their volume called for. It was clear that the crust beneath that mountain system was less dense than beneath the plains of India and still less dense than the crust beneath the Indian Ocean. This relation between density and elevation indicated some approach to flotational equilibrium in the crust, comparable in its nature though not in delicacy of adjustment to the elevation of the surface of an iceberg above the ocean level owing to its depth and its density, less than that of the surrounding medium. This important geological conception was kept within the confines of astronomy and geodesy, however, until Dutton in 1876, but especially in 1889, brought it into the geologic field. A test of isostasy was made for the United States by Putnam and Gilbert in 1895 and much more elaborate investigations have since been made by Hayford and Bowie. These investigations demonstrate the importance and reality of broad warping forces acting vertically and related to the regional variations of density in the crust.

There are consequently two major and unrelated classes of forces involved in the making of mountain structures,—the irresistible horizontal compressive forces, arising apparently from condensation deep within the earth, and vertical forces originating in the outer envelopes and tending toward a hydrostatic equilibrium. In this latter field of investigation, America, since the initial paper by Dutton, has taken the lead.

Conclusion on Contributions of America to Theories of Orogeny.

The sciences arose in Europe, but those which treated of the earth were still in their infancy when transplanted to America. The first comprehensive ideas on the nature of mountain structures arose in Great Britain and France. These ideas served as a guide and stimulus to observation in the recognition of deformations in the strata of the Appalachian system. Since 1840, however, America has ceased to be a pupil in this field of research but has joined as an equal with the two older countries. New ideas have been contributed, new and striking illustrations cited first by the scientists of one nation, next by those of another. The composite mass of knowledge has grown as a common possession. Nevertheless, a review of the progress since 1840 as measured by the contribution of new ideas shows on the whole America at least equal to its intellectual rivals, and at certain times actually the leader. This is true of the science of geology as a whole and also of the subdivision of orogeny.

Thus far no mention has been made of German geologists, with the exception of Suess, an Austrian. German geology is voluminous and the names of many well-known geologists could be cited. But this article has sought to trace the origin and growth of fundamental ideas. The Germans have been assiduous observers of detail; preëminent as systematizers and classifiers, seldom originators. Even petrology, which might be regarded as their especial field, was transplanted from Great Britain. In the science of mountains they have followed in their fundamental ideas especially the French.

Turning to the mediums of publication through which this progress of knowledge in earth structures has been recorded, the American Journal of Science stands foremost as the only continuous record for the whole century in American literature, fulfilling for this country what the Quarterly Journal of the Geological Society has done for Great Britain since 1845, and the Bulletin de la Société Géologique for France since 1830.

ART. V.—*A Century of Government Geological Surveys;* by GEORGE OTIS SMITH, Director of the United States Geological Survey.

Even a Federal bureau must be considered a product of evolution: the past of the United States Geological Survey far antedates March 3, 1879. The scope of endeavor, the refinement of method, and especially the personnel of the newly created service of that day were largely inherited from pioneer organizations. Therefore a review of the country's record of surveys under Government auspices becomes more than a grateful acknowledgment by the present generation of geologists of the credit due to those who blazed the way; it shows the sequence and progress in the contributions made by geologic science to industry.

The earlier stages in industrial evolution mentioned by Hess[1]—exploitation, development, and maturity—determine a somewhat similar progressive development in geologic investigation, so that geographic exploration and geologic reconnaissance of the broadest type are the normal contribution of exact science whenever and wherever a nation is in the state of exploitation and initial development of its mineral and agricultural resources. The refinements of detailed surveys and quantitative examinations belong rather to the next stage of intensive utilization, or, indeed, they are the essentials preliminary to full use. Thus regrets that the results of present-day work were not available fifty years ago are largely vain: the fathers may not have been without the vision; they simply did the work as their day and generation needed it done.

Twenty years ago S. F. Emmons, in a presidential address before the Geological Society of Washington, divided the history of Governmental surveys in this country into two periods, separated in a general way by the Civil War. The first of these was the period of geographic exploration, the second that of geologic exploration. Mr. Emmons of course regarded this subdivision as not hard and fast, yet his dividing line seems logical, for not only did the military activities in the East necessarily suspend exploration in the West, but after the war

[1] Hess, R. H., Foundations of National Prosperity, p. 100.

national, political, and economic considerations led naturally to the demand for a more exact knowledge of the vast national domain in the West. Geography and geology are so closely related that Mr. Emmons's distinction of the two periods is useful only with the limitations inferentially set by himself—namely, that while geologic investigation entered into most of the explorations of the earlier period, the geologist was regarded as only an accessory in these exploring expeditions; on the other hand, in the later surveys the topographic work was developed because it was essential to the geologic investigations.

The year 1818 was a notable one in American geology, first of all in the appearance of the American Journal of Science, itself so perfect a vehicle for geological thought that, as is so well stated by Dr. G. P. Merrill, "a perusal of the numbers from the date of issue down to the present time will alone afford a fair idea of the gradual progress of American geology." The beginning of publications on New England geology appeared that year in Edward Hitchcock's first paper on the Connecticut Valley (**1**, 105, 1818) and the Danas' (S. L. and J. F.) detailed geologic and mineralogic description of Boston and vicinity; and the "Index" of Amos Eaton (noticed in this Journal, **1**, 69) was the first of that long list of notable contributions to American stratigraphy that are to be credited to the New York geologists.

In the present discussion, too, the year 1918 can be regarded as in a way the centennial of Government geologic surveys, for it was in 1818 that Henry R. Schoolcraft began his trip to the Mississippi Valley—perhaps the first geologic reconnaissance into the West—and it was his work in the lead region which served to make him a member of the Cass expedition sent out by the Secretary of War in 1820 to examine the metallic wealth of the Lake Superior region. The earlier Government explorations of Lewis and Clark, in 1803-7, and of Pike, in 1805-7, were so exclusively geographic that geologic work under Federal auspices must be regarded as beginning with Schoolcraft and with Edwin James, the geologist of the expedition of Major Long in 1819-20 to the Rocky Mountains. Both these observers published reports that are valuable as contributions to the knowledge of little-known regions.

Any description of geologic work under the Federal Government that included no reference to the State surveys would be inadequate, for in both date of execution and stage of development the work of the State geologists must be given precedence. In Merrill's Contributions to the History of American Geology,[2] whose modest title fails even to suggest that this work not only furnishes the most useful chronologic record of the progress of the science on the American continent but is in fact a very thesaurus of incidents touching the personal side of geology, the author by his division of his subject shows that four decades of the era of State surveys elapsed before the era of national surveys began.

Thus the geologic surveys of some of the Eastern States antedate by several decades any Federal organization of comparable geologic scope, and in investigations directed to local utilitarian problems these pioneer geologists working in the older settled States of the East were in fact already conducting work as detailed in type as much of that attempted by the Federal geologists of the later period. Even to-day it is true in a general way that the State geologist can and should attack many of his local problems with intensive methods and with detail of results that are neither practicable nor desirable for the larger interstate investigations or for examinations in newer territory. All this relation of State and Federal work must be looked upon as normal evolutionary development of geologic science in America.

One who reads the names of the Federal geologists of the early days, beginning with Jackson and Owen and following with such leaders in Federal work as Gilbert, Chamberlin, King, R. D. Irving, Pumpelly, Van Hise, and Walcott, may note that these were all connected in their earlier work with State surveys. Nor has the relation been one-sided, for among the State geologists Whitney, Blake, Mather, Newberry, J. G. Norwood, Purdue, Bain, Gregory, Ashley, Kirk, W. H. Emmons, DeWolf, Mathews, Brown, Landes, Moore, and Crider received their field training in part or wholly as members of a Federal Survey. Moreover, under the present plan of effective coöperation of several of the State surveys with the United States Geological Survey, it is often difficult to differentiate between the two in either personnel

[2] Report Nat'l Museum, 1904, pp. 189-733.

or results, for it even happens that the publishing organization may not have been the major contributor. The full record of American geology, past and present, can not be set forth in terms of Federal auspices alone.

The three decades preceding the Civil War, then, constitute the era of State surveys, well described by Merrill as at first characterized by a contagious enthusiasm for beginning geologic work, later by a more normal condition in which every available geologist seems to have been quietly at work, and finally by renewed activity in creating new organizations. The net result was that Louisiana and Oregon seem to have been the only States not having at least one geological survey.

The first specific appropriation by the Federal Government for geologic investigation appears to have been made in 1834, when a supplemental appropriation for surveys of roads and canals under the War Department, authorized in 1824, contained the item "of which sum five thousand dollars shall be appropriated and applied to geological and mineralogical survey and researches." In July, 1834, Mr. G. W. Featherstonhaugh was appointed United States geologist and employed under Colonel Abert, U. S. Topographical Engineers, to "personally inspect the mineral and geological character" of the public lands of the Ozark Mountain region. Overlooking the incidental fact that this Englishman—a man of scientific attainment and large interest in public affairs—was never naturalized,[3] it must be placed to the credit of this first of United States geologists that within seven months he completed his field work and returned to Washington, and on February 17, 1835, his report was transmitted to Congress. Two years earlier Featherstonhaugh had memorialized Congress for aid in the preparation of a geologic map of the whole territory of the United States, and in connection with this project he suggested that geology as an aid to military engineering should have a place in the curriculum at West Point. This first United States geologist also appears to have combined an appreciation of the practical worth of "the mineral riches of our country, their quality, quantity, and the facility of procuring them," with an interest in the more scientific side of geology, though his hypotheses regarding both economic geology and stratigraphic and

[3] Featherstonhaugh, J. D., Am. Geol., 3, 220, 1889.

structural geology have not won the endorsement of all later workers in the same regions. In all these respects, however, Featherstonhaugh may stand as a fairly good prototype. His contributions to international affairs subsequent to his scientific service to the United States are of interest; he served as one of Her Majesty's commissioners in the settlement of the Canadian-United States boundary question in 1839-40 and made an examination of the disputed area, and after the settlement of this controversy he was appointed British Consul for the Department of the Seine, France, where in 1848 he personally engineered the escape of Louis Philippe from Havre.

The Federal geologic work thus started was soon continued in surveys of wider scope and more thorough accomplishment. The position of the Government as the proprietor of mineral lands in the Upper Mississippi Valley led to their examination. These Government lands containing lead had been reserved from sale for lease since 1807, although no leases were issued until 1822. The amount of illegal entry and consequent refusal of smelters and miners to pay royalty after 1834 forced the issue upon the attention of Congress, and in 1839 President Van Buren was requested to present to Congress a plan for the sale of the public mineral lands. In carrying out this policy Dr. David Dale Owen was selected to make the necessary survey.

Owen had served as an assistant on the State Survey of Tennessee and as the first State geologist of Indiana, and he organized the new work promptly and effectively. Although suffering from the handicap unfortunately known by geologists of the present day—the receipt late in the season (August 17, 1839) of authority to begin work—within exactly a month he had his force of 139 assistants organized into 24 field parties, instructed in "such elementary principles of geology as were necessary to their performance of the duties required of them." His plan of campaign provided for a northward drive at a predetermined rate of traverse for each party, with periodic reports to himself at appointed stations, "to receive which reports and to examine the country in person" he crossed the area under survey eleven times. The result of such masterful leadership was the completion of the exploration of all the lands comprehended in his orders in two months and six days, and his report on this great area—about 11,000 square miles—bears date of April 2, 1840.

Eight years later Doctor Owen made a survey of an even larger area, continuing his examination northward to Lake Superior. Again his report was published promptly, and he continued for several years his examination of the Northwest Territory, submitting his final report in 1851. It is interesting to note that in his earlier report Doctor Owen subscribed himself as "Principal Agent to explore the Mineral Lands of the United States," but that in the later report he was "U. S. Geologist for Wisconsin." The two surveys together covered 57,000 square miles.

During the same period similar surveys were being made in northern Michigan by Dr. Charles T. Jackson, 1847-48, and Foster and Whitney, 1849-51. These surveys also had been hastened by the "copper fever" of 1844-46, with wholesale issue of permits and leases, Congress in 1847 authorizing the sale of the mineral lands and a geological survey of the Lake Superior district. The execution of these surveys under Jackson and under Foster and Whitney and the prompt publication in 1851 of the maps of the whole region materially helped to establish copper mining on a more conservative basis, and the development of the Lake Superior region was rapid.[4]

These land-classification surveys, with their definite purpose, represent the best geologic work of the time. The plan necessitated thoroughgoing field work with considerable detail and prompt publication of systematic reports, and in the working up of the results specialists like James Hall and Joseph Leidy contributed, while F. B. Meek was an assistant of Owen. It is worthy of note that had not Doctor Houghton, the State geologist of Michigan, met an untimely death in 1847, effective coöperation of the State Survey with the Federal officials would have combined geologic investigation with the execution of the linear surveys.[5]

Belonging to the same period of geologic exploration was the service of J. D. Dana, as United States Geologist

[4] Whitney, Mineral Wealth of the United States, pp. 248-250.

[5] Foster and Whitney, 31st Cong., 1st session, House Doc. 69, pp. 13-14, 1850.

on the Wilkes Exploring Expedition, the disaster to which compelled his return from the Pacific Coast overland and resulted in his geologic observations on Oregon and northern California.

The military expeditions during the decade 1850-60 and the earlier expeditions of Frémont added to the geographic knowledge of the Western country and also contributed to geologic science, largely through collections of rocks and fossils, usually reported on by the specialists of the day. Thus the names of Hall, Conrad, Hitchcock, and Meek appear in the published reports on these explorations, while Marcou, Blake, Newberry, Gibbs, Evans, Hayden, Parry, Shumard, Schiel, Antisell, and Engelmann were geologists attached to the field expeditions. In 1852 geologic investigation was seemingly so popular as to necessitate the statutory prohibition "there shall be no further geological survey by the Government unless hereafter authorized by law."

Certain of these explorations had a specific purpose: several of them sought a practical route for a transcontinental railroad; another a new wagon road across Utah and Nevada; and one under Colonel Pope, with G. G. Shumard as geologist, was sent out "for boring Artesian Wells along the line of the 32d Parallel" in New Mexico. The published reports varied greatly in scientific value and in carefulness of preparation, while the publication of at least two reports was delayed until long after the war, and the manuscript of another was lost. The report of the expedition of Major Emory contained a colored geologic map of the western half of the country, a pioneer publication, for the map prepared by Marcou extended only to the 106th meridian.

Thus in the first period of Government surveys, covering about forty years, the great West, with its wealth of public lands, was well traversed by exploratory surveys, which furnished, however, only general outlines for a comprehension of the stratigraphy and structure of mountain and valley, plain and plateau. To an even less degree was there any realization of the economic possibilities of the vast territory west of the Mississippi. President Jefferson, in planning the Lewis and Clark expedition, had stated his special interest in the mineral resources of the region to be traversed. Nearly forty years later Doctor Owen was strongly impressed with the commercial promise of the region he surveyed. His reports contain analyses of ores and statistics of production; he compared the lead output of Wisconsin, Iowa, and Illinois with that of Europe and foretold the value of the iron, copper, and zinc deposits of the area; he outlined the extent of the Illinois coal field; and he laid equal emphasis upon the agricultural possibilities of the region. Indeed, so optimistic were Owen's general conclusions that he referred to his separate township plats, with their detailed descriptions, as the basis for his sanguine opinions, realizing that "the explorer is apt to become the special pleader." With equal breadth of view and thoroughness of execution the surveys of Foster and Whitney laid the foundation for the development of the copper and iron resources of the Lake Superior region, and although these areas were largely wilderness and not adapted to rapid traverse or easy observation the reports on their explorations nevertheless compare most favorably with the contributions of geologists working in the more hospitable regions in the older States.

The period following the Civil War naturally became one of national expansion, the faces of many were turned westward, and exploration of the national domain for its industrial possibilities took on fresh interest. Homeseekers and miners largely made up this army of peaceful invasion, and the winning of the West began on a scale quite different from that of the days of the military path-finding expeditions of Frémont and other Army officers. Thus the nation was aroused to the task of investigating its public lands and Congress gave the support needed to make geologic exploration possible on a large scale.

Geologic surveys of a high order were continued in the older States, as shown by the contributions during this period of J. P. Lesley and G. H. Cook in the East, W. C. Kerr, E. W. Hilgard, and E. A. Smith in the South, and J. S. Newberry, C. A. White, Raphael Pumpelly, T. C. Chamberlin, Alexander Winchell, and T. B. Brooks in the Central States. To the north the Canadian Survey, organized in 1841 under Logan, had continued under the same sturdy leadership until 1869, when the experienced and talented Doctor Selwyn became Director. As contrasted with the short careers of most of the State Surveys and with the temporary character of all of the Federal undertakings in geologic investigation, the continuance of the Canadian Geological Survey for more than half a century under two directors gave opportunity for continuity of effort in making known to the people of the Dominion its resources and at the same time contributing to the world much pure science.

Passing with simple mention the two Government expeditions into the Black Hills, which afforded opportunity for geologic exploration by N. H. Winchell in 1874 and by Jenney and Newton in 1875, the record of geologic work under Government auspices in the period immediately following the Civil War groups itself around the names of four leaders—Hayden, King, Powell, and Wheeler. The four organizations, distinguished commonly by the names of these four masterful organizers, occupied the Western field more or less continuously from 1867 to 1878, and the sum total of their contributions to geography and geology was large indeed. In the words of Clarence King,[6] "Eighteen hundred and sixty-seven, therefore, marks, in the history of national geological work, a turning point, when the science ceased to be dragged in the dust of rapid exploration and took a commanding position in the professional work of the country." Together these four expeditions covered half a million square miles, or more than a third of the area of the United States west of the one-hundredth meridian, and the cost of all this work was approximately two million dollars, which was a small fraction of its value to the nation counting only the impetus given to settlement and utilization.

As viewed from a distance of nearly half a century, these four surveys differed much in plan of organization, scope of purpose, and success of execution, so that comparison would have little value except as possibly bearing upon the work of the larger organization which followed them and became the heir not only to much that had been attained by these pioneer surveys but also to the great task uncompleted by them. So, if in the earliest days of the present United States Geological Survey there may have been a certain partisanship in tracing derived characters in the new organization, it is

[6] First Annual Rept. U. S. Geol. Survey, p. 4.

even now worth while to recognize the real origin of much that is credited to present-day development.

Dr. F. V. Hayden was the first of these Survey leaders to engage in geological exploration. He visited the Badlands as early as 1853, and his connection with subsequent expeditions was interrupted only by his service as a surgeon in the Federal Army during the war. In 1867, however, Hayden resumed his geologic work as United States Geologist in Nebraska, operating under direction of the Commissioner of the General Land Office. In the following eleven years the activities of the Hayden Survey—the "Geological and Geographical Survey of the Territories"—extended into Wyoming, Colorado, New Mexico, Montana, and Idaho, covering with areal surveys 107,000 square miles. This Survey, as might be expected from the long experience of its leader, made large contributions to stratigraphy, which involved notable paleontologic work by Cope, Meek, and Lesquereux. Next in importance was the structural work of A. C. Peale, W. H. Holmes, Capt. C. E. Dutton, and Dr. Hayden himself, and the influence of these expeditions in popularizing geology should not be overlooked. The expedition of 1871 into the geyser region on the upper Yellowstone resulted in the creation of the first of the national parks. W. H. Holmes began his artistic contributions to geology in 1872 with this Survey. Topographic mapping was added to the geologic exploration, James T. Gardner and A. D. Wilson joining the Hayden Survey after earlier service on the King Survey and Henry Gannett being a member of parties, first as astronomer and later as topographer in charge. The accomplishment of the Hayden Survey itself and the later work of many of its members show that this organization possessed a corps of strong men.

The King Survey was a smaller organization, with Congressional authorization of definite scope and a systematic plan of operation. The beginning of construction of the Union Pacific terminated the period of the railroad surveys under the War Department and afforded opportunity for geologic work that would be more than exploratory: the opening up of the new country made investigation of its resources logical. This fact was recognized by Clarence King, who had traversed the same route as a member of an emigrant train with his friend James T. Gardner. His plan to make a geological cross section of the Cordilleras, with a study of the resources along the route of the Pacific railroads, won the support of Congress, and the "Geological Exploration of the Fortieth Parallel" was authorized in 1867, with Clarence King as geologist in charge, under the Chief of Engineers of the Army. Field work was begun in the summer of that year, and it is interesting to note that Mr. King and his small force of geological assistants—the two Hagues and S. F. Emmons—began at the western end of this cross section, and in this and subsequent years extended the survey from the east front of the Sierra Nevada to Cheyenne, covering a belt of territory about 100 miles in width. This comprehensive plan was carried out in the field operations, and the scientific and economic results were systematically worked up in the reports, which appeared in 1870-80. The only departure from this plan was a study of the volcanic mountains Shasta, Rainier, and Hood, in 1870, occasioned by an unexpected and unsolicited appropriation for field work, and that summer's work resulted in the discovery of active glaciers, the first known within the United States.

The Fortieth Parallel Survey is to be credited with contributions to the knowledge of the stratigraphy of the West, the region traversed being remarkably representative of the stratigraphic column, to which was added the paleontologic work of Marsh, Meek, Hall, and Whitfield, while the attempt was made to interpret the sedimentary record in terms of Paleozoic, Mesozoic, and Tertiary geography. King's plan of survey included large use of topographic mapping with astronomic base and triangulation control and contours based upon barometric elevations. The results were pronounced by an unfriendly critic[7] as "very valuable, especially from a geological point of view," but unfortunate in being the forerunner of work in which Government geologists "have presumed to arrogate the control of the fundamental operations of a topographic survey." To the King Survey must be credited the introduction of systematic contour mapping and the use of contour maps for purposes of geology. In two other respects the King Survey contributed largely to future Government work: microscopical

[7] Wheeler, Report 3d Internat'l Geog. Cong., p. 492, 1885.

petrography in the United States may be said to have begun with the visit of Professor Zirkel to this country as a member of this Survey in 1875, and the report of J. D. Hague on "Mining Industry" was the fitting expression of the emphasis then put on the study of the mineral resources of this newly opened territory, a subject of investigation that was in large part the true basis of King's project rather than simply "the immediate excuse for the Survey." An earlier influence in the scientific study of ore deposits had come from Von Richthofen's investigation of the Comstock Lode in 1865 and his subsequent work with Whitney in California. The incident of King's relation to the diamond fraud in Arizona in 1872 furnished a precedent for public servants of a later day; he investigated the reported find from scientific interest but exposed it with all the zeal of a publicist and truth lover. In a word, the Fortieth Parallel Survey commands our admiration for its brilliant plan, thoroughgoing work in field and office, and high quality of personnel.

Major J. W. Powell began his large contribution to Government surveys with his exploration of the Grand Canyon in 1869, the Congressional recognition of his expedition being limited to an authorization for the issue of rations by the War Department. Small appropriations were made in the following years, and in 1874 full authorization was given for the continuance of his survey in Utah under the Secretary of the Interior and was followed by the adoption of the name "United States Geographical and Geological Survey of the Rocky Mountain Region." This organization was the least pretentious of the four operating during this period—it covered less area, expended less public money, and published much less—but its contribution to American geology is not to be measured by miles or pages but by ideas. Its physical environment favored this survey, and in the work of Powell, Dutton, and Gilbert can be seen the beginnings of physiography on the heroic scale exemplified in the Grand Canyon and the High Plateaus. The first use of terms like "base level of erosion," "consequent and antecedent drainage," and "laccolith" marked the introduction of new ideas in the interpretation of land sculpture and geologic structure. The daring boat trip of

Powell was no less brilliant than his simple explanation of the Grand Canyon itself.

"The United States Geographical Surveys West of the 100th Meridian" was the title given to the explorations made under Lieut. G. M. Wheeler, of the Engineer Corps, which began with topographic reconnaissances in Nevada, Utah, and Arizona, specifically authorized by Congress in 1872. From the standpoint of American geology this could be better known as the Gilbert Survey, Mr. G. K. Gilbert serving for the three years 1871-73, the later part of the time with the title of chief geological assistant. Gilbert's contributions included his description of Basin Range structure, his first account of old Lake Bonneville, and his discussion of the erosion phenomena of the desert country. J. J. Stevenson also served later as a geologist of this Survey, and A. R. Marvine, E. E. Howell, E. D. Cope, Jules Marcou, and I. C. Russell were connected with the field parties. Captain Wheeler's own claim for the work of his Survey emphasized its geographic side, for he regarded the results as the partial completion of a systematic topographic survey of the country.

By 1878, when the Fortieth Parallel Survey had completed the work planned by its chief, three of these independent surveys still contended for Federal support and for scientific occupation of the most attractive portions of the Western country. Unrestrained competition of this kind, even in the public service, proves as wasteful as unregulated competition in private business,[8] and Congress appealed to the National Academy of Sciences for a plan for Government surveys to "secure the best results at the least possible cost." Under instructions by Congress the National Academy considered all the work relating to scientific surveys and reported to Congress a plan prepared by a special committee, whose membership included the illustrious names of Marsh, Dana, Rogers, Newberry, Trowbridge, Newcomb, and Agassiz. This report, which was adopted by the Academy with only one dissenting vote, grouped all surveys—geodetic, topographic, land parceling, and economic—under two distinct heads, surveys of mensuration and surveys of

[8] The views of the writer on "natural monopolies" in the Government service are set forth in an address delivered at the centennial celebration of the U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey, April 5, 1916. (See Science, vol. 43, pp. 659-665, May 12, 1916.)

geology. At that time five independent organizations in three different departments were carrying on surveys of mensuration, and the Academy recommended that all such work be combined under the Coast and Geodetic Survey with the new name Coast and Interior Survey. For the investigation of the natural resources of the public domain and the classification of the public lands a new organization was proposed, the United States Geological Survey. The functions of these two surveys and of a third coördinate bureau in the Interior Department, the Land Office, were carefully defined and their interrelations fully recognized and provided for in the plan presented to Congress. Viewed in the light of 39 years of experience the National Academy plan would be indorsed by most of us as eminently practical, and the report stands as a splendid example of public service rendered by America's leading scientists. The legislation which embodied the entire plan, however, failed of passage in Congress.

The natural activity behind the scenes of the conflicting interests represented by those connected with the several surveys may be seen in the legislative history of the moves leading up to the creation of the United States Geological Survey. In the last session of the 45th Congress the special legislation embodying the recommendations of the National Academy was included in the Legislative, Executive, and Judicial Appropriation bill as it passed the House of Representatives, while the Sundry Civil Appropriation bill carried an item simply making effective the longer section in the other appropriation bill. The item in the Legislative appropriation bill created the office of the Director of the Geological Survey, provided his salary, and defined his duties, as well as specifically terminating the operations of the three older organizations. The item in the Sundry Civil bill as it passed the House appropriated $100,000 for the new Geological Survey, but when this appropriation bill was reported to the Senate a committee amendment added the words "of the Territories," and further amendments offered on the floor changed the item so as to provide specifically and exclusively for the continuation of the Hayden Survey. Other amendments provided small appropriations for the completion of the reports of the Powell and Wheeler surveys, and the bill passed the Senate in this form. The Legislative Appropriation bill was similarly pruned, while in the Senate, of all reference to the proposed new organization. This bill, however, died in conference, but in the last hours of the session the conferees on the Sundry Civil bill took unto themselves legislative powers and transferred from the dead bill to the pending measure all the language which constitutes the "organic act" of the United States Geological Survey. This action was denounced in the Senate as "a wide departure from the authority that is possessed by a conference committee," and it was further stated in debate that the inserted provision which created a new office and discontinued the existing surveys was one "which neither the Committee of the Senate nor the Senate itself ever saw." This assertion was perhaps parliamentarily sound in that the language was new to the Sundry Civil bill, yet actually the Senate had only two days before stricken the same proposed legislation from the pending Legislative Appropriation bill. However, the House conferees—Representatives Atkins of Tennessee, Hewett of New York, and Hale of Maine—had realized their tactical advantage, and the Senate, after a brief debate, voted on March 3 to concur in the report of the committee of conference, thus reversing all their earlier action, in which the friends of the Hayden and Wheeler organizations apparently had commanded more votes than the advocates of the National Academy plan.

Clarence King was appointed first Director of the United States Geological Survey on April 3, 1879, and began the work of organization. With his proven genius for administration, King promptly resolved the doubt as to the meaning of the term "national domain" in the language defining the duties of the Director by taking the conservative side and limiting the work of the new organization to the region west of the 102d meridian. This region was divided into four geological divisions, and for economy of time and money field headquarters were established for these divisions. The Division of the Rocky Mountains was placed under Mr. Emmons as geologist in charge, the Division of the Colorado under Captain Dutton, the Division of the Great Basin under Mr. Gilbert, and the Division of the Pacific under Arnold Hague. The Division of the Colorado was intended as merely temporary for the purpose of bringing to completion the scientific work of the Powell Survey. Similarly Dr. Hayden was given the opportunity to prepare a systematic digest of his scientific results. This organization of the work and the selection of geologists in charge showed the relation of the new and the old, and a glance at the personnel of the new Survey indicates the extent to which the geologic investigation of the Western country was to continue without interruption. Of the twenty-four geologists and topographers listed in the first administrative report, four had been connected with the Powell Survey, two with the Hayden, three with the Wheeler, and five with the King Survey.

In planning the initial work of the United States Geological Survey, the Director speaks of the "most important geological subjects" and "mining industries," of "instructive geological structure" and "great bullion yield" in the same sentences, so that the intent was plain to make the geologic investigations both theoretical and practical.

It was expected that the field of operations of this Federal Survey would be at once extended by Congress over the whole United States, but the measure making this extension, which would simply carry out the intent of the framers of the legislation creating the new bureau. passed the House alone, and it was only by subsequent modification of the wording of appropriation items that the United States Geological Survey became national in scope as well as in name. The critical question of the effective coördination of State and Federal geologic surveys was met by Director King, who corrected an erroneous impression "industriously circulated" by stating his policy to be to urge the inauguration and continuance of State surveys.[9] This was the initial step in the coöperation between State and Federal surveys which became effective on a large scale in subsequent years.

Though the Geological Survey has extended its operations over the whole United States, its largest activities have always been directed toward the exploration and development of the newer territory in the public-land States. All four of its directors had their field training in the West: the name of Major Powell, who succeeded King in 1880, is inseparably connected with scientific

[9] For correspondence on this subject, see Minnesota Geol. Survey, Eighth Ann. Rept., 1880, p. 173.

exploration; Charles D. Walcott, who was Director from 1894 to 1907, the period of the Survey's greatest expansion, made the largest contribution to the Paleozoic stratigraphy and paleontology of the West; and the present Director spent seven field seasons in the Northern Cascades and one in a mining district in Utah. The scope of the activities both East and West as developed during the 39 years since the establishment of the new bureau can be best described, perhaps, in terms of its present functions as expressed in the organization of to-day.

The growth of the Survey is measured in the increase of annual appropriation from $106,000 in 1879-80 to the amount available for the current year—$1,925,520, not including half a million dollars from War Department appropriations being spent in the topographic work of the Survey. The corresponding increase in personnel has been from 39, listed in the first report, to 911 holding regular appointments at the present time, divided among the different branches as follows: A scientific force of 173 in the Geologic Branch, 169 in the Water Resources Branch, 71 in the Topographic Branch, and 15 in the Land Classification Board, with a clerical force of 168 divided among the same branches, and the remainder the technical and clerical employees of the publication and administrative branches. These personnel statistics are not expressive of normal conditions, since a large number of the topographic engineers are commissioned officers and thus are not included on the civilian roll, while, on the other hand, the classification of the stock-raising homestead lands makes the technical force of the Water Resources Branch unusually large this year.

The primary aim of the Geological Survey is geologic, whether directed by authority of law toward the "examination of the geological structure, mineral resources, and products of the national domain," toward the preparation of the authorized "reports upon general and economic geology and paleontology," of the "geologic map of the United States," or of the "report on the mineral resources of the United States," or toward the "continuation of the investigation of the mineral resources of Alaska" or "chemical and physical researches relating to the geology of the United States." The spirit and the purpose of the Survey's work in all these fields are not believed to have materially changed from those of the founders of the science in America. From time to time too much emphasis may have appeared to be laid upon applied geology as contrasted with pure science, yet the report of the National Academy to Congress in terms placed the stress upon economic resources and referred to paleontology as "necessarily connected" with general and economic geology. The practical purpose of geologic research under Government auspices must be recognized by the administrator, whether he be the paleontologist like Walcott, the philosopher like Powell, or the mining geologist like King. That the task of steering the true course is no new problem can be seen from the statement of Owen[10] written 70 years ago, and these words describe conditions of Government geological work even to-day:

> Scientific researches, which to some may seem purely speculative and curious, are essential as preliminaries to these practical results. Further than such necessity dictates, they have not been pushed, except as subordinate and incidental, and chiefly at such periods as, under the ordinary requirements of public service, might be regarded as leisure moments; so that the contributions to science thus incidentally afforded, and which a liberal policy forbade to neglect, may be considered, in a measure, a voluntary offering, tendered at little or no additional expense to the department.

The increased attention given to mineral resources has been a matter of gradual growth. Mr. King early organized a Division of Mining Geology with Messrs. Pumpelly, Emmons, and Becker as geologists in charge, to whom were assigned the collection of mineral statistics for the Tenth Census. These Survey geologists and Director King himself held appointments as special agents of the Census Bureau, and on the staff selected for this work appear the names of T. B. Brooks, Edward Orton, T. C. Chamberlin, Eugene A. Smith, George Little, J. R. Proctor, R. D. Irving, N. S. Shaler, John Hays Hammond, Bailey Willis, and G. H. Eldridge, indicating the extent to which the supervision of these inquiries was placed in the hands of economic geologists. This procedure was reverted to by Director Walcott and in the last ten years has become a well-established policy, the statistics of annual production of all the important mineral products being under the charge of geologists, as

[10] Owen, D. D., 30th Cong., 1st sess., Senate Doc. No. 57, p. 7, 1848.

best qualified to comprehend the resources of the country. Another of these special assistants in 1880 was Albert Williams, Jr., who became the first chief of the Division of Mineral Resources, in 1882. The study of ore deposits, which may be said to have begun with the King Survey, was inspired by King's own appreciation of the broad geologic relations of the distribution of mineral wealth and by the detailed studies of individual mining districts by his associates, "based upon facts accurately determined in the light of modern geology."

Geological surveys have been prosecuted in Alaska since 1895, and in the last few years the annual appropriation for the work has been the same as that made for the expenses of the whole Survey in the first year of its history. The Division of Alaskan Mineral Resources is in fact a geological survey in itself, except that it shares in the administrative machinery of the larger organization and has the advantage of the coöperation of the scientific specialists of the Survey as they may be needed to supplement its own force. All the investigations in this distant part of the country represent the Geological Survey at its best, for here the organization's long experience in the Western States can be applied to most effective and helpful work on the frontier, where the geologist and topographer in their exploration do not always follow the prospector but often precede him. Undoubtedly no greater factor has contributed to the development of Alaskan resources than this pioneer work of the Federal Survey, yet the work has also contributed notable additions to the sciences of geology and geography.

The first duty laid upon the Director of the Geological Survey in the law of 1879 was "the classification of the public lands," and this phrase undoubtedly expressed the idea of the committee of the National Academy. The same legislation, however, contained provision for the further consideration by a commission of the classification and valuation of the public lands, as also recommended by the National Academy. Thus the decision of Director King that the classification intended by Congress was scientific and was intended for general information and not to aid the Land Office in the disposition of land by sale or otherwise was really based upon the deliberate opinion of the Public Lands Commission, of which he was a member, that classification would seriously impede rapid settlement of the unoccupied lands. Nearly forty years later those who are intrusted with the land-classification work of the Geological Survey recognize this familiar argument, which undoubtedly had much more force in that earlier stage of the utilization of the Nation's resources of land.[11] The conception of land classification as a business policy on the part of the Government as a landed proprietor belongs rather to this day of more intensive development. At present current public-land legislation calls for highest use, and hence official investigation of natural values and possibilities must precede disposition. This type of mineral and hydrographic classification of public lands has been in progress in increasing amount since 1906, so that now the Geological Survey is the kind of scientific adviser to the Secretary of the Interior and Commissioner of the General Land Office that may have been contemplated by the National Academy of Sciences in 1878. It is plain, however, to everyone at all conversant with Western conditions that the recent land-classification surveys in Wyoming, for instance—detailed geologic surveys which form the basis for the valuation of public coal lands in 40-acre units—would have possessed no utility in 1871, when the coal-land law was passed but when the demand for railroad fuel had just begun.

The land-classification idea is of course the basis of the National forest and irrigation movements. The laws of 1888 and 1896, which mark the beginning of active endorsement by Congress of these conservation movements, placed upon the Survey the duties of examining reservoir sites and forest reserves respectively. The earlier of these laws began the investigation of the water resources of the country, which is still an important phase of the Survey's activity, and led to the creation of an independent organization—the Reclamation Service. It is easy to trace the beginnings of Federal reclamation of arid lands in the pioneer work of Powell, whose report in 1878 on the arid region of the United States was the first adequate statement of the problem of largest use of these lands in terms broader than those of individualistic endeavor. For years, however, Powell's appeal for

[11] This essential difference between present-day requirements and the needs of earlier generations has been discussed by W. C. Mendenhall, the geologist in charge of the Land Classification Board of the Geological Survey: Proceedings 2d Pan-American Sci. Cong., 1915-16, 3, 761.

Congressional consideration of this National task was like the "voice of one crying in the wilderness."

In a somewhat similar way the forestry surveys under the Geological Survey helped in the organization of a separate bureau—now the Forest Service. The other important Federal bureau tracing direct relationship to the Survey is the Bureau of Mines, established in 1910, which continued the investigations in mining technology specifically provided for by Congress for six years under the Geological Survey but in some degree begun in the early days of the Survey under Directors King and Powell.

Another equally important organization of a public nature, though not a Federal bureau, traces its beginnings to the Geological Survey: the Geophysical Laboratory of the Carnegie Institution, which now exercises so potent an influence over geologic investigation, had its origin in the official work of the Geological Survey's Division of Chemical and Physical Research, and its personnel was at first largely recruited from the Survey. The highly original experimental work of this laboratory has extended far beyond the scope of the Survey's work—at least far beyond the scope possible with the Federal funds available—yet most of the results of these investigations may eventually come under even a strict construction of the language used in the Survey's appropriation "for chemical and physical researches relating to the geology of the United States."

The topographic work of the present Survey continues with constant refinement of standards and economy of methods the work of the earlier organizations. The primary purpose of these topographic surveys is to provide the bases for geologic maps, yet these topographic maps, which cover 40 per cent of the area of the United States, are used in every type of civil engineering as well as by the public generally. The annual distribution by sale of half a million of these maps is an index of their value to the people.

The hot discussion that was waged for years on the question of military versus scientific administration of topographic surveys is in striking contrast with the present concentration of all the topographic mapping under the Geological Survey in those areas where it may best serve the needs of the Army. In 1916 Congress specifically recognized the possibility of greater coöperation of this kind, both in the appropriation made to the Geological Survey and in a special appropriation made to the War Department. For a number of years indeed special military information had been contributed to the Army by the Survey topographers, but since March 26, 1917, every Geological Survey topographer has worked exclusively on the program of military surveys laid down by the General Staff of the Army, and the places of some of the 44 Survey topographers now in France as engineer officers are filled by 34 other reserve engineer officers detailed by order of the Secretary of War to the Director of the Geological Survey to assist in this military mapping and to receive instruction fitting them in turn for topographic service in France.

The contribution of this civilian service to the military operations in the present emergency forms a fitting conclusion to this review of a century of Government surveys. At present 215 members of the Geological Survey are in uniform, 107 as engineer officers, two of whom are on the staff of the American Commanding General in France. In the war work carried on in the United States the Survey's contribution is by no means limited to military mapping: the geologists are also mobilized for meeting war needs, assisting in developing new sources of the essential war minerals, in speeding up production of mineral products, in collecting information for the purchasing officers both of our own and of the Allied governments, in coöperating with the constructing quartermasters in the location of gravel and sand for structural use and in both general and special examinations of underground water supply and of drainage possibilities at cantonment sites, and in supplying the Navy Department with similar technical data. A special contribution has been the application to aërial surveys of photogrammetric methods developed in the Alaskan topographic work and the perfection of a camera specially adapted to airplane use. The utilization of the Survey's map engraving and printing plant for confidential and urgent work for both the Army and Navy has necessitated postponement of current work for the Geological Survey itself. Throughout the organization the records, the methods, and the personnel which represent the product of many years of scientific activity are all being utilized; thus is the experience of the past translated into special service in the present crisis.

ART. VI.—*On the Development of Vertebrate Paleontology;* by RICHARD SWANN LULL.

INTRODUCTION.

Unlike its sister science of Invertebrate Paleontology, which has been approached so largely from the viewpoint of stratigraphic geology, that of the vertebrates is essentially a biologic science, having its inception in the masterly work of Cuvier, who is also to be regarded as the founder of comparative anatomy. For long decades, vertebrate paleontology was simply a branch of comparative anatomy or morphology in that it dealt almost exclusively with the form and other peculiarities of fossil bones and teeth, often in a more or less fragmentary condition, very little or no attention being paid to any other system of the creature's anatomy. Distribution both in space and in time was recorded, but the value of vertebrates in stratigraphy was still to be appreciated and has hardly yet come into its own. It is readily seen, therefore, that the two departments of paleontology did not enlist the same workers or even the same type of investigators, for while the two sciences have much in common and should have more, the vertebratist must, above all else, be a morphologist, with a keen appreciation of form and a mind capable of retaining endless structural details and of visualizing as a whole what may be known only in part. The initial work of the brilliant Cuvier set so high a standard of preparedness and mental equipment that as a consequence, the number of those engaged in vertebrate research has never been large as compared with the workers in some other branches of science, but the results achieved by the few who have consecrated their research to the fossil vertebrates has been in the main of a high order.

At first, as has been emphasized, this work was largely morphological, dealing both with the individual skeletal elements and later with the bony framework as a whole. Then came the endeavor to clothe the bones with sinews and with flesh—to imagine, in other words, the life-appearance of the ages-departed form—with such of its habits as could be deduced from structure of body, tooth, and limb. Next came the working out of systematic series of vertebrates and their marshalling into species, genera, and larger groups, and much time was thus spent, especially when rapid discovery brought a continual stream of new forms before the systematist, and hence some appreciation of the countless hosts of bygone creatures which peopled the world in the geologic past. This systematic work, however, was based upon the most painstaking morphologic comparisons and so the science was still within the scope of comparative anatomy.

In connection with taxonomic research came increasingly tangible evidence in favor of the law of evolution; investigators turned to the working out of phyletic series showing the actual record of the successive evolutionary changes that the various races had undergone. Coupled with this evolutionary evidence came an increased attention to the sequential occurrence in successive geologic strata, and the stratigraphic distribution of vertebrates became known with greater and greater detail. Then followed the assemblage of faunas, which brought the study of the fossil forms within the realm of historical geology, rather than being the mere phylogeny of a single race, and the value of vertebrate fossils as horizon markers became more and more appreciated by the stratigrapher. They serve to supplement the knowledge gained from the invertebrates, and in this connection are especially valuable in that they often give data concerning continental formations about which invertebrate paleontology is largely silent.

Rise of Vertebrate Paleontology in Europe.

To those who had been nurtured in the belief in a relatively recent creation covering in its entirety a period of but six days, and occurring but four millenniums before the time of Christ, the appearance of the remains of creatures in the rocks, the like of which no man ever saw alive, must have given scope to the wildest imaginings concerning their origin and significance; for many believed that not only had no new forms been added to the world's fauna since the creation, except possibly by hybridizing, but that none had become extinct save a very few through the agency of human interference. The supposition was, therefore, that such creatures as were thus discovered were still extant in some more remote fastnesses of the world. Thus, our second president, Thomas Jefferson, who wrote one of the first papers on

American fossil vertebrates, published in 1798, discussed therein the remains of a huge ground-sloth which has since borne the name *Megalonyx jeffersoni.* Jefferson, however, described the great claws as pertaining to a huge leonine animal which he firmly believed was yet living among the mountains of Virginia.

Cuvier (1769-1832) has been spoken of as the founder of our science. His opportunity lay in the profusion of bones buried in the gypsum deposits of Montmartre within the environs of the city of Paris. Cuvier's studies of these remains, done in the light of his very broad anatomical knowledge, enabled him to prepare the first reconstructions of fossil vertebrates ever attempted and to bring before the eyes of his contemporaries a world peopled with forms which were utterly extinct. That these creatures were no longer living, none was a better judge than Cuvier, for his prominence was such that material was sent him from all parts of the world, to which must be added that which he saw in his visits to the various museums of Europe. He felt it safe, therefore, to affirm the unlikelihood of any further discovery of unknown forms among the great mammals of the present fauna of our globe, and few indeed have been the additions since his day. To Cuvier is due not alone the masterly contribution to the sister sciences of comparative anatomy and vertebrate paleontology—the Ossements Fossiles (1812)—but he also announced the presence in continental strata of a series of faunas which showed a gradual organic improvement from the earliest such assemblage to the most modern, an idea of the most fundamental importance and one with which he is rarely credited. He believed in the sudden and complete extinction of faunas, and the facts then known were in accord with this idea, as no common genera nor transitional forms connected the creatures of the Paris gypsum with the mastodons, elephants, and hippopotami which the later strata disclosed. It is not remarkable, therefore, that Cuvier advanced his theory of catastrophism to account for these extinctions. He should not, however, according to Depéret, be credited with the idea of successive re-creations, such as that held by D'Orbigny and others, but of repopulation by immigration from some area which the catastrophe, be it flood or other destructive agency, failed to reach.

Cuvier was followed in Europe by a number of illustrious men, none of whom, however, with the exception of Sir Richard Owen, possessed his breadth of knowledge of comparative anatomy upon which to base their researches among the prehistoric. The more notable of them may be enumerated before going on to a discussion of the American contributions to the science.

They were, first, Louis Agassiz, a pupil of Cuvier and later a resident of America, whose researches on the fossil fishes of Europe are a monumental work, the result of ten years of investigation in all of the larger museums of that continent, and which appeared in 1833-43, while he was yet a young man. The fishes were practically the only fossil vertebrates to come within the scope of his investigations, for his later time was consumed in the study of glaciers and of recent marine zoology. Another student of these most primitive vertebrates who left an enduring monument was Johannes Müller. Huxley, Traquair, and Jaekel also did masterly work upon this group, while Smith Woodward of the British Museum is considered the highest living authority upon fossil fishes.

Of the Amphibia, the most famous foreign students were Brongniart, Jaeger, Burmeister, Von Meyer, and Owen, although Owen's claim to eminence lies rather in the investigations of fossil reptiles which he began in 1839 and continued over a period of fifty years of remarkable achievement. Not only did he describe the dinosaurs of Great Britain in a series of splendidly illustrated monographs, but extended his researches to the curious reptilian forms from the Karroo formation of South Africa. It was to him, moreover, that the establishment of the true position of the famous *Archæopteryx* as the earliest known bird and not a reptile is due. Von Meyer also enriched the literature of fossil reptiles, discussing exhaustively those occurring in Germany, while Huxley's classic work on the crocodiles as well as on dinosaurs, and the labors of Buckland, Fraas, Koken, Von Huene, Gaudry, Hulke, Seeley, and Lydekker have added immensely to our knowledge of the group.

Of the birds, which at best are rare as fossils, our knowledge, especially of the huge flightless moas, is due largely again to Owen, and his realization of the systematic position of *Archæopteryx* has already been mentioned.

The mammals were, perhaps, the most prolific source of paleontological research during the nineteenth century, for, as Zittel has said, Cuvier's famous investigations on the fossil bones, mentioned above, not only contain the principles of comparative osteology, but also show in a manner which has never been surpassed how fossil vertebrates ought to be studied, and what are the broad inductions which may be drawn from a series of methodical observations. Such was Cuvier's influence that until Darwin began to interest himself in mammalian paleontology the study of these forms was conducted entirely along the lines indicated by the French savant. This was seen in a large work, Osteology of Recent and Fossil Mammalia, by De Blainville, which, although not up to the standard set by the master, is nevertheless a notable contribution, as was also the Osteology prepared by Pander and D'Alton. A summary of the knowledge of the fossil Mammalia up to the year 1847 is contained in Giebel's Fauna der Vorwelt, and Lydekker has done for the mammals in the British Museum what Smith Woodward did for the fishes, producing vastly more than the mere catalogue which the title implies.

The first work wherein the fossil mammals were treated genealogically was Gaudry's Enchaînements du Monde Animal, written in 1878. Other work on the fossil Mammalia was done by Kaup, who described those from the Mainz basin and from Epplesheim near Worms whence came one of the most famous of prehistoric horses, the *Hipparion;* this horse, together with the remarkable proboscidean *Dinotherium,* was described by Von Meyer. One of the most remarkable discoveries, ranking in importance, perhaps, next to Montmartre, was that of the Pliocene fauna of Pikermi near Athens, Greece, first made known through the publications of A. Wagner of Munich and later, and much more extensively, through that of Gaudry (1862-1867). H. von Meyer was Germany's best authority on fossil Mammalia. After his death the work was carried on by Quenstedt, Oscar Fraas, Schlosser, Koken, and Pohlig, among others.

In France, rich deposits of fossil mammals were discovered in the Department of Puy-de-Dôme, the Rhone basin, Sansan, Quercy, and near Rheims. These were described by a number of writers, notably Croizet and Jobert, Pomel, Lartet, Filhol, and Lemoine.

Rütimeyer of Bâle was one of the most famous European writers on mammalian paleontology, and his researches were both comprehensive and clothed in such form as to give them a high place in paleontological literature. He studied comparatively the teeth of ungulates, discussed the genealogy of mammals, and the relationships of those of the Old and New Worlds. He was an exponent of the law of evolution as set forth by Darwin, and his "genealogical trees of the Mammalia show a complete knowledge of all the data concerning the different members in the succession, and are amongst the finest results hitherto obtained by means of strict scientific methods of investigation" (Zittel, History of Geology and Palæontology, 1901). The mammals of the Swiss Eocene have been studied in much detail by Stehlin.

For Great Britain, the most notable contributors were Buckland in his Reliquiæ Diluvianæ; Falconer, co-author with Cautley on the Tertiary mammals of India; Charles Murchison, who wrote on rhinoceroses and proboscideans; and more recently Bush, Flower, Lydekker, Boyd Dawkins, L. Adams, and C. W. Andrews. But by far the most commanding figure of all was Sir Richard Owen, who for half a century stood without a peer as the greatest of authorities on fossil mammals. It was the Natural History of the British Fossil Mammals and Birds, published in 1846, that established Sir Richard's reputation.

Russia has produced much mammalian material, especially from the Tertiary of Odessa and Bessarabia, and from the Quaternary of northern Russia and Siberia. These have been described mainly by J. F. Brandt, A. von Nordmann, but especially by Mme. M. Pavlow of Moscow.

Forsyth-Major discovered in 1887 a fauna contemporaneous with that of Pikermi in the Island of Samos in the Mediterranean.

One of the most remarkable recent discoveries of fossil localities was that announced in 1901 by Mr. Hugh J. L. Beadnell of the Geological Survey of Egypt and Doctor C. W. Andrews of the British Museum of London, of numerous land and sea mammals of Upper Eocene and Lower Oligocene age in northern Egypt. The exposures lay about 80 miles southwest of Cairo in the Fayûm district and are the sediments of an ancient Tertiary lake, a relic of which, Birket-el-Qurun, yet remains. These beds contained ancient Hyracoidea, Sirenia, and Zeuglodontia, but above all, ancestral Proboscidea which, together with those known elsewhere, enabled Andrews to demonstrate the origin and evolutionary features of this most remarkable group of beasts. This discovery in the Fayûm lends color to the belief that Africa may have been the ancestral home of at least five of the mammalian orders, those mentioned above, together with the Embrithopoda, a group unknown elsewhere. This theory had been advanced independently by Tullberg, Stehlin, and Osborn, before the discovery in Egypt.

Another European worker of pre-eminence who wrote more broadly than the faunal studies mentioned above was W. Kowalewsky. He discussed especially the evolutionary changes of feet and teeth in ungulates, a line of research afterward developed in greater detail by the Americans, Cope and Osborn.

South America has yielded series of rich faunas which have been exploited by the great Argentinian, Florentino Ameghino, and by the Europeans, Owen, Gervais, Huxley, Von Meyer, and more recently by Burmeister and Lydekker. Later exploration and research by Hatcher and Scott of North America will be discussed further on in this paper.

Vertebrate Paleontology in America.

Early Writers.—Having thus summarized paleontological progress in the Old World, we can turn to a consideration of the work done in the New, especially in the United States, because while the Old World investigation has been invaluable, a science of vertebrate paleontology, very complete both as to its zoological and geological scope and in the extent and value of published results, could be built exclusively upon the discoveries and researches made by Americans. The science of vertebrate paleontology may be said to have had its beginnings in North America with the activities of Thomas Jefferson, who, like Franklin, felt so strong an interest in scientific pursuits that even the graver duties of the highest office in the gift of the American people could not deter him from them. When in 1797 Jefferson came to be inaugurated as vice-president of the United States, he brought with him to Philadelphia not only his manuscript but the actual fossil bones upon which it was based. Again in 1801 he was greatly interested in the Shawangunk mastodon, despite heavy cares of state, and in 1808 made part of the executive mansion in Washington serve as a paleontological laboratory, displaying therein for study the bones of proboscideans and their contemporaries which the Big Bone Lick of Kentucky had produced. Jefferson's work would not, perhaps, have been epoch-making were it not for its unique chronological position in the annals of the science.

Jefferson was followed by another man—this time one whose diverging lines of interest led him not into the realm of political service, but of art, for Rembrandt Peale possessed an enviable reputation among the early painters of America. Peale published in 1802 an account of the skeleton of the "mammoth," really the mastodon, *M. americanus,* speaking of it as a nondescript carnivorous animal of immense size found in America. It was because of the form of the molar teeth that Peale said of it: "If this animal was indeed carnivorous, which I believe cannot be doubted, though we may as philosophers regret it, as men we cannot but thank Heaven that its whole generation is probably extinct."

With the work of these men as a beginning, it is not strange that the more conspicuous Pleistocene fossils of the East should have attracted the attention of many subsequent writers in the first part of the nineteenth century, nor that the early papers to appear in the Journal should pertain to proboscideans or to the huge edentate ground-sloths and the aberrant zeuglodons whose bones frequently came to light. Therefore a number of men such as Koch, both Sillimans, J. C. Warren, and others made these forms their chief concern.

Fossil Footprints.—Among the early writers who concerned themselves with these greater fossils was Edward Hitchcock, sometime president of Amherst College, and a geologist of high repute among his contemporaries. Hitchcock is, however, better and more widely known as the pioneer worker on a series of phenomena displayed as in no other place in the region in which he made his home. These are fossil footprints impressed upon the Triassic rocks of the Connecticut valley. It was in the

Journal for the year 1836 (**29**, 307-340) that Hitchcock first called attention to the footmarks, although they had been known and discussed popularly for a number of years previous. James Deane, of Greenfield, was perhaps the first to appreciate the scientific interest of these phenomena, but deeming his own qualifications insufficient properly to describe them, he brought them to the attention of Hitchcock, and the interest of the latter never waned until his death in 1864. Hitchcock wrote paper after paper, publishing many of them in the Journal, again in his Final Report on the Geology of Massachusetts (1841), and later in quarto works, one in the Memoirs of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences and the two others under the authority of the Commonwealth, the Ichnology in 1858, and the Supplement in 1865, the last being a posthumous work edited by his son, Charles H. Hitchcock.

Hitchcock's conception of the track-makers was more or less imperfect because of the fact that for a long time but a few fragmentary osseous remains were known, either directly or indirectly associated with the tracks, while on the other hand the bird-like character of many of the latter and the discovery of huge flightless birds elsewhere on the globe suggested a very close analogy if not a direct relationship. Hence "bird tracks" they were straightway called, a designation which it has been difficult to remove, even though in 1843 Owen called attention to the need of caution in assuming the existence of so highly organized birds at so early a period, especially when large *reptiles* were known which might readily form very similar tracks. The footprints are now believed to be very largely of dinosaurian origin, and dinosaurs whose feet corresponded in every detail with the footprints have actually come to light within the same geologic and geographic limitations. This of course refers to the bipedal, functionally three-toed tracks. Of the makers of certain of the obscurer of the quadrupedal trails we are as much in the dark to-day as were the first discoverers of a century ago, so far as demonstrable proof is concerned. We assume, however, that they were the tracks of amphibia and reptiles, beyond which we may not go with certainty.

Agassiz, writing in 1865 (Geological Sketches), says:

"To sum up my opinion respecting these footmarks, I believe that they were made by animals of a prophetic type, belonging to the class of reptiles, and exhibiting many synthetic characters. The more closely we study past creations, the more impressive and significant do the synthetic types, presenting features of the higher classes under the guise of the lower ones, become. They hold the promise of the future. As the opening overture of an opera contains all the musical elements to be therein developed, so this living prelude of the creative work comprises all the organic elements to be successively developed in the course of time."

Of those whose work was contemporaneous with that of Hitchcock, but one, W. C. Redfield, wrote on Triassic phenomena, and he concerned himself mainly with the fossil fishes of that time, his first paper on this subject appearing in 1837 in the Journal (**34**, 201), and the last twenty years later.

Paleozoic Vertebrates.—Later the vertebrates of the Paleozoic began to attract attention, footprints from Pennsylvania being described by Isaac Lea, beginning in 1849, a notice of his first paper appearing in the Journal for that year (**9**, 124). Several papers followed on the reptile *Clepsysaurus.* Alfred King also wrote on the Carboniferous ichnites, his work slightly antedating that of Lea, but being less authoritative.

But by far the most illuminating of the mid-century writers on Paleozoic vertebrates was Sir William Dawson, a very large proportion of whose numerous papers relate to the Coal Measures of Nova Scotia and their contained plant and animal remains. In 1853 appeared Dawson's first announcement, written in collaboration with Sir Charles Lyell, of the finding of the bones of vertebrates within the base of an upright fossil tree trunk at South Joggins. These bones were identified by Owen and Wyman as pertaining to a reptilian or amphibian to which the name *Dendrerpeton acadianum* was given. Following this were several papers published in the Quarterly Journal of the Geological Society, London, describing more vertebrates and associated terrestrial molluscs. In 1863 Dawson summarized his discoveries in the Journal (**36**, 430-432) under the title of "Air-breathers of the Coal Period," a paper which was expanded and published under the same title in the Canadian Naturalist and Geologist for the same year. Dawson also printed in the same volume the first account of reptilian(?) footprints from the coal. Thus from time to time there emanated from his prolific pen the account of further discoveries, both in bones and footprints, his final synopsis of the air-breathing animals of the Paleozoic of Canada appearing in 1895. The only other group of vertebrates which claimed his attention were certain whales, on which he occasionally wrote.

Fishes.—The fossil fishes from the Devonian of Ohio found their first exponent in J. S. Newberry, appointed chief geologist of the second geological survey of Ohio, which was established in 1869. These fishes from the Devonian shales belonged for the greater part to the curious group of armored placoderms, the remains of which consist very largely of armor plates with little or no traces of internal skeleton. There was also found in association a shark, *Cladoselache,* of such marvelous preservation that from some of the Newberry specimens now in the American Museum of Natural History, New York, Bashford Dean has demonstrated the histology of muscle and visceral organs, in addition to the very complete skeletal remains.

Newberry's work on these forms, begun in 1868, has been carried to further completion by Bashford Dean and his pupil L. Hussakof, as well as by C. R. Eastman. Newberry's other paleontological work was with the Carboniferous fishes of Ohio, the Carboniferous and Triassic fishes of the region from Sante Fé to the Grand and Green rivers, Colorado, and on the fishes and plants of the Newark system of the Connecticut valley and New Jersey. He also discussed certain mastodon and mammoth remains, and those of the peccary of Ohio, *Dicotyles.*

Joseph Leidy (1823–1891).

We now come to a consideration of the work of Joseph Leidy, one of the three great pioneers in American vertebrate paleontology, for if we disregard the work of Hitchcock and others on the fossil footprints, few of the results thus far obtained were based upon the fruits of organized research. Leidy began his publication in 1847 and continued to issue papers and books from time to time until the year 1892, having published no fewer than 219 paleontological titles, and 553 all told. His earlier paleontological researches were exclusively on the Mammalia, which were then coming in from the newly discovered fossil localities of the West. The discovery of these forms, one of the most notable events in the history of our science, will bear re-telling.

The first announcement was made in 1847, when Hiram A. Prout of St. Louis published in the Journal (**3**, 248-250) the description of the maxillary bone of "*Palæotherium*" (=*Titanotherium proutii*) from near White River, Nebraska. This at once drew the attention of geologists and paleontologists to the Bad Lands, or Mauvaises Terres, which were to prove so highly productive of fossil forms. About the same time S. D. Culbertson of Chambersburg, Pennsylvania, submitted to the Academy of Natural Sciences at Philadelphia some fossils sent to him from Nebraska by Alexander Culbertson. These were afterward described by Leidy in the Proceedings of the Academy, together with the paleotheroid jaw, in addition to which three other collections which had been made were also placed at his disposal for study.

This aroused the interest of Doctor Spencer F. Baird of the Smithsonian Institution, who sent T. A. Culbertson to the Bad Lands to make further collections. The latter was successful in securing a valuable series of mammalian and chelonian remains. These, together with other specimens from the same locality, were sent to Leidy, for, as Baird remarked, Leidy, although only thirty years of age, was the only anatomist in the United States qualified to determine their nature. The outcome of Leidy's study of this material was "The Ancient Fauna of Nebraska," published in 1853, and constituting the most brilliant work which up to that time American paleontology had produced. Leidy's determinations, which are in the main correct, are the more remarkable when it is realized that he had little recent osteological material for comparative study. The forms thus described by him were new to science, of a more generalized character than those now living, and yet their distinguished describer recognized, either at that time or a little later, their true relationship to the modern types. The extent of Leidy's anatomical knowledge was almost Cuvierian, and Cuvier-like he established the fact of the presence of the rhinoceroses, then unheard of in the American fauna, from a few small fragments of molar teeth, an opinion shortly to be fully sustained through the finding of complete molars and the entire skull of the *same individual animal.*

Leidy next turned his attention to the huge edentates, which he studied exhaustively, publishing his results in the form of a memoir in 1855, two years after the appearance of the "Ancient Fauna."

Extinct fishes of the Devonian of Illinois and Missouri and the Devonian and Carboniferous of Pennsylvania were made the subjects of his next researches, after which he described the peccaries of Ohio, and later, in a much larger and most important work, the Cretaceous reptiles of the United States (1865). Most of the fossils discussed in this last work are from the New Jersey Cretaceous marls and of them the most notable was the herbivorous dinosaur *Hadrosaurus,* the structure and habits of which, together with its affinities with the Old World iguanodons, Leidy described in detail. From Leidy's descriptions and with his aid, Waterhouse Hawkins was enabled to restore a replica of the skeleton in a remarkably efficient way. This restoration for a long time graced the museum of the Philadelphia Academy of Natural Sciences and there was a plaster replica of it in the United States National Museum. These, together with plaster replicas of *Iguanodon* from the Royal College of Surgeons in London, gave to Americans their first real conceptions of members of this most remarkable group. The associated fossils from the New Jersey marls were chiefly crocodiles and turtles.

From 1853 to 1866 F. V. Hayden was carrying on a series of most energetic explorations in the West, especially in Nebraska and Dakota as then delimited, returning from each trip laden with fossils which were given to Leidy for determination. The results appeared in 1869 in Leidy's Extinct Mammalian Fauna of Dakota and Nebraska, published as volume 7 of the Journal of the Philadelphia Academy. In this large volume no fewer than seventy genera and numerous species of forms, many of them new to science, were described, representing many of the principal mammalian orders; horses were, however, especially conspicuous. This last group led Leidy to the conclusion, afterward emphasized by Huxley, that North America was the home of the horse in geologic time, there being here a greater representation of different species than in any recent fauna of the world. Leidy's interest in the horses, for the forwarding of which he made a large collection of recent material, extended over many years, as his first paper on the subject bears the date of 1847, the last that of 1890.

Next came the discovery of Eocene material from the vicinity of Fort Bridger, Wyoming, geologically older than the Nebraska and Dakota formations. This, together with specimens from the Green River and Sweetwater River deposits of Wyoming and the John Day River (Oligocene) of Oregon, was also referred to Leidy, and added yet more to the list of newly discovered species with which he had already become familiar in his earlier researches. The results of this study were published by the Hayden Survey in 1873, under the title "Contributions to the Extinct Vertebrate Fauna of the Western Territories." This was the last of Leidy's major works, but he continued up to the time of his death to report to the Academy concerning the various fossil forms that were submitted to him for identification. Of such reports the most important was one on the fossils of the phosphate beds of South Carolina, published in the Journal of the Academy in 1887.

As a paleontologist, Leidy ranks with Cope and Marsh high among those who enriched the American literature of the subject, but it must be remembered that this was but a single aspect of his many-sided scientific career, for he made many contributions of high order to botany, zoology, and general and comparative anatomy as well, nor did his knowledge and usefulness as an instructor of his fellow men keep within the limitations of these subjects.

Othniel Charles Marsh (1831–1899).

The sixth decade of the nineteenth century saw the beginning of the labors of several paleontologists who, like Leidy, were destined to raise the science of fossil vertebrates in America to the level of attainment of the Old World. They were, among others, Othniel Charles Marsh and Edward Drinker Cope. Of these the names of Marsh and Cope are linked together by the brilliance of their attainments, their contemporaneity, and the rivalry which the similarity of their pursuits unfortunately engendered. Marsh produced his first paleontological paper in 1862 (**33**, 278), Cope in 1864, but the latter died first, so that his life of research was shorter.

To Professor Marsh should be given credit for the first organized expedition designed exclusively for the collection of vertebrate remains, the results of which contain so much material that it has not yet entirely seen the light of scientific exposition. Marsh's first trip to the West was in 1868, the first formal expedition being organized two years later. These expeditions, of which there were four, were privately financed except for the material and military escort furnished by the United States Government, and consisted of a personnel drawn entirely from the graduate or undergraduate body of Yale University. These parties explored Kansas, Nebraska, Wyoming, Utah, and Oregon, and returned laden with material from the Cretaceous and Tertiary formations of the West. Some of this is of necessity somewhat fragmentary, but type after type was secured which, with his exhaustive knowledge of comparative anatomy, enabled Marsh to announce discovery after discovery of species, genera, families, and even orders of mammals, birds, and reptiles which were unknown to science. The year 1873 saw the last of the student expeditions, and thereafter until the close of his life the work of collecting was done under Marsh's supervision, but by paid explorers, many of whom had been his scouts and guides in the formal expeditions or had been especially trained by him in the East. In 1882, after fourteen years of the experience thus gained, Marsh was appointed vertebrate paleontologist to the United States Geological Survey, which relieved him in part of the personal expense connected with the collecting, although up to within a short time of his death his own fortune was very largely spent in enlarging his collections. After his connection with the Survey was established, Marsh had two main purposes in view in making the collections: (1) to determine the geological horizon of each locality where a large series of vertebrate fossils was found, and (2) to secure from these localities large collections of the more important forms sufficiently extensive to reveal, if possible, the life histories of each. Marsh believed that the material thus secured would serve as key or diagnostic fossils to all horizons of our western geology above the Paleozoic, a belief in which he was in advance of his time, for few of his contemporaries appreciated the value of vertebrates as horizon markers. The result of the fulfilment of his second purpose saw the accumulation of huge collections from all horizons above the Triassic and some Paleozoic and Triassic as well. These contained some very remarkable series, each of which Marsh hoped to make the basis of an elaborate monograph to be published under the auspices of the Survey. One can visualize the scope of his ambitions by the fact that no fewer than twenty-seven projected quarto volumes, to contain at least 850 lithographic plates, were listed by him in 1877. These covered, among other groups, the toothed birds (Odontornithes), Dinocerata, horses, brontotheres, pterodactyls, mosasaurs and plesiosaurs, monkeys, carnivores, perissodactyls and artiodactyls, crocodiles, lizards, dinosaurs, various birds, proboscideans, edentates and marsupials, brain evolution, and the Connecticut Valley footprints. Much was done towards the preparation of these memoirs, as evidenced by the long list of preliminary papers, admirably illustrated by woodcuts which were to form the text figures of the memoirs, which appeared with great regularity in the pages of the Journal for a period of thirty years. Of the actual memoirs, however, but two had been published at the time of Marsh's death in 1899—the Odontornithes in 1880 and the Dinocerata in 1884. One must not overlook, however, the epoch-making Dinosaurs of North America, which was published by the Survey in 1896, although it was not in the form nor had it the scope of the proposed monographs. This was not due to lack of application, for Professor Marsh was an indefatigable worker, but rather to the fact that the program was of such magnitude as to necessitate a patriarchal life span for its consummation. As it is, Professor Marsh's fame rests first upon his ability and intrepidity as a collector, ready himself to brave the very certain hardships and dangers which beset the field paleontologist in the pioneer days, and also by his judgment and command of men to secure the very adequate services of others and so to direct their endeavors that the results were of the highest value. The material witness to Marsh's skill as a collector lies in the collections of the Peabody Museum at Yale and in the Marsh collection at the United States National Museum, the latter secured through the funds of the United States Geological Survey. Together they constitute what is possibly the greatest collection of fossil vertebrates in America, if not in the world; individually, they are second only to that of the American Museum in New York City, the result of the combined labors of Osborn and Cope and their very able corps of assistants.

As a scientist Marsh possessed in large measure that wide knowledge of comparative anatomy so necessary to the vertebrate paleontologist, and as a consequence was not only able to recognize affinities and classify unerringly, but also to recognize the salient diagnostic features of the form before him and in few words so to describe them as to render the recognition of the species by another worker relatively easy. The publication of hundreds of these specific diagnoses in the Journal constitutes a very large and valuable part of that periodical's contribution to the advancement of our science. Marsh's method of indicating forms by so brief a statement leaves much to be done, however, in the way of further description of his types, which in many instances were but partially prepared.

Yet another important service which Marsh rendered to science was the restoration of the creatures as a whole, made with the most painstaking care and precision through assembling the drawings of the individual bones. These restorations have become classic, embracing as they did a score or more of forms, of beast, bird, and reptile. They also were published first in the Journal, although they have subsequently been reproduced in text-books and other works the world over. Part of Marsh's popular reputation, at least, which was second to that of no other American in his line, was due to his skill in attaining publicity, for his papers, of whatever extent, were carefully and methodically sent to correspondents in the uttermost parts of the earth, and thus the Marsh collection has reflected the fame of its maker.

Edward Drinker Cope (1840–1897).

The third great name in American vertebrate paleontology, that of Edward Drinker Cope, stands out in sharp contrast with the other two, although in the range of his interests he was probably more nearly comparable with Leidy than with Marsh. The beginning of Cope's scientific labors dates from 1859, the year made famous in the annals of science by the appearance of Darwin's Origin of Species. It is not surprising, therefore, that matters evolutional should have interested him to the very end of his career. Cope was not merely a paleontologist, but was interested in recent forms, especially the three lower classes of vertebrates, to such an extent that his work therewith is highly authoritative and in some respects epoch-making. Thirty-eight years of almost continual toil were his, and the mere mass of his literary productions is prodigious, especially when one realizes that, unlike those of a writer of fiction, they were based on painstaking research and philosophical thought. The greater part of Cope's life was spent in or near Philadelphia except for his western explorations, and he is best known as professor of geology and paleontology in the University of Pennsylvania, although he served other institutions as well.

Cope's early work was among the amphibia and reptiles, his first paleontological paper, the description of *Amphibamus grandiceps,* appearing in 1865. This year he also began his studies of the mammals, especially the Cetacea, both living and extinct, from the Atlantic seaboard. The next year saw the beginning of his work on the material from the Cretaceous marls of New Jersey, describing therefrom one of the first carnivorous dinosaurs, *Lælaps,* to be discovered in America. In 1868 Cope began to describe the vertebrates from the Kansas chalk and three years later made his first exploration of these beds. This led to his connection with the United States Geological Survey of the Territories under Hayden, and to continued exploration of Wyoming and Colorado in 1872 and 1873. The material thus gained, consisting of fishes, mosasaurs, dinosaurs, and other reptiles, was described in the Transactions of the American Philosophical Society as well as in the Survey Bulletins. In 1875 these results were summarized in a large quarto volume entitled "Vertebrata of the Cretaceous formations of the West." Subsequent summers were spent in further exploration of the Bridger, Washakie, and Wasatch formations of Wyoming, the Puerco and Torrejon of New Mexico, and the Judith River of Montana. The material gathered in New Mexico proved particularly valuable, and led to the publication in 1877 of another notable volume entitled "Report upon the Extinct Vertebrata obtained in New Mexico by Parties of the Expedition of 1874."

Material was now accumulating so fast as to necessitate the concentration of Cope's own time on research, so that, while he continued to make brief journeys to the West, the real work of exploration was delegated to Charles H. Sternberg and J. L. Wortman, both of whom became subsequently very well known, the former as a collector whose active service has not yet ceased, the latter as an explorer and later an investigator of extremely high promise.

As early as 1865, Cope began no fewer than five separate lines of research which he pursued concurrently for the remainder of his career. On the fishes, he became a high authority in the larger classification, owing to his researches into their phylogeny, for which a knowledge of extinct forms is imperative. On amphibia, he wrote more voluminously than any other naturalist, discussing not only the morphology but the paleontology and taxonomy as well. In this connection must be mentioned not only Cope's exploration and collections in the Permian of Ohio and Illinois, but especially the remains from the Texas Permian, first received in 1877, upon which some of his most brilliant results were based; these of course included reptilian as well as amphibian material. His third line of research, the Reptilia, is in part included in the foregoing, but also embraced the reptiles of the Bridger and other Tertiary deposits, those of the Kansas Cretaceous, and the Cretaceous dinosaurs.

Up to 1868 Leidy alone was engaged in research in the West, but that year saw the simultaneous entrance of Marsh and Cope into this new field of research, and their exploration and descriptions of similar regions and forms soon led to a rivalry which in turn developed into a most unfortunate series of controversies, mainly over the subject of priority. This resulted in a permanent rupture of friendship and the division of American workers into two opposing camps to the detriment of the progress of our science. This breach has now been happily healed, and for a number of years the degree of mutual good will and aid on the part of our workers has been of the highest sort.

The extent of the western fossil area, and particularly the explorations of three of Cope's aids, Wortman in the Big Horn and Wasatch basins, Baldwin in the Puerco of New Mexico, and Cummins in the Permian of Texas, gave him so fruitful a field of endeavor that the occasion for jealous rivalry was largely removed. The most manifest result of Cope's western work was the publication in 1883 of his Vertebrata of the Tertiary Formations of the West, which formed volume 3 of the quarto publications of the Hayden Survey. This huge book contains more than 1000 pages and 80 plates and has been facetiously called "Cope's Bible."

Cope's philosophical contributions, which covered the domains of evolution, psychology, ethics, and metaphysics, began in 1868 with his paper on The Origin of Genera. In evolution he was a follower of Lamarck, and as such, with Hyatt, Ryder, and Packard, was one of the founders of the so-called Neo-Lamarckian School in America. Cope's principal contribution, set forth in his Factors of Organic Evolution, is the idea of kinetogenesis or mechanical genesis, the principle that all structures are the direct outcome of the stresses and strains to which the organism is subjected. Weismann's forcible attack on the transmission theory did not shake Cope's faith in these doctrines, for he claimed that the paleontological evidence for the inheritance of such characters as are apparently the result of *individual* modification was too strong to be refuted. Cope was more like Lamarck than any other naturalist in his mental make-up as well as his ideas. He was also, like Haeckel, given to working out the phylogeny of whatever type lay before him, and in many instances arrived marvellously near the truth as we now see it.

Associated for a while with A. S. Packard, Cope soon became chief editor and proprietor of the American Naturalist, which was for many years his main means of publication and thus served our science in a way comparable to the Journal. As Osborn says by way of summation:

"Cope is not to be thought of merely as a specialist in Paleontology. After Huxley he was the last representative of the old broad-gauge school of anatomists and is only to be compared with members of that school. His life-work bears marks of great genius, of solid and accurate observation, and at times of inaccuracy due to bad logic or haste and overpressure of work. . . . As a comparative anatomist he ranks both in the range and effectiveness of his knowledge and his ideas with Cuvier and Owen. . . . As a natural philosopher, while far less logical than Huxley, he was more creative and constructive, his metaphysics ending in theism rather than agnosticism."

1870–1880.

The seventh decade was productive of comparatively few great names in the history of our science, but two, J. A. Ryder and Samuel W. Williston, being notable contributors. The former produced but few papers and those between 1877 and 1892, yet they were of note and such was their influence that he is named with Hyatt, Packard, and Cope as one of the founders of the Neo-Lamarckian School of evolutionists in America. Ryder was a particular friend and a colleague of Cope, as they were both concerned with the back-boned animals, while the other two were invertebratists. Ryder wrote on mechanical genesis of tooth forms and on scales of fishes, also on the morphology and evolution of the tails of fishes, cetaceans, and sirenians, and of the other fins of aquatic types. He did, on the other hand, practically no systematic or descriptive work.

Williston, on the contrary, has had a long and varied career as an investigator and as an educator. Trained at Yale, he prepared for medicine, and much of his teaching has been of human anatomy, both at Yale and at the University of Kansas where he served for a number of years as dean of the Medical School. He is also a student of flies, and as such not only the foremost but indeed almost the only dipterologist in the United States. But it is with his work as a vertebrate paleontologist that we are chiefly concerned, and here again he stands among the foremost. His initial work and training in this department of science were with Marsh, for whom he spent many months in field work, collecting largely in the Niobrara Cretaceous of Kansas. He did, however, no research while with Marsh, owing to the latter's disinclination to foster such work on the part of his associates. Williston began his publications in 1878 and has continued them until the present, working mainly with Cretaceous mosasaurs, plesiosaurs, and pterodactyls. Of late, since his transference to the University of Chicago, where as professor of paleontology and director of the Walker Museum he has served since 1902, his interest has lain mainly among the Paleozoic reptiles and amphibia. Williston's more notable works are American Permian Vertebrates and Water Reptiles of the Past and Present, wherein he sets forth his views of the phylogenesis and taxonomy of the reptilian class. He is at present at work on the evolution of the reptiles, a volume which is eagerly awaited by his colleagues. It is in morphology that Williston's greatest strength lies and some of his most effective work on the mosasaurs has appeared in the Journal.

1880–1900.

The next decade, that of 1880-1890, saw a number of notable additions to the workers in vertebrate paleontology: Henry F. Osborn, W. B. Scott, R. W. Shufeldt, J. L. Wortman, George Baur, F. A. Lucas, and F. W. True. Shufeldt is our highest authority on the osteology of birds, both recent and extinct, having recently described all of the extinct forms contained in the Marsh collection; True wrote of Cetacea; Lucas of marine and Pleistocene mammals and birds, and has also written popular books on prehistoric life. Lucas's greatest service, however, lies in the museums, where he has manifested a genius second to none in the installation of mute evidences of living and past organisms. Wortman was for a time associated with Cope, later with Osborn in the American Museum, again at the Carnegie Museum at Pittsburgh, and finally at Yale in research on the Bridger Eocene portion of the Marsh collection. His work has been chiefly the perfection of field methods in vertebrate paleontology, and as a special investigator of Tertiary Mammalia, treating the latter largely from the morphologic and taxonomic standpoints. Wortman's Yale results on the carnivores and primates of the Eocene, as yet unfinished, were published in the Journal in 1901-1904.

William B. Scott is a graduate of Princeton, and has spent thirty-four years in her service as Blair Professor of Geology and Paleontology. His first publication, in 1878, issued in conjunction with Osborn and Speir, described material collected by them in the Eocene formations of the West, and since that time Scott's research has been entirely with the mammals, on which he is one of our highest authorities. His most notable works have been a History of Land Mammals of the Western Hemisphere, 1913, and the results of the Patagonian expeditions by Hatcher, which are published in a quarto series in conjunction with W. J. Sinclair, although they are the authors of separate volumes, Scott's work being mainly on the carnivores and edentates of the Santa Cruz formation. It is as a systematist in research and as an educator that Scott has attained his highest usefulness.

The man who, next to the three pioneers, has attained the highest reputation in vertebrate paleontologic research, is Henry Fairfield Osborn. Graduate of Princeton in the same class that produced Scott, Osborn served for a time as professor of comparative anatomy in that institution, and in 1891 was called to New York to organize the department of zoology in Columbia University and that of vertebrate paleontology in the American Museum of Natural History. He had, early in his career, gone west in company with Professor Scott, and had collected material from the Eocene formation of Wyoming, upon which they based their first joint paper in 1878, Osborn's first independent production, a memoir on two genera of Dinocerata, appearing in 1881. A number of papers followed, on the Mesozoic Mammalia, on Cope's tritubercular theory, and on certain apparent evidences for the transmission of acquired characters. It was, however, with his acceptance of the New York responsibilities, especially at the American Museum, that Osborn's most significant work began. Aided first by Wortman and Earle, later by W. D. Matthew and others, he has built up the greatest and most complete collection of fossil vertebrates extant; its value, however, was largely enhanced through the purchase of the private collection of Professor Cope, which of course included a large number of types. The American Museum collection thus contains not only a vast series of representative specimens from every class and order of vertebrates, secured by purchase or expedition from nearly all the great localities of the world, but an exhibition series of skulls and partial and entire skeletons and restorations which no other institution can hope to equal. Based upon this wonderful material is a large amount of research, filling many volumes, published for the greater part in the bulletin and memoirs of the Museum. This research is not only the product of the staff, including Walter Granger, Barnum Brown, W. D. Matthew, and W. K. Gregory, but also of a number of other American and some foreign paleontologists as well.

Professor Osborn's own work has been voluminous, his bibliography from 1877 to 1916 containing no fewer than

441 titles, ranging over the fields of paleontology,—which of course includes the greater number—geology, correlation and paleogeography, evolutionary principles exemplified in the Mammalia, man, neurology and embryology, biographies, and the theory of education.

In paleontology, Osborn's researches have been largely with the Reptilia and Mammalia, partly morphological, but also taxonomic and evolutional. Faunistic studies have also been made of the mammals. Of his published volumes the most important are, first, the Age of Mammals (1910), in which he treats not of evolutionary series of phylogenies, but of faunas and their origin, migrations, and extinctions, and of the correlation of Old and New World Tertiary deposits and their contents. Men of the Old Stone Age (1916) is an exhaustive treatise and is the first full and authoritative American presentation of what has been discovered up to the present time throughout the world in regard to human prehistory. In his latest volume, The Origin and Evolution of Life (1917), Osborn presents a new energy conception of evolution and heredity as against the prevailing matter and form conceptions. In this volume there is summed up the whole story of the origin and evolution of life on earth up to the appearance of man. This last book is novel in its conceptions, but it is too early as yet to judge of the acceptance of Osborn's theses by his fellow workers in science.

Since the death of Professor Marsh, Osborn has served as vertebrate paleontologist to the United States Geological Survey, and has in charge the carrying through to completion of the many monographs proposed by his distinguished predecessor. One of these, that on the horned dinosaurs, has been completed by Hatcher and Lull (1907), another on the stegosaurian dinosaurs has been carried forward by C. W. Gilmore of the United States National Museum, while under Osborn's own hand are the memoirs on the titanotheres (aided by W. K. Gregory), the horses, and the sauropod dinosaurs. Of these, the first, when it shall have been completed, promises to be the most monumental and exhaustive study of a group of fossil organisms ever undertaken.

As a leader in science, a teacher and administrator, Professor Osborn's rank is high among the leading vertebratists. He is remarkably successful in his choice of assistants and in stimulating them in their productiveness so that their combined results form a very considerable share of the later literature in America.

The ninth decade ushered in the work of a valuable group of students, of whom John Bell Hatcher should be mentioned in particular, as his work is done. Graduate of Yale in 1884, he spent a number of years assisting his teacher, Professor Marsh, mainly in the field, collecting during that time, either for Yale or for the United States Geological Survey, an enormous amount of very fine material, especially from the West, although he also collected in the older Tertiary and Potomac beds near Washington. In the West he secured no fewer than 105 titanothere skulls, explored the Tertiary, Judith River, and Lance formations, collected and in fact virtually discovered the remains of the Cretaceous mammals and of the horned dinosaurs which he was later privileged to describe. He then (1893) went to Princeton, which he served for seven years, his principal work being explorations in Patagonia for the E. and M. Museum, one direct result of which was the publication of a large quarto on the narrative of the expedition and the geography and ethnography of the region. Going to the Carnegie Museum in Pittsburgh in 1900, Hatcher carried forward the work of exploration and collecting begun for that institution by Wortman, and as a partial result prepared many papers, the principal ones being memoirs on the dinosaurs *Haplocanthosaurus* and *Diplodocus.* In 1903, with T. W. Stanton of the United States Geological Survey, Hatcher explored the Judith River beds and together they settled the vexatious problem of their age, the published results appearing in 1905, after Hatcher's death. His last piece of research, begun in 1902 and continued until his death in 1904, was an elaborate monograph on the Ceratopsia, one of the many projected by Marsh. Of this memoir Hatcher had completed some 150 printed quarto pages, giving a rare insight into the anatomy of these strange forms. The final chapters, however, which were based very largely upon Hatcher's own opinions, had to be prepared by another hand.

Despite his early death, therefore, Hatcher rendered a very signal service to American paleontology—in exploration, stratigraphy, morphology, and systematic revision—and his activity in planning new fields of research, such, for instance, as the exploration of the

Antarctic continent, gave promise of further high attainment, when his hand was arrested by death.

Summary.

It is not surprising that American vertebrate paleontology has arisen to so high a plane, when one considers the material at its disposal. Having a vast and virgin field for exploration, a sufficient number of collectors, some of whom have devoted much of their lives to the work, and a refinement of technique that permitted the preservation of the fragmental and ill conserved as well as the finer specimens, the results could hardly have been otherwise. Thus it has been possible to secure material almost unique throughout the world for extent, for completeness, and for variety. To this must be added a certain American daring in the matter of the restoration of missing portions, both of the individual bones and of the skeleton as a whole, such as European conservatism will not as a rule permit. This work has for the most part been done after the most painstaking comparison and research and is highly justified in the accuracy of the results, which render the fabric of the skeleton much more intelligible, both to the scientist and to the layman. Material once secured and prepared is then mounted, and here again American ingenuity has accomplished some remarkable results. Some of the specimens thus mounted are so small and delicate as to require holding devices comparable to those for the display of jewels; yet others—huge dinosaurs the bones of which are enormously heavy, but so brittle that they will not bear even the weight of a process unsupported—require a carefully designed and skilfully worked out series of supports of steel or iron which must be perfectly secure and at the same time as inconspicuous as possible. And of late the lifelike pose of the individual skeleton has been augmented by the preparation of groups of several animals which collectively exhibit sex, size, or other individual variations and the full mechanics of the skeleton under the varying poses assumed by the creature during life.

The work of further restoration has been rendered possible through comparative anatomical study, enabling us to essay restorations in entirety by means of models and drawings, clothing the bones with sinews and with flesh and the flesh with skin and hair, if such the creature bore; while the laws of faunal coloration have permitted the coloring of the restoration in a way which if not the actual hue of life is a very reasonable possibility.

Thus the American paleontologists have blazed a trail which has been followed to good effect by certain of their Old World colleagues.

With such means and methods and such material available, it is again not surprising that American paleontology has furnished more and more of the evidences of evolution, and disclosed to the eyes of scientists animal relationships which were undreamed of by the systematist whose research dealt only with the existing. It has also explained some vexatious problems of animal distribution and of extinction, and has connected up cause and effect in the great evolutionary movements which are recorded.

The results of systematic research have added hosts of new genera and species and of families, but of orders there are relatively few. Nevertheless a number, especially among reptiles and mammals, have come to light as the fruits of American discovery. But aside from the dry cataloguing of such groups, the American systematists have worked out some very remarkable phylogenies and have thus clarified our vision of animal relationships in a way which the recent zoologist could never have done. In this connection, the Permian vertebrates, which have been collected and studied with amazing success, principally by Williston and Case, should be mentioned, although the work is yet incomplete. Some of these forms are amphibian, others reptilian, yet others of such character as to link the two classes as transitional forms. Of the Mesozoic reptiles, a very remarkable assemblage has come to light, in a degree of perfection unknown elsewhere. These are dinosaurs, of which several phyla are now known; carnivores both great and small, some of the latter being actually toothless; Sauropoda, whose perfection and dimensions are incomparable except for those found in East Africa; and predentates, armored, unarmored, and horned, the last exclusively American. The unarmored trachodonts are now known in their entirety, for not only has our West produced articulated skeletons but mummified carcasses whose skin and other portions of their soft anatomy are represented, and which are thus far without a parallel elsewhere in the world. Other reptilian groups are well known, notably the Triassic ichthyosaurs, and the mosasaurs and plesiosaurs of the Kansas chalk. The last formation has also produced toothed birds, *Hesperornis* and *Ichthyornis,* which again are absolutely unique.

But it is in the mammalian class that the phylogenies become so highly complete and of such great importance as evolutionary evidences, for nowhere else than in our own West have such series been found as the Dinocerata and creodonts among archaic forms, the primitive primates from the Eocene, the carnivores such as the dogs and cats and mustellids, but especially the hoofed orders such as the horses. Of these hoofed orders, the classic American series of horses is complete, that of the camels probably no less so, while much is known of the deer and oreodonts, the last showing several parallel phyla, and of the proboscideans, which while having their pristine home in the Old World nevertheless soon sought the new where their remains are found from the Miocene until their final and apparently very recent extinction. These creatures show increase of bulk, perfection of feet and teeth, development of various weapons, horns and antlers, which may be studied in their relationship with the other organs to make the evolving whole, or their evolution may be traced as individual structures which have their rise, culmination, and sometimes their senile atrophy in a way comparable to that of the representatives of the order as a whole. Thus, for example, Osborn has traced the evolution of the molar teeth, and Cope of the feet, while Marsh has shown that brain development runs a similar course and that its degree of perfection within a group is a potent factor for survival.

As a student of evolution, the paleontologist sees things in a very different light from the zoologist. The latter is concerned largely with matters of detail—with the inheritance of color or of the minor and more superficial characteristics of animals—and the period of observation of such phenomena is of necessity brief because of the mortality of the observer. Whereas the paleontologist has a perspective which the other lacks, since for him time means little in the terms of his own life, and he can look into the past and see the great and fundamental changes which evolution has wrought, the rise of phyla, of classes, of orders, and he alone can see the orderliness of the process and sense the majesty of the laws which govern it.

Influence of the American Journal of Science.

The influence of the American Journal of Science as a medium for the dissemination of the results of vertebrate research has been in evidence throughout this discussion, but it were well, perhaps, to emphasize that service more fully. The Journal was, as we have seen, the chief outlet for Professor Marsh's research, for there were published in it during his lifetime no fewer than 175 papers descriptive of the forms which he studied, as well as a great part of the material in the published monographs. As Marsh left very few manuscript notes, the importance of these frequent publications in thus setting forth much that he thought and learned concerning the material is very great indeed. The combined titles of all other authors in the Journal in this line of research for the century of its life fall far short of the number produced by Marsh alone, as they include 136 all told, but the range of subjects is highly representative of the entire field of vertebrate research. It should be borne in mind, moreover, that Leidy, Cope, and Osborn each had another medium of publication, which of course is true of other workers in the great museums such as the American, National, and Carnegie, all of which issue bulletins and quarto publications for the purpose of disseminating the work of their staff. Many of the earlier announcements of the discovery of vertebrate relics appeared in the Journal, as did practically all the literature of the science of fossil footprints (ichnology), except of course the larger quartos of Hitchcock and Deane. Of the footprint papers by Hitchcock, Deane, and others, there were no fewer than thirty-two, with a number of additional communications on attendant phenomena bones and plants.

Up to 1847, except for a few foreign announcements, the Journal published almost exclusively on eastern American paleontology, the only exception being a notice of bones from Oregon by Perkins in 1842. In 1847 came the announcement of a western "Palæothere" by Prout, which marked the beginning of the researches of Leidy and others in the Bad Lands of the great Nebraska plains. The Journal thenceforth published paper after paper on forms from all over North America, and on all aspects of our science: discovery, systematic description, faunal relationships, evolutionary evidences—thus showing that breadth and catholicity which has made it so great a power in the advancement of science.

Art. VII.—*The Rise of Petrology as a Science*; by Louis V. Pirsson.

This chapter is intended to present a brief sketch of the progress of the science of petrology from its early beginnings down to the present time. The field to be covered is so large that this can be done only in broadest outline, and it has therefore been restricted chiefly to what has been accomplished in America. Although the period covered by the life of this Journal extends backward for a century it is, however, practically only within the last fifty years that the rocks of the earth's crust have been made the subject of such systematic investigation by minute and delicately accurate methods of research as to give rise to a distinct branch of geologic science. It is not intended of course to affirm by this statement that the broader features of the rocks, especially those which may be observed in the field and which concern their relations as geological masses, had not been made the object of inquiry before this time, since this is the very foundation of geology itself. Moreover, a certain amount of investigation of rocks, as to the minerals of which they were composed, the significance of their textures, and their chemical composition, had been carried out, concomitant with the growth from early times of geology and mineralogy. Thus, in 1815, Cordier by a process of washing separated the components of a basalt and by chemical tests determined the constituent minerals. At the time this Journal was founded, and for many years following, the genesis of rocks, especially of igneous rocks, was a subject of inquiry and of prolonged discussion. The aid of the rapidly growing science of chemistry was invoked by the geologists and analyses of rocks were made in the attempt to throw light on important questions. It is remarkable, also, how keen were the observations that the geologists of those days made upon the rocks, as to their component minerals and structures, aided only by the pocket lens. Many ideas were put forward, the essentials of which have persisted to the present day and have become interwoven into the science, whereas others gave rise to contentions which have not yet been settled to the satisfaction of all. At times in these earlier days the microscope was called into use to help in solving questions regarding the finer grained rocks, but this employment, as Zirkel has shown, was merely incidental, and no definite technique or purpose for the instrument was established.

On the other hand, the fact that up to the middle of the last century a large store of information relating to the occurrence of rocks, and to the mineral composition of those of coarser grain, and somewhat in respect to their structure, had been accumulated, caused attempts in one way or another to find means of coördinating these data and to produce classifications, such as those of Von Cotta and Cordier. The history of these attempts at classification, before the revelations made by the use of the microscope had become general, has been admirably reviewed by Whitman Cross[1] and need not be further enlarged upon here.

That a considerable amount of work was done along chemical lines also is testified to by the publication of Roth's Tabellen in 1861, in which all published analyses of rocks up to that date were collected. What was accomplished during this period was done chiefly on the continent of Europe, and little attention had been paid to the subject of rocks either in America or in Great Britain—even so late as 1870 Geikie remarks, as referred to by Cross,[2] that there was no good English treatise on petrography, or the classification and description of rocks. In this country still less had been accomplished, interest being almost wholly confined to the vigorous and growing sciences of geology and mineralogy. This was natural, for mineralogy is the chief buttress on which the structure of petrology rests and must naturally develop first, especially in a relatively new and unexplored region, whose mineral resources first attract attention. The geologists in carrying out their studies also observed the rocks as they saw them in the field and made incidental reference to them, but investigations of the rocks themselves was very little attempted. An inspection of the first two series of this Journal shows relatively little of importance in petrology published in this country; a few analyses of rocks, occasional mention of mineral composition, of weathering properties, and notices of

[1] For references, see the Bibliography at the end of this chapter.

methods of classification proposed by French and German geologists nearly exhaust the list.

Introduction of the Microscope.

The beginnings of a particular branch of science are generally obscure and rooted so imperceptibly in the foundations on which it rests that it is difficult to point to any particular place in its development and say that this is the start. There are exceptions of course, like the remarkable work of Willard Gibbs in physical chemistry, and it may chance that the happy inspiration of a single worker may give such direction to methods of investigation as to open the gates into a whole new realm of research, and to thus create a separate scientific field, as happened in Radiochemistry.

This is what occurred in petrology when Sorby in England, in 1858,[3] pointed out the value of the microscope as an instrument of research in geologic investigations, and demonstrated that its employment in the study of thin sections of rocks would yield information of the highest value. Others beside Sorby had made use of the microscope, as pointed out by Zirkel,[4] but, as he indicates, no one before him had recognized its value. During the next ten years or so, however, its recognition was very slow and the papers published by Sorby himself were mainly concerned in settling very special matters.

As Williams[5] has suggested, the greatest service of Sorby was, perhaps, his instructing Zirkel in his ideas and methods, for the latter threw himself whole-heartedly into the study of rocks by the aid of the microscope and his discoveries stimulated other workers in this field in Germany, his native country, until the dawning science of petrology began to assume form. A further step forward was taken in 1873 in the appearance of the textbooks of Zirkel[6] and Rosenbusch[7] which collated the knowledge which had been gained and furnished the investigator more precise methods of work. It is difficult for the student of to-day to realize how much had been learned in the interval and, for that matter, how much has been gained since 1873, without an inspection of these now obsolete texts. In 1863, Zirkel, who was then at the beginning of his work, said in his first paper presented to the Vienna Academy of Sciences[8] that if he confined himself chiefly to the structure of the rocks investigated and of their component minerals, and stated little as to what these minerals were, the reason for that was because "although the microscope serves splendidly for the investigation of the former relations, it promises very little help for the latter. Labradorite, oligoclase and orthoclase, augite and hornblende, minerals whose recognition offers the most important problems in petrography, in most cases cannot be distinguished from one another under the microscope." How little could Zirkel have foreseen, at this time, less than forty years later, that not only could labradorite be accurately determined in a rock-section, but that in a few minutes by the making of two or three measurements on a properly selected section, its chemical composition and the crystallographic orientation of the section itself could be determined!

The Thin Section.

Before going further we may pause here a moment to consider the origin and development of the thin section, without which no progress could have been made in this field of research. When we reflect upon the matter, it seems a marvelous thing indeed that the densest, blackest rock can be made to yield a section of the 1/1000 of an inch in thickness, so thin and transparent that fine printing can be easily read through it, and transmitting light so clearly that the most high-powered objectives of the microscope can be used to discern and study the minutest structures it presents with the same capacity that they can be employed upon sections of organic material prepared by the microtome. This is no small achievement.

The first thin sections appear to have been prepared in 1828 by William Nicol of Edinburgh, to whom we owe the prism which carries his name. He undertook the making of sections from fossil wood for the purpose of studying its structure. The method he developed was in principle the same as that employed to-day, where machinery is not used; that is, he ground a flat smooth surface upon one side of a chip of his petrified wood, then cemented this to a bit of glass plate with Canada balsam, and ground down the other side until the section was sufficiently thin. This method was used by others for the study of fossil woods, coal, etc., but it was not applied to rocks until 1850, when Sorby used it for investigating a calcareous grit. Oschatz, in Germany, also about this time independently discovered the same method. A further advance was made in melting the cement, floating off the slice, and transferring it to a suitable object-glass with cover, a process still employed by many; though most operators now cement the first prepared surface of the rock chip directly to the object-glass, and mount the section without transferring it.

Next came the use of machinery to save labor in grinding, and another step was made in the introduction of the saw, a circular disk of sheet iron whose edge was furnished with embedded diamond dust. This makes it possible to cut relatively thin slices with comparative rapidity, but the final grinding which requires experience and skill must still be done by hand. Carborundum has also largely replaced emery. The skill and technique of preparers has reached a point where sections of rocks of the desired thinness (0·001 inch), and four or five inches square have been exhibited.

The Era of Petrography.

In these earlier days of the science, as noted above, great difficulty was at first experienced in the recognition of the minerals as they were encountered in the study of rocks under the microscope. At that time the chemical composition and outward crystal form of minerals were relatively much better known than their physical and, especially, their optical properties and constants. Some beginnings in this had been made by Brewster, Nicol, and other physicists, and the mineralogists had commenced to study minerals from this viewpoint. Especially Des Cloiseaux had devoted himself to determining the optical properties of many minerals, and the writer, when a student in the laboratory of Rosenbusch in 1890, well recalls the tribute that he paid to the work of Des Cloiseaux for the aid which it had afforded him in his earlier researches in petrography.

The twenty years following the publication of the texts of Rosenbusch and Zirkel may be characterized as the era of microscopical petrography. A distinction is drawn here between the latter word and petrology, a distinction often overlooked, for *petrography* means literally the description of rocks, whereas *petrology* denotes the science of rocks. As time passed the broader and more fundamental features of rocks, especially of igneous and metamorphic rocks, in addition to their mineral constitution, were more studied and gained greater recognition, petrography gradually became a department of the larger field of petrology—the science of to-day.

The use of the microscope, as soon as the method became more generally understood, opened up so vast a field for investigation that at first the study and description of the rocks seemed of prime importance. This was natural, for hitherto the finer grained rocks had for the most part defied any adequate elucidation and here was a key which enabled one to read the cipher. A flood of literature upon the composition, structure, and other characters of rocks from all parts of the world began to appear in ever increasing volume. The demands of the petrographers for a greater and more accurate knowledge of the physical and optical constants of minerals stimulated this side of mineralogy, and increasing attention was given to investigations in this direction. No definite line between the two closely related sciences could be drawn, and a large part of the work published under the heading of petrography could perhaps be as well, or better, described under the title of micro-mineralogy. To some, in truth, the rocks presented themselves simply as aggregates of minerals, occurring in fine grains.

The work of the German petrographers attracted attention and drew students from all parts of the world to their laboratories, especially to those of Zirkel and Rosenbusch. The great opportunities, facilities, and freedom for work which the German universities had long offered to foreign students of science naturally encouraged this. In France a brilliant school of petrologists, under the able leadership of Michel-Lévy and Fouqué, had arisen whose work has been continued by Barrois, Lacroix and others, but the rigid structure of the French universities at that period did not permit of the offering of great inducements for the attendance of foreign students. The work of the French petrographers will be noticed in another connection.

In Great Britain, the home of Sorby, the new science progressed at first slowly, until it was taken up by Allport, Bonney, Judd, Rutley, and others. In 1885 the evidence of the advance that had been made and of the firm basis on which the new science was now placed appeared in Teall's great work, "British Petrography," which marked an epoch in that country in petrographic publication. This work was of importance also in another direction than that of descriptive petrography, in that it contains valuable suggestions for the application of the principles of modern physical chemistry in solving the problems of the origin of igneous rocks. In it, as in the publications of Lagorio, we see the passage of the petrographic into the petrologic phase of the science.

The earliest publication in America of the results of microscopic investigation of rocks that the writer has been able to find is by A. A. Julien and C. E. Wright, chiefly on greenstones and chloritic schists from the iron-bearing regions of upper Michigan.[9] Naturally, it was of a brief and elementary character. In 1874 E. S. Dana read a paper before the American Association for the Advancement of Science on the result of his studies on the "Trap-rocks of the Connecticut valley," an abstract of which was published in this Journal.[10] Meanwhile Clarence King, in charge of the 40th Parallel survey, feeling the need of a systematic study of the crystalline rocks which had been encountered, and finding no one in this country prepared to undertake it, had induced Zirkel to give his attention to this task. The result of this labor appeared in 1876 in a fine volume[11] which attracted great attention. In the same year appeared also petrographical papers by J. H. Caswell,[12] E. S. Dana[13] and G. W. Hawes.[14] The latter devoted himself almost entirely to this field of research and may thus, perhaps, be termed the earliest of the petrographers in this country. His work, "The Mineralogy and Lithology of New Hampshire," issued in 1878 as one of the reports of the State Survey under Prof. C. H. Hitchcock, was the first considerable memoir by an American. This was followed by various papers, one on the "Albany Granite and its contact phenomena,"[15] being of especial interest as one of the earliest studies of a contact zone, and in the fullness of methods employed in attacking the problem forecasting the change to the petrology era.

During the ten years following, or from 1880 to 1890, the new science of petrography flourished and grew exceedingly. Many young geologists abroad devoted themselves to this field of research and the store of accumulated knowledge concerning rocks from all parts of the world, and their relations grew apace. The work of Teall has been noticed and among others might be mentioned the name of Brögger, whose first contribution[16] in this field gave evidence that his publications would become classics in the science.

In America there appeared in this period a number of eager workers, trained in part in the laboratories of Rosenbusch and Zirkel, whose researches were destined to place the science on the secure footing in this country which it occupies to-day. Among the earlier of these may be mentioned Whitman Cross, R. D. Irving, J. P. Iddings, G. H. Williams, J. F. Kemp, J. S. Diller, B. K. Emerson, M. E. Wadsworth, G. P. Merrill, N. H. Winchell, and F. D. Adams in Canada. Others were added yearly to this group. As a result of their work a constantly growing volume of information about the rocks of America became available, and one has only to examine the files of this and other journals and the listed publications of the National and State Surveys to appreciate this.

In this Journal, for example, we may refer to papers[17] by Emerson on the Deerfield dike and its minerals, and on the occurrence of nephelite syenite at Beemersville, N. J.; to various interesting articles by Cross on lavas from Colorado and the pneumatolytic and other minerals associated with them; to important papers by Iddings on the rocks of the volcanoes of the Northwest, and those of the Great Basin, to primary quartz in basalt, and the origin of lithophysæ; to the results of researches by G. H. Williams on the rocks of the Cortlandt series, and on peridotite near Syracuse, N. Y.; to papers by Diller on the peridotites of Kentucky, and recent volcanic eruptions in California; to articles by R. D. Irving on the copper-bearing and other rocks of the Lake Superior region, and to Kemp on dikes and other eruptives in southern New York and northern New Jersey. Other publications would greatly extend this list.

The Petrologic Era.

As the chief facts regarding rocks, especially igneous rocks, as to their mineral and chemical composition, their structure and texture and the limits within which these are enclosed, became better known; and the relations, which these bear to the associations of rocks and their modes of occurrence, began to be perceived, the science assumed a broader aspect. The perception that rocks were no longer to be regarded merely as interesting assemblages of minerals, but as entities whose characters and associations had a meaning, increased. More and better rock analyses stimulated interest on the chemical side and this and the genesis of their minerals led to a consideration of the magmas and their functions in rock-making. The fact that the different kinds of rocks were not scattered indiscriminately, but that different regions exhibited certain groupings with common characters, was noticed. These features led to attempts to classify igneous rocks on different lines from those hitherto employed, and to account for their origin on broad principles. In other words, the descriptive science of petrography merged into the broader one of petrology. No exact time can be set which marks this passage, since the evolution was gradual. Yet for this country, in reviewing the literature, for which the successive issues of the "Bibliography of North American Geology" published by the U. S. Geological Survey has been of the greatest value; the writer has been struck by the fact that in the first volume containing the index of papers down to and including 1891, the articles on subjects of this nature are listed under the heading of *petrography,* whereas in the second volume (1892-1900) they are grouped under *petrology* and the former heading is omitted. A justification for this is found in examining the list of publications and noting their character. With some reason, therefore, the beginning of this period may be placed as in the early years of this decade. Furthermore, it was at this time that the great work of Zirkel[18] began to appear, which sums up so completely the results of the petrographic era. Rosenbusch[19] was formulating more definitely his views on the division of rocks into magmatic groups, as displayed by their associations in the field, and using this in classification; an idea which, appearing first in the second edition of his "Physiographie der massigen Gesteine," finds fuller development in the third and last editions of this work. In this country Iddings[20] published an important paper, in which the family relationships of igneous rocks and the derivation of diverse groups from a common magma by differentiation are clearly brought out. The fundamental problems underlying the genesis of igneous rocks had now been clearly recognized, and with this recognition the science passed into the petrologic phase. Brögger[21] also had ascribed to the alkalic rocks of South Norway a common parentage and had pointed out their regional peculiarities.

From this time forward an attempt may be noted to find an analogy between rocks and the forms of organic life and to apply those principles of evolution and descent, which have proved so fruitful in the advancement of the biological sciences, to the genesis and classification of igneous rocks. This, perhaps, has on the whole been more apparent than real, in the constant borrowing of terms from those sciences to express certain features and relationships observed, or imagined, to obtain among rocks. Nevertheless, the perception of certain relations which we owe so largely to Rosenbusch and to Brögger[22] has proved of undoubted value in furnishing a stimulus for the investigation of new regions, and in affording indications of what the petrologist should anticipate in his work.

Thus, the labors of the men previously mentioned, with those of Bayley, Bascom, Cushing, Daly, Lane, Lawson, Lindgren, Pirsson, J. F. Williams, Washington, and others, have thrown a flood of light upon the igneous rocks of this continent, and has made it possible to draw many broad generalizations concerning their origin and distribution. Thus, the differentiated laccoliths of Montana[23] have been of service in affording clear examples of the process of local differentiation. Many papers published in this Journal during the last twenty years show this evolution and growth of petrological ideas. The contributions from American sources during this later period, and of which those in the Journal form a considerable fraction, have indeed been of great weight in shaping the development and future of the science.

By referring to the files of the Journal, it will be seen that they cover a continually widening range of subjects concerning rocks, and articles of theoretical interest are more and more in evidence, along with those of a purely descriptive character.[24] Thus we find discussions by Becker on the physical constants of rocks, on fractional crystallization, and on differentiation; by Cross on classification; by Adams on the physical properties of rocks; by Daly on the methods of igneous intrusion; by Wright on schistosity; by Fenner on the crystallization of basaltic magma; by Bowen on differentiation by crystallization; by the writer on complementary rocks and on the origin of phenocrysts; by Smyth on the origin of alkalic rocks; by Murgoci on the genesis of riebeckite rocks; and by Barrell on contact-metamorphism. These may serve as examples, selected almost at random, from the files of the Journal, and we find with them articles descriptive of the petrology of many particular regions, which often contain also matter of general interest and importance, such as papers by Lindgren on the granodiorite and related rocks of the Sierra Nevada; by Ransome on latite; by Cross on the Leucite Hills; by Hague on the lavas of the Yellowstone Park; by Pogue on ancient volcanic rocks from North Carolina; by Warren on peridotites from Cumberland, R. I.; on sandstone from Texas by Goldman; and on the petrology of various localities in central New Hampshire by Washington and the writer. Such a list could of course be much extended and other papers of importance be cited, but enough has been said to indicate how important a repository of the results of petrologic research the Journal has been and continues to be.

In thus looking backward over the list of active workers we are involuntarily led to pause and reflect how great a loss American petrology has sustained in the premature death of some of its most brilliant and promising exponents; it is only necessary to recall the names of R. D. Irving, G. H. Williams, G. W. Hawes, J. F. Williams and Carville Lewis, to appreciate this.

The store of material gathered during these years has led to the publication of extensive memoirs, in which the science is treated not from the older descriptive side, but from the theoretical standpoint and of classification.[25] In these works strong divergencies of views and opinions are observed, which is a healthy sign in a developing science.

It should be also noted that along with this evolution on the theoretical side there has been a constant improvement in the technique of investigating rocks. It is only necessary to compare the older handbooks of Zirkel and

Rosenbusch with the many modern treatises on petrographic methods to be assured of this.[26] It is due on the one hand to the vast amount of careful work which has been done in accurately determining the physical constants of rock-minerals* and in arranging these for their determination microscopically, as in the remarkable studies on the feldspars by Michel-Lévy, and on the other in researches on the apparatus employed, and in consequent improvements in them and in ways of using them, as exemplified in the delicately accurate methods introduced by Wright.[27] The development of the microscope itself as an instrument of research in this field and in mineralogy deserves a further word in this connection. The first step toward making the ordinary microscope of special use in this way was taken by Henry Fox Talbot of England, when he introduced in 1834 the employment of the recently invented nicol prisms for testing objects in polarized light. The modern instrument may be said to date from the design offered by Rosenbusch in 1876. Since that time there have been constant improvements, almost year by year, until the instrument has become one of great precision and convenience, remarkably well adapted for the work it is called upon to perform, with special designs for various kinds of use, and an almost endless number of accessory appliances for research in different branches of mineralogy and crystallography, as well as in petrography proper.[28] This also calls to mind the fact that for the convenience of those who are not able to use the microscope special manuals of petrology have been prepared in which rocks are treated from the megascopic standpoint.[29]

Metamorphic Rocks.

In this connection the metamorphic rocks should not be forgotten. They afford indeed the most difficult problems with which the geologist has to deal; every branch of geological science may in turn be called upon to furnish its quota for help in solving them. Under the

* We may mention here, for example, the work in mineralogy of Penfield, noticed in the accompanying chapter on mineralogy. In addition to the accurate determination of the composition and constants of many minerals, some of which have importance from the petrographic standpoint, we owe to him more than anyone the recognition of fluorine and hydroxyl in a variety of species, and thereby the perception of their pneumatolytic origin. His papers have been published almost entirely in this Journal.

attack of careful, accurate and persistent work in the field, under the microscope and in the chemical laboratory, with the aid of the garnered knowledge in petrology, stratigraphy, physiography, and other fields of geologic science, their mystery has in large part given way. The inaugural work of Lehmann, Lossen, Barrois, Bonney, Teall, and other European geologists, was paralleled in America by that of R. D. Irving, owing to whose efforts the Lake Superior region became the chief place of study of the metamorphic rocks in this country. Irving soon obtained the assistance of G. H. Williams, who had been engaged in the study of such rocks, and the latter published a memoir on the greenstone schist areas of Menominee and Marquette in Michigan[30] which will always remain one of the classics in the literature of metamorphic rocks. Irving's own contributions to petrology, though valuable, were cut short by his untimely death, but the study of this region under the direction of his associate and successor, C. R. Van Hise, with his co-laborors, has yielded a mass of information of fundamental importance in our understanding of metamorphism and the crystalline schists. Its fruitage appears in the memoir by Van Hise[31] which is the authoritative work of reference on metamorphism, and in various publications by him and his assistants, Bayley, Clements, Leith, and others. The work of the Canadian geologists, and of Kemp, Cushing, Smyth and Miller in the Adirondack region, should also be mentioned in connection with this field of petrology.

Chemical Analyses of Rocks.

It has been previously pointed out that, as the science of petrology grew, chemical investigations of rocks in bulk were undertaken. The object of such analyses was to obtain on the one hand a better control over the mineral composition and on the other to gain an idea of the nature of the magmas from which igneous rocks had formed. The earliest analysis of an American rock of which I can find record is of a "wacke" by J. W. Webster given in the first volume of this Journal, page 296, 1818.

During the next 40 years a few occasional analyses were undertaken by American chemists, by C. T. Jackson, T. Sterry Hunt, and others. In 1861, Justus Roth published the first edition of his Tabellen, in which he included all analyses which had been made to that date and which he considered were worthy of preservation. Although, naturally, from the status of analytical chemistry up to that time, most of these would now be considered rather crude, the publication of the work was of great service and marked an epoch in geochemistry. In these tables Roth lists four analyses of American igneous rocks, two from the Lake Superior region by Jackson and J. D. Whitney and two by European chemists, one of whom was Bunsen. The material of the last two was a "dolerite" and the same locality is given for each—"Sierra Nevada between 38° and 41°" which was probably considered quite precise for western America in those days.

From these feeble beginnings the forward progress of petrology on the chemical side in this country has been a steady one until its development has reached the point which will be indicated in what follows.

The collection of material by the various State surveys and by those initiated by the National Government led to an increasing number of rocks being analyzed during the petrographic period. These became also increasingly good in quality, like those published by G. W. Hawes in his papers. When, however, chemists were appointed to definite positions on the staffs of the Government surveys and especially when, after the organization of the U. S. Geological Survey in 1879, a general central laboratory was founded in 1883 with F. W. Clarke in charge, then a new era in the chemical investigation of rocks may be said to have started. In this connection should be mentioned the work of W. F. Hillebrand, who set a standard of accuracy and detail in rock analysis which had not hitherto been attempted. As a consequence of his accurate and thorough methods and results the mass of analyses performed by him and his fellow chemists in this laboratory affords us the greatest single contribution to chemical petrology which has been made. Up to January, 1914, the report of Clarke[32] lists some 8000 analyses of various kinds made in this laboratory for geologic purposes. Nearly everywhere also a great improvement in the quality of rock-analyses is to be noted, and in the manuals of Hillebrand[33] and Washington[34] the rock analyst has now at his command the methods of a greatly perfected technique which should insure him the best results.

Roth's Tabellen have been previously mentioned; several supplements were published, but after his death a long interval elapsed before this convenient and useful work was again taken up by Washington[35] and Osann.[36] A new edition of Washington's Tables has recently been published, listing some 8600 analyses of igneous rocks made up to the close of 1913.[37]

On the theoretical side also, where petrology passes into geology, the investigator of to-day will find a mass of most useful and accurate data well discussed in the modern representative of Bischof's Chemical Geology—Clarke's Data of Geochemistry.[38] The advance on the chemical side, therefore, has been quite commensurate with that in the microscope as an instrument, and in the results obtained by it.

Physico-Chemical Work.

The study of geological results by experimental methods, which should gain information concerning the processes by which those results are caused, and the conditions under which they operate, has been from the earliest days of the developing science recognized as most important, and the record of the literature shows considerable was done in this direction. Experimental work in modern petrology may, however, be considered to date from 1882 when Fouqué and Michel-Lévy[39] published the results of their extensive researches on the synthesis of minerals and rocks by pyrogeneous methods. The brilliant experiments of the French petrologists at once attracted attention, and since that time a considerable volume of valuable work has been done in this field by a number of men, among whom may be mentioned Morozewicz,[40] Doelter,[41] Tamman,[42] and Meunier.[43] As this work continued the results of the rapid advances made in physical chemistry began to be applied in this field with increasing value. To J. H. L. Vogt we owe a valuable series of papers,[44] in which the formation of minerals and rocks from magmas is treated from this standpoint. Most important of all for the future of petrology has been the founding in Washington of the splendid research institution, the Carnegie Geophysical Laboratory, under the leadership of Dr. A. L. Day with its corps of trained physicists, chemists and petrologists, devoted to the solving of the problems which the progress of geological science raises. The publications of this institution (many of them published in the Journal) are too numerous to be mentioned here; many of them treat successfully of matters of the greatest importance in petrology. This is an earnest of what we may hope in the future. The accumulation of the exact physical and chemical data, which is its aim, will serve as a necessary check to hypothetical speculation and bring petrology, and especially petrogenesis, in line with the other more exact sciences by furnishing quantitative foundations for its structure of theory to rest upon.

While the achievements of this great organization seem to minimize the work of the individual investigator in this field, he may take heart by observing the important results on the strength of rocks under various conditions which have been obtained by Adams in recent years, data of wide application in theoretical geology. In this field also a special text has appeared in which the principles and acquired data are given.[45]

Summary.

In this brief retrospect, giving only the barest outlines and omitting from necessity much of importance, we have seen petrology grow from occasional crude experiments into a fully organized science in the last half century. It has to-day a well-perfected technique, a large volume of literature, texts treating of general principles, of methods of work, descriptive handbooks on the morphological side, and has attained general recognition as a field, which, though not large, is worthy of the concentration of intellectual endeavor. Like other healthy growing organisms it has given rise to offshoots, and the sciences of metallography and of the micro-study of ore deposits, which are rapidly assuming form, have branched from it.

What of the future? The old days of mostly descriptive work, and of theorizing purely from observed results, have passed. The science has entered upon the stage where work and theory must be continually brought into agreement with chemical, physical and mathematical laws and data, and in the application of these new problems present themselves. As we climb, in fact, new horizons open to our view indicating fresh regions for exploration, for acquiring human knowledge and for our satisfaction.

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

[1] W. Cross, Jour. Geology, **10**, 451, 1902.
[2] *Ibid.,* p. 45.
[3] Sorby, Quart. Jour. Geol. Soc., **14**, 453, 1858.
[4] Zirkel, Einführung des Mikroskops in das mineralogisch-geologische Studium, 1881.
[5] Williams, G. H., Modern Petrography, 1886.
[6] Zirkel, Mikroskopische Beschaffenheit der Mineralien und Gesteine.
[7] Rosenbusch, Mikroskopische Physiographie der petrographisch wichtigen Mineralien.
[8] Zirkel, Mikroskopische Gesteinstudien, Sitzung vom 12 März, 1863.
[9] Julien and Wright, Geol. Surv. of Michigan, **2**, 1873. Appendices A and C.
[10] Dana, E. S., this Journal, **8**, 390-392, 1874.
[11] Zirkel, Geological Exploration of the 40th Parallel; vol. VI, Microscopical Petrography.
[12] Caswell, Microscopical Petrography of the Black Hills. U. S. Geog. and Geol. Surv. Rocky Mts. Rep. on Black Hills of Dakota, 469-527. The separate copies issued bear the imprint 1876; the complete report 1880.
[13] Dana, E. S., Igneous Rocks in the Judith Mts. Rep. of Reconnaissance Carroll, Mont., to Yellowstone Park in 1875. Col. Wm. Ludlow, War Dept., Washington, 105-106.
[14] Hawes, G. W., Rocks of the Chlorite Formation, etc., this Journal, **11**, 122-126, 1876. Greenstones of New Hampshire, etc., ibid., **12**, 129-137, 1876.
[15] Hawes, G. W., this Journal, **21**, 21-32, 1881.
[16] Brögger, Die silurischen Etagen 2 und 3, Kristiania, 1882.
[17] The references for the papers alluded to, all of them in this Journal, are as follows:
Emerson, **24**, 195-202, 270-278, 349-359, 1882;
————, **23**, 302-308, 1882.
Cross, **27**, 94-96, 1884; **31**, 432-438, 1886; **39**, 359-370, 1890; **41**, 466-475, 1891; **23**, 452-458, 1882.
Iddings, **26**, 222-235, 1883;
————, **27**, 453-463, 1884;
————, **36**, 208-221, 1888;
————, **33**, 36-45, 1887.
Williams, **31**, 26-41, 1886; **33**, 135-144, 191-199, 1887; **35**, 433-448, 1888; **36**, 254-259, 1888.
————, **34**, 137-145, 1887.
Diller, **32**, 121-125, 1886; **37**, 219-220, 1889;
————, **33**, 45-50, 1887.
Irving (**26**, 27-32, 321-322, **27**, 130-134, 1883; **29**, 358-359, 1885).
Kemp (**35**, 331-332, 1888; **36**, 247-253, 1888; **38**, 130-134, 1889).
[18] Zirkel, Lehrbuch der Petrographie, 2d ed., 1893.
[19] Hunter and Rosenbusch, Ueber Monchiquit, etc., Min. petr. Mitth., **11**, 445, 1890. Rosenbusch, Ueber Structur und Class. der Eruptivgesteine, ibid., **12**, 351, 1891.
[20] Iddings, Origin of Igneous Rocks, Bull. Phil. Soc. Washington, **12**, 89-213, 1892.
[21] Brögger, Mineralien der Syenit-pegmatit-gänge, etc., Zs. Kryst., **16**, 1890.
[22] ————, Basic Eruptive Rocks of Gran, Quart. Jour. Geol. Soc., **50**, 15, 1894; Grorudit-Tinguait-Serie, Vidensk. Skrift. 1 Math. nat. Kl., No. 4, 1894.
[23] Weed and Pirsson, *e.g.* Shonkin Sag, this Journal, **12**, 1-17, 1901.
[24] The references for the articles mentioned (all in the Journal) are as follows:
Becker, **46**, 1893; **4**, 257, 1897; **3**, 21-40, 1897.
Cross, **39**, 657-661, 1915.
Adams, **22**, 95-123, 1906; **29**, 465-487, 1910.
Daly, **22**, 195-216, 1906; **26**, 17-50, 1908.

Wright, 22, 224-230, 1906.
Fenner, 29, 217-234, 1910.
Bowen, 39, 175-191; 40, 161-185, 1915.
Pirsson, 50, 116-121, 1895; 7, 271-280, 1899.
Smyth, 36, 33-46, 1913.
Murgoci, 20, 133-145, 1905.
Barrell, 13, 279-296, 1902.
Lindgren, 3, 301-314, 1897; 9, 269-282, 1900.
Ransome, 5, 355-375, 1898.
Cross, 4, 115-141, 1897.
Hague, 1, 445-457, 1896.
Pogue, 28, 218-238, 1909.
Warren, 25, 12-36, 1908.
Goldman, 39, 261-288, 1915.
Washington and Pirsson, Belknap Mts., 20, 344-353, 1905; 22, 439-457, 493-515, 1906.
————, Red Hill, 23, 257-276, 433-447, 1907.
————, Tripyramid Mt., 31, 405-431, 1911.

[25] Quantitative Classification of Igneous Rocks, Cross, Iddings, Pirsson and Washington, Chicago, 1903.
Petrogenesis, C. Doelter, Braunschweig, 1906.
Igneous Rocks, vols. 1 and 2, J. P. Iddings, New York, 1909 and 1913.
Problem of Volcanism, Iddings, New Haven, 1914.
Natural History of Igneous Rocks, Alfred Harker, London, 1909.
Igneous Rocks and their Origin, R. A. Daly, New York, 1914.

[26] Among these may be mentioned:
Rosenbusch u. Wülfing, Physiog. der petrog. wicht. Min., Stuttgart, 1905.
Iddings, J. P., Rock-Minerals, 1st ed., New York, 1906.
Johannsen, A., Manual of Petrographic Methods, New York, 1914.
Winchell, N. H. and A. N., Elements of Optical Mineralogy, New York, 1909.

[27] Wright, Methods of Petrographic-Microscopic Research, Carnegie Inst., Washington, 1911, and various papers; many in this Journal.

[28] Conf. Wright's work quoted above and the various manuals previously mentioned.

[29] Kemp, Hand-book of Rocks, 3d ed., New York, 1904. Pirsson, Rocks and Rock-Minerals, New York, 1910.

[30] Williams, G. H., U. S. Geol. Surv., Bull. 62, Washington, 1890.

[31] Van Hise, Treatise on Metamorphism, U. S. Geol. Surv., Monograph 17.

[32] F. W. Clarke, U. S. Geol. Surv., Bull. 591, 1915.

[33] Hillebrand, Analysis of Silicate and Carbonate Rocks, U. S. Geol. Surv., Bull. 422, 1910.

[34] Washington, Chemical Analysis of Rocks, pp. 200, New York, 1910.

[35] Id., Chemical Analyses of Igneous Rocks (1884-1900), U. S. Geol. Surv., Prof. Paper, No. 14, 1903.

[36] Osann, Beitr. zu chem. Petrogr., II Teil. Anal. d. Eruptivgest., 1884-1900, Stuttgart, 1905.

[37] Washington, Ibid., 2d ed., U. S. Geol. Surv., Prof. Paper 99, pp. 1216, 1917.

[38] Clarke, U. S. Geol. Surv., Bull. 616, 1916.

[39] Fouqué and Michel-Lévy, Synthese des Mineraux et des Roches, Paris, 1882.

[40] Morozewicz, Exper. Untersuch. u. Bildung der Min. im Magma, Min. petr. Mitt., 18, 1898.

[41] Doelter, Synthetische Studien, N. Jahrb. Min. 1897, 1, 1-26. Allg. chem. Mineralogie, etc.

[42] Tamman, Krystallisieren und Schmelzen, 1903.

[43] St. Meunier, Les Méthodes de Synthèse en Minéralogie, Paris, 1891.

[44] Vogt, Mineralbildung in Smelzmassen, Christiania, 1892; Silikatschmelzlösungen, 1 and 2, 1903, 1904, and various other papers, esp. in Min. petr. Mitt., vols. 24 and 25, 1906.

[45] H. E. Boeke, Grundlagen der physikalisch-chemischen Petrographie, Berlin, 1915.

Art. VIII.—*The Growth of Mineralogy from 1818 to 1918;* by William E. Ford.

Mineralogy to-day would certainly be generally considered one of the minor members of the group of the Geological Sciences. We commonly look upon it in the light of an useful handmaiden, whose chief function is to serve the other branches, and we are inclined to forget that, in reality, mineralogy was the first to be recognized and, with considerable truth, might be claimed as the mother of all the others. Minerals, because of their frequent beauty of color and form, and their uses as gems and as ornamental stones, were the first inorganic objects to excite wonder and comment and we find many of them named and described in very early writings. Theophrastus (368-284 B. C.), a famous pupil of Aristotle, wrote a treatise "On Stones" in which he collected a large amount of information about minerals and fossils. The elder Pliny (23-79 A. D.), more than three centuries later, in his Natural History, described and named many of the commoner minerals. At this time it was natural that no clear distinction should be drawn between minerals and rocks, or even between minerals and fossils. As long as all study of the materials of the earth's crust was concerned with their superficial characters, it was logical to include everything under the single head. There were some writers in the early centuries of the Christian era, however, who believed that fossils had been derived from living animals but the majority considered them to be only strange and unusual forms of minerals. During many succeeding centuries little was added to the general store of geological knowledge and it was not until the beginning of the sixteenth century, that any further notable progress was made. Agricola (1494-1555) was a physician, who, for a time, lived in the mining district of Joachimstal. He studied and described the minerals that he collected there. He was the first to give careful and critical descriptions of minerals, of their crystals and general physical properties. Unfortunately, he also did not realize the fundamental distinction between fossils and minerals, and probably because of his influence this error persisted, even until the middle of the eighteenth century. But, naturally, as the number of scientific students increased, the number of those who rejected this conclusion grew, until at last, the true character of fossils was established. The keen interest in minerals and fossils which was aroused by this controversy, together with the rapid extension of mining operations, drew the attention of scientific men to other features of the earth's surface and led to a more extended investigation of its characters and thus to the development of geology proper. It is interesting to note also that mineralogy was the first of the Geological Sciences to be officially recognized and taught by the universities.

Although, as has been shown, the beginnings of mineralogy lie in the remote past, the science, as we know it to-day, can be said to have had practically its whole growth during the last one hundred years. Of the more than one thousand mineral species that may now be considered as definitely established hardly more than two hundred were known in the year 1800 and these were only partially described or understood. It is true that Haüy, the "father of crystallography," had before this date discovered and formulated the laws of crystal symmetry, and had shown that rational relations existed between the intercepts upon the axes of the different faces of a crystal. It was not until 1809, however, that Wollaston described the first form of a reflecting goniometer, and thus made possible the beginning of exact investigation of crystals. The distinctions between the different crystal groups were developed by Bernhardi, Weiss and Mohs between the years 1807 and 1820, while the Naumann system of crystal symbols was not proposed until 1826. The fact that doubly refracting minerals also polarize light was discovered by Malus in 1808, and in 1813 Brewster first recognized the optical differences between uniaxial and biaxial minerals. The modern science of chemistry was also just beginning to develop at this period, enabling mineralogists to make analyses more and more accurately and thus by chemical means to establish the true character of minerals, and to properly classify them.

Franz von Kobell, on page 372 of his "Geschichte der Mineralogie," somewhat poetically describes the condition of the science at this period as follows: "With the end of the eighteenth and the commencement of the nineteenth centuries exact investigations in mineralogy first began. The mineralogist was no longer content with approximate descriptions of minerals, but strove rather to separate the essential facts from those that were accidental, to discover definite laws, and to learn the relations between the physical and chemical characters of a mineral. The use of mathematics gave a new aspect to crystallography, and the development of the optical relationships opened a magnificent field of wonderful phenomena which can be described as a garden gay with flowers of light, charming in themselves and interesting in their relations to the forces which guide and govern the regular structure of matter."

In the Medical Repository (vol. **2**, p. 114, New York, 1799), there occurs the following notice: "Since the publication of the last number of the Repository an Association has been formed in the city of New York 'for the investigation of the Mineral and Fossil bodies which compose the fabric of the Globe; and, more especially, for the Natural and Chemical History of the Minerals and Fossils of the United States,' by the name and style of The American Mineralogical Society." With this announcement is given an advertisement in which the society "earnestly solicits the citizens of the United States to communicate to them, on all mineralogical subjects, but especially on the following: 1, concerning stones suitable for gun flints; 2, concerning native brimstone or sulphur; 3, concerning salt-petre; 4, concerning mines and ores of lead." Further the society asks "that specimens of all kinds be sent to it for examination and determination."

This marks apparently the beginning of the serious study of the science of mineralogy in the United States. From this time on, articles on mineralogical topics appeared with increasing frequency in the Medical Repository. Most of these were brief and were largely concerned with the description of the general characters and modes of occurrence of various minerals. Nothing of much moment from the scientific point of view appeared until many years later, but the growing interest in things mineralogical was clearly manifest. An important stimulus to this increasing knowledge and discussion was furnished by Col. George Gibbs who, about the year 1808, brought to this country a large and notable mineral collection. In the Medical Repository (vol. **11**,

p. 213, 1808), is found a notice of this collection, a portion of which is reproduced below:

> "Gibbs' grand Collection of Minerals.
>
> One of the most zealous cultivators of mineralogy in the United States is Col. G. Gibbs of Rhode Island and his taste and his fortune have concurred in making him the proprietor of the most extensive and valuable assortment of minerals that probably exists in America.
>
> This rich collection consists of the cabinets possessed by the late Mons. Gigot D'Orcy of Paris and the Count Gregoire de Rozamonsky, a Russian nobleman, long resident in Switzerland. To which the present proprietor has added a number, either gathered by himself on the spot, or purchased in different parts of Europe . . . The whole consists of about twenty thousand specimens. A small part of this collection was opened to amateurs at Rhode Island, the last summer, and the next, if circumstances permit, the remainder will be exposed."

In 1802 Benjamin Silliman was appointed professor of chemistry and mineralogy in Yale College. After the Gibbs Collection was brought to America he spent much time with the owner in studying it and, as a result, Col. Gibbs offered to place the collection on exhibition in New Haven if suitable quarters would be furnished by the college. This was quickly accomplished and in 1810, 1811 and 1812 the collection was transferred to New Haven and arranged for exhibition by Col. Gibbs. Later, in 1825, it was purchased by Yale and served as the nucleus about which the present Museum collection of the University has been formed. There is no doubt but that the presence at this early date of this large and unusual mineral collection had a great influence upon the development of mineralogical science at Yale, and in the country at large.

In the year 1810 Dr. Archibald Bruce started the "American Mineralogical Journal," the title page of which reads in part as follows: "The American Mineralogical Journal, being a Collection of Facts and Observations tending to elucidate the Mineralogy and Geology of the United States of America, together with other Information relating to Mineralogy, Geology and Chemistry, derived from Scientific Sources." Unfortunately the health of Dr. Bruce failed, and the journal lasted only through its first volume. It had, however, "been most favorably received," as Silliman remarks, and it was felt that another journal of a similar type should be instituted. Such a suggestion was made by Col. Gibbs to Professor Silliman in 1817 and this led directly to the founding of the American Journal of Science in 1818 under the latter's editorship. Although the field of the Journal at the very beginning was made broad and inclusive it has always published many articles on mineralogical subjects. Three of its editors-in-chief have been eminent mineralogists, and without question it has been the most important single force in the development of this science in the country. More than 800 well-established mineral species have been described since the year 1800, of which approximately 150 have been from American sources. More than two-thirds of the articles describing these new American minerals have first appeared in the pages of this Journal. While the description of new species is not always the most important part of mineralogical investigation, still these figures serve to show the large part that the Journal has played in the growth of American mineralogy.

It is convenient to review the progress in Mineralogy according to the divisions formed by the different series, consisting of fifty volumes each, in which the Journal has been published. These divisions curiously enough will be found to correspond closely to four quite definite phases through which mineralogical investigation in America has passed. The first series covered the years from 1817 to 1845. In looking through these volumes one finds a large number of mineralogical articles, the work of many contributors. The great majority of these papers are purely descriptive in character, frequently giving only general accounts of the mineral occurrences of particular regions. However, a number of articles dealing with more detailed physical and chemical descriptions of rare or new species also belong in this period. Among the mineralogists engaged at this time in the description of individual species, none was more indefatigable than Charles U. Shepard. He was graduated from Amherst College in 1824, at the age of twenty. In 1827 he became assistant to Professor Silliman in New Haven, continuing in this position for four years. Later he was a lecturer in natural history at Yale, and was at various times connected with Amherst College and the South Carolina Medical College at Charleston. His articles on mineralogy were very numerous. He assigned a large number of new names to minerals, although with the exception of some half dozen cases, these have later been shown to be varieties of minerals already known and described, rather than new species. In spite, however, of his frequent hasty and inaccurate decision as to the character of a mineral, his influence on the progress of mineralogy was marked. His great enthusiasm and ceaseless industry throughout a long life could not help but make a definite contribution to the science. His "Treatise on Mineralogy" will be spoken of in a later paragraph. He died in May, 1886, having published his last paper in the Journal in the previous September.

The first book on mineralogy published in America was that by Parker Cleaveland, professor of mathematics, natural philosophy, chemistry and mineralogy in Bowdoin College. The first edition was printed in 1816 and an exhaustive notice is given in the first volume of the Journal (**1**, 35, 308, 1818); a second edition followed in 1822. In his preface Cleaveland gives an interesting discussion concerning the two opposing European methods of classifying minerals. The German school, led by Werner, classified minerals according to their external characters while the French school, following Haüy, put the emphasis on the "true composition." Cleaveland remarks that "the German school seems to be most distinguished by a technical and minutely descriptive language; and the French, by the use of accurate and scientific principles in the classification or arrangement of minerals." He, himself, tried to combine in a measure the two methods, basing the fundamental divisions upon the chemical composition and using the accurate description of the physical properties to distinguish similar species and varieties from each other.

Cleaveland's mineralogy was followed nearly twenty years later by the Treatise on Mineralogy by Charles U. Shepard already mentioned. The first part of this book was published in 1832. This contained chiefly an account of the natural history classification of minerals according to the general plan adopted by Mohs, the Austrian mineralogist. The second part of the book, which appeared in 1835, gave the description of individual species, the arrangement here being an alphabetical one throughout. Subsequent editions appeared in 1844, 1852 and 1857.

James Dwight Dana was graduated from Yale College in 1833 at the age of twenty. Four years later (1837) he published "The System of Mineralogy," a volume of 580 pages. The appearance of this book was an event of surpassing importance in the development of the science. The book, of course, depended largely upon the previous works of Haüy, Mohs, Naumann and other European mineralogists, but was in no sense merely a compilation from them. Dana, particularly in his discussion of mathematical crystallography, showed much original thought. He also proved his originality by proposing and using an elaborate system of classification patterned after those already in use in the sciences of botany and zoology. He later became convinced of the undesirability of this method of classification and abandoned it entirely in the fourth edition of the System, published in 1854, substituting for it the chemical classification which, in its essential features, is in general use to-day. The System of Mineralogy started in this way in 1837, has continued by means of successive editions to be the standard reference book in the subject. The various editions appeared as follows: I, 1837; II, 1844; III, 1850; IV, 1854; V, 1868; VI, 1892 (by Edward S. Dana).

J. D. Dana also contributed numerous mineralogical articles to the first series of volumes of the Journal. It is interesting to note that they are chiefly concerned with the more theoretical aspects of the subject, in fact they constitute practically the only articles of such a character that appeared during this period. Among the subjects treated were crystallographic symbols, formation of twin crystals, pseudomorphism, origin of minerals in metamorphosed limestones, origin of serpentine, classification of minerals, etc.

The volumes of the Second Series of the Journal covered the years from 1846 through 1870. This period was characterized by great activity in the study of the chemical composition of minerals. A number of skilled chemists, notably J. Lawrence Smith, George J. Brush and Frederick A. Genth, began about 1850 a long series of chemical investigations of American minerals. Very few articles during this time paid much attention to the physical properties of the minerals under discussion, practically no description of optical characters was attempted, and only occasionally were the crystals of a mineral mentioned. J. D. Dana was almost the only writer who constantly endeavored to discover the fundamental characters and relationships in minerals. He published many articles in these years which were concerned chiefly with the classification and grouping of minerals, with similarities in the crystal forms of different species, with relations between chemical composition and crystal form, chemical formulas, mineral nomenclature, etc. The following titles give an idea of the character of the more important series of articles by him which belong to this category: On the isomorphism and atomic volume of some minerals (**9**, 220, 1850); various notes and articles on homœomorphism of minerals (**17**, 85, 86, 210, 430; **18**, 35, 131, 1854); on a connection between crystalline form and chemical constitution, with some inferences therefrom (**44**, 89, 252, 398, 1867).

A great many new mineral names were proposed between 1850 and 1870, a large number of which have continued to be well-recognized species. But there was also a tendency, which has not wholly disappeared even now, to base a mineral determination upon insufficient evidence, and to propose a new species with but little justification for it. In this connection a quotation from the introduction by J. D. Dana to the 3rd Supplement to the System of Mineralogy (4th edition) published in this Journal (**22**, page 246, 1856), will be of interest. He says:

"It is a matter of regret, that mineral species are so often brought out, especially in this country, without sufficient investigation and full description. It is not meeting the just demands of the science of mineralogy to say that a mineral has probably certain constituents, or to state the composition in a general way without a complete and detailed analysis, especially when there are no crystallographic characters to afford the species a good foundation. We have a right to demand that those who name species, should use all the means the science of the age admits of, to prove that the species is one that nature will own, for only such belong to science, and if enough of the material has not been found for a good description there is not enough to authorize the introduction of a new name in the science. The publication of factitious species, in whatever department of science, is progress not towards truth, but into regions of error; and often much and long labor is required before the science recovers from these backward steps."

J. Lawrence Smith was born in 1818 and died in 1883. He was a graduate of the University of Virginia and of the Medical College of Charleston and later spent three years studying in Paris. Shortly after the completion of his studies he went to Turkey as an advisor to the government of that country in connection with the growing of cotton there. During this time he investigated the emery mines of Asia Minor, and wrote a memoir upon them which was later published by the French Academy. He served as professor of chemistry in the University of Virginia and later held the same chair in the University of Illinois. He published a long series of papers on the chemical composition of minerals and meteorites, as well as on pure chemical subjects. Among the more notable of his contributions are the "Memoir on Emery" (1850), a series of papers on the "Reëxamination of American Minerals" (1853) written with the collaboration of George J. Brush, and his "Memoir on Meteorites" (1855).

George J. Brush entered on his scientific career at the moment when science and scientific methods of research were just beginning to be appreciated in this country, and he soon became one of the leading pioneers in the movement. While his half century of active service was largely occupied by administrative duties in connection with the Sheffield Scientific School, his interest in mineralogy never flagged. His papers on mineralogical subjects number about thirty, all of which were published in this Journal. These began in 1849, even before his graduation from college, and continued until his last paper (in collaboration with S. L. Penfield) appeared in 1883. Three of the early papers were written with J. Lawrence Smith as noted above. These papers first set in this country the standard for thorough and accurate scientific mineral investigation. Later in life he was active in the development of the remarkable mineral locality at Branchville, Conn., and, with the collaboration of E. S. Dana, published in this Journal (1878-90) five important articles on its minerals. This locality, with the exception of the zinc deposits at Franklin Furnace, N. J., was the most remarkable yet discovered in this country. Nearly forty different mineral species were found there, of which nine (mostly phosphates) were new to science. There has certainly been no other series of descriptive papers on a mineralogical locality of equal importance published in this country.

In addition to publishing original papers, Brush did considerable editorial work in connection with the fourth (1854) and fifth (1868) editions of the System of Mineralogy and the Appendices to them. His Manual of Determinative Mineralogy, with a series of determinative tables adapted from similar ones by von Kobell, was first published in 1874. It was revised in 1878 and later rewritten by S. L. Penfield. This book did much to make possible the rapid and accurate determination of mineral species. Throughout his life, Brush was an enthusiastic collector of minerals, building up the notable collection that now bears his name. Perhaps, however, his most important contribution to the development of mineralogy in America lay rather in his influence upon his many students. With his enthusiasm for accurate and painstaking investigation he was an inspiration to all who came in contact with him and his own field and science in general owes much to that influence.

Among the early mineralogists in this country, who were concerned in the chemical analyses of minerals, none accomplished more or better work than Frederick A. Genth. He was born in Germany in 1820 and lived in that country until 1848, when he came to the United States and settled in Philadelphia. He had studied in various German universities and worked under some of the most famous chemists of that time. His papers in mineralogy number more than seventy-five, in the great majority of which chemical analyses are given. He published fifty-four successive articles, the greater part of which appeared in this Journal, which were entitled Contributions to Mineralogy. In these he gave descriptions of more than two hundred different minerals, most of which were accompanied by analyses. He described more than a dozen new and well-established mineral species. He was especially interested in the rarer elements and many of his analyses were of minerals containing them. Especially interesting was his work with the tellurides, the species coloradoite, melonite and calaverite being first described by him. A long and important investigation was recorded on Corundum, "Its Alterations and Associate Minerals," published in the Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society in 1873 (**13**, 361). Dr. Genth died in 1893.

The period from 1860 until 1875 was not very productive in mineralogical investigations. The first ten volumes of the Third Series of the Journal, covering the years 1871-1876, contained mineralogical articles by only some fifteen different authors. But from that time on, the amount of work done and the number of investigators grew rapidly. With this increase in activity came also a decided change in the character of the work. The period between 1871 and 1895 can be characterized as one in which all the various aspects of mineral investigation received more nearly equal prominence. While the chemical composition of minerals still held rightly its prominent place, the investigation of the crystallographic and optical characters and the relationships existing between all three were of much more frequent occurrence. Edward S. Dana commenced his scientific work by publishing in 1872 an article on the crystals of datolite which was probably the first American article concerned wholly with the description of the crystallography of a mineral. Samuel L. Penfield began his important investigations in 1877 and the first articles by Frank W. Clarke appeared during this period. The first edition of the Text Book of Mineralogy by Edward S. Dana with its important chapters on Crystallography and Optical Mineralogy was published in 1877 and his revision of the System of Mineralogy (sixth edition) appeared in 1892.

Unquestionably the foremost figure in American mineralogy during this period was that of Samuel L. Penfield. He embodied in an unusual degree the characters making for success in this science, for few investigators in mineralogy have shown, as he did, equal facility in all branches of descriptive mineralogy. He was a skilled chemist and possessed in a high degree that ingenuity in manipulation so necessary to a great analyst. He was also an accurate and resourceful crystallographer and optical mineralogist. His contributions to the science of mineralogy can be partially judged by the following brief summary of his work. He published over eighty mineralogical papers, practically all of which were printed in this Journal. These included the descriptions of fourteen new mineral species, the establishment of the chemical composition of more than twenty others, and the crystallization of about a dozen more. By a series of brilliant investigations he established the isomorphism between fluorine and the hydroxyl radical. He first enunciated the theory that the crystalline form of a mineral was due to the mass effect of the acid present rather than that of the bases. He contributed also a number of articles on the stereographic projection and its use in crystallographic investigations, devising a series of protractors and scales to make possible the rapid and accurate use of this projection in solving problems in crystallography.

Penfield was born in 1856, was graduated from the Sheffield Scientific School in 1877 and immediately became an assistant in the chemical laboratory of that institution. At this time he, together with his colleague Horace L. Wells, made the analyses of the minerals from the newly discovered Branchville locality. He spent the years 1880 and 1881 in studying chemistry in Germany, returning to Yale as an instructor in mineralogy in the fall of 1881. Except for another semester in Europe at Heidelberg he continued as instructor and professor of mineralogy in the Sheffield Scientific School until his early death in 1906.

It is difficult to choose for mention the names of other investigators in Mineralogy during this period. Toward its end a great many writers contributed to the pages of this Journal, more than fifty different names being counted for the volumes **41** to **50** of the Third Series. Many of these are still living and still active in scientific research. Mention should be made of Frank W. Clarke, who contributed many important articles concerning the chemical constitution of the silicates. His work on the mica and zeolite groups is especially noteworthy. The work of W. H. Hillebrand, particularly in regard to his analytical investigations of the minerals containing the rarer elements, was of great importance. The name of W. E. Hidden should be remembered, because, with his keen and discriminating eye and active search for new mineral localities, he was able to make many additions to the science.

In glancing over the indices to this Journal the close interrelation of mineralogy to the other sciences is strikingly shown by the fact that so many scientists whose particular fields are along other lines have published occasional mineralogical papers. Frequently a young man has commenced with mineralogical investigations and then later been drawn definitely into one of these allied subjects. Men, who have won their reputation in chemistry, physics, and all the various divisions of geology, even that of palæontology, have all contributed articles distinctly mineralogical in character. For this reason the number of American writers who have published what may be called casual papers on mineralogy is very great in comparison to the number of those who continue such publications over a series of years.

That the subject of meteorites is one which has been constantly studied by American mineralogists and petrographers is shown by the long list of papers concerning it that have been published in the Journal; it should, therefore, be considered briefly here. Many of these papers are short and of a general descriptive nature but others which give more fully the chemical, mineralogical and physical details are numerous. Among the earlier writers on this subject Benjamin Silliman, Jr., and C. U. Shepard should be mentioned. The latter was the first to recognize a new mineral in the Bishopville meteorite which he called Chladnite. The same substance was afterwards found in a terrestial occurrence and was more accurately described by Kenngott under the name of enstatite. J. Lawrence Smith later showed that these two substances were identical. Smith did a large amount of important chemical work on meteorites. He was the first to note the presence of ferrous chloride in meteoric iron, the mineral being afterwards named lawrencite in his honor. The iron-chronium sulphide, daubreelite, was also first described by him. Other names that should be mentioned in this connection are those of A. W. Wright who studied the gaseous constituents of meteorites, G. F. Kunz, W. E. Hidden, A. E. Foote and H. A. Ward, all of whom published numerous descriptions of these bodies. Among the more recent workers in this field the names of G. P. Merrill and O. C. Farrington deserve especial mention.

The publication of the Fourth Series of the Journal began in 1896. Although the years since then have seen a great amount of very important work accomplished, the history of the period is fresh in the minds of all and as the majority of the active workers are still living and productive it seems hardly necessary to go into great detail concerning it. Twenty years ago it seemed to some mineralogists that the science could almost be considered complete. All the commoner minerals had certainly been discovered and exhaustively studied. Little apparently was left that could be added to our knowledge of them. New occurrences would still be recorded, new crystal habits would be observed, and an occasional new and small crystal face might be listed, but few facts of great importance seemed undiscovered. This view was not wholly justified because new facts of interest and importance have continuously been brought forward, and the finding of new minerals does not appear to diminish in amount with the years. The work of the investigators on the United States Geological Survey along these lines is especially noteworthy.

This last of our periods, however, is chiefly signalized by a practically new development along the lines that might be characterized as experimental mineralogy. New ways have been discovered in which to study minerals. The important but hitherto baffling problems of their genesis, together with their relations to their surroundings, and to associated minerals, have been attacked by novel methods.

In this pioneer work that of the Geophysical Laboratory of the Carnegie Institution of Washington has been of the greatest importance. This laboratory was established in 1905 and, under the directorship of Arthur L. Day, a notable corps of investigators has been assembled and remarkable work already accomplished. While the field of investigation of the laboratory is broader than that of mineralogy, including much that belongs to petrography, vulcanology, etc., still the greater part of the work done can be properly classed as mineralogical in character and should be considered here. Because of its great value, however, it was felt that an authoritative, although necessarily, under existing conditions, a brief, account of it should be given. A concise summary of the objects, methods and results of the investigations of the laboratory has been kindly prepared by a member of its staff, Dr. R. B. Sosman, and is given later.

During the last few years another line of investigation has been opened by the discovery of the effect of crystalline structure upon X-rays. Through the refraction or reflection of the X-ray by means of the ordered arrangement of the particles forming the crystalline network, we are apparently going to be able to discover much concerning the internal structure of crystals. And, partly through these discoveries, is likely to come in turn the solution of the hitherto insolvable mystery of the constitution of matter. Without doubt the multitudinous facts of mineralogy assembled during the past century by the painstaking investigation of a large number of scientists are destined to play a large part in the solution of this problem. Further, it does not seem too bold a prophecy to suggest, that the time will come when it will be possible to assemble all these unorganized facts that we know about minerals into a harmonious whole and that we shall be then able to formulate the underlying and fundamental principles upon which they all depend. These are the great problems for the future of mineralogical investigation.

ART. VIII A.—*The Work of the Geophysical Laboratory of the Carnegie Institution of Washington;* by R. B. SOSMAN.

There are three methods of approach to the great problem of rock formation. The first undertakes to reproduce by suitable laboratory experiments some of the observed changes in natural rocks. The second seeks to apply the principles of physical chemistry to a great body of carefully gathered statistics. The third method of attack is like the first in being a laboratory method, and like the second in seeking to apply existing knowledge to the association of minerals as found in rocks, but in its procedure differs widely from both. It consists of bringing together pure materials under measurable conditions, and thus in establishing by strictly quantitative methods the relations in which minerals can exist together under the conditions of temperature and pressure that have the power to affect such relations.

It is to this third method of investigation of the problems of the rocks that the Geophysical Laboratory has been devoted since its establishment in 1905. It has proved entirely practicable to make quantitative studies of the relations among the principal earth-forming oxides (silica, alumina, magnesia, lime, soda, potash, and the oxides of iron) over a very wide range of temperatures. The resources of physics have proved adequate to establish temperature with a high degree of precision and to measure the quantity of energy involved in the various reactions. The chemist has been able to obtain materials in a high degree of purity, and to follow out in detail the chemical relationships that exist among the earth-forming oxides. The petrographic laboratory has been available for the comparison of synthetic laboratory products with the corresponding natural minerals.

It has also proved entirely practicable to extend the same methods of research to some of the principal ore minerals such as the sulphides of copper. Other information which is certain to be of ultimate economic value has also come out of the thorough study of the silicates, which are basic materials for the vast variety of industries which are classed under the name of ceramic industries. The best example of this is the facility with which the experience and the personnel of the laboratory has been adapted to the very important problem of manufacturing an adequate supply of optical glass for the needs of the United States in the present war.

It has further been possible to show within the last two years that rock formation in which volatile ingredients play a necessary and determining part can be completely studied in the laboratory with as much precision as though all the components were solids or liquids.

Along with the laboratory work on the formation of minerals and rocks has gone an increasing amount of field work on the activities of accessible volcanoes, such as Kilauea and Vesuvius, where the fusion and recrystallization of rocks on a large scale can be observed and studied.

There was once a time when the confidence of the laboratory in the capacity of physics and chemistry to solve geological problems was not shared by all geologists. There were some who were inclined to view with considerable apprehension the vast ramifications and complications of natural rock formation as a problem impossible of adequate solution in the laboratory. It is, therefore, a matter of satisfaction to all those who have participated in these efforts to see the evidences of this apprehension disappearing gradually as the work has progressed. A careful appraisement of the situation to-day, after ten years of activity, reveals the fact that the tangible grounds for anxiety about the *accessibility* of the problems which were confronted at first are now for the most part dissipated.

It will not be possible to review in detail the lines of work sketched above. An outline of the synthetic work on systems of the mineral oxides and a paragraph on the volcano researches will perhaps suffice to indicate the general plan and purpose of the laboratory's work. It should be added that the results of many of the researches of the laboratory, detailed below, have been published in the pages of this Journal (see **21**, 89, 1906, and later volumes).

Mineral Researches.—The mineral studies include:

I. *One-component systems:* silica, with its numerous polymorphic forms and their relations to temperature and the conditions of rock formation; alumina; magnesia; and lime.

II. *Two-component systems:* silica-alumina, including sillimanite and related minerals; silica-magnesia, including the tetramorphic metasilicate $MgSiO_3$; silica-lime, including wollastonite; the alkali silicates, particularly with reference to their equilibria with carbon dioxide and with water; ferric oxide-lime; alumina-lime; alumina-magnesia, including spinel; and hematite-magnetite, a solid-solution series of an unusual type.

III. *Three-component systems:* silica-alumina-magnesia, completed but not yet published; silica-alumina-lime, complete, including the compounds that enter into the composition of portland cement; silica-magnesia-lime, completed but not yet published, including. however, published work on the diopside-forsterite-silica system, and on the $CaSiO_3$-$MgSiO_3$ series; and alumina-magnesia-lime.

IV. *Four components:* SiO_2-Al_2O_3-MgO-CaO: the incomplete system anorthite-forsterite-silica; SiO_2-Al_2O_3-CaO-Na_2O: the series of lime-soda feldspars (albite-anorthite), and the series nephelite (carnegieite)-anorthite; SiO_2-Al_2O_3-Na_2O-K_2O: the sodium-potassium nephelites.

V. *Five components:* SiO_2-Al_2O_3-MgO-CaO-Na_2O: the ternary system diopside-anorthite-albite (haplo-basaltic and haplo-dioritic magmas).

Fairly complete studies have also been made of the mineral sulphides of iron, copper, zinc, cadmium, and mercury, and the conditions controlling the secondary enrichment of copper sulphide ores are now being investigated. In connection with the sulphide investigations, the hydrated oxides of iron have been studied chemically and microscopically and the results will soon be ready for publication.

Throughout the work the mere accumulation of bodies of facts has been held to be secondary in importance to the development of new methods of attack and the evaluation of new general principles, and the specific problems studied have been selected from this point of view.

Volcano Researches.—A branch of the laboratory's work that is of general as well as petrological interest is the study of active volcanoes. Observations and collections have been made at Kilauea, Vesuvius, Etna, Stromboli, Vulcano, and (through the courtesy of the directors of the National Geographic Society) Katmai in Alaska. The great importance of gases in volcanicity is emphasized by all the studies. The active gases include hydrogen and water vapor, carbon monoxide and carbon dioxide, and sulphur and its oxides, as well as a variety of other compounds of lesser importance. The crater of Kilauea proves to be an active natural gas-furnace, in which reactions are continuously occurring among the gases, often resulting in making the lava basin hotter at the surface than it is at some depth. These reactions are being studied in the laboratory on mixtures of the pure constituent gases in known proportions, in order to lay the foundation for accurate interpretation and prediction concerning the gases as actually collected from the volcanoes themselves.

ART. IX.—*The Progress of Chemistry during the past One Hundred Years;* by HORACE L. WELLS and HARRY W. FOOTE.

INTRODUCTION.

As we look back to the time of the founding of the Journal in 1818, we see that the science of chemistry had recently made and was then making great advances. That the scientific men of those days were much impressed with what was being accomplished is well shown by the following statement made in an early number of the Journal (**3**, 330, 1821) by its founder in reviewing Gorham's Elements of Chemical Science. He says: "The present period is distinguished by wonderful mental activity; it might indeed be denominated as the intellectual age of the world. At no former period has the mind of man been directed at one time to so many and so useful researches."

A very remarkable revolution in chemical ideas had recently taken place. Soon after the discovery of oxygen by Priestley in 1774, and the subsequent discovery by Cavendish that water was formed by the combustion of hydrogen and oxygen, Lavoisier had explained combustion in general as oxidation, thus overthrowing the curious old phlogiston theory which had prevailed as the basis of chemical philosophy for nearly a century.

The era of modern chemistry had thus begun, and the additional views that matter was indestructible and that chemical compounds were of constant composition had been generally accepted at the beginning of the nineteenth century.

Dalton had announced his atomic theory in 1802, having based it largely upon the law of multiple proportions which he had previously discovered, and he had begun to express the formulas for compounds in terms of atomic symbols.

In 1808 Gay-Lussac had discovered his law of gas combination in simple proportions,[1] a law of supreme importance in connection with the atomic theory, but neither he nor Dalton had seen this theoretical connection. Avo-

[1] It appears that the most accurate experimental demonstration ever made of this law was that of E. W. Morley, published in the Journal (**41**, 220, 276, 1891). He showed that 2·0002 volumes of hydrogen combine with one volume of oxygen.

gadro had understood it, however, and in 1811 had reached the momentous conclusion that all gases and vapors have equal numbers of molecules in equal volumes at the same temperature and pressure.

Davy in 1807 had isolated the alkali-metals, sodium and potassium, by means of electrolysis, thus practically dispelling the view that certain earthy substances might be elementary; and about four years later he had demonstrated that chlorine was an element, not an oxide as had been supposed previously, thus overthrowing Lavoisier's view that oxygen was the characteristic constituent of all acids.

At the time that our period of history begins, the atomic theory had been accepted generally, but in a somewhat indefinite form, since little attention had been paid to Avogadro's principle, and since Dalton had used only the principle of greatest simplicity in writing the formulas of compounds, considering water as HO and ammonia NH, for example. At this time, however, Berzelius for ten or fifteen years had been devoting tremendous energy to the task of determining the atomic weights of nearly all of the elements then known by analyzing their compounds. He had confirmed the law of multiple proportions, accepted the atomic theory, and utilized Avogadro's principle, and it is an interesting coincidence that his first table of atomic weights was published in the year 1818.

An interesting account of the views on chemistry held at about that time was published in the Journal by Denison Olmsted (**11**, 349, 1826; **12**, 1, 1827), who had recently become professor of natural philosophy in Yale College.

The most illustrious European chemists of that time were Berzelius of Sweden, Davy of England, and Gay-Lussac of France, and the curious circumstance may be mentioned that all three of them and also Benjamin Silliman, the founder of the Journal, were born within a period of eight months in 1778-1779.

In this country Robert Hare of Philadelphia and Benjamin Silliman were undoubtedly the most prominent chemists of those days. Hare is best known for his invention of the compound blowpipe, but his contributions to the Journal were very numerous, beginning almost with the first volume and continuing for over thirty years. Among the first of these contributions was a most vigorous but well-merited attack upon a Doctor Clark of Cambridge, England, who had copied his invention without giving him proper credit. He begins (**2**, 281, 1820) by saying: "Dr. Clark has published a book on the gas blowpipe in which he professes a sincere desire to render everyone his due. That it would be difficult for the conduct of any author to be more discordant with these professions, I pledge myself to prove in the following pages."

Hare also invented a galvanic battery which he called a "deflagrator," consisting of a large number of single cells in series. With this, using carbon electrodes, he was able to obtain a higher temperature than with his oxy-hydrogen blowpipe. He was the first to apply galvanic ignition to blasting (**21**, 139, 1832), and he first carried out electrolyses with the use of mercury as the cathode (**37**, 267, 1839). In this way he prepared metallic calcium and other metals from solutions of their chlorides, while the principle employed by him has in recent times been used as the basis of a very important process for manufacturing caustic potash and soda.

Silliman, who had become an intimate friend of Hare during two periods of chemical study under Woodhouse in Philadelphia in 1802-1804, and who soon afterwards spent fourteen months as a student abroad, chiefly in England and Scotland, took a broad interest in science and gave much attention to geology as well as to chemistry. In spite of this divided interest and his work as a teacher, popular scientific lecturer, and editor, he found time for a surprising amount of original chemical work. For instance, using Hare's deflagrator, he showed that carbon was volatilized in the electric arc (**5**, 108, 1822); he was the first in this country to prepare hydrofluoric acid (**6**, 354, 1823), and he first detected bromine in one of our natural brines (**18**, 142, 1830).

Atomic Weights.

As soon as the atomic theory was accepted, the relative weights of the atoms became a matter of vital importance in connection with formulas and chemical calculations. In advancing his theory, Dalton had made some very rough atomic weight determinations, and it has been mentioned already that Berzelius, at the time that our historical period begins, was engaged in the prodigious task of accurately determining these constants for nearly all the known elements. It is recorded that he analyzed quantitatively no less than two thousand compounds in connection with this work during his career. His table of 1818 has proved to be remarkably accurate for that pioneer period, and it indicates his remarkable skill as an analyst.

It is to be observed that Berzelius in this early table made use of Avogadro's principle in connection with elements forming gaseous compounds, and thus obtained correct formulas and atomic weights in such cases, but that in many instances his atomic weights and those now accepted bear the relation of simple multiples to one another, because he had then no means of deciding upon the formulas of many compounds except the rule of assumed simplicity. For example, the two oxides of iron now considered to be FeO and Fe_2O_3 he regarded as FeO_2 and FeO_3, knowing as he did that the ratio of oxygen in them was 2 to 3, and believing that a single atom of iron in each was the simplest view of the case, so that as the consequence of these formulas the atomic weight of iron was then considered to be practically twice as great in its relation to oxygen as at present.

These old atomic weights of Berzelius, used with the corresponding formulas, were just as serviceable for calculating compositions and analytical factors as though the correct multiples had been selected. As time went on, the true multiples were gradually found from considerations of atomic heats, isomorphism, vapor densities, the periodic law, and so on, and suitable changes were made in the chemical formulas.

Berzelius used 100 parts of oxygen as the basis of his atomic weights, a practice which was generally followed for several decades. Dalton, however, had originally used hydrogen as unity as the basis, and this plan finally came into use everywhere, as it seemed to be more logical and convenient, because hydrogen has the smallest atomic weight, and also because the atomic weights of a number of common elements appeared to be exact multiples of that of hydrogen, thus giving simpler numbers for use in calculations.

Within a few years a slight change has been made by the adoption of oxygen as exactly 16 as the basis, which gives hydrogen the value of 1·008.

As early as 1815, Prout, an English physician, had advanced the view that hydrogen is the primordial substance of all the elements, and consequently that the atomic weights are all exact multiples of that of hydrogen. This hypothesis has been one of the incentives to investigations upon atomic weights, for it has been found that these constants in the cases of a considerable number of the elements are very close to whole numbers when based upon hydrogen as unity, or even still closer when based upon oxygen as 16.

With our present knowledge Prout's hypothesis may be regarded as disproved for nearly all the elements whose atomic weights have been accurately determined, but the close or even exact agreement with it in a few cases is still worthy of consideration. There is an interesting letter from Berzelius to B. Silliman, Jr., in the Journal (**48**, 369, 1845) in which Berzelius considers the theory entirely disproved.

For a long time entire reliance was placed upon the atomic weights obtained by Berzelius, but it came to be observed that the calculation of carbon from carbon dioxide appeared to give high results in certain cases, so that doubt arose as to the accuracy of Berzelius's work. Consequently in 1840 Dumas, assisted by his pupil Stas, made a new determination of the atomic weight of carbon, and found that the number obtained by Berzelius, 12·12, was slightly too large. Subsequently Dumas determined more than twenty other atomic weights, but this great amount of work did not bring about any considerable improvement, for it appears that Dumas did not greatly excel Berzelius in accuracy, and that the latter had made one of his most noticeable errors in connection with carbon.

Soon after assisting Dumas in the work upon carbon, Stas began his very extensive and accurate, independent determinations, leading to the publication of a book in 1867 describing his work. Stas made many improvements in methods by the use of great care in purifying the substances employed, and especially by using large quantities of material in his determinations, thus diminishing the proportional errors in weighing. His results, which dealt with most of the common elements, were accepted with much confidence by chemists everywhere.

Stas reached the conclusion that there could be no real foundation for Prout's hypothesis, since so many of his atomic weights varied from whole numbers, and this opinion has been generally accepted.

The first accurate atomic weight determination published in the Journal was that by Mallett on lithium (**22**, 349, 1856; **28**, 349, 1859), showing a result almost identical with that accepted at the present time. Johnson and Allen's determination (**35**, 94, 1863) on the rare element cæsium was carried out with extraordinary accuracy. Lee, working with Wolcott Gibbs, made good determinations on nickel and cobalt (**2**, 44, 1871). The work of Cooke on antimony (**15**, 41, 107, 1878) was excellent.

Concerning the more recent work published elsewhere than in the Journal, attention should be called particularly to the investigations that have been carried on for the past twenty-five years by Richards and his associates at Harvard University. Richards has shown masterly ability in the selection of methods and in avoiding errors. His results have displayed such marvelous agreements among repeated determinations by the same and by different processes as to inspire the greatest confidence. His work has been very extensive, and it is a great credit to our country that this atomic weight work, so superior to all that has been previously done, is being carried out here.

It may be mentioned that for a number of years the decision in regard to the atomic weights to be accepted has been in the hands of an International Committee of which our fellow countryman F. W. Clarke has been chairman. In connection with this position and previously, Clarke has done valuable service in re-calculating and summarizing atomic weight determinations.

Analytical Chemistry.

Analysis is of such fundamental importance in nearly every other branch of chemical investigation that its development has been of the utmost importance in connection with the advancement of the science. It attained, therefore, a comparatively early development, and one hundred years ago it was in a flourishing condition, particularly as far as inorganic qualitative and gravimetric analysis were concerned. There is no doubt that Berzelius, whose atomic weight determinations have already been mentioned, surpassed all other analysts of that time in the amount, variety, and accuracy of his gravimetric work. He lived through three decades of our period, until 1848.

During the past century there has been constant progress in inorganic analysis, due to improved methods, better apparatus and accumulated experience. An excellent work on this subject was published by H. Rose, a pupil of Berzelius, and the methods of the latter, with many improvements and additions by the author and others, were thus made accessible. Fresenius, who was born in 1818, did much service in establishing a laboratory in which the teaching of analytical chemistry was made a specialty, in writing text-books on the subject and in establishing in 1862 the "Zeitschrift für analytische Chemie," which has continued up to the present time.

Besides Berzelius, who was the first to show that minerals were definite chemical compounds, there have been many prominent mineral analysts in Europe, among whom Rammelsberg and Bunsen may be mentioned, but there came a time towards the end of the nineteenth century when the attention of chemists, particularly in Germany, was so much absorbed by organic chemistry that mineral analysis came near becoming a lost art there. It was during that period that an English mineralogist, visiting New Haven and praising the mineral analyses that were being carried out at Yale, expressed regret that there appeared to be no one in England, or in Germany either, who could analyze minerals.

The best analytical work done in this country in the early part of our period was chiefly in connection with mineral analysis, and a large share of it was published in the Journal. Henry Seybert, of Philadelphia, in particular, showed remarkable skill in this direction, and published numerous analyses of silicates and other minerals, beginning in 1822. It was he who first detected boric acid in tourmaline (**6**, 155, 1822), and beryllium in chrysoberyl (**8**, 105, 1824). His methods for silicate analyses were very similar to those used at the present time.

J. Lawrence Smith in 1853 described his method for determining alkalies in minerals (**16**, 53), a method which in its final form (**1**, 269, 1871) is the best ever devised for the purpose. He also described (**15**, 94, 1853) a very useful method, still largely used in analytical work, for destroying ammonium salts by means of aqua regia. Carey Lea (**42**, 109, 1866) described the well-known test for iodides by means of potassium dichromate. F. W. Clarke (**49**, 48, 1870) showed that antimony and arsenic could be quantitatively separated from tin by the precipitation of the sulphides in the presence of oxalic acid. In 1864 Wolcott Gibbs (**37**, 346) began an important series of analytical notes from the Lawrence Scientific School, and he worked out later many difficult analytical problems, particularly in connection with his extensive researches upon the complex inorganic acids.

From 1850 on, Brush and his students made many important investigations upon minerals, and from 1877 Penfield (**13**, 425), beginning with an analysis of a new mineral from Branchville, Connecticut, described by Brush and E. S. Dana, displayed remarkable skill and industry in this kind of work. Both of the writers of this article were fortunate in being associated with Penfield in some of his researches upon minerals and one of us began as he did with the Branchville work. It is probably fair to say that Penfield did the most accurate work in mineral analysis that has ever been accomplished, and that he was similarly successful in crystallography and other physical branches of mineralogy.

The American analytical investigations that have been mentioned were all published in the Journal, with the exception of a part of Gibbs's work. Many other American workers at mineral analysis might be alluded to here, but only the excellent work of a number of chemists in the United States Geological Survey will be mentioned. Among these Hillebrand deserves particular praise for the extent of his investigations and for his careful researches in improving the methods of rock analysis.

To our own Professor Gooch especial praise must be accorded for the very large number of analytical methods that have been devised, or critically studied, by him and his students, and for the excellent quality of this work. The publications in the Journal from his laboratory began in 1890 (**39**, 188), and the extraordinary extent of this work is shown by the fact that the three hundredth paper from the Kent Laboratory appeared in May, 1918. These very numerous and important investigations have been of great scientific and practical value, and they have formed a striking feature of the Journal for nearly 30 years. In 1912 Gooch published his "Methods in Chemical Analysis," a book of over 500 pages, in which the work in the Kent Chemical Laboratory up to that time was concisely presented. Among the many workers who have assisted in these investigations, P. E. Browning, W. A. Drushel, F. S. Havens, D. A. Kreider, C. A. Peters, I. K. Phelps and R. G. Van Name are particularly prominent. Besides many other useful pieces of apparatus, the perforated filtering crucible was devised by Gooch, and this has brought his name into everyday use in all chemical laboratories.

Volumetric analysis was originated by Gay-Lussac, who described a method for chlorimetry in 1824, for alkalimetry in 1828, and for the determination of silver and chlorides in 1832. Margueritte devised titrations with potassium permanganate in 1846, while Bunsen, not far from the same time, introduced the use of iodine and sulphur dioxide solutions for the purpose of determining many oxidations and reductions. We owe to Mohr some improvements in apparatus and a German text-book on the subject, while Sutton wrote an excellent English work on volumetric analysis, of which many editions have appeared.

While volumetric analysis began to be used less than one hundred years ago, its applications have been gradually extended to a very great degree, and it is not only exceedingly important in investigations in pure chemistry, but its use is especially extensive in technical laboratories where large numbers of rapid analyses are required.

Not a few volumetric methods have been devised or improved in the United States, but mention will be made here only of Cooke's important method for the determination of ferrous iron in insoluble silicates, published in the Journal (**44**, 347, 1867); to Penfield's method for the determination of fluorine in 1878; and to the more recent general method of titration with an iodate in strong hydrochloric acid solutions, due to L. W. Andrews, a number of applications of which have been worked out in the Sheffield Laboratory.

A considerable amount of work with gases had been done by Priestley, Scheele, Cavendish, Lavoisier, Dalton, Gay-Lussac, and others before our hundred-year period began. Cavendish, about 1780, had analyzed atmospheric air with remarkable accuracy, and had even separated the argon from it and wondered what it was, and later Gay-Lussac had shown great skill in the study of gas reactions. During our period gas analysis has been further developed by many chemists. Bunsen, in particular, brought the art to a high degree of perfection in the course of a long period beginning about 1838, the last edition of his "Methods of Gas Analysis" having been published in 1877.

Important devices for the simplification of gas-analysis in order that it might be used more conveniently for technical purposes have been introduced by Orsat in France and by Winkler, Hempel and Bunte in Germany.

It appears that our countryman Morley has surpassed all others in accurate work with gases in connection with his determinations of the combining weights and volumes of hydrogen and oxygen about the year 1891. Some of his publications have appeared in the Journal (**30**, 140, 1885; **41**, 220, 1891; and others).

Electrolytic analysis, involving the deposition of metals, or sometimes of oxides, usually upon a platinum electrode, was brought into use in 1865 by Wolcott Gibbs through an article published in the Journal (**39**, 58, 1865). He there described the electrolytic precipitation of copper and of nickel by the methods still in use. The application of the process has been extended to a number of other metals, and it has been largely employed, particularly in technical analyses. Important investigations and excellent books on this subject have been the contributions of Edgar F. Smith of the University of Pennsylvania, and the useful improvement, the rotating cathode, was devised by Gooch and described in the Journal (**15**, 320, 1903).

General Inorganic Chemistry.

The Chemical Symbols.—It is to Berzelius that we owe our symbols for the atoms, derived usually from their Latin names, such as C for carbon, Na for sodium, Cl for chlorine, Fe for iron. Ag for silver, and Au for gold. We owe to him also the use of small figures to show the number of atoms in a formula, as in N_2O_5. This was a marked improvement over the hieroglyphic symbols proposed by Dalton, which were set down as many times as the atoms were supposed to occur in formulas, forming groups of curious appearance, but in some respects not unlike some of our modern developed formulas. The advantages of Berzelius's symbols were their simplicity, legibility, and the fact that they could be printed without the need of special type. It is true that at a later period Berzelius used certain symbols with horizontal lines crossing them to represent double atoms, and that these made some difficulty in printing. It should be mentioned also that Berzelius at one time made an effort to simplify formulas by placing dots over other symbols to represent oxygen, and commas to represent sulphur atoms. Examples of these are:

$\dot{\mathrm{Ca}}\dddot{\mathrm{S}}$, calcium sulphate ; $\overset{,,}{\mathrm{Fe}}$, iron disulphide

This form of notation was quite extensively employed for a time, especially by mineralogists, but it was entirely abandoned later.

It is interesting to notice that Dalton, who lived until 1844, to reach the age of 78, differed from other chemists in refusing to accept the letter-symbols of Berzelius. In a letter written to Graham in 1837 he said: "Berzelius's symbols are horrifying. A young student in chemistry might as soon learn Hebrew as to make himself acquainted with them. They appear like a chaos of atoms . . . and to equally perplex the adepts of science, to discourage the learner, as well as to cloud the beauty and simplicity of the atomic theory."

This forcibly expressed opinion was apparently tinged with self-esteem, but there is no doubt that Dalton was sincere in believing that the atoms were best represented by his circular symbols, because, as is well known, he thought that all the atoms were spherical in form, and it is evident that circles give the proper picture of spherical objects. At the present time some insight as to the structure of atoms is being gained, and it appears possible that the time may come when pictures of their external appearance that are not wholly imaginary may be made.

Changes in Formulas.—Even before the year 1826, Berzelius displayed great skill in arriving at many formulas that agree with our present ones, for example, H_2O for water, $ZnCl_2$ for zinc chloride, N_2O_5 for nitric acid (anhydride), CaO for calcium oxide, CO and CO_2 for the oxides of carbon, and many others. But at the same period other authorities, especially Gay-Lussac in France and Gmelin in Germany, on account of a lack of appreciation for Avogadro's principle and for other reasons, such as the use of symbols to represent combining weights rather than atoms, were using different formulas for some of these compounds, such as HO, ZnCl and NO_5, so that their formulas for many of the compounds of hydrogen, chlorine, nitrogen and several other elements differed from those of Berzelius. The employment of different formulas involved the use of different atomic or combining weights. For example, with the formula H_2O for water the composition by weight requires the ratio 1 to 16 for the weights of the hydrogen and oxygen atoms, while with HO the ratio is 1 to 8.

Berzelius attempted to bring about greater uniformity in formulas and atomic weights by making changes in his table of atomic weights published in 1826. He practically doubled the relative atomic weights of hydrogen, chlorine, nitrogen, and of the other elements that gave twice as many atoms in his formulas as in those of others, and at the same time he wrote the symbols of these elements with a bar across them to indicate that they represented double atoms. For example, he wrote:

$$\cancel{H}O \quad Zn\cancel{Cl} \quad \cancel{N}O_5$$

instead of

$$H_2O, ZnCl_2 \ N_2O_5$$

This appears to have been an unfortunate concession to the views of others on the part of Berzelius, for the barred symbols were not generally adopted, partly on account of difficulties in printing, and the great achievement in theory made by him was lost sight of for a long period of time.

The Law of Atomic Heats.—In 1819, Dulong and Petit of France, from experiments upon the specific heats of a number of solid elementary substances, came to the conclusion that the atoms of simple substances have equal capacities for heat, or in other words, that the specific heats of elements multiplied by their atomic weights give a constant called the atomic heat. For instance, the specific heats of sulphur, iron, and gold have been given as 0·2026, 0·110, and 0·0324, while their atomic weights are about 32, 56, and 197, respectively; hence the atomic heats obtained by multiplication are 6·483, 6·116, and 6·383.

Further investigations showed that the atomic heats display a considerable variation. Those of carbon, boron, beryllium, and silicon are very low at ordinary temperatures. although they increase and approach the usual values at higher temperatures. More recent work has shown, however, that the specific heats of other elements vary greatly with the temperature, almost disappearing at the temperature of liquid hydrogen, and hence possibly disappearing entirely at the absolute zero, where the electrical resistance of the metals appears to vanish likewise.

It has been found that most of the solid elements near ordinary temperatures give atomic heats that are approximately 6·4. Berzelius applied the law in fixing a number of atomic weights, and its importance for this purpose is still recognized.

It may be mentioned here that two well-known Yale men, W. G. Mixter and E. S. Dana, while students in Bunsen's laboratory at Heidelberg in 1873, made determinations of the specific heats of boron, silicon, and zirconium. This was the first determination of this constant for zirconium, and it was consequently important in establishing the atomic weight of that element.

Isomorphism and Polymorphism.—Mitscherlich observed in 1818 that certain phosphates and arsenates have the same crystalline form, and afterwards he reached the conclusion that identity in form indicates similarity in composition in connection with the number of atoms and their arrangement. This law of isomorphism was of much assistance in the establishment of correct formulas and consequently of atomic weights. For instance, since the carbonates of barium, strontium, and lead crystallize in the same form, the oxides of these metals must have analogous formulas. From such considerations Berzelius was able to make several improvements in his atomic weight table of 1826.

Mitscherlich was the first to observe two forms of sulphur crystals, and from this and other cases of dimorphism or of polymorphism it became evident that analogous compounds were not necessarily always isomorphous, a circumstance which has restricted the application of the law to some extent.

Besides its application in fixing analogous formulas, the law of isomorphism has come to be of much practical use in the understanding and simplification of the formulas for minerals, for these natural crystals very often contain several isomorphous compounds in varying proportions, and an understanding of this "isomorphous replacement," as it is called, makes it possible to deduce simple general formulas for them.

In some cases isomorphism takes place to a greater or less extent between substances which are not chemically similar, and this brings about a variation in composition which at times has caused confusion. For instance, the mineral pyrrhotite has a composition which usually varies between Fe_7S_8 and $Fe_{11}S_{12}$, and both these formulas have been assigned to it. It was recently shown by Allen, Crenshaw and Johnston in this Journal (**33**, 169, 1912) that this is a case where the compound FeS is capable of taking up various amounts of sulphur isomorphously.

The idea of solid solution was advanced by van't Hoff to explain the crystallization of mixtures, including cases of evident isomorphism. This view has been widely accepted, and it has been particularly useful in cases where isomorphism is not evident. Solid solution between metals has been found to be exceedingly common, many alloys being of this character. A case of this kind was observed by Cooke and described in the Journal (**20**, 222, 1855). He prepared two well-crystallized compounds of zinc and antimony to which he gave the formulas Zn_3Sb and Zn_2Sb, but he observed that excellent crystals of each could be obtained which varied largely in composition from these formulas. As the two compounds were dissimilar in their formulas and crystalline forms, Cooke assumed that isomorphism was impossible and concluded "that it is due to an actual perturbation of the law of definite proportions, produced by the influence of mass." We should now regard this as a case of solid solution.

A Lack of Confidence in Avogadro's Principle.—One reason why chemists were so slow in arriving at the correct atomic weights and formulas was a partial loss of confidence in Avogadro's principle. About 1826 the young French chemist Dumas devised an excellent method for the determination of vapor densities at high temperatures, and his results and those of others showed some discrepancies in the expected densities. For example, the vapor density of sulphur was found to be about three times too great, that of phosphorus twice too great, that of mercury vapor and that of ammonium chloride only about half large enough to correspond to the values expected from analogy and other considerations. Thus, one volume of oxygen with two volumes of hydrogen make two volumes of steam, but only one-third of a volume of sulphur vapor was found to unite with two volumes of hydrogen to make two volumes of hydrogen sulphide. Berzelius saw clearly that the results pointed to the existence of such molecules as S_6, P_4, and Hg_1, but it was not generally realized in those days that Avogadro's rule is fundamentally reliable, and Berzelius himself appears to have lost confidence in it on account of these complications, for he did not apply Avogadro's principle to decisions about atomic weights except in the cases of substances gaseous at ordinary temperatures.

Electro-chemical Theories.—The observation was made by Nicholson and Carlisle in 1800 that water was decomposed into its constituent gases by the electric current. Then in 1803 Berzelius and Hisinger found that salts were decomposed into their bases and acids by the same agency, and in 1807 Davy isolated potassium, sodium, and other metals afterwards, by a similar decomposition. Since those early times a vast amount of attention has been paid to the relation of electricity to chemical changes, a relation that is evidently of great importance from the fact that while electric currents decompose chemical compounds, these currents, on the other hand, are produced by chemical reactions.

Berzelius was particularly prominent in this direction, and in 1819 he published an elaborate electro-chemical theory. He believed that atoms were electrically polarized, and that this was the cause of their combination with one another. He extended this idea to groups of atoms, particularly to oxides, and regarded these groups as positive or negative, according to the excess of positive or negative electricity derived from their constituent atoms and remaining free. He thus arrived at his dualistic theory of chemical compounds, which attained great prominence and prevailed for a long time in chemical theory. According to this idea, each compound was supposed to be made up of a positive and a negative atom or group of atoms. For example, the formulas for potassium nitrate, calcium carbonate, and sulphuric acid corresponded to $K_2O.N_2O_5$, $CaO.CO_2$ and $H_2O.SO_3$ where we now write KNO_3, $CaCO_3$ and H_2SO_4, and the theory was extended to embrace organic compounds also.

The eminent English chemist and physicist Faraday announced the important law of electro-chemical equivalents in 1834. This law shows that the quantities of elements set free by the passage of a given quantity of electricity through their solutions correspond to the chemical equivalents of those elements. Faraday made a table of the equivalents of a number of elements, regarding them important in connection with atomic weights, but at that time no sharp distinction was usually made between equivalents and atomic weights, and it was not fully realized that one atom of a given element may be the electrical equivalent of several atoms of another.

Faraday's law, which is still regarded as fundamentally exact, has been of much practical use in the measurement of electric currents and in calculations connected with electro-chemical processes. In discussing his experiments, Faraday made use of several new terms, such as "electrolyte" for a substance which conducts electricity when in solution, and is thus "electrolyzed," "electrode," "anode," and "cathode," terms that have come into general use, and finally "ions" for the particles that were supposed to "wander" towards the electrodes to be set free there.

This term "ion" remained in comparative obscurity for more than half a century, when it was brought into great prominence among chemists by Arrhenius in connection with the ionic theory.

Cannizzaro's Ideas.—Up to about 1869 chaos reigned among the formulas used by different chemists. Various compound radicals and numerous type-formulas were employed, dualistic and unitary formulas of several kinds were in use, but the worst feature of the situation was the fact that more than one system of atomic weights was in vogue, so that water might be written

$$HO, \; HO, \text{ or } H_2O$$

and similar discrepancies might appear in nearly all formulas containing elements of different valencies. In 1858, however, an article by the Italian chemist Cannizzaro appeared in which the outlines of a course in chemical philosophy were presented. This acquired wide circulation in the form of a pamphlet at a chemical convention somewhat later, and it dealt so clearly and ably with Avogadro's principle, Dulong and Petit's law, and other points in connection with formulas that it led to a rapid and almost universal reform among those who were using unsatisfactory formulas.

At about this time also the dualistic formulas of Berzelius were generally abandoned, and hydrogen came to be regarded as the characteristic element of all acids. For instance, $CaO.SO_3$, called "sulphate of lime," came to be written $CaSO_4$ and was called "calcium sulphate," and while it had been shown as early as 1815 by Davy that "iodic acid," I_2O_5, showed no acid reaction until it was combined with water, the accumulation of similar facts led to the formulation of sulphuric acid as H_2SO_4 instead of SO_3 or $H_2O.SO_3$, and that of other "oxygen acids" in a similar way. As a necessary consequence of this view of acids, the bases came to be regarded as compounds of the "hydroxyl" group, OH. Therefore the formula for caustic soda came to be written NaOH instead of $Na_2O.H_2O$, and so on.

The Periodic System of the Elements.—The periodicity of the elements in connection with their atomic weights was roughly grasped by Newlands in England, who announced his "law of octaves" in 1863. This was at the time when the atomic weights were being modified and their numerical relations properly shown. The subject was worked out more fully by L. Meyer in Germany a little later, but it was most clearly and elaborately presented by the Russian chemist Mendeléeff in 1869.

In order that this subject may be explained to some extent Mendeléeff's table is given here, with the addition of the recently discovered elements and some other modifications.

Mendeléeff's Periodic Arrangement of the Elements.

Groups	I A	I B	II A	II B	III A	III B	IV A	IV B	V A	V B	VI A	VI B	VII A	VII B	VIII A	VIII B
Typical Compounds	R_2O RCl RH	—	RO RCl_2 (RH_2)	—	R_2O_3 RCl_3 —	(RH_3)	RO_2 RCl_4 —	(RH_4)	R_2O_5 RCl_3 —	RH_3	RO_3 RCl_2 —	RH_2	R_2O_7 — —	RCl RH	(RO_4) — —	— R R
Series 1														Hydrogen 1·008		Helium 3·99
2	Lithium 6 94			Beryllium 9·1		*Boron* 11·0		*Carbon* 12·00		Nitrogen 14·01		Oxygen 16·00		Fluorine 19·0		Neon 20·2
3	Sodium 23·00			Magnesium 24·32		Aluminium 27·1		*Silicon* 28 3		*Phosphorus* 31·04		*Sulphur* 32·07		Chlorine 35·46		Argon 39·88
4	Potassium 39·10		Calcium 40·07		Scandium 44·1		Titanium 48·1		Vanadium 51·0		Chromium 52·0		Manganese 54·93		Iron 55·84 Cobalt 58·97 Nickel 58·68	
5		Copper 63·57		Zinc 65·37		Gallium 69·9		Germanium 72·5		Arsenic 74·96		*Selenium* 79·2		*Bromine* 79·92		Krypton 82·92
6	Rubidium 85·43		Strontium 87·63		Yttrium 89·0		Zirconium 90·6		Niobium 93·5		Molybdenum 96·0		—— 100		Ruthenium 101·7 Rhodium 102·9 Palladium 106·7	
7		Silver 107·88		Cadmium 112·40		Indium 114·8		Tin 119·0		Antimony 120·2		Tellurium 127·5		*Iodine* 126·92		Xenon 130·2
8	Cæsium 132·81		Barium 137·37		Lanthanum 139·0 to* Lutecium 174·0		(Cerium) 140·25 (Lutecium) 174·0		Tantalum 181·5		Tungsten 184·0		—— 188		Osmium 190·9 Iridium 193·1 Platinum 195·2	
9		Gold 197·2		Mercury 200·6		Thallium 204·0		Lead 207·10		Bismuth 208·0		——		——		Niton 222·4
10	——		Radium 226·4		——		Thorium 232·4		——		Uranium 238·5					

* Rare-Earth Metals: Lanthanum, 139·0; Cerium, 140·25; Praseodymium, 140·6; Neodymium, 144·3; ——, ; Samarium, 150·4; Europeum, 152·0; ——, ; Gadolinium, 157·3; Terbium, 159·2; Dysprosium, 162·5; Holmium, 163·5; Erbium, 167·7; Thulium, 168·5; Ytterbium, 172·0; Lutecium, 174·0

Note.—Distinctions in printing: Gaseous elements, *Other non-metallic elements*, metallic elements. The heavy line encloses approximately the acid-forming elements.

In this table the elements arranged in the order of their atomic weights fall into eight groups where the known oxides progress regularly, with the exception of two or three elements, from R_2O in Group I to R_2O_7 in Group VII, while in Group VIII two oxides (of ruthenium and osmium) are known which carry the progression to RO_4.

It was pointed out by Mendeléeff that, with the exception of series 1 and 2 at the top of the table, the alternate members of the groups show particularly close relationships. These subordinate groups, marked A and B, in most cases show remarkable analogies and gradations in their properties, for example, in the alkali-metals from lithium to cæsium, and in the halogens from fluorine to iodine. The two divisions of a group do not usually show very close relations to each other, except in their valency, and they even display, in several instances, opposite gradations in chemical activity in the order of their atomic weights. For instance, cæsium stands at the electro-positive end, while gold stands at the electro-negative end of its subordinate group. The difference between the two divisions is very great in Groups VI and VII, but it is extreme in Group VIII, where heavy metals are on one side and inactive gases on the other. Many authorities separate these gases into a "Group O" by themselves at the left-hand side of the table, but this does not change their relative positions, and the plan may be objected to on the ground that many vacant places are thus left in the groups VIII and O.

The periodic law has been useful in rectifying certain atomic weights. At the outset Mendeléeff was obliged to change beryllium from 14·5 (assuming Be_2O_3) to 9 (assuming BeO), and later the atomic weights of indium and uranium were changed to make them fit the system. All of these changes have been confirmed by physical means.

Mendeléeff found a number of vacant places in his table, and was thus able to render further service to chemical science by predicting the properties of undiscovered elements, and his predictions were very closely confirmed by the later discovery of scandium, gallium, and germanium. The table indicates that there are still two undiscovered elements below manganese and probably two more among the rare-earth metals. The interesting observation has just recently been made by Soddy that the products of radioactive disintegration appear to pass in a symmetrical way through positions in the periodic system, giving off a helium molecule at alternate transformations until the place of lead is reached. It appears, therefore, that the five vacant places in the table above bismuth are probably occupied by these evanescent elements, and it is to be noticed that all of the elements that have been placed in this region of high atomic weights are radioactive.

There are some inconsistencies in the periodic system. The increments in the atomic weights are irregular, and there are three cases, argon and potassium, cobalt and nickel, and tellurium and iodine, where a higher atomic weight is placed before a lower one in order to bring these elements into their undoubtedly proper places. There is a peculiarity also in the heavy-metal division of Group VIII, where three similar elements occur in each of three places, and where the usual periodicity appears to be suspended, or nearly so, in comparison with most of the other elements. However, there seems to be a still more remarkable case of this kind in Group III, where fourteen metals of the rare-earths have been placed. They are astonishingly similar in their chemical properties, hence it seems necessary to assume that periodicity is suspended here throughout the wide range of atomic weights from 139 to 174, where no elements save these have been found.

Several other interesting features of the table may be pointed out. The chlorides and hydrides, as indicated by the "typical compounds," show a regular progression in both directions towards Group IV. (Where the type-formulas do not apply, as far as is known, to more than one or two elements, they have been placed in parentheses in the table given here.) It is a striking fact that the acid-forming elements occur together in a definite part of the table, and that the gases and other non-metallic elements, except the inactive gases of Group VIII, occur in the same region.

Atomic Numbers.—As the result of a spectroscopic study of the wave-lengths or frequencies of the X-rays produced when cathode rays strike upon anti-cathodes composed of different elements, Moseley in 1914 discovered that whole numbers in a simple series can be attributed to the atoms. These atomic numbers are: 1 for hydrogen, 2 for helium, 3 for lithium, 4 for beryllium, and so on, in the order in which the elements occur in Mendeléeff's periodic table, and in the cases of argon and potassium, cobalt and nickel, and tellurium and iodine, they follow the correct chemical order, while the atomic weights do not. They appear to indicate, therefore, an even more fundamental relation between the atoms than that shown by the atomic weights.

These numbers are now available for every element up to lead, and they are particularly interesting in indicating, on account of missing numbers, the existence of two undiscovered elements in the manganese group, and two more among the rare-earth metals, in confirmation of the vacant places below lead in Mendeléeff's table.

The Isolation of Elements.—In the year 1818 about 53 elements were recognized, and since that time about 30 more have been discovered, but the elements already known comprised the more common ones, and nearly all of those which have been commercially important. A few of them, including beryllium, aluminium, silicon, magnesium, and fluorine, were then known only in their compounds, as they had not yet been isolated in the free condition.

Berzelius in 1823 prepared silicon, a non-metallic element resembling carbon in many respects. This element has recently been prepared on a rather large scale in electric furnaces at Niagara Falls, and has been used for certain purposes in the form of castings.

Wöhler created much sensation in 1827 by isolating aluminium and finding it to be a very light, strong and malleable metal, stable in the air, and of a silver-white color. For a long time this metal was a comparative rarity, being prepared by the reduction of aluminium chloride with metallic sodium; but about 25 years ago Hall, an American, devised a method of preparing it by electrolyzing aluminium oxide dissolved in fused cryolite. This process reduced the cost of aluminium to such an extent that it has now come into common use.

Wöhler and Bussy prepared beryllium in 1828, and Liebig and Bussy did the same service for magnesium in 1830. The latter metal has come to be of much practical importance, both as a very powerful reducing agent in chemical operations, and as an ingredient of flash-light powders and of mixtures used for fireworks. It is also used in making certain light alloys.

After almost innumerable attempts to isolate fluorine, during a period of nearly a century, this was finally accomplished in 1886 by Moissan in France by the electrolysis of anhydrous hydrogen fluoride. The free fluorine proved to be a gas of extraordinary chemical activity, decomposing water at once with the formation of hydrogen fluoride and ozonized oxygen. This fact explains the failure of many previous attempts to prepare it in the presence of water.

Early Discoveries of New Elements.—The remarkable activity of chemical research at the beginning of our period is illustrated by the fact that three new elements were discovered in 1817. In that year Berzelius had discovered selenium, Arfvedson, working in Berzelius's laboratory had discovered the important alkali-metal lithium, and Stromeyer had discovered cadmium.

In 1826 Ballard in France discovered bromine in the mother-liquor from the crystallization of common salt from sea-water. Bromine proved to be an unusually interesting element, being the only non-metallic one that is liquid at ordinary temperatures, and being strikingly intermediate in its properties between chlorine and iodine. It has been obtained in large quantities from brines, and is produced extensively in the United States. The elementary substance and its compounds have found important applications in chemical operations, while the bromides have been found valuable in medicine and silver bromide is very extensively used in photography.

In 1828 Berzelius discovered thorium. The oxide of this metal has recently been employed extensively as the principal constituent of incandescent gas-mantles, and the element has acquired particular importance from the fact that, like uranium, it is radio-active, decomposing spontaneously into other elements.

Vanadium had been encountered as early as 1801 by Del Rio, who named it "erythronium," but a little later it was thought to be identical with chromium and was lost sight of for a while. In 1830, however, it was re-discovered by, and received its present name from Sefström in Sweden. Berzelius immediately made an extensive study of vanadium compounds, but he gave them incorrect formulas and derived an incorrect atomic weight for the element, because he mistook a lower oxide for the element itself. Roscoe in England in 1867 isolated vanadium for the first time, found the right atomic weight, and gave correct formulas to its compounds. Vanadium is particularly interesting from the fact that it displays several valencies in its compounds, many of which are highly colored. It has found important use as an ingredient in very small proportions in certain "special steels" to which it imparts a high degree of resistance to rupture by repeated shocks.

Columbium was discovered early in the nineteenth century in the mineral columbite from Connecticut by Hatchett, an Englishman, who did not, however, obtain the pure oxide. It was afterwards obtained by Rose who named it niobium. Both names for the element are in use, but the former has priority. Attention was called to this fact by an article in the Journal by Connell, an Englishman (**18**, 392, 1854).

The Platinum Group of Metals.—In 1854 a new member of the platinum group of metals, ruthenium, was discovered by Claus. Platinum had been discovered about the middle of the 18th century, while its other rarer associates, iridium, osmium, palladium, and rhodium had been recognized in the very early years of the 19th century. It was during the latter period that platinum ware began to be employed to a considerable extent in chemical operations, and this use was greatly extended as time went on. The discovery was made by Phillips in 1831 that finely divided platinum by contact would bring about the combination of sulphur dioxide with atmospheric oxygen, and this application during the past 20 years has become enormously important in the sulphuric acid industry, while other important applications of platinum as a "catalytic agent" have also been made. Wolcott Gibbs and Carey Lea have contributed perhaps more than any other recent chemists to a knowledge of the platinum metals. Carey Lea (**38**, 81, 248, 1864) dealt chiefly with the separation of the metals from each other, while Gibbs's work (**31**, 63, 1861; **34**, 341, 1862) included investigations of many of the compounds.

It may be mentioned that while platinum and its associates were formerly known only in the uncombined condition in nature, the arsenide sperrylite, $PtAs_2$, was described by the late S. L. Penfield, and the senior writer of this chapter, in articles published in the Journal (**37**, 67, 71, 1889).

Applications of the Spectroscope.—The discovery in certain mineral waters of the rare alkali-metals rubidium and cæsium by Bunsen and Kirchoff in 1861 was in consequence of the application of spectroscopy by these same scientists a short time previously to the identification of elements imparting colors to the flame. Since that time the employment of the spectroscope for chemical purposes has been much extended, as it has been used in the examination of light from electric sparks and arcs, as well as from Geissler tube discharges and from colored solutions.

The metals rubidium and cæsium are interesting in being closely analogous to potassium and in standing at the extreme electro-positive end of the series of known metals. It should be noticed here that Johnson and Allen of our Sheffield Laboratory, having obtained a good supply of rubidium and cæsium material from the lepidolite of Hebron, Maine, made some important researches upon these elements, accounts of which were published in the Journal (**34**, 367, 1862; **35**, 94, 1863). They established the atomic weight of cæsium, thus correcting Bunsen's determination which was unsatisfactory on account of the small quantity and impurity of his material. Pollucite, a mineral rich in cæsium, which had been found in very small amount on the Island of Elba, has more recently been obtained in large quantities—hundreds of pounds—at Paris, Maine, and its vicinity. This American pollucite was first analyzed and identified by the senior writer of this article (**41**, 213, 1891), and later (**43**, 17, 1892 *et seq.*) the results of many investigations on cæsium and rubidium compounds, in which the junior writer played an important part, carried out in Sheffield Laboratory, were published in the Journal.

The application of the spectroscope led to the discovery of thallium in 1861 by Crookes of England, and to that of indium in 1863 by Reich and Richter in Germany. Both of these metals are extremely rare, but they are of considerable theoretical interest. Thallium is particularly remarkable in showing resemblances in its different compounds to several groups of metals.

The spectroscope was employed again in connection with the discovery of gallium in 1875 by Boisbaudran.

It is in the same periodic group as thallium and indium, and it has a remarkably low melting point, just above ordinary room-temperature. It has been among the rarest of the rare elements, but within two or three years a source of it has been found in the United States in certain residues from the refining of commercial zinc. The recent issues of the Journal (**41**, 351, 1916; **42**, 389, 1916) show that Browning and Uhler of Yale have availed themselves of this new material in order to make important chemical and physical researches upon this metal.

Germanium.—The discovery of germanium in the mineral argyrodite in 1886 by Winkler revealed a curious metal which gives a white sulphide that may be easily mistaken for sulphur and which is volatilized completely when its hydrochloric acid solution is evaporated, so that it is evasive in analytical operations. This element had been predicted with much accuracy by Mendeléeff, and it is rather closely related to tin.

A few years after the discovery of germanium, Penfield published in the Journal (**46**, 107, 1893; **47**, 451, 1894) some analyses of argyrodite, correcting the formula given by Winkler to the mineral; also he described canfieldite, an analogous mineral from Bolivia, in which a large part of the germanium was replaced by tin.

The Rare Earths.—Before the year 1818 two rare earths, the oxides of yttrium and cerium, were known in an impure condition. Since that time about fourteen others have been discovered as associates of the first two. The rare earths are peculiar from the fact that many of them are always found mixed together in the minerals containing them, and also from the circumstance that most of them are remarkably similar in their chemical reactions and consequently exceedingly difficult to separate from each other. In many cases multitudes of fractional precipitations or crystallizations are needed to obtain pure salts of a number of these metals. The solutions of the salts of several of these elements give characteristic absorption bands when examined spectroscopically by the use of transmitted light.

No important practical application has been found for any of these earthy oxides, except that about one per cent of cerium oxide is mixed with thorium oxide in incandescent gas-mantles in order to obtain greatly increased luminosity.

The Inactive Gases.—As long ago as 1785, Cavendish, that remarkable Englishman who first weighed the world and first discovered the composition of water, actually obtained a little argon in a pure condition by sparking atmospheric nitrogen with oxygen converting it into nitric acid (another discovery of his) and absorbing the excess of oxygen. The volume of this residual gas as estimated by him corresponds very closely to the volume of argon in the atmosphere, as now known.

It was more than a century later, in 1894, that Rayleigh and Ramsay discovered argon in the air. Lord Rayleigh had found that atmospheric nitrogen was about one-half per cent heavier than chemical nitrogen, a fact which led to the investigation. It was only necessary to repeat Cavendish's experiment on a large scale, or to absorb oxygen with hot copper and nitrogen with hot magnesium, in order to obtain argon. The gas attracted much attention, both on account of having but a single atom in its molecule, and particularly because it failed to enter into chemical combination of any kind. This gas has been used of late for filling the bulbs of incandescent electric lamps in cases where a gas-pressure without chemical action is desired.

In 1890 and 1891, Hillebrand published in this Journal **40**, 384, 1890: **42**, 390, 1891) a series of analyses of the mineral uraninite and reported in some samples of the mineral as much as 2·5 per cent of an inactive gas. Hillebrand examined the gas spectroscopically but, just missing an important discovery, he detected only the spectrum lines of nitrogen. Ramsay, in searching for argon in some sort of natural combination, and doubtless remembering Hillebrand's work, heated some cleveite, a variety of uraninite, and obtained, not argon, but a new gas. This gave a yellow spectrum-line corresponding to a line previously observed in the light of the sun's corona and attributed to an element in the sun called helium. Helium, therefore, in 1895 had been found on the earth. This gas is a constant constituent of uranium minerals, as it is produced by the breaking down of radioactive elements. It has been found in very small quantity in the atmosphere, and is the most difficult of all known gases to liquefy, as its boiling point, as shown by Onnes in 1908, is only 4° above the absolute zero. It has not yet been solidified.

In 1898 Ramsay and Travers, by the use of ingenious methods of fractional distillation and absorption by charcoal, obtained three other much rarer inactive gases from the atmosphere which they called neon, krypton and xenon.

The inactive gases are all colorless, and as they form no chemical compounds they are characterized by their densities, which give their atomic weights, by their boiling points, and by their characteristic Geissler-tube spectra.

The gaseous radium emanation, or niton, belongs also to the inactive group, and it was also collected and studied by Ramsay who was compelled to work with only 0·0001 cc. of it, as the volume obtained by heating radium salts is very small. It is an evanescent element, disappearing within a few days on account of radioactive disintegration. Meanwhile it glows brilliantly when liquefied and cooled to the temperature of liquid air. It has an atomic weight of 222, four units below that of radium, and the difference is considered as due to the loss by radium of an atom of helium in passing into the emanation.

The Radioactive Elements.—The discovery of radium in 1898 by Madame Curie, and the study of that and other radioactive elements has produced a profound effect upon chemical theory. It was found that the two elements of the highest atomic weights, uranium and thorium, are always spontaneously decomposing into other elements at a fixed rate of speed which can be controlled by no artificial means, and that the elements resulting from these decompositions likewise undergo spontaneous changes into still other elements at greatly varying rates of speed, forming in each case a remarkable series of temporary elements. These transformations are accompanied by the emission at enormous velocities of three kinds of rays, one variety of which has been shown to consist of helium atoms. The greater number of the elements formed in these transformations have not as yet been obtained in a pure condition, and they are known only in connection with their radioactivity, volatility, etc.; but radium and niton, two of these products, have been obtained in a pure condition, so that their atomic weights and their places in the periodic system have been fixed.

We owe much of our knowledge of the radioactive transformations to the researches of Rutherford and of Soddy, and of their co-workers, but one of the important products of the transformation of uranium, an element which he called ionium, was characterized by Boltwood of Yale (**25**, 365, 1908).

Radium and niton, apart from their radioactive properties, resemble barium and the inert gases of the atmosphere, respectively. The rates at which their progenitors produce them, and the rates at which they themselves decompose, bring about a state of equilibrium after a time. Therefore a given amount of uranium, which decomposes exceedingly slowly, can yield even after thousands of years only a very small proportional quantity of undecomposed radium, one-half of which disappears in about 2500 years, because the amount decomposed must eventually be equal to the amount produced. The first conclusive evidence that radium is a product of the decomposition of uranium was given by Boltwood in this Journal (**18**, 97, 1904). He found that all uranium minerals contain radium; and the amount of radium present is always proportional to the amount of uranium, which shows the genetic relation between the two.

In the case of niton, which is produced by radium, and is called also the radium emanation, the rate of decay is rapid, so that if the gas is expelled from radium by heating, equilibrium is reached after a few days, with the accumulation of the largest possible amount of niton.

The conclusion has been reached by Rutherford and others that the final product besides helium, in the radioactive transformations, is lead, or at least an element or elements resembling lead to such a degree that no separation of them by chemical means is possible. Atomic weight determinations by Richards and others have shown that specimens of lead found in radioactive minerals give distinctly different atomic weights from that of ordinary lead. This fact has led to the view that possibly the atoms of the elements are not all of the same weight, but vary within certain limits—a view that is contrary to previous conclusions derived from the uniformity in atomic weights obtained with material from many different sources.

The results of the investigations upon radioactivity have led to modified views in regard to the stability of the elements in general. There has been little or no proof obtained that any artificial transmutation of the elements is possible, but the spontaneous transformation of the radioactive elements brings forward the possibility that other elements are changing imperceptibly, and that a state of evolution exists among them. All of the radioactive changes that we know proceed from higher to lower atomic weights, and we are entirely ignorant of the process by which uranium and thorium must have been produced originally.

Since radioactive changes have been found to be accompanied by the release of vast amounts of energy. compared with which the energy of chemical reactions is trivial, a new aspect in regard to the structure of atoms has arisen,—they must be complex in structure, the seats of enormous energy.

The determination of the amount of radium in the earth's crust has indicated that the heat produced by it is amply sufficient to supply the loss of heat due to radiation, and this source of heat is regarded by many as the cause of volcanic action. The sun's radiant heat also has been supposed to be supplied by radioactive action, so that the older views regarding the limitation of the age of the earth and the solar system on account of loss of heat have been considerably modified by our knowledge of radioactivity.

Physical Chemistry.

The application of physical methods as aids to chemical science began in early times, and some of these, such as the determinations of gas and vapor densities, specific heats, and crystalline forms have been mentioned already in this article. Within recent times physical chemistry has greatly developed and a few of its important achievements will now be described.

Molecular Weight Determinations.—Gas and vapor densities in connection with Avogadro's principle, formed the only basis for molecular weight determinations until comparatively recent times. The early methods of Gay-Lussac and Dumas for vapor density were supplemented in 1868 by the method of Hofmann, whereby vapors were measured under diminished pressure over mercury. In 1878 Victor Meyer introduced a simpler method depending upon the displacement of air or other gas by the vapor in a heated tube. As refractory tubes, such as those of porcelain or even iridium, could be used in this method, molecular weights at extremely high temperatures were determined with interesting results. For instance, it was found that iodine vapor, which shows the molecule I_2 at lower temperatures, gradually becomes monatomic with rise in temperature, that sulphur vapor dissociates from S_8 to S_2 under similar conditions, and that most of the metals, including silver, have monatomic vapors.

In 1883 and later it was pointed out by Raoult that the molecular weights of substances could be found from the freezing points of their solutions, but this method was complicated from the fact that salts, strong acids and strong bases behaved quite differently from other substances in this respect, and allowances had to be made for the types of substances used. The complication was afterwards explained by the ionization theory of Arrhenius. Better apparatus for this method was soon devised by Beckmann, who introduced also a method depending upon the boiling points of solutions, and these two methods are still the standard ones for determining molecular weights in solution. They are very extensively employed by organic chemists.

It has been found that the majority of substances when dissolved have the same molecular weight as in the gaseous condition, provided that they can be volatilized at comparable temperatures. For instance, sulphur in solution has the formula S_8, iodine is I_2 and the metals are monatomic.

Van't Hoff's Law and Arrhenius's Theory of Ions.—Modern views on solutions date largely from 1886, when van't Hoff called attention to the relations existing between the osmotic pressure exerted by dissolved substances and gas pressure.

Pfeffer, a botanist, was the first to measure osmotic pressure (1877). Basing his conclusions chiefly upon Pfeffer's determinations, van't Hoff formulated a new and highly important law, which may be stated as follows: The osmotic pressure exerted by a substance in solution is equal to the gas pressure that the substance would exert if it were a gas at the same temperature and the same volume. Further investigations have fully established the fact that molecules in dilute solution obey the simple laws of gases.

It was pointed out by van't Hoff that salts, strong acids and strong bases showed marked exceptions to his law in exerting much greater osmotic pressures than those calculated for them.

The next year in 1887, Arrhenius explained this abnormal behavior of salts, strong acids and strong bases by assuming that they dissociate spontaneously into ions when they dissolve, and that these more numerous particles act like molecules in producing osmotic pressure. He showed that these exceptional substances all conduct electricity in solution, while those conforming with van't Hoff's law do not, and according to his theory the ions become positively or negatively charged when they are formed, and these charged ions conduct the current. For example a molecule of sodium chloride was supposed to give the two ions Na^+ and Cl^-, thus exerting twice as much osmotic pressure as a single molecule.

Determinations of osmotic pressure or related values, such as depression of the freezing point and of electric conductivity, indicated that ionization could not be regarded as complete in any case except in exceedingly dilute solutions, and that the extent of ionization varied with different substances. The fact that osmotic pressures and electric conductivities gave closely agreeing results in regard to the extent of ionization in various cases, is the strongest evidence in support of the theory.

It was difficult at first for many chemists to believe that atoms, such as those of sodium and chlorine, and groups such as NH_4 and SO_4 could exist independently in solution, even though electrically charged. However, the theory rapidly gained ground and is now accepted by nearly every chemist as a satisfactory explanation of many facts.

During recent years, many investigations relating to osmotic pressure and ionization have been carried out in the United States, but only the work of Morse, A. A. Noyes, and the late H. C. Jones can be merely alluded to here. It should be mentioned that the eminent author of the ionic hypothesis gave the Silliman Memorial course of lectures at Yale in 1911 on Theories of Solution.

Colloidal Solutions.—Graham, an English chemist, in 1861 was the first to make a distinction between substances forming true solutions, which he called crystalloids, and those of a gummy nature resembling glue, which in solution do not diffuse readily through parchment membranes, as crystalloids do, and which he called colloids. The separation of colloids by means of parchment was called dialysis, and this process has come into extensive use in preparing pure colloidal solutions. Slow diffusion is now regarded as characteristic of colloids rather than their gummy condition.

Colloidal solutions occupy an intermediate position between true solutions and suspensions, resembling one or the other according to the kind of colloid and the fineness of division. By preparing filters with pores of varying degrees of fineness, Bechold has been able to separate colloids from each other in accordance with the size of their particles. It has also been possible to prepare different solutions of a colloid varying gradually from one in which the particles were undoubtedly in suspension to one which had many of the properties of a true solution.

Beginning in 1889, Carey Lea described in the Journal (**37**, 476, 1889 et seq.) a variety of methods for preparing colloidal solutions of the metals, consisting in general of treating solutions of metallic salts with mild reducing agents. His work on colloidal silver was particularly extensive and interesting. Solutions of this kind have recently yielded some extremely interesting results by means of the ultra-microscope, an apparatus devised by Zsigmondy and Siedentopf. A very intense beam of light is passed through the solution and observed at right angles with a powerful microscope. Under these conditions, particles much too small to be seen by other means, reveal their presence by reflected light. It has been possible in a very dilute solution of known strength to count the particles and thus to calculate their size. The smallest colloidal particles measured in this way were of gold and were shown to have approximately ten times the diameter, or 1000 times the volume, attributed to ordinary molecules. It is of interest that the particles appear in rapid motion corresponding to the well-known Brownian movement.

The chemistry of colloids has now assumed such importance that it may be considered as a separate branch of the science. It has its own technical journal and deals largely with the chemistry of organic products. All living matter is built up of colloids, and hæmogoblin, starch, proteins, rubber and milk are examples of colloidal substances or solutions. Among inorganic substances, many sulphides, silicic acid, and the amorphous hydroxides, like ferric hydroxide, frequently act as colloids.

Law of Mass-Action.—Berthollet about the beginning of the last century was the first chemist to study the effect of mass, or more correctly, the concentration of substances on chemical action. His views summarized by himself are as follows: "The chemical activity of a substance depends upon the force of its affinity and upon the mass which is present in a given volume." The development of this idea, which is fundamentally correct, was greatly hindered by the fact that Berthollet drew the incorrect conclusion that the composition of chemical compounds depended upon the masses of the substances combining to produce them, a conclusion in direct contradiction to the law of definite proportions, and since this view was soon disproved by Proust and others, Berthollet's law in its other applications received no immediate attention. Mitchell, however, pointed out in the Journal (**16**, 234, 1829) the importance of Berthollet's work, and Heinrich Rose in 1842 again called attention to the effect of mass, mentioning as one illustration the effect of water and carbonic acid in decomposing the very stable natural silicates. Somewhat later several other chemists made important contributions to the question of the influence of concentration upon chemical action, but it was the Norwegians, Guldberg and Waage, who first formulated the law of mass action in 1867.

This law has been of enormous importance in chemical theory, since it explains a great many facts upon a mathematical basis. It applies particularly to equilibrium in reversible reactions, where it states that the product of the concentrations on the one side of a simple reversible equation bears a constant relation to the products of the concentrations on the other side, provided that the temperature remains constant. In cases of this kind where two gases or vapors react with two solids, the latter if always in excess may be regarded as constant in concentration, and the law takes on a simpler aspect in applying only to the concentrations of the gaseous substances. For example, in the reversible reaction

$$3Fe + 4H_2O \rightleftarrows Fe_3O_4 + 4H_2,$$

which takes place at rather high temperatures, a definite mixture of steam and hydrogen at a definite temperature will cause the reaction to proceed with equal rapidity in both directions, thus maintaining a state of equilibrium, provided that both iron and the oxide are present in excess. If, however, the relative concentrations of the hydrogen and steam are changed, or even if the temperature is changed, the reaction will proceed faster in one direction than in the other until equilibrium is again attained.

The principle of mass-action also explains why it is sometimes possible for a reversible reaction to become complete in either direction. For instance, in connection with the reaction that has just been considered, if steam is passed over heated iron and if hydrogen is passed over the heated oxide, the gaseous product in each case is gradually carried away, and the reaction continually proceeds faster in one direction than in the other until it is complete, according to the equations

$$3Fe + 4H_2O \longrightarrow 3Fe_3O_4 + 4H_2 \quad \text{and}$$
$$Fe_3O_4 + 4H_2 \longrightarrow 3Fe + 4H_2O.$$

Many other well-known and important facts, both chemical and physical, depend upon this law. It explains the circumstance that a vapor-pressure is not dependent upon the amount of the liquid that is present; it also explains the constant dissociation pressure of calcium carbonate at a given temperature, irrespective of the amounts of carbonate and oxide present; in connection with the ionic theory, it furnishes the reason for the variable solubility of salts due to the presence of electrolytes containing ions in common; and it elucidates Henry's law which states that the solubilities of gases are proportional to their pressures.

Ostwald, more than any other chemist, has been instrumental in making general applications of this law, and he made particularly extensive use of it in connection with analytical chemistry in a book upon this subject which he published.

The Phase Rule.—In 1876 Willard Gibbs of Yale published a paper in the Proceedings of the Connecticut Academy of Science on the "Equilibrium of Heterogeneous Substances," and two years later he published an abstract of the article in the Journal (**16**, 441, 1878). He had discovered a new law of nature of momentous importance and wide application which is called the "Phase-Rule" and is expressed by a very simple formula.

The application of this great discovery to chemical theory was delayed for ten years, partly, perhaps, because it was not sufficiently brought to the attention of chemists, but largely it appears because it was not at first understood, since its presentation was entirely mathematical.

It was Rooseboom, a Dutch chemist, who first applied the phase-rule. It soon attracted profound attention, and the name of Willard Gibbs attained world-wide fame among chemists. When Nernst, who is perhaps the most eminent physical chemist of the present time, was delivering the Silliman Memorial Lectures at Yale a few years ago, he took occasion to place a wreath on the grave of Willard Gibbs in recognition of his achievements.

To understand the rule, it is necessary to define the three terms, introduced by Gibbs, *phase, degrees of freedom* and *component.*

By the first term, is meant the parts of any system of substances which are mechanically separable. For instance, water in contact with its vapor has two phases, while a solution of salt and water is composed of but one. The degrees of freedom are the number of physical conditions, including pressure, temperature and concentration, which can be varied independently in a system without destroying a phase. The exact definition of a component is not so simple, but in general, the components of a system are the integral parts of which it is composed. Any system made up of the compound H_2O, for instance, whether as ice, water or vapor, contains but one component, while a solution of salt and water contains two. Letting P, F. and C stand for the three terms, the phase-rule is simply

$$F = C + 2 - P$$

that is, the number of degrees of freedom in a system in equilibrium equals the number of components, plus two, minus the number of phases. The rule can be easily understood by means of a simple illustration. In a system composed of ice, water and water-vapor, there are three phases and one component and therefore

$$F = 1 + 2 - 3 = 0$$

Such a system has no degrees of freedom. This means that no physical condition, pressure or temperature can be varied without destroying a phase, so that such a system can only exist in equilibrium at one fixed temperature, with a fixed value for its vapor-pressure.

For instance, if the system is heated above the fixed temperature, ice disappears and if the pressure is raised, vapor is condensed. If this same system of water alone contains but two phases, for instance, liquid and vapor, $F = 1 + 2 - 2 = 1$, or there is one degree of freedom. In such a system, one physical condition such as temperature can be varied independently, but only one, without destroying a phase. For instance, the temperature may be raised or lowered, but for every value of temperature there is a corresponding value for the vapor pressure. One is a function of the other. If both values are varied independently, one phase will disappear, either vapor condensing entirely to water or the reverse. Finally if the system consists of one phase only, as water vapor, $F = 2$, or the system is divariant, which means that at any given temperature it is possible for vapor to exist at varying pressures.

The illustration which has been given relates to physical equilibrium, but the rule is applicable to cases involving chemical changes as well. In comparing the phase-rule with the law of mass action, it will be noticed that both have to do with equilibrium. The great advantage of the former is that it is entirely independent of the molecular condition of the substances in the different phases. For instance, it makes no difference so far as the application of the rule is concerned, whether a substance in solution is dissociated, undissociated or combined with the solvent. In any case, the solution constitutes one phase. On the other hand, the rule is purely qualitative, giving information only as to whether a given change in conditions is possible. The law of mass action is a quantitative expression so that when the value of the constant is once known, the change can be calculated which takes place in the entire system if the concentration of one substance is varied. The law, however, requires a knowledge of the molecular condition of the reacting substances, which may be uncertain or unknown, and chiefly on this account it has, like the phase-rule, often only a qualitative significance.

The phase rule has served as a most valuable means of classifying systems in equilibrium and as a guide in determining the possible conditions under which such systems can exist. As illustrations of its practical application, van't Hoff used it as an underlying principle in his investigations on the conditions under which salt deposits have been formed in nature, and Rooseboom was able by its means to explain the very complicated relations existing in the alloys of iron and carbon which form the various grades of wrought iron, steel and cast iron.

Thermochemistry.—This branch of chemistry has to do with heat evolved or absorbed in chemical reactions. It is important chiefly because in many cases it furnishes the only measure we have of the energy changes involved in reactions. To a great extent, it dates from the discovery by Hess in 1840 of a fundamental law which states that the heat evolved in a reaction is the same whether it takes place in one or in several stages. This law has made it possible to calculate the heat values of a large number of reactions which cannot be determined by direct experiment.

Thermochemistry has been developed by a comparatively few men who have contributed a surprisingly large number of results. Favre and Silbermann, beginning shortly after 1850, improved the apparatus for calorimetric determinations, which is called the calorimeter, and published many results. At about the same time Julius Thomsen, and in 1873 Berthelot, began their remarkable series of publications which continued until recently. Thomsen's investigations were published in 1882 in 4 volumes. It is probably safe to say that the greater part of the data of thermochemistry was obtained by these two investigators. The bomb calorimeter, an apparatus for determining heat values by direct combustion, was developed by Berthelot. The recent work of Mixter at Yale, published in this Journal, and of Richards at Harvard should be mentioned particularly.

Mixter's work in this field began in 1901 (**12**, 347). Using an improved bomb calorimeter, he has developed a method of determining the heats of formation of oxides by combustion with sodium peroxide. By this same method as well as by direct combustion in oxygen, he has obtained results which appear to equal or excel in accuracy any which have ever been obtained in his field of work. Richards's work has consisted largely of improvements in apparatus. He developed the so-called adiabatic calorimeter which practically eliminates one of the chief errors in thermal work caused by the heating or cooling effect of the surroundings. This modification is being generally adopted where extremely accurate work is required.

Organic Chemistry.

One hundred years ago qualitative tests for a few organic compounds were known, the elements usually occurring in them were recognized, and some of them had been analyzed quantitatively, but organic chemistry was far less advanced than inorganic, and almost the whole of its enormous development has taken place during our period.

Berzelius made a great advance in the subject by establishing the fact, which had been doubted previously, that the elements in organic compounds are combined in constant, definite proportions. In 1823 Liebig brought to light the exceedingly important fact of isomerism by showing that silver fulminate had the same percentage composition as silver cyanate, a compound of very different properties. Isomeric compounds with identical molecular weight as well as the same composition have since been found in very many cases, and they have played a most important part in determining the arrangements of atoms in molecules. They have been found to be very numerous in many cases. For instance, three pentanes with the formula C_5H_{12} are known, all that are possible according to theory, and in each case the structure of the molecule has been established. On theoretical grounds it has been calculated that 802 isomeric compounds with the formula $C_{13}H_{28}$ are possible, while with more complex formulas the numbers of isomers may be very much greater.

A particularly interesting case of isomerism was observed by Wöhler in 1828, when he found that ammonium cyanate changes spontaneously into urea

$$(NH_4CNO \longrightarrow N_2H_4CO).$$

This was the first synthesis of an organic compound from inorganic material, and it overthrew the prevailing view that vital forces were essential in the formation of organic substances. A great many natural organic compounds have been made artificially since that time, and some of them, such as artificial alizarin, indigo, oil of wintergreen, and vanillin, have more or less fully replaced the natural products. The preparation of a vast number of compounds not known in nature, many of which are of practical importance as medicines, dyes, explosives, etc., has been another great achievement of organic chemistry.

The development of our present formulas for organic compounds, by means of which in many cases the relative positions of the atoms can be shown with the greatest confidence, has been gradual. Formulas based on the dualistic idea of Berzelius were used for some time, type formulas, with the employment of compound radicals, came later, the substitution of atoms or groups of atoms for others in chemical reactions came to be recognized, but one of the most important steps was the recognition of the quadrivalence of carbon and the general application of valency to atoms by Kekulé about 1858. This led directly to the use of modern structural formulas which have been of the greatest value in the theoretical interpretation of organic reactions. It was Kekulé also who proposed the hexagonal ring-formula for benzene, C_6H_6, which led to exceedingly important theoretical and practical developments. The details of the formulas for many other rings and complex structures have been established since that time, and there is no doubt that the remarkable achievements in organic chemistry during the past sixty years have been much facilitated by the use of these formulas.

Many important researches in organic chemistry have been carried out in the United States, and the activity in this direction has greatly increased in recent years. In this connection the large amount of work of this kind accomplished in the Sheffield Laboratory, at present under the guidance of Professor T. B. Johnson, should be mentioned.

It has happened that comparatively few publications on organic chemistry have appeared in the Journal, but it may be stated that the preparation of chloroform and its physiological effects were described by Guthrie (**21**, 64, 1832). Unknown to him, it had been prepared by Souberain, a French chemist, the previous year, but the former was the first to describe its physiological action. Silliman gave a sample to Doctor Eli Ives of the Yale Medical School, who used it to relieve a case of asthma. This was the first use of chloroform in medical practice (**21**, 405, 1832). Guthrie also described in the Journal (**21**, 284, 1832) his new process for converting potato starch into glucose, a method which is essentially the same as that used to-day in converting cornstarch into glucose. Lawrence Smith (**43**, 301, 1842 et seq.), Horsford (**3**, 369, 1847 et seq.), Sterry Hunt (**7**, 399, 1849), Carey Lea (**26**, 379, 1858 et seq.), Remsen (**5**, 179, 1873 et seq.), and others have contributed articles on organic chemistry.

Agricultural Chemistry.

Until near the middle of the nineteenth century, it was believed that plants, like animals, used organic matter for food, and depended chiefly upon the humus of the soil for their growth. This view was held even long after it was known that plant leaves absorb carbon dioxide and give off oxygen, and after the ashes of plants had been accurately analyzed.

This incorrect view was overthrown by the celebrated German chemist, Liebig, who made many investigations upon the subject, and, properly interpreting previous knowledge, published a book in 1840 upon the application of chemistry to agriculture and physiology in which he maintained that the nutritive materials of all green plants are inorganic substances, namely, carbon dioxide, water, ammonia (nitrates), sulphates, phosphates, silica, lime, magnesia, potash, iron, and sometimes common salt. He drew the vastly important conclusion that the effective fertilization of soils depends upon replenishing the inorganic substances that have been exhausted by the crops.

The fundamental principles set forth by Liebig have been confirmed, and it has been found that the fertilizing constituents most commonly lacking in soils are nitrogen compounds, phosphates, and potassium salts, so that these have formed the important constituents of artificial fertilizers. Liebig himself found that humus is valuable in soils, because it absorbs and retains the soluble salts.

The foundation established by Liebig in regard to artificial fertilizers has led to an enormous application of these materials, much to the advantage of the world's food-supply.

It was Liebig's belief, in accordance with the prevailing views, that decay and putrefaction as well as alcoholic and other fermentations were spontaneous processes, and when the eminent French chemist, Pasteur, in 1857, explained fermentation as directly caused by yeast, an epoch-making discovery which led to the explanation of decay and putrefaction by bacterial action and to the germ-theory of disease, the explanation was violently opposed by Liebig and other German chemists. Pasteur's view prevailed, however, and since that time it has been found that various kinds of bacteria are responsible for the formation of ammonia from nitrogenous organic matter and also for the change of ammonia into the nitrates that are available as plant-food.

The long-debated question as to the availability of atmospheric nitrogen for plant-food was settled in 1886 by the discovery of Hellriegel that bacteria contained in nodules on the roots, especially of leguminous plants, are capable of bringing nitrogen into combination and furnishing it to the plants.

No more than an allusion can be made to agricultural experiment stations where soils, fertilizers, foods and other products are examined, and where other problems connected with agriculture are studied.

The late S. W. Johnson of Yale studied with Liebig and subsequently did much service for agricultural chemistry in this country, by his investigations, his teaching, and his writings. His book, "How Crops Grow," published in 1868, gave an excellent account of the principles of agricultural chemistry. He did much to bring about the establishment of agricultural experiment stations in this country, and for a long time he was the director of the Connecticut Station.

In the Journal, as early as 1827, Amos Eaton (**12**, 370) published a simple method for the mechanical analysis of soils to determine their suitability for wheat-culture, and Hilgard, between 1872 and 1874, described an elaborate study of soil-analysis. J. P. Norton, a Yale professor, in 1847 (**3**, 322) published an investigation on the analysis of the oat, which was awarded a prize of fifty sovereigns by a Scotch agricultural society, while Johnson, Atwater, and others have contributed articles on the analysis of various farm products.

Industrial Acids and Alkalies.

One hundred years ago sulphuric acid was manufactured on a comparatively very small scale in lead chambers. In 1818, an English manufacturer of the acid introduced the modern feature of using pyrites in the place of brimstone, while the Gay-Lussac tower in 1827 and the Glover tower in 1859 began to be applied as great improvements in the chamber process. Within about twenty years the contact process, employing platinized asbestos, has replaced the old chamber process to a large extent. It has the advantage of producing the concentrated acid, or the fuming acid, directly.

During our period the manufacture of sulphuric acid has increased enormously. Very large quantities of it have been used in connection with the Leblanc soda process in its rapid development. It came to be employed extensively for absorbing ammonia in the illuminating-gas industry, which was in its infancy one hundred years ago. New industries such as the manufacture of "superphosphates" as artificial fertilizers, the refining of petroleum, the manufacture of artificial dyestuffs and many other modern chemical products have greatly increased the demand for it, while its employment in the production of nitric and other acids, and for many other purposes not already mentioned, has been very great.

The manufacture of nitric acid has been greatly extended during our period on account of its employment for producing explosives, artificial dyestuffs, and for many other purposes. Chile saltpeter became available for making it about 1852. This acid has been manufactured recently from atmospheric nitrogen and oxygen by combining them by the aid of powerful electric discharges. This process has been used chiefly in Norway where water-power is abundant, as it requires a large expenditure of energy. A still more recent method for the production of nitric acid depends upon the oxidation of ammonia by air with the aid of a contact substance, such as platinized asbestos.

The production of ammonia, which was very small a hundred years ago, has been vastly increased in connection with the development of the illuminating-gas industry and the employment of by-product coke ovens. This substance is very extensively used in refrigerating machines and also in a great many chemical operations, including the Solvay soda-process. Ammonium salts are of great importance also as fertilizers in agriculture. The conversion of atmospheric nitrogen into ammonia on a commercial scale is a recent achievement. It has been accomplished by heating calcium carbide, an electric-furnace product made from lime and coke, with nitrogen gas, thus producing calcium cyanamide, and then treating this cyanamide with water under proper conditions. Another method devised by Haber consists in directly combining nitrogen and hydrogen gases under high pressure with the aid of a contact substance.

Leblanc's method for obtaining sodium carbonate from sodium chloride by first converting the latter into the sulphate by means of sulphuric acid and then heating the sulphate with lime and coal in a furnace was invented as early as 1791, but it was not rapidly developed and did not gain a foothold in England until 1826 on account of a high duty on salt up to that time. Afterwards the process flourished greatly in connection with the sulphuric acid industry upon which it depended, and with the bleaching-powder industry which utilized the hydrochloric acid incidentally produced by it, and, of course, in connection with soap manufacture and many other industries in which the soda itself was employed.

About 1866 the Solvay process appeared as a rival to the Leblanc process. This depends upon the precipitation of sodium bicarbonate from salt solutions by means of carbon dioxide and ammonia, with the subsequent recovery of the ammonia. It has displaced the older process to a large extent, and it is carried on extensively in this country, for instance, at Syracuse, New York.

Other processes for soda depend upon the electrolysis of sodium chloride solutions. In this case caustic soda and chlorine are the direct products, and the chlorine thus produced and liquified by pressure in steel cylinders, has become an important commercial article.

In earlier times wood-ashes were the source of potash and potassium salts. Wurtz in the Journal (**10**, 326, 1850) suggested the availability of New Jersey greensand as a source of potash and showed how this mineral could be decomposed, but it does not appear that this mineral has ever been utilized for the purpose. About 1861 the German potash-salt deposits began to be developed, and these have since become the chief source of this material. At present many efforts are being made to obtain potassium compounds from other sources, such as brines, cement-kiln dust, and feldspar and other minerals but thus far the results have not satisfied the demand.

Conclusion.

This account of chemical progress has given only a limited view of small portions of the subject, because the amount of available material is so vast in comparison with the space allowed for its presentation. Since the Journal has published comparatively little organic chemistry, it was decided to make room for a better presentation of other things by giving only a brief discussion of this exceedingly active and important branch of the science. For similar reasons industrial and metallurgical chemistry, and other branches besides, in spite of their great growth and importance, have been neglected, except for some incidental references to them, and some account of a few of the more important industrial chemicals.

It appears that we have much reason to be proud of the advances in chemistry that have been made during the Journal's period, and of the part that the Journal has taken in connection with them, and there seems to be no doubt that this progress has not diminished during more recent times.

The present tendency of chemical research is evidently towards a still greater development of organic chemistry, and an increased application of physics and mathematics to chemical theory and practice.

The very great improvements that have been made in chemical education, both in the number of students and the quality of instruction, during the period under discussion, and particularly in rather recent times, gives promise for excellent future progress.

Art. X.—*A Century's Progress in Physics;* by Leigh Page.

Dynamics.—At the beginning of the nineteenth century mechanics was the only major branch of physical science which had attained any considerable degree of development. Two centuries earlier, Galileo's experiments on the rate of fall of iron balls dropped from the top of the Leaning Tower of Pisa, had marked the origin of dynamics. He had easily disproved the prevalent idea that even under conditions where air resistance is negligible heavy bodies would fall more rapidly than light ones, and further experiments had led him to conclude that the increase in velocity is proportional to the *time* elapsed, and not to the *distance* traversed, as he had at first supposed. Less than a century later Newton had formulated the laws of motion in the same words in which they are given to-day. These laws of motion, coupled with his discovery of the law of universal gravitation, had enabled him to correlate at once the planetary notions which had proved so puzzling to his predecessors. His success gave a tremendous stimulus to the development and extension of the fundamental dynamical principles that he had brought to light, which culminated in the work of the great French mathematicians, Lagrange and Laplace, a little over a hundred years ago.

Newton's laws of motion, it must be remembered, apply only to a particle, or to those bodies which can be treated as particles in the problem under consideration. In his "Mécanique Analytique" Lagrange extended these principles so as to make it possible to treat the motion of a connected system by a method almost as simple as that contained in the second law of motion. Instead of three scalar equations for each of the innumerably large number of particles involved, he showed how to reduce the ordinary dynamical equations to a number equal to that of the degrees of freedom of the system. This is made possible by a combination of d'Alembert's principle, which eliminates the forces due to the connections between the particles, and the principle of virtual work, which confines the number of equations to the number of possible independent displacements. The aim of Lagrange was to make dynamics into a branch of analysis, and his success may be inferred from the fact that not a single diagram or geometrical figure is to be found in his great work.

Celestial Mechanics.—Almost simultaneously with the publication of the "Mécanique Analytique" appeared Laplace's "Mécanique Céleste." Laplace's avowed aim was to offer a complete solution of the great dynamical problem involved in the solar system, taking into account, in addition to the effect of the sun's gravitational field, those perturbations in the motion of each planet caused by the approach and recession of its neighbors. So successful was his analysis of planetary motions that his contemporaries believed that they were not far from a complete explanation of the world on mechanical principles. Laplace himself was undoubtedly convinced that nothing was needed beyond a knowledge of the masses, positions, and initial velocities of every material particle in the universe in order to completely predetermine all subsequent motion.

The greatest triumph of these dynamical methods was to come half a century later. The planet Uranus, discovered in 1781 by the elder Herschel, was at that time the farthest known planet from the sun. But the orbit of Uranus was subject to some puzzling variations. After sifting all the known causes of these disturbances, Leverrier in France and Adams in England independently reached the conclusion that another planet still more remote from the sun must be responsible, and computed its orbit. Leverrier communicated to Galle of Berlin the results of his calculations, and during the next few days the German astronomer discovered Neptune within one degree of its predicted position!

We shall mention but one other achievement of the methods of celestial mechanics. Those visitors of the skies, the comets, which become so prominent only to fade away and vanish perhaps forever, had interested astronomers from the earliest times. Soon after the discovery of the law of gravitation, Newton had worked out a method by which the elements of a comet's orbit can be computed from observations of its position. It was found that the great majority of these bodies move in nearly parabolic paths and only a few in ellipses. Of the latter the most prominent is the brilliant comet first observed by Halley in 1681. It has reappeared regularly at intervals of seventy-six years; the last appearance in the spring of 1910 is no doubt well remembered by the reader. Kant had considered comets to be formed by condensing solar nebulæ, whereas Laplace had maintained that they originate in matter which is scattered throughout stellar space and has no connection with the solar system. A study of the distribution of inclinations of comet orbits by H. A. Newton (**16**, 165, 1878) of New Haven substantiated Laplace's hypothesis, and led to the conclusion that the periodic comets have been captured by the attraction of those planets near to which they have passed. Of these comets a number have comparatively short periods, and are found to have orbits which are in general only slightly inclined to those of the planets, and are traversed in the same direction. Moreover, the fact that the orbit of each of these comets comes very close to that of Jupiter made it seem probable that they have been attached to the solar system by the attraction of this planet. Further confirmation of this hypothesis was furnished by H. A. Newton's (**42**, 183 and 482, 1891) explanation of the small inclination of their orbits and the scarcity of retrograde motions among them.

In 1833 occurred one of the greatest meteoric showers of history. Olmstead (**26**, 132, 1834) and Twining (**26**, 320, 1834) of New Haven noticed that these shooting stars traverse parallel paths, and were the first to suggest that they must be moving in swarms in a permanent orbit. From an examination of all accessible records, H. A. Newton (**37**, 377, 1864; **38**, 53, 1864) was able to show that meteoric showers are common in November, and of particular intensity at intervals of 33 or 34 years. He confidently predicted a great shower for Nov. 13th, 1866, which not only actually occurred but was followed by another a year later, showing that the meteoric swarm extended so far as to require two years to cross the earth's orbit. H. A. Newton (**36**, 1, 1888) in America and Adams in England took up the study of meteoric orbits with great interest, and the former concluded that these orbits are in every sense similar to those of the periodic comets, implying that a swarm of meteors originates in the disintegration of a comet. In fact Schiaparelli actually identified the orbit of the Perseids, or August meteors, with Tuttle's comet of 1862, and shortly after the orbit of the Leonids, or November meteors, was found to be the same as that of Tempel's comet.

Electromagnetism.—During the eighteenth century much interest had been manifested in the study of electrostatics and magnetism. Du Fay, Cavendish, Michell and Coulomb abroad and Franklin in America had subjected to experimental investigation many of the phenomena of one or both of these sciences, and in the early years of the nineteenth century Poisson developed to a remarkable extent the analytical consequences of the law of force which experiment had revealed. Both Laplace and he made much use of the function to which Green gave the name "potential" in 1828, and which is such a powerful aid in solving problems involving magnetism or electricity at rest.

Meantime electric currents had been brought under the hand of the experimenter by the discoveries of Galvani and Volta. Large numbers of cells were connected in series, and interest seemed to lie largely in producing brilliant sparks or fusing metals by means of a heavy current. Hare (**3**, 105, 1821) of the University of Pennsylvania constructed a battery consisting of two troughs of forty cells each, so arranged that the coppers and zincs can be lowered simultaneously into the acid and large currents obtained before polarization has a chance to interfere. This "deflagrator" was used to ignite charcoal in the circuit, or melt fine wires, and was for some time the most powerful arrangement of its kind. That "galvanism" is something quite different from static electricity was the opinion of many investigators; Hare considered the heat developed to be the distinguishing mark of the electric current. He says: "It is admitted that the action of the galvanic fluid is upon or between atoms; while mechanical electricity when uncoerced, acts only upon masses. This difference has not been explained unless by my hypothesis, in which caloric, of which the influence is only exerted between atoms, is supposed to be a principal agent in galvanism."

Questioning minds were beginning to suspect that there must be some connection between electricity and magnetism. For lightning had been known to make magnets of steel knives and forks, and Franklin had magnetized a sewing needle by the discharge from a Leyden jar. Finally Oersted of Copenhagen undertook systematic investigation of the effect of electricity on the magnetic needle. His researches were without result until during the course of a series of lectures on "Electricity, Galvanism, and Magnetism" delivered during the winter of 1819-20 it occurred to him to investigate the action of an electric current on a magnetic needle. At first he placed the wire bearing the current at right angles to the needle, with, of course, no result; then it occurred to him to place it parallel. A deflection was observed, for to his surprise the needle insisted on turning until perpendicular to the wire.

Oersted's discovery that an electric current exerts a couple on a magnetic needle was followed a few months later by Ampère's demonstration before the French Academy that two currents flowing in the same direction attract each other, while two in opposite directions repel. The story goes that a critic attempted to belittle this discovery by remarking that as it was known that two currents act on one and the same magnet, it was obvious that they would act upon each other. Whereupon Arago arose to defend his friend. Drawing two keys out of his pocket he said, "Each of these keys attracts a magnet; do you believe that they therefore attract each other?"

A few years later Ampère showed how to express quantitatively the force between current elements, and indeed developed to a considerable degree the equivalence between a closed circuit carrying a current and a magnetic shell. So convincing was his analysis and so thorough his discussion of the subject, that Maxwell said of this memoir half a century later, "The whole, theory and experiment, seems as if it had leaped, full grown and full armed, from the brain of the 'Newton of electricity.' It is perfect in form and unassailable in accuracy; and it is summed up in a formula from which all the phenomena may be deduced, and which must always remain the cardinal formula of electrodynamics."

Shortly afterwards the dependence of a current on the conductivity of the wire used and the grouping of cells employed, was made clear by the work of Ohm. Many of his results were obtained independently by Joseph Henry (**19**, 400, 1831) of the Albany Academy, who described in 1831 a powerful electromagnet in which a great many coils of wire insulated with silk were wound around an iron core and connected in parallel with a single cell. He remarks in this paper that with long wires, as in the telegraph, many cells arranged in series should be used, whereas for several short wires connected in parallel a single cell with large plates is more efficient.

Current Induction.—Impressed by the fact that electric charges have the power of inducing other charges on neighboring conductors without coming into contact with them, Faraday was engaged in investigating the possibility of an analogous phenomenon in the case of electric currents. His idea at first seems to have been that a current should induce another current in any closed conducting circuit which happens to be in its vicinity. Experiment readily showed the falsity of this conception, but a brief deflection of the galvanometer in the secondary circuit was noticed at the instant of making and breaking the current in the primary. Further experiments showed that thrusting a permanent steel magnet into a coil connected to a galvanometer caused the needle to deflect. In fact Faraday's report to the Royal Society on November 24th, 1831, contains a complete account of all experimental methods available for inducing a current in a closed circuit.

While Faraday is entitled to credit for the discovery of current induction by virtue of the priority of his publication, it must not pass unnoticed that Henry obtained many of the same experimental results independently and some even earlier. Henry was at this time instructor in mathematics at the Albany Academy, and seven hours of teaching a day made it well-nigh impossible to carry on original research except during the vacation month of August. As early as the summer of 1830 he had wound 30 feet of copper wire around the armature of a horseshoe electromagnet and connected it to a galvanometer. When the magnet was excited, a momentary deflection was observed. "I was, however, much surprised," he says, "to see the needle suddenly deflected from a state of rest to about 20° to the east, or in a contrary direction, when the battery was withdrawn from the acid, and again deflected to the west when it was re-immersed." In addition a deflection was obtained by detaching the armature from the magnet, or by bringing it again into contact. Had the results of these experiments been published promptly, America would have been entitled to credit for the most important discovery of the greatest of England's many great experimenters. But Henry desired first to repeat his experiments on a larger scale, and while new magnets were being constructed, the news of Faraday's discovery arrived. This occasioned hasty publication of the work already done in an appendix to volume **22**, 1832, of this Journal.

At almost the same time Henry made another important discovery and this time he was anticipated by no other investigator in making public his results. In the paper already referred to he describes the phenomenon known to-day as self-induction. "When a small battery is moderately excited by diluted acid and its poles, which must be terminated by cups of mercury, are connected by a copper wire not more than a foot in length, no spark is perceived when the connection is either formed or broken; but if a wire thirty or forty feet long be used, instead of the short wire, though no spark will be perceptible when the connection is made, yet when it is broken by drawing one end of the wire from its cup of mercury a vivid spark is produced. . . . The effect appears somewhat increased by coiling the wire into a helix; it seems to depend in some measure on the length and thickness of the wire; I can account for these phenomena only by supposing the long wire to become charged with electricity which by its reaction on itself projects a spark when the connection is broken."

Soon after, Henry went to Princeton and there continued his experiments in electromagnetism. No difficulty was experienced in inducing currents of the third, fourth and fifth orders by using the first secondary as primary for yet another secondary circuit, and so on (**38**, 209, 1840). The directions of these currents of higher orders when the primary is made or broken proved puzzling at first, but were satisfactorily explained a year later (**41**, 117, 1841). In addition induced currents were obtained from a Leyden jar discharge. Faraday failed to find any screening effect of a conducting cylinder placed around the primary and inside the secondary. Henry examined the matter, and found that the screening effect exists only when the induced current is due to a make or break of the primary circuit, and not when it is caused by motion of the primary.

Henry's work was mainly descriptive; it remained for Faraday to develop a theory to account for the phenomena discovered and to prepare the way for quantitative formulation of the laws of current induction. This he did in his representation of a magnetic field by means of lines of force; a conception which he found afterwards to be equally valuable when applied to electrostatic problems. Every magnet and every current gives rise to these closed curves; in the case of a magnet they thread it from south pole to north, while a straight wire bearing a current is surrounded by concentric rings. The connection between lines of force and the induction of currents is contained in the rule that a current is induced in a closed circuit only when a change takes place in the number of lines of force passing through it. Furthermore the dependence of the current strength on the conductivity of the wire employed has led to recognition of the fact that it is the electromotive force and not the current itself which is conditioned by the change in magnetic flux.

Great interest was attached to the utilization of the newly discovered forces of electromagnetism. In 1831 Henry (**20**, 340, 1831) described a reciprocating engine depending on magnetic attraction and repulsion, and C. G. Page (**33**, 118, 1838; **49**, 131, 1845) devised many others. The latter's most important work, however, was the invention of the Ruhmkorff coil. In 1836 (**31**, 137, 1837) he found the strongest shocks to be obtained from a secondary coil of many windings forming a continuation of a primary of half the number of turns. His perfection of the self-acting circuit breaker (**35**, 252, 1839) widened the usefulness of the induction coil, and his substitution of a bundle of iron wires for a solid iron core (**34**, 163, 1838) greatly increased its efficiency.

Conservation of Energy.—Perhaps the most important advance of the nineteenth century has been the establishment of the principle of conservation of energy. Despite the fact that the "principe de la conservation des force vives" had been recognized by the French mathematicians of the early part of the century, the application of this principle even to purely mechanical problems was contested by some scientists. Through the early numbers of this Journal runs a lively controversy as to whether there is not a loss of power involved in imparting momentum to the reciprocating parts of a steam engine only to check the motion later on in the stroke. Finally Isaac Doolittle (**14**, 60, 1828), of the Bennington Iron Works, ends the discussion by the pertinent remark: "If there be, as is contended by one of your correspondents, a loss of more than one third of the power, in transforming an alternating rectilinear movement into a continuous circular one by means of a crank, I should like to be informed what would be the effect if the proposition were reversed, as in the case of the common saw mill, and in many other instances in practical mechanics."

A realization of the equivalence of heat and mechanical work did not come until the middle of the century, in spite of the conclusive experiments of the American Count Rumford and the English Davy before the year 1800. So firmly enthroned was the caloric theory, according to which heat is an indestructible fluid, that evidence against it was given scant consideration. In fact the success of the analytical method introduced by Fourier in 1822 for the solution of problems in conduction of heat only added to the difficulties of the adherents of the kinetic theory. But recognition of heat as a form of energy was on the way, and when it came it made its appearance almost simultaneously in half a dozen different places. Perhaps Robert Mayer of Heilbronn was the first to state explicitly the new principle. His paper "On the Forces of Inorganic Nature" was refused publication in Poggendorff's Annalen, but fared better at the hands of another editor. During the next few years Joule determined the mechanical equivalent of heat experimentally by a number of different methods, some of which had already been devised by Carnot. Of those he used, the most familiar consists in churning up a measured mass of water by means of paddles actuated by falling weights and calculating the heat developed from the rise in temperature. However, the work of the young Manchester brewer received little attention from the members of the British Association before whom it was reported until Kelvin showed them its significance and attracted their interest to it. Meanwhile Helmholtz had completed a very thorough disquisition on the conservation of energy not only in dynamics and heat but in other departments of physics as well. His paper on

"Die Erhaltung der Kraft" was frowned upon by the members of the Physical Society of Berlin before whom he read it, and received the same treatment as Mayer's from the editor of Poggendorff's Annalen. Helmholtz's "Kraft," like the "vis viva" of other writers, is the quantity which Young had already christened energy. Not many years elapsed, however, until the convictions of Mayer, Joule, Kelvin and Helmholtz became the most clearly recognized of all physical principles. As early as 1850 Jeremiah Day (**10**, 174, 1850), late president of Yale College, admitted the improbability of constructing a machine capable of perpetual motion, even though the "imponderable agents" of electricity, galvanism and magnetism be utilized.

Thermodynamics.—The importance of the principle of conservation of energy lies in the fact that it unites under one rule such diverse phenomena as gravitation, electromagnetism, heat and chemical action. Another principle as universal in its scope, although depending upon the coarseness of human observations for its validity rather than upon the immutable laws of nature, was foreshadowed even before the first law of thermodynamics, or principle of conservation of energy, was clearly recognized. This second law was the consequence of efforts to improve the efficiency of heat engines. In 1824 Carnot introduced the conception of cyclic operations into the theory of such engines. Assuming the impossibility of perpetual motion, he showed that no engine can have an efficiency greater than that of a reversible engine. Finally Clausius expressed concisely the principle toward which Carnot's work had been leading, when he asserted that "it is impossible for a self-acting machine, unaided by any external agency, to convey heat from one body to another at a higher temperature." Kelvin's formulation of the same law states that "it is impossible, by means of inanimate material agency, to derive mechanical effect from any portion of matter by cooling it below the temperature of the coldest of the surrounding objects."

The consequences of the second law were rapidly developed by Kelvin, Clausius, Rankine, Barnard (**16**, 218, 1853, *et seq.*) and others. Kelvin introduced the thermodynamic scale of temperature, which he showed to be independent of such properties of matter as condition the size of the degree indicated by the mercury thermometer. This scale, which is equivalent to that of the ideal gas thermometer, was used subsequently by Rowland in his exhaustive determination of the mechanical equivalent of heat by an improved form of Joule's method. He found different values for different ranges in temperature, showing that the specific heat of water is by no means constant. Since then electrical methods of measuring this important quantity have been used to confirm the results of purely mechanical determinations.

The definition of a new quantity, entropy, was found necessary for a mathematical formulation of the second law of thermodynamics. This quantity, which acts as a measure of the unavailability of heat energy, was given a new significance when Boltzmann showed its connection with the probability of the thermodynamic state of the substance under consideration. If two bodies have widely different temperatures, a large amount of the heat energy of the system is available for conversion into mechanical work. From the macroscopic point of view this is expressed by saying that the entropy is small, or if the motions of the individual molecules are taken into account, the probability of the state is low. The interpretation of entropy as the logarithm of the thermodynamic probability has thrown much light on the meaning of this rather abstruse quantity. Gibbs's "Elementary Principles in Statistical Mechanics" treats in detail the fundamental assumptions involved in this point of view, its limitations and its consequences. In his "Equilibrium of Heterogeneous Substances"[1] he had already extended the principle of thermal equilibrium to include substances which are no longer homogeneous. The value of the chemical potential he introduced determines whether one phase is to gain at the expense of another or lose to it. It is unfortunate that the analytical rigor and austerity of his reasoning combined with lack of mathematical training on the part of the average chemist, delayed true appreciation of his work and full utilization of the new field which he opened up.

Liquefaction of Gases.—Meanwhile the problem of liquefying gases was attracting much attention on the

[1] J. W. Gibbs, Trans. Conn. Acad. Arts and Sci., 3, 108 and 343. Abstract by the author, this Journal, 16, 441, 1878.

part of experimental physicists. Faraday had succeeded in making liquid a number of substances which had hitherto been known only in the gaseous state. His method consists in evolving the gas from chemicals placed in one end of a bent tube, the other end of which is immersed in a freezing mixture. The high pressure caused by the production of the gas combined with the low temperature is sufficient to bring about liquefaction in many cases. Failure with other more permanent gases was unexplained until the researches of Andrews in 1863 showed that no amount of pressure will produce liquefaction unless the temperature is below a certain critical value. The method of reducing the temperature in use to-day depends on a fact discovered by Kelvin and Joule in connection with the free expansion of a gas. These investigators allowed the gas to escape through a porous plug from a chamber in which the pressure was relatively high. With the single exception of hydrogen, the effect of the sudden expansion is to cool the gas, and even with it cooling is found to take place after the temperature has been made sufficiently low. By this method all known gases have been liquefied. Helium, with a boiling point of —269°C., or only 4°C. above the absolute zero, was the last to be made a liquid, finally yielding to the efforts of Kammerlingh Onnes in 1907. This investigator[2] finds that at temperatures near the absolute zero the electrical conductivity of certain substances undergoes a profound modification. For example, a coil of lead shows a superconductivity so great that a current once started in it persists for days after the electromotive force has ceased to act.

Electrodynamics.—Faraday's representation of electric and magnetic fields by lines of force had been of great value in predicting the results of experiments in electromagnetism. But a more mathematical formulation of the laws governing these phenomena was needed in order to make possible quantitative development of the theory. This was supplied by Maxwell in his epoch-making treatise on "Electricity and Magnetism." Starting with electrostatics and magnetism, he gives a complete account of the mathematical methods which had been devised for the solution of problems in these branches of the subject, and

[2] H. K. Onnes, Nature, 93, 481, 1914.

then turning to Ampère's work he shows how the Lagrangian equations of motion lead to Faraday's law if the single assumption is made that the magnetic energy of the field is kinetic. In the treatment of open circuits Maxwell's intuition led to a great advance, the introduction of the displacement current. Consider a charged condenser, the plates of which are suddenly connected by a wire. A current will flow through the wire from the positively charged plate to the negative, but in the gap between the two plates the conduction current is missing. So convinced was Maxwell that currents must always flow in *closed* circuits, that he postulated an electrical displacement in the medium between the plates of a charged condenser, which disappears when the condenser is short-circuited. Thus even in the so-called open circuit the current flows along a closed path.

Maxwell's theory of the electromagnetic field is based essentially on Faraday's representation by lines of force of the strains and stresses of a universal medium. So it is not surprising that he was led to a consideration of the propagation of waves through this medium. The introduction of the displacement current made the form of the electrodynamic equations such as to yield a typical wave equation for space free from electrical charges and currents. Moreover, the disturbance was found to be transverse, and its velocity turned out to be *identical with that of light.* The conclusion was irresistible. That light could consist of anything but electromagnetic waves of extremely short length was inconceivable. In fact so certain was Maxwell of this deduction from theory that he felt it altogether unnecessary to resort to the test of experiment. For the electromagnetic theory explained so many of the details which had been revealed by experiments in light, that no doubt of its validity could be entertained. Even dispersion received ready elucidation on the assumption that the dispersing medium is made up of vibrators having a natural period comparable with that of the light passing through it.

Maxwell's book was published in 1873. Fifteen years later, Hertz,[3] at the instigation of Helmholtz, succeeded in detecting experimentally the electromagnetic waves predicted by Maxwell's theory. His oscillator consisted of two sheets of metal in the same plane, to each of which

[3] H. Hertz, Wied. Ann., 34, 551, 1888 *et seq.*

was attached a short wire terminating in a knob. The knobs were placed within a short distance of each other, and connected to the terminals of an induction coil. By reflection standing waves were formed, and the positions of nodes and loops determined by a detector composed of a movable loop of wire containing an air gap. Thus the wave length was measured. Hertz calculated the frequency of his radiator from its dimensions, and then computed the velocity of the disturbance. In spite of an error in his calculations, later pointed out by Poincaré, he obtained very nearly the velocity of light for waves traveling through air, but a velocity considerably smaller for those propagated along wires. Subsequent work by Lecher, Sarasin and de la Rive, and Trowbridge and Duane (**49**, 297, 1895; **50**, 104, 1895) cleared up this discrepancy, and showed the velocity to be in both cases identical with that of light. The last-named investigators increased the size of the oscillator until it was possible to measure the frequency by photographing the spark in the secondary with a rotating mirror. The positions of nodes and loops were obtained by means of a bolometer after the secondary had been tuned to resonance with the vibrator. The velocity thus found for electromagnetic waves along wires is within one-tenth of one percent of the accepted value of the velocity of light. Hertz's later experiments showed that waves in air suffer refraction and diffraction, and he succeeded in polarizing the radiation by passing it through a grating constructed of parallel metallic wires.

In order to satisfy the law of action and reaction, it is found necessary to attribute a quasi-momentum to electromagnetic waves. When a train of such waves is absorbed, their momentum is transferred to the absorbing body, while if they are reflected an impulse twice as great is imparted. This consequence of theory, foreseen by Maxwell and developed in detail by Poynting, Abraham and Larmor, has been verified by the experiments of Lebedew, and Nichols and Hull.[4] The latter used a delicate torsion balance from which was suspended a couple of silvered glass vanes. In order to eliminate the effect of impulses imparted by the molecules of the residual gas, such as Crookes had observed in his radiometer, readings were made at many different pressures and the

[4] E. F. Nichols and G. F. Hull, Phys. Rev., 13, 307, 1901 *et seq.*

ballistic rather than the static deflection recorded. After the pressure produced by light from a carbon arc had been measured, the intensity of the radiation was determined with a bolometer. Preliminary experiments indicated the existence of a pressure of the order expected, and later more careful measurements showed good quantitative agreement with theory. This pressure had already found an important application in Lebedew's explanation of the solar repulsion of comet's tails. These tails are made up of enormous swarms of very minute particles, and as the comet swings around the sun they suffer a repulsion due to the pressure of the intense solar radiation which counteracts the sun's gravitational attraction. Hence the tail, instead of following after the comet in its orbit, points in a direction away from the sun.

Some uncertainty existed as to whether a convection current produces a magnetic field. A compass needle is deflected by a current from a Daniell cell; is the same effect obtained when a conductor is charged electrostatically and then whirled around the needle by means of an insulating handle? The experimental difficulties involved in settling this question are realized when the enormous difference between the electrostatic and electromagnetic units of current is taken into consideration. For a sphere one centimeter in radius, charged to a potential of 20,000 volts, and revolving in a circle sixty times a second, constitutes a current of little over a millionth of an ampere.

This problem was undertaken by Rowland (**15**, 30, 1878) in Helmholtz's laboratory at Berlin in 1876. A hard rubber disk coated on both sides with gold was charged and rotated about a vertical axis at a rate of sixty revolutions a second. On reversing the sign of the electrification on the disk, the astatic needle hung above its center showed a deflection of over five millimeters. The current was calculated in electrostatic units from the charge on the disk and its rate of motion, and in electromagnetic units from the magnetic deflection. The ratio of these two quantities gave fair agreement with its theoretical value, the velocity of light.

Although the result of this experiment was confirmed by Rowland and Hutchinson in 1889, Crémieu was convinced by an investigation carried out at Paris in 1900 that the Rowland effect did not exist. Consequently further repetition of the experiment was desirable. So the following year Adams (**12**, 155, 1901) arranged two rings of eight spheres each so that they could be rotated about their common axis from fifty to sixty times a second. One set of spheres was connected by brushes to the positive pole of a battery of 20,000 volts, the other to the negative pole. The deflection of a nearby magnetometer needle was observed when the electrification of the two rings was reversed, and from the reading so obtained the ratio of the electromagnetic to the electrostatic unit of current computed. This quantity was found to differ from the velocity of light by only a few percent. This experiment and the even more exhaustive investigations carried out by Pender, both independently and in collaboration with Crémieu, finally convinced the scientific world that a convection current produces the same magnetic field as a conduction current of the same magnitude.

In discussing the ponderomotive force experienced in a magnetic field by a conductor through which a current is passing, Maxwell had said, "It must be carefully remembered, that the mechanical force which urges a conductor carrying a current across the lines of magnetic force, acts, not on the electric current, but on the conductor which carries it." Hall (**19**, 200, 1880), one of Rowland's students, questioned this statement, and determined to put it to the test of experiment. Efforts to find an increase in the resistance of a wire placed at right angles to the lines of magnetic force were unsuccessful. So the current was passed through a moderately broad strip of gold leaf and the effect of the magnetic field on the equipotential lines investigated. The results obtained confirmed Hall's belief that the force exerted by the field acts on the current itself, and is transmitted through it to the conductor. Further investigation (**20**, 161, 1880) revealed the same deflection of equipotential lines in thin strips of other metals, although the effect was found to be reversed in iron.

During the closing years of the nineteenth century occurred three events of far reaching importance. The electron was isolated, and its charge and mass measured by J. J. Thomson in England; X-rays were discovered by Röntgen in Germany; and the first indications of radioactivity were found by Becquerel in France. The first two are certainly to be attributed largely to the great advances which had been made in obtaining high vacua, and the last two might not have occurred so soon had it not been for the photographic plate.

The Electron.—The atomic theory of electricity dates from the time of Faraday. His experiments on electrolysis showed that each monovalent atom or radical, whatever its nature, carries the same charge, each bivalent ion a charge twice as great. Only a lack of knowledge of the number of atoms in a gram of the dissociated salt prevented him from calculating the value of the elementary charge. As the discharge of electricity through gases at low pressures became a subject for experimental investigation, another line of approach to the study of the atom of electricity was opened up. As early as the seventies Hittorf and Goldstein had observed that a shadow is cast by a screen placed in front of the cathode of a Crookes tube. Varley suggested that the cathode rays producing the shadow consist of "attenuated particles of matter, projected from the negative pole by electricity." The discovery that these rays are deflected by a magnetic field led English physicists to the conclusion that they must be composed of charged particles, and the direction of the deflection was such as to require the charge to be negative. Hertz contested this view on the ground that his experiments showed the rays to be unaffected by an electrostatic field, and suggested that they consist of etherial disturbances. Finally Perrin succeeded in passing the rays into a metal cylinder which received from them a negative charge, and Lenard showed how excessively minute these negatively charged particles must be by actually passing them through a thin sheet of aluminium in the wall of a vacuum tube, and detecting their presence in the air outside. Conclusive information as to the nature of the electron, as it was named by Johnstone Stoney, was supplied by the classic experiments of J. J. Thomson.[5] First he showed that Hertz's failure to find a deflection when a stream of electrons passes between the plates of a charged condenser was due to the screening effect of the gaseous ions produced by the discharge. With a much more highly evacuated tube he found no difficulty in obtaining a deflection in an electrostatic field. By using crossed electric and magnetic

[5] J. J. Thomson, Phil. Mag., 44, 293, 1897.

fields the deflection produced by one was just balanced by that caused by the other, and from the field strengths employed both the velocity of the particles and the ratio $\frac{e}{m}$ of charge to mass was calculated. The former was found to be about one-tenth the velocity of light, but the most startling result of the experiment was that the same value of $\frac{e}{m}$ was obtained no matter what residual gas was contained in the tube or of what metal the cathode was made.

To calculate e and then m other methods are necessary. C. T. R. Wilson has shown that in supersaturated air, water drops form easily on charged molecules, and that negative ions are more effective in causing condensation than positive ones. By making use of the results of this research Thomson has been able to measure the elementary charge. For suppose a stream of negative ions to pass through supersaturated air. A little drop forms on each charged particle, and the cloud of condensed vapor settles to the bottom of the vessel. The charge carried and the mass of water deposited can be measured directly. Stokes' law for the rate of fall of a minute particle through a gaseous medium enables the average size of the drops to be computed from the observed rate of descent of the cloud. Hence the number of drops formed and the charge carried by each follows at once. H. A. Wilson improved the method by noting the effect of an electric field upon the rate of fall of the charged drops, and subsequent experiments undertaken by Millikan[6] have been of such a character as to enable him to follow the motion of a single drop. Instead of water, the latter uses oil drops less than one ten-thousandth of a centimeter in diameter. A drop, after one or more electrons have attached themselves to it, is actually *weighed* in terms of the charge on its surface by applying an upward electric force just sufficient to balance the force of gravity. Then its weight is independently obtained from the density of the oil and the radius of the drop as determined by the rate of fall when the electric field is absent. Comparison of these two expressions gives $4{\cdot}774(10)^{-10}$ electrostatic units for the

[6] R. A. Millikan, Phys. Rev., 2, 109, 1913.

elementary charge. Combining this result with the value of $\frac{e}{m}$ found by Thomson, the mass of the electron comes out to be about one eighteen-hundredth that of an atom of the lightest known element, hydrogen.

That the electron is a fundamental constituent of all matter is attested by the fact that charge and mass are the same regardless of the source or manner of production. Whether emitted by a heated metal, under the action of ultra-violet light, from a radioactive substance, by a body exposed to X-rays, as a result of friction, it is the same negatively charged particle that constitutes the cathode ray of the discharge tube. Moreover, it makes its effect felt indirectly in many other phenomena, and from an investigation of some of these the ratio of charge to mass can be determined independently. Of such perhaps the most interesting is the Zeeman effect.

Spectroscopy.—Early in the nineteenth century Fraunhofer had observed that the solar spectrum is crossed by a large number of dark lines. Their presence was unexplained until in 1859 Kirchhoff and Bunsen showed "that a colored flame, the spectrum of which contains bright sharp lines, so weakens rays of the color of these lines when they pass through it, that dark lines appear in place of bright lines as soon as there is placed behind the flame a light of sufficient intensity, in which the lines are otherwise absent." For intra-atomic oscillators must have the natural frequency of the radiation which they emit, and consequently resonance will take place when they are exposed to rays of this frequency coming from an outside source, and selective absorption ensue. By comparing the bright lines in the spectra of metallic vapors made luminous by a gas flame with the dark lines in the sun's spectrum these investigators showed that many of the common terrestrial elements exist in the sun. The interest in spectroscopy grew rapidly. The excellent diffraction gratings made by Rutherfurd were succeeded by the superior concave gratings of Rowland. In 1877 Draper (**14**, 89, 1877) announced the discovery of the bright lines of oxygen in the solar spectrum, but his interpretation of his photographs has not been corroborated by the work of later investigators. Langley (**11**, 401, 1901), by the aid of his newly invented bolometer, succeeded in detecting the emission of energy from the sun in the infra-red in amounts far exceeding that contained in the visible spectrum. In 1842 Doppler drew attention to the fact that motion of the source should cause a displacement of the spectral lines, the shift being to the blue if the light is approaching and to the red if it is receding, and a few years later Fizeau suggested the application of Doppler's principle to the measurement of the velocity of a star moving in the line of sight. Thus the spectroscope has been able to supply one of the deficiencies of the telescope, and the two together are sufficient to reveal all components of stellar motion. When spectra formed by light from the sun's limb and from its center are compared, the same effect reveals the rotation of the sun about its axis. (C. S. Hastings, **5**, 369, 1873; C. A. Young, **12**, 321, 1876.)

Further Evidence of the Electron.—In 1845 Faraday discovered a rotation of the plane of polarization when light passes in the direction of the lines of force through a piece of glass placed between the poles of an electromagnet. Examination of the spectrum from a glowing vapor situated between the poles of a magnet, however, failed to reveal any effect of the field. The latter problem was attacked anew by Zeeman[7] in 1896, and with the aid of the improved appliances of modern science he succeeded in detecting a broadening of the lines. Later experiments with more powerful apparatus resolved these broadening lines into several components.

Lorentz[8] showed at once how the electron theory furnishes an explanation of the Zeeman effect. He found that when the source is viewed at right angles to the lines of magnetic force, a spectral line should be split into three components. Of these he predicted that the middle, or undisplaced component, would be found to be polarized at right angles to the direction of the field, and the other components parallel to the field. When the light proceeds from the source in a direction parallel to the magnetic lines of force, two components only should be formed, and these should be circularly polarized in opposite senses. Moreover, from the separation of the components can be calculated the ratio of charge to mass of the electronic vibrator which is responsible for the emission of radiant energy. Zeeman's experiments con-

[7] P. Zeeman, Phil. Mag., 43, 226, 1897.
[8] H. A. Lorentz, Phil. Mag., 43, 232, 1897.

firmed Lorentz's theory in every detail, and yielded a value of $\frac{e}{m}$ in substantial agreement with that obtained for cathode rays. Subsequent research, however, has shown that in many cases more components are found than the elementary theory calls for. Hale has detected the Zeeman effect in light from sun spots, proving that these blemishes on the sun's face are vortices caused by whirling swarms of electrified particles. Recently Stark and Lo Surdo have found a similar splitting up of lines in the spectrum formed by light from canal rays (rays of positively charged particles) passing through an intense electric field. This phenomenon has as yet received no adequate explanation.

On discovering that an electric current is capable of producing a magnetic field, Ampère had suggested that the magnetic properties of such substances as iron might be explained on the assumption of molecular currents. The electron theory considers these currents to be due to the revolution, inside the atom, of negatively charged particles about an attracting nucleus. It occurred to Richardson that this motion should give the atom the properties of a gyrostat. Hence if an iron bar be rotated about its axis, the atoms should orient themselves so as to make their axes more nearly parallel to the axis of rotation. Thus its rotation should cause the bar to become a magnet. Barnett[9] has tested this hypothesis, and has found the effect Richardson had predicted. From the strength of the magnetization produced, the value of $\frac{e}{m}$ can be computed. Barnett finds a value somewhat smaller than that for cathode rays, but of the right order of magnitude and sign. Einstein and De Haas have detected the inverse of this effect, i. e., the rotation of an iron rod when it is suddenly magnetized.

X-Rays.—In 1895, on developing a plate which had been lying near a vacuum tube, Röntgen[10] was surprised to find distinct markings on it. As the plate had never been exposed to light, it was necessary to suppose the effect to be due to some new and unknown type of radiation. Further investigation showed that this radiation originates at the points where cathode rays impinge on

[9] S. J. Barnett, Phys. Rev., 6, 239, 1915, and 10, 7, 1917.
[10] W. C. Röntgen, Wied. Ann., 64, 1, 1898 *et seq.*

the glass walls of the tube. Besides being able to pass with ease through all but the most dense material objects X-rays were found to have the power of ionizing gases through which they pass and ejecting electrons from metal surfaces against which they strike. The points at which these electrons are produced are in turn the sources of secondary X-rays whose properties are characteristic of the metal from which they come.

Röntgen's discovery excited intense interest among laymen as well as in scientific circles. Of the many X-ray photographs taken, those of Wright (**1**, 235, 1896) of Yale were the first to be produced in this country. His experiments were made immediately on receipt of the news of Röntgen's research, and resulted in the publication of a number of photographs showing the translucency for these rays of paper, wood, and even aluminium.

As X-rays are undeviated by electric or magnetic fields, Schuster, and later Wiechert and Stokes, suggested that they might be electromagnetic waves of the same nature as light, but much shorter and less regular. The great objection to this hypothesis was the failure either to refract or diffract these rays. In fact Bragg contended that they were not etherial disturbances at all, but consisted of neutral particles moving with very high velocities. Finally Laue[11] demonstrated their undulatory nature by showing that diffraction took place under proper conditions. Just as the distance between adjacent lines of a grating must be comparable to the wave length of light for a spectrum to be formed, a periodic structure with a grating space of their very much shorter wave length is necessary to diffract X-rays. Such a structure is altogether too fine to be made by human tools. Nature, however, has already prepared it for man's use. The distance between the atoms of a crystal is just right to make it an excellent X-ray grating, and Laue had no difficulty in obtaining diffraction patterns when Röntgen rays were passed through a block of zinc-blende. The distance between adjacent atoms of this cubic crystal can be computed at once from its density and molecular weight, and then the wave length of the radiation calculated from the deviation suffered. In this way X-rays are found to have a length less than one

[11] W. Friedrich, P. Knipping, and M. Laue, Ann. d. Phys., 41, 971, 1913.

thousandth as great as visible light. Further study of this phenomenon, particularly by the two Braggs, father and son, has revealed many of the structural details of more complicated crystals.

The most significant investigation in the field opened up by Laue's discovery is that undertaken by Moseley[12] only a couple of years before he lost his life in the trenches at Gallipoli. Using many different metals as anticathodes in a vacuum tube, he measured the frequencies of the characteristic rays emitted. He found that if the elements are arranged in order of increasing atomic weight, the square roots of the characteristic frequencies form an arithmetical progression. If to each element is assigned an integer, beginning with one for hydrogen, two for helium, and so on, the square root of the frequency of the characteristic radiation is found to be proportional to this atomic number. Even though Uhler has shown recently that over wide ranges Moseley's law does not hold within the limits of experimental error, there is undoubtedly much significance to be attached to this simple relation.

Radioactivity.—The year following the discovery of X-rays, Becquerel found that a photographic plate is similarly affected by radiations from uranium salts. Two years later the Curies separated from pitchblende the very active elements polonium and radium. Passage of the rays from these substances through electric and magnetic fields revealed the existence of three types. The alpha rays have been shown by Rutherford and his co-workers to be positively charged helium atoms; the beta rays are very rapidly moving electrons; and the gamma rays are electromagnetic pulses of the same nature as X-rays but somewhat shorter. In 1902 Rutherford and Soddy advanced the theory of atomic disintegration, according to which the emission of a ray is an indication of the breaking down of the atom to a simpler form. Thus in the radioactive substances there is going on before our eyes a continual transformation of one element into another, a change, by the way, which appears to be in no slightest degree either hastened or delayed by changes in temperature (H. L. Bronson, **20**, 60, 1905) or external electrical condition of the radioactive element. Uranium

[12] H. G. J. Moseley, Phil. Mag., 26, 1024, 1913, and 27, 703, 1914.

is the progenitor of a long line of descendants, of which radium was supposed for some time to be the first member. Boltwood (**25**, 365, 1908) of Yale, however, showed that the slow growth of radium in uranium solutions is incompatible with this assumption, and soon isolated an intermediate product which he named ionium. Radium itself disintegrates into a gas known as radium emanation, which in turn gives rise to a succession of other products. Analyses by Boltwood (**23**, 77, 1907) of radioactive minerals from the same locality show such a constant ratio between the amounts of uranium and lead present that it is natural to conclude that lead is the end product of the series. This hypothesis is confirmed by the fact that the oldest rocks show relatively the greatest amounts of this element.

In addition to the Ionium-Radium series two others have been discovered. Of these Boltwood's (**25**, 269, 1908) investigations seem to indicate that the one which starts with actinium is a collateral branch of the radium series and comes from the same parent uranium. The other begins with thorium and comprises ten members. As yet the end products of the actinium and thorium series have not been identified, although there is some reason for believing that an isotope of lead may be the final member of the latter.

As the amount of a radioactive element which disintegrates in a given time is proportional to the total mass present, an infinite time would be required for the substance to be completely transformed. Hence the life of such an element is measured by the half value period, or time taken for half the initial mass to disintegrate. This time varies widely for different radioactive substances, ranging from a small fraction of a second for actinium A to five billion years for uranium. Boltwood's (**25**, 493, 1908) original determination of the life of radium from the rate of its growth in a solution containing ionium gave 2000 years as its result, although recent measurements by Miss Gleditsch (**41**, 112, 1916) agree more closely with the value 1760 years obtained by Rutherford and Geiger from the number of alpha particles emitted.

Under the action of X-rays or the radiations from radioactive substances, gases acquire a conductivity which has been attributed by Thomson and Rutherford to the formation of ions. Zeleny has found that ions of opposite sign have somewhat different mobilities in an electric field, and experiments of Wellisch (**39**, 583, 1915) show that at low pressures some of the negative ions are electrons. T. S. Taylor (**26**, 169, 1908 *et seq.*) and Duane (**26**, 464, 1908) have investigated the ionization produced by alpha particles, and Bumstead (**32**, 403, 1911 *et seq.*) has studied the emission of electrons from metals which are bombarded by these rays. The investigations of Franck and Hertz, and McLennan and Henderson, show a significant relation between the ionizing potential (energy which must be possessed by an electron in order to produce an ion on colliding with an atom) and a quantity, to be considered later in more detail. which has been introduced by Planck into the theory of radiation.

Methods of Science.—Scientific progress seems to follow a more or less clearly defined path. Experimentation brings to light the hidden processes of nature, and hypotheses are advanced to correlate the facts discovered. As more and more phenomena are found to fit into the same scheme, the hypotheses at first proposed tentatively, although often only after extensive alterations, become firmly established as theories. Finally there may appear a fundamental clash between two theories, each of which in its respective domain seems to represent the only possible manner in which a large group of phenomena can be correlated. The maze becomes more perplexing at every step. At last a genius appears on the scene, approaches the problem from a new and unsuspected point of view, and the paradox vanishes. Such changes in point of view are the milestones which mark the progress of science. That science is stagnant whose only function is to collect, classify and correlate vast stores of experimental data. The sign of vitality is the existence of clearly defined and fundamental problems any possible solution of which seems irreconcilable with the most basic truths of the science in question. The greater the paradox grows, the more certain the advent of a new point of view which will bring one step nearer the comprehensive picture of nature which is the goal of natural philosophy.

The Ether.—From the earliest times philosophers have been attracted by the possibility of explaining physical phenomena in terms of an all-pervading medium. So strong had this tendency become by the middle of the nineteenth century that the English school of physicists were attributing rigidity, density and nearly all the properties of material media to the ether. In fact most physicists seemed to have forgotten that no experiment had ever given *direct* evidence of the existence of such a medium. Not until the first decade of the twentieth century was it realized that the experimental evidence actually pointed in quite the opposite direction, and that a new point of view was needed in dealing with those phenomena of light and electromagnetism which had been previously described in terms of a universal medium. Some account of the development of the ether theory and of the origin and growth of the point of view which has its principal exemplification in the principle of relativity is essential for an understanding of present tendencies in formulating a philosophic basis for scientific thought.

In the time of Newton and for a century after there was much controversy between the adherents of two irreconcilable theories of light. Hooke had suggested that light is a wave motion traveling through a homogeneous medium which fills all space, and Huygens had shown that the law of refraction can be deduced at once from this hypothesis if it is assumed that the velocity of light in a transparent body is less than that in free ether. However, Newton, impressed by the fact that a ray obtained by double refraction in Iceland spar differs from a ray of ordinary light just as a rod of rectangular cross section differs from one of circular cross section, and seeing no way of explaining this dissymmetry in terms of a wave motion analogous to longitudinal sound waves, adhered to the view that light consists of infinitesimal particles shot out from the luminous body with enormous velocities. So great was his reputation on account of his discoveries in other fields that this theory of light held sway among his contemporaries and successors until the labors of Young and Fresnel at the beginning of the nineteenth century definitely established the undulatory theory. However, in spite of the fact that a corpuscular theory of light made the assumption of an ether unnecessary in so far as the simpler of the observed phenomena are concerned, even Newton postulated the existence of such a medium, partly in order to explain the more complicated results of experiments in light, and partly in order to provide a vehicle for the propagation of gravitational forces.

Now an ether, if it is to explain anything at all, must have at least some of the simpler properties of material media. The most fundamental of these, perhaps, is position in space. As a first approximation in explaining optical phenomena on the earth's surface, the earth might be supposed to be at rest relative to the ether. But the establishment of the Copernican system made the sun the center of the solar system and gave the earth an orbital speed of eighteen miles a second. It may be remarked parenthetically that the speed of a point on the equator due to the earth's diurnal rotation is quite insignificant compared to its orbital velocity. Hence as a second approximation the sun might be considered at rest relative to the ether and the earth as moving through this unresisting medium.

The first indication of this motion lay in the discovery of aberration by the British astronomer Bradley in 1728. Bradley noticed that stars near the pole of the ecliptic describe small circles during the course of a year, while those in the plane of the ecliptic vibrate back and forth in straight lines, stars in intermediate positions describing ellipses. The surprising thing, however, was that the time taken to complete one of these small orbits is in all cases exactly a year. Bradley concluded that the phenomenon is in some way dependent on the earth's motion around the sun, and he was not long in reaching the correct explanation. For suppose the earth to be at rest. Then in observing a star at the pole of the ecliptic it would be necessary to keep the axis of the telescope exactly at right angles to the plane of the earth's orbit. However, as the earth is in motion, the telescope must be pointed a little forward, just as in walking rapidly through the rain an umbrella must be inclined forward so as to intercept the raindrops which would otherwise fall on the spot to be occupied at the end of the next step. The angle through which the telescope has to be tilted is known as the angle of aberration, and the tangent of this angle may easily be shown to be equal to the ratio of the velocity of the earth to the velocity of light. Knowing the velocity of the earth, the velocity of light can then be calculated. This method was one of the first of obtaining the value of this important quantity.

More recently, terrestrial methods of great precision have been devised for measuring the velocity of light. The most accurate of these is that employed by the French physicist Foucault in 1862. A ray of light is reflected by a rotating mirror to a fixed mirror placed at some distance, which in turn reflects the ray back to the moving mirror. The latter, however, has turned through a small angle during the time elapsed since the first reflection, and consequently the direction of the ray on returning to the source is not quite opposite to that in which it had started out. This deviation in direction is determined from the displacement of the image formed by the returning light, and from it the velocity of light is calculated. In order to make the deflection appreciable the distance between the two mirrors should be very great. As originally arranged by Foucault, it was found impractical to make this distance greater than twenty meters, and consequently the displacement of the image was less than a millimeter. Such a small deflection limited the accuracy of the experiment to one percent. In 1879, however, Michelson (**18**, 390, 1879), then a master in the United States Navy, improved Foucault's optical arrangements to such an extent that he was able to use a distance of nearly seven hundred meters between the two mirrors. With a rate of two hundred and fifty-seven revolutions a second for the rotating mirror, the displacement obtained was over thirteen centimeters. This experiment gave 299,910 kilometers a second for the velocity of light, with a probable error of one part in ten thousand. Later investigations by Newcomb and Michelson (**31**, 62, 1886) gave substantially the same result. So great has been the accuracy of these terrestrial determinations that recent practice has been to calculate from them and the angle of aberration the earth's orbital velocity, and hence the distance of the earth from the sun. This indirect method of measuring the astronomical unit has a probable error no greater than the best parallax methods of the astronomer. (J. Lovering, **36**, 161, 1863.)

Aberration is a first order effect, *i. e.*, it depends upon the first power of the ratio of the velocity of the earth to the velocity of light, and at first sight it seemed to prove conclusively that the earth must be in motion relative to the luminiferous medium. Other questions had to be settled, however, and one of these was whether or not light coming from a star would be refracted differently when passing through optical instruments from light which had a terrestial origin. Arago subjected the matter to experiment, and concluded that in every respect the light from a star behaved as if the earth were at rest and the star actually occupied the position which it appears to occupy on account of aberration. Finally optical experiments with terrestrial sources seemed to be in no way affected by the motion of the earth through the ether.

In order to account for these facts Fresnel advanced the following theory. To explain the refraction that takes place when light enters a transparent body, it is necessary to assume that light waves travel more slowly through matter than in free ether. Now the velocity of sound is known to vary inversely with the square root of the density of the material medium through which it passes. Hence it is natural to assume that ether is condensed inside material objects to such an extent that this same relation connects its density with the velocity of light traveling through it. But when a lens or prism is set in motion, Fresnel supposed it to carry along only the *excess* ether which it contains, ether of the normal density remaining behind. This assumption suffices to explain Arago's results, and yet fits in with the phenomenon of aberration. It gives for light traveling in the direction of motion through a moving material medium of index of refraction n an absolute velocity greater than that when the medium is at rest by an amount

$$\left(1-\frac{1}{n^2}\right)v,$$

which is only a fraction of the velocity v which would have to be added if convected matter carried along all the ether which resides within it. This expression was tested directly, first by Fizeau in 1851, and later by Michelson and Morley (**31**, 377, 1886) in this country. The experiment consists in bifurcating a beam of light, passing one half in one direction and the other in the opposite direction through a stream of running water. On reuniting the two rays the usual interference fringes are produced. Reversing the direction of motion of the water causes the fringes to shift, and from the amount of this shift the velocity imparted to the light by the motion of the stream is computed. The divergence between the experimental value of this quantity and that calculated from Fresnel's coefficient of entrainment was found by Michelson and Morley to be less than one percent, which was about their experimental error. Thus Fresnel's expression for the velocity of light in a moving medium is entirely confirmed by experiment. The derivation of it accepted to-day, however, is very different from his original deduction.

It has been noted that the phenomena of polarization led Newton to reject the wave theory of light. The only type of wave known to him was the longitudinal wave, in which the vibrations of the particles of the medium are in the same direction as that of propagation of the wave, and it was impossible to suppose that such a wave could have different properties in different directions at right angles to the line in which it is advancing. But in 1817 Young suggested that this inconsistency between the wave theory and the facts of polarization could be removed by supposing the vibrations constituting light to be executed at right angles to the direction of propagation. Thus in ordinary light the vibrations are to be conceived as taking place haphazard in all directions in the plane perpendicular to the ray, while in plane polarized light these vibrations are confined to a single direction. This supposition explained so many of the puzzling results of experiment, that it was accepted at once and led to the complete vindication of the undulatory theory.

Elastic Solid Theory.—Shortly afterwards Poisson succeeded in solving the differential equation which determines the motion of a wave through an elastic medium. His solution shows that such a medium is capable of transmitting two types of wave—one longitudinal, the other transverse. If k denotes the volume elasticity, η the rigidity and ρ the density of the medium, the velocities of the two waves are respectively

$$\sqrt{\frac{k + \frac{4}{3}\eta}{\rho}} \quad \text{and} \quad \sqrt{\frac{\eta}{\rho}}$$

Now a solid has both compressibility and rigidity, and transmits in general both types of wave. A fluid, on the other hand, on account of its lack of rigidity, cannot support a transverse vibration. Hence it was natural that Green, in searching for a dynamical explanation of the ether, should have proposed in a paper read before the Cambridge Philosophical Society in 1837 that the ether has the elastic properties of a solid. One great difficulty presented itself; disturbances inside an elastic solid must give rise to compressional as well as to transverse waves. But no such thing as a compressional wave had been found in the experimental study of light. Green attempted to overcome this difficulty by attributing an infinite volume-elasticity to the ether. The expression above shows that longitudinal waves originating in such an incompressible medium would be carried away with an infinite velocity, and it may be shown that the energy associated with them would be infinitesimal in amount. The next step was to calculate the coefficients of transmission and reflection for light passing from one material medium to another. Here the elastic solid theory is not altogether successful. If the ether is supposed to have different densities in the two media, as in Fresnel's theory, but the same rigidity, certain of these coefficients fail to give the values demanded by experiment, while if the densities are assumed the same but the rigidities different, other of the coefficients have discordant values. In connection with the phenomena of double refraction even more serious difficulties are encountered.

Electromagnetic Theory.—It was beginning to be felt that an ether must explain more than the phenomena of light, for Faraday's conception of electromagnetic action as carried on through the agency of a medium had added greatly to its functions. Finally Maxwell's demonstration that electromagnetic waves are propagated with the velocity of light made the theory of light into a subdivision of electrodynamics. Maxwell himself did not apply electromagnetic theory to the explanation of reflection and refraction. This deficiency, however, was remedied by Lorentz in 1875. The results obtained, as well as those for double refraction (J. W. Gibbs, **23**, 262, 1882 *et seq.*), and metallic reflection (L. P. Wheeler, **32**, 85, 1911), provided a complete vindication of the electromagnetic theory of light. This is all the more significant when the extreme precision obtainable in optical experiments is taken into account. For instance, Hastings (**35**, 60, 1888) has tested Huygens' construction for double refraction in Iceland spar and found that "the difference between a measured index of refraction . . . at an angle of 30° with the crystalline axis, and the index calculated from Huygens' law and the measured principal indices of refraction" is a matter of only 4·5 units in the sixth decimal place. Since Maxwell's time the gamut of electromagnetic waves has been steadily extended. The shortest Hertzian waves merge almost imperceptibly into the longest heat waves of the infra-red, and from there the known spectrum runs continuously through the visible region to the short waves of the extreme ultra-violet recently disclosed by Lyman. Here there is a short gap until soft X-rays are reached, and finally the domain of radiation comes to an end with gamma rays a billionth of a centimeter in length.

Maxwell's ether was not a dynamical ether in the sense of Green's elastic solid medium. In spite of the fact that Maxwell was always active in devising mechanical analogues to illustrate the phenomena of electromagnetism, he was never enthusiastic over the speculations of the advocates of a dynamical ether. The electrodynamic equations provided an accurate representation of the electric and magnetic fields, and beyond that he felt it was needless to go. That Gibbs (**23**, 475, 1882) held the same view is made evident by the closing paragraphs of a paper in which he shows that the electromagnetic theory of light accounts in minutest detail for the intricate phenomena accompanying the passage of light through circularly polarizing media. He says:

> "The laws of the propagation of light in plane waves, which have thus been derived from the single hypothesis that the disturbance by which light is transmitted consists of solenoidal electrical fluxes, . . . are essentially those which are received as embodying the results of experiment. In no particular, so far as the writer is aware, do they conflict with the results of experiment, or require the aid of auxiliary and forced hypotheses to bring them into harmony therewith.
>
> In this respect the electromagnetic theory of light stands in marked contrast with that theory in which the properties of an elastic solid are attributed to the ether,—a contrast which was very distinct in Maxwell's derivation of Fresnel's laws from electrical principles, but becomes more striking as we follow the subject farther into its details, and take account of the want of

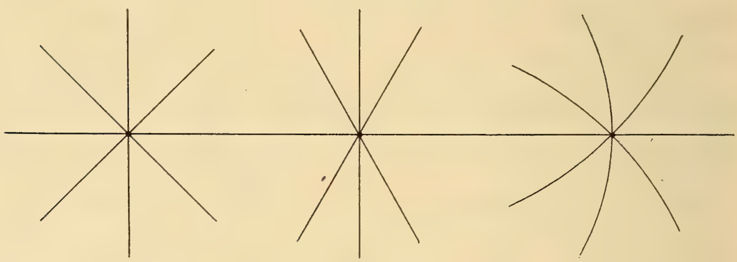
absolute homogeneity in the medium, so as to embrace the phenomena of the dispersion of colors and circular and elliptical polarization."

Further Dynamical Theories.—Kelvin, however, was not satisfied with this type of ether. To him dynamics was the foundation of all physical phenomena, and nothing could be said to be explained until a mechanical model was provided. So he returned to the elastic solid theory, and developed the consequences of the assumption, already made use of by Cauchy, that the ether has a negative volume elasticity of such a value as to make the velocity of the compressional wave zero. In order to prevent such an ether from collapsing it is necessary to assume that it is rigidly attached at its boundaries and that cavities cannot be formed at any point in its interior. Now Gibbs (**37**, 129, 1889) has pointed out the remarkable fact that the equations describing the motion of Kelvin's quasi-labile ether are of exactly the same form as the electromagnetic equations. Electric displacement is represented by an actual displacement of the ether, magnetic intensity by a rotation. Hence everything which can be explained by the electrodynamic equations finds an analogue in terms of Kelvin's ether. Still another type of dynamic ether which fits the known facts was proposed by McCullagh and perfected by Larmor. In this ether a rotational elasticity is premised, such as would exist if each particle of the medium consisted of three rigidly connected gyrostats with mutually perpendicular axes. In this ether electrical displacements correspond to rotations, and magnetic strains to etherial displacement.

A New Point of View.—While the dynamical school was still dominant in England, another point of view was developing on the continent. Kirchhoff denied that it was the province of science to provide mechanical explanations of the ether and electrodynamic phenomena such as Kelvin conceived to be necessary in order to make these phenomena intelligible. Kirchhoff's contention was that the object of science is purely descriptive,—phenomena must be observed, classified, and mutual connections described by the fewest number of differential equations possible. Mach expressed the same idea somewhat more concisely when he asserted that the aim of science is "economy of thought." For instance, in the time of Newton, planetary motions could be described quite satisfactorily by means of the three laws of Kepler. The motion of falling bodies on the earth's surface had been described with a fair degree of accuracy by Galileo. The value of Newton's law of gravitation, however, lay in the fact that this great generalization made it possible to describe these and many other types of motion by a single simple formula, instead of leaving each to be governed by a number of separate and apparently unrelated laws. The importance of such a generalization is measured by the economy of thought which it introduces.

Electron Theory.—The electron theory was leading to a reversal of Kelvin's idea that dynamical principles must underlie electrodynamics. Lorentz had shown that a rigorous solution of the electrodynamic equations did

Fig. 1. Fig. 2. Fig. 3.



away entirely with Maxwell's displacement current, but made the electromagnetic field at a point in space depend not upon the distribution of charges and currents at the *same* instant, but at a time earlier sufficient to allow the effect to travel with the velocity of light from the charges and currents producing the field to the point at which the electric and magnetic intensities are to be found. The position of a charge or current element at this earlier time he denoted its "effective position." The effective distribution, then, is that actually *seen* by an observer stationed at the point under consideration at the instant for which the intensity of the electromagnetic field is to be determined. This solution of the electrodynamic equations led in turn to rigorous expressions for the electric and magnetic intensities produced by a very small charged particle, such as an electron. Fig. 1 shows the electrostatic field produced by a charged particle at rest. The lines of force spread out radially and uniformly in all directions. In fig. 2 the electron is supposed to have a velocity v horizontally to the right of an amount smaller than, though comparable with, the velocity of light c. It is seen that the lines of electric force still diverge radially from the charge, but are crowded in the equatorial plane and spread apart in the polar regions. The dissymmetry grows as the velocity increases until if the velocity of light should be reached the field would be entirely concentrated in a plane at right angles to the direction of motion. Now it may be shown that fig. 2 is obtainable from fig. 1 by *reducing dimensions in the direction of motion in the ratio of*

$$\sqrt{1-\beta^2} : 1, \quad \text{where} \quad \beta \equiv \frac{v}{c}.$$

For a uniformly convected electric field differs from an electrostatic field only in that the dimensions in the direction of motion are contracted in this particular ratio. Fig. 3 represents the electric field of a charged particle which has a uniform acceleration to the right. Consider Faraday's analogy between lines of force and stretched elastic bands. The symmetry of the first two figures shows that in neither of these cases would there be a resultant force on the charged particle. But in the third figure it is obvious that a force to the left is exerted on the charge by its own field. Calculation shows this force to be proportional in magnitude to the acceleration. Let it be postulated that the resultant force on a charged particle is always zero. Then if F is the applied force, the force on the particle due to the reaction of its field will be $-mf$, where f stands for the acceleration and m is a positive constant, and we have the fundamental equation of dynamics

$$F - mf = 0$$

Hence, instead of admitting Kelvin's contention that all physical phenomena must be given a mechanical explanation, it would seem more logical to assert that electrodynamics actually underlies mechanics.

Calculation shows the electromagnetic mass m to vary inversely with the radius of the charged particle. Now Thomson's experiments made it possible to calculate the mass of an electron. Hence its radius can be computed, and is found to be about $2(10)^{-13}$ part of a centimeter, or one fifty-thousandth part of the radius of the atom. Since numbers so small convey little meaning, consider the following illustration, due, in part, to Kelvin. Imagine a single drop of water to be magnified until it is as large as the earth. The individual atoms would then have the size of baseballs. Now magnify one of these atoms until it is comparable in size with St. Peter's cathedral at Rome. The electrons within the atom would appear as a few grains of sand scattered about the nave. This separation between the constituent electrons of the atom,—so great in comparison with their dimensions,—explains how alpha particles can be shot by the billion through thin-walled glass tubing without leaving any holes behind or impairing in the slightest degree the high vacuum within the tube. The much smaller high-speed beta particles pass through an average of ten thousand atoms without even coming near enough to one of the component electrons to detach it and form an ion.

Michelson-Morley Experiment.—In 1881 Michelson (**22**, 120, 1881) conceived an ingenious and bold method of measuring the orbital motion of the earth through the luminiferous ether. As the experiment was one involving considerable expense, Bell, the inventor of the telephone receiver, was appealed to successfully for the funds necessary to carry it through. Michelson's experimental plan was as follows: A beam of light traveling in the direction of the earth's motion strikes an unsilvered mirror m at an angle of 45°. Part of the light passes through, the rest being reflected at right angles to its original direction. Each ray is returned by a mirror at a distance l from m. On meeting again, the ray whose path has been at right angles to the direction of the earth's motion passes on through the mirror, while the other ray is reflected so as to bring the two in line and form interference fringes. Now consider the effect of the earth's motion on the paths of the two rays. In fig. 4 the earth is supposed to be moving to the right. The unsilvered mirror m bifurcates a beam of light coming from a source a. By the time the ray reflected from m has traveled to the mirror b and back, m will have moved forward to m'; a distance $2\beta l$, where the small quantity β is the ratio of the earth's velocity to the velocity of light. Hence the length of the path traversed by this ray is approximately

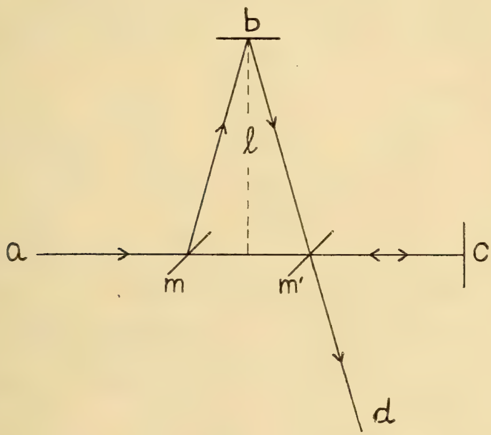
$$2\,l\left(1+\frac{1}{2}\,\beta^2\right).$$

The other ray will reach the mirror *c* after the latter has moved forward a distance

$$\frac{\beta\,l}{1-\beta},$$

and on returning find *m* at *m′*. Hence its path has a length of roughly $2\,l\,(1+\beta^2)$. The difference in path of

FIG. 4.



the two rays is $\beta^2\,l$ and consequently they should be a little out of phase on meeting at *d*. By rotating the apparatus clockwise through 90° the directions of the two rays relative to the earth's motion are interchanged, and the interference fringes would be expected to shift an amount corresponding to a difference in path of $2\,\beta^2\,l$. This quantity is of course small,—β^2 is about one one-hundred millionth,—but so sensitive are the methods of interferometry that Michelson felt confident that he would be able to detect the earth's motion through the ether. The apparatus consisted of a table which could be rotated about a vertical axis in much the same way as a spectrometer table, and provided with arms a meter long to carry the mirrors *b* and *c*. With this length of arm the interference fringes from sodium light should shift by an amount corresponding to four hundredths of a wave length when the table is rotated through a right angle. When the experiment was first performed the apparatus was placed on a stone pier in the Physical Institute at Berlin. So sensitive was the instrument to outside vibrations that even after midnight it was found impossible to get consistent readings. Finally a satisfactory foundation was constructed in the cellar of the Astrophysical observatory at Potsdam. But what was the astonishment of the experimenters to find that the expected shift of the interference fringes did not exist!

The extreme delicacy of the experiment made it desirable to confirm the result by repeating it. This was done by Michelson and Morley (**34**, 333, 1887) in 1887. In place of a revolving table a massive slab of stone floating on mercury was used to carry the apparatus. This slab was kept in constant rotation, the observer following it around. Moreover, the precision of the experiment was greatly increased by reflecting each ray back and forth across the slab a number of times between leaving and returning to the mirror *m*. The accuracy attained was such as to justify Michelson in declaring that if the effect sought actually existed it could not be so great as one-twentieth of its calculated value. In 1905 Morley and Miller[13] repeated the experiment for the second time and succeeded in increasing the sensitiveness of the apparatus to a point such that a motion through the ether of one-tenth of the earth's orbital velocity could have been detected.

The displacement looked for in the Michelson-Morley experiment is known as a second-order effect in that it depends upon the square of the ratio of the velocity of the earth to that of light. Michelson at first considered that the negative result obtained confirmed a theory proposed by Stokes in which it was assumed that the ether inside and near its surface partakes of the motion of the earth, while that at a distance is practically quiescent. But there are many objections to Stokes' theory, one of which was brought out by an experiment of Michelson's (**3**, 475, 1897) in which he attempted by an interference method to detect a difference in the velocity of light at different levels above the earth's surface. The negative result obtained led him to conclude that if Stokes' theory were

[13] E. W. Morley and D. C. Miller, Phil. Mag., 9, 680, 1905.

true the earth's influence on the ether would have to extend to a distance above its surface comparable with its diameter. Meanwhile a more satisfactory explanation was forthcoming. It has been pointed out that a uniformly convected electric field is derivable from an electrostatic field by contracting dimensions in the direction of motion in the ratio

$$\sqrt{1-\beta^2} : 1.$$

Fitzgerald and Lorentz showed independently that if moving matter is distorted in this same way the result obtained by Michelson would be just that to be expected. For then the distance of the mirror c from m would be

$$l\sqrt{1-\beta^2}$$

instead of l, and the path of the ray moving parallel to the earth's orbit

$$2\,l\left(1+\frac{1}{2}\beta^2\right),$$

which is just that of the other ray. Of course when the apparatus is rotated through 90°, the distance of this mirror from m assumes its normal value again, and the distance of the other mirror becomes shortened. As all measurement consists in comparing the object to be measured with a standard this contraction could never be detected by experimental methods, for the measuring rod would contract in exactly the same ratio as the body to be measured.

In computing its electromagnetic mass Abraham had assumed the electron to be a uniformly charged rigid sphere which keeps its spherical form no matter how great a velocity it may be given. He found that the mass increases with the speed at very high velocities, becoming infinite as the velocity of light is approached, and that its value depends upon the direction of the applied force. After the Fitzgerald-Lorentz contraction was seen to be necessary in order to explain Michelson's result, Lorentz calculated the electromagnetic mass of a charged sphere which is deformed into an oblate spheroid when set in motion. For this type of electron too, the mass approaches infinity for velocities as great as that of light, and is different for different directions. If a force is applied in the direction of motion the inertia to be overcome is a little greater than when the force is applied at right angles to this direction. Thus we have to distinguish between longitudinal and transverse masses. But the masses of Lorentz's electron are not the same functions of its velocity as those of Abraham's. Kaufmann and after him Bucherer tested experimentally the relation between transverse mass and velocity by observing the deflections produced by electric and magnetic fields in the paths of high speed beta particles. The latter's work was such an ample confirmation of Lorentz's formula that it may be considered as proven that a moving electron at least suffers contraction in the direction of motion in the ratio

$$\sqrt{1-\beta^2} : 1.$$

The electromagnetic theory of light had proved so successful when applied to bodies at rest that Lorentz was anxious to extend this theory to the optics of moving media. His problem was to find a group of homogeneous linear transformations that would leave the form of the electrodynamic equations unchanged. The Michelson-Morley experiment had shown that dimensions in the direction of motion must be contracted in the moving system, those at right angles remaining unaltered. But Lorentz soon found that it was also necessary to use a new unit of time in the moving system, and as this time was found to depend upon the *position* of the point at which it is to be determined, he called it the *local* time. Lorentz's transformation is just that of the principle of relativity, but he did not succeed in expressing the electrodynamic equations in terms of the new coördinates and time in exactly the same form as for a system at rest, for the reason that he failed to endow these new units with sufficient reality to justify him in using them when it came to transforming the velocity term involved in an electric current.

Principle of Relativity.—In 1905 appeared in the Annalen der Physik[14] a paper destined to alter entirely the point of view from which problems in light and electromagnetic theory are to be approached. The author was Albert Einstein, of Berne, Switzerland, a young man of twenty-six who had already made a number of notable contributions to theoretical physics.

[14] 17, 891, 1905.

The principle of relativity proposed by Einstein was by no means new to students of dynamics. Newton's first two laws of motion express very clearly the fact that in mechanics all motion is relative. Force is proportional to acceleration, and the relation between the two is the same whether the motion under consideration is referred to fixed axes or to axes moving with a constant velocity. But in connection with the phenomena of light and electromagnetism the case seemed to be quite different. There everything was referred to a fixed ether, and even though Lorentz had found a set of transformations which left the electrodymanic equations practically unchanged, he continued to think in terms of an ether. So physicists were not a little startled when Einstein postulated that no experiment, practical or ideal, could ever distinguish between two systems in such a manner as to warrant the assertion that one of them is at rest and the other in motion. All motion is relative, and the laws governing physical, chemical and biological phenomena are the same in terms of the units of one system as in terms of those of any other.

Einstein next considers some very fundamental questions. What do we mean when we say that two events, one at A and the other at a point B far from A, occur at the same time? Obviously the expression has no significance unless synchronous clocks are stationed at the two points. But how is it to be determined whether or not these two clocks are synchronous? If instantaneous communication could be established between A and B the matter would be simple enough. Since no infinite velocity of transmission is available, however, let a light wave be sent from A to B and returned to A immediately upon its arrival. If the time indicated by the clock at B when the signal is received is half way between that at which it left A and the time at which it arrives on its return, then the two clocks may be considered synchronous. Now if it desired to measure the length of a bar which is moving parallel to the scale with which the measurement is to be made, it is necessary to note the positions of the two ends of the bar at the *same* instant. So even the measurement of the length of a moving body depends upon the condition of synchronism at different points in space.

The principle of relativity requires that the velocity of light shall be the same in one system as in another relative to which the first is in motion. Hence the definition of synchronism makes it possible to obtain a set of transformations connecting space and time measurement on one system with those on another. This group of transformations is exactly that which Lorentz had found would transform the electrodynamic equations into themselves. But Einstein's point of view brought out a remarkable reciprocity which Lorentz had missed. If two parallel rods MN and OP are in motion relative to each other in the direction of their lengths, not only does OP appear shortened to an observer at rest with respect to MN, but MN appears shorter than normal in the same ratio to an observer who is moving along with the rod OP.

Einstein's theory makes the velocity of light the maximum speed with which a signal can be transmitted. This leads to his celebrated addition theorem. Consider three observers A, B and C. Let B be moving relative to A with a velocity of nine-tenths the velocity of light, and C in the same direction with an equal velocity relative to B. In terms of old-fashioned notions of time and space, the velocity of C relative to A would be computed as one and eight-tenths the velocity of light. But the relativity theory gives it as ninety-nine hundredths the velocity of light. For the velocity of light can never be surpassed by that of any material object. This deduction from theory is most strikingly confirmed by the fact that although beta particles have been observed with velocities as high as ninety-nine hundredths that of light, the velocity of light is never quite equalled. It may be remarked in passing that the principle of relativity requires that the masses of all material bodies shall vary with the velocity in the same manner as Lorentz found to be the case for the electromagnetic mass of the deformable electron. In this connection Bumstead (**26**, 498, 1908) has devised an elegant method of deducing the ratio of longitudinal to transverse mass.

The close connection between electrodynamics and the principle of relativity is obvious from the fact that both lead to the same time and space transformations. Furthermore L. Page (**37**, 169, 1914) has shown that the electrodynamic equations can be derived exactly and in their entirety from nothing more than the kinematics of relativity and the assumption that every element of charge is a center of uniformly diverging lines of force. Hence it may safely be asserted that no purely electromagnetic phenomenon can ever come into contradiction with this principle. The simplicity thus introduced into the solution of a certain class of problems is enormous. As an example consider the question as to whether a moving star is retarded by the reaction of its own radiation. This purely electrodynamical problem is of such complexity that attempts to solve it have led to some controversy among mathematical physicists. The principle of relativity tells us without recourse to analysis that no retardation can exist.

Throughout the nineteenth century the ether has played a fundamental part in all important physical theories of light and electromagnetism. But if it is not possible for experiment to detect even the state of motion of the ether, why postulate the existence of such a medium? If it does not possess the most fundamental characteristic of matter, how can it possess such derived properties as density and elasticity,—properties which any conceivable *mechanical* medium must have in order to transmit transverse vibrations? The relativist does not deny the existence of an ether. To him the question has no more meaning than if he were asked to express an opinion as to the reality of parallels of latitude on the earth's surface. As a convenient medium of expression in describing certain phenomena the ether has justified much of the use which has been made of it. But to attribute to it a degree of substantiality for which there is no warrant in experiment, is to change it from an aid into an obstacle to the progress of science. From the relativist point of view the distinction is very sharp between those motions of charged particles which are experimentally observable, and such geometrical conventions as electromagnetic fields, or analytical symbols as electric and magnetic intensities. These modes of representation have been and still are of the greatest use and importance, but their value in scientific description must not lead to lack of appreciation of their purely speculative character.

Finally attention must be drawn to the fact that the discoveries of inductive science, embodied in the great generalization we have just been discussing, have led to a more intimate knowledge of the nature of time and space than twenty centuries of introspection on the part of professional philosophers. Minskowski, whose promise of greater achievement was cut off by an untimely death, has shown that four dimensional geometry makes possible the representation with beautiful simplicity of the time and space relationships of this theory. The one time and three space dimensions merge in such a manner as to form a single whole with not a vestige of differentiation between these fundamental quantities. Wilson and Lewis[15] have made this representation familiar to American readers through their admirable translation of Minskowski's work into the notation of Gibbs's vector analysis.

Aberration, the Doppler effect, anomalous dispersion, —indeed all known phenomena,—are found to be in accord with the principle of relativity. It must be borne in mind, however, that this principle applies only to systems moving relative to one another in straight lines with constant velocities. That there is something absolute about rotation has been recognized since Foucault performed his famous pendulum experiment in 1851. This experiment (C. S. Lyman, **12**, 251 and 398, 1851) consisted in setting a pendulum composed of a heavy brass ball suspended by a long wire into oscillation in such a way as to avoid appreciable ellipticity in its motion. Observation of the rate at which the ground rotates relative to the plane of vibration of the pendulum furnished a method of measuring the rotation of the earth about its axis *without reference to celestial bodies.* The gyroscopic compass in use to-day provides yet another terrestial method of detecting this rotation.

The Future of Physics.—At times during the history of physics it has seemed as if the fundamental laws of this science had been so completely formulated that nothing remained to future generations beyond the routine of deducing to the full the consequences of these laws, and increasing the precision of the methods used to measure the constants appearing in them. That Laplace held this view has already been pointed out, and Maxwell, in his introductory lecture at the opening of the Cavendish laboratory in 1871, said, "This characteristic of modern experiments—that they consist principally of measurements—is so prominent, that the opinion seems

[15] E. B. Wilson and G. N. Lewis, Proc. Am. Acad. of Arts and Sci., 48, 389, 1912.

to have gotten abroad that in a few years all the great physical constants will have been approximately estimated, and that the only occupation which will then be left to men of science will be to carry on these measurements to another place of decimals." That he himself did not entertain this view is made evident by a succeeding paragraph. "But we have no right to think thus of the unsearchable riches of creation, or of the untried fertility of those fresh minds into which these riches will continue to be poured. It may possibly be true that, in some of those fields of discovery which lie open to such rough observations as can be made without artificial methods, the great explorers of former times have appropriated most of what is valuable, and that the gleanings which remain are sought after rather for their abstruseness than for their intrinsic worth. But the history of science shows that even during that phase of her progress in which she devotes herself to improving the accuracy of the numerical measurement of quantities with which she has long been familiar, she is preparing the materials for the subjugation of new regions, which would have remained unknown if she had been contented with the rough methods of her early pioneers. . . ."

That Maxwell's forecast of the prospects of his science was no overestimate will be granted by those who have followed the progress of physics during the last twenty years. Yet the work accomplished in the past appears small compared to that which is left to the future. Many of the unsolved problems are matters of fitting together puzzling details, but there is at least one whose solution appears to demand a radical modification in our fundamental physical conceptions. This is the formulation of the laws which govern the motions of electrons and positively charged particles inside the atom.

Black Radiation.—The significance of the problem was first brought to light through the study of black radiation. By a black body is meant one whose distinguishing characteristic is that it emits and absorbs radiation of all frequencies, and black radiation is that which will exist in thermal equilibrium with such a body. The interest of this type of radiation lies in the fact, demonstrated by Kirchhoff, that its nature depends only upon the temperature of the black body with which it is in equilibrium, and on none of this body's physical or chemical characteristics. Thus we may speak of the "temperature" of the radiation itself, meaning by this the temperature of the material body with which it would be in equilibrium.

The problem of black radiation is to find the distribution of energy among the waves of different frequencies at any given temperature. The first step toward a solution was made when Stefan showed experimentally, and Boltzmann as a deduction from thermodynamics and electrodynamics, that the total energy density summed up over all wave lengths varies with the fourth power of the absolute temperature. If the energy density is plotted as ordinate against the wave length as abscissa, the experimental curve for any one temperature rises from the axis of abscissas at the origin, reaches a maximum, and falls to zero again as the wave length becomes infinitely great. Now Wien's displacement law, the second important step toward the determination of the form of this curve, shows that as the temperature is raised the wave length to which its highest point corresponds becomes shorter,—in fact this particular wave length varies inversely with the absolute temperature. This theoretical conclusion is entirely confirmed by experiment. (J. W. Draper, **4**, 388, 1847.)

Farther than this general thermodynamical principles are unable to go. Statistical mechanics, however, asserts that when a large number of like elements are in thermal equilibrium, the average kinetic energy associated with each degree of freedom is equal to a universal constant multiplied by the absolute temperature. This "principle of equi-partition of energy" has been applied in various ways to obtain a radiation law. The most straightforward method is based on the equilibrium which must ensue between radiation field and material oscillators when the latter emit, on the average, as much energy as they absorb. From whatever aspect the problem is treated, however, the radiation law obtained from the application of the equi-partition principle is the same. And while this law agrees well with the experimental curve for long wave lengths, it shows an energy density that becomes indefinitely great for extremely short waves, which is not only at variance with the facts, but actually leads to an *infinite* value of this quantity when integrated over the entire spectrum.

The Energy Quantum.—Now the principle of equipartition of energy rests securely on most general dynamical principles. That these dynamical laws are *inexact* to any such extent as the divergence between theory and experiment would indicate, is inconceivable; that they are *insufficient* when applied to motions of electrons in such intense fields as occur within the atom seems no longer open to doubt. In order to obtain a radiation formula in accord with experiment Planck has found it necessary to extend the atomic idea to energy, which he conceives to exist in multiples of a fundamental quantum $h\nu$, ν being the frequency and h Planck's constant. That some such hypothesis of discontinuity is essential in order to obtain any law that will even approximately fit the experimental facts has been proved by Poincaré. But the precise spot at which the quantum is introduced differs for every new derivation of Planck's law. As deduced most recently by Planck himself, the quantum shows itself in connection with the emission of energy by the material oscillators with which the radiation field is in equilibrium. These oscillators are supposed to act quite normally in every respect except emission; here the radiation demanded by the electrodynamic equations is cast aside, and an oscillator is supposed to emit at once all its energy after it has accumulated an amount equal to some integral multiple of $h\nu$. A form of the theory which does not contain this improbable contradiction of the firmly established facts of electrodynamics introduces the quantum into the specification of the energy of vibration which is permitted to each oscillator. Here both emission and absorption follow the classical theory, but the motion of an emitting and absorbing linear oscillator of frequency ν is supposed to be stable only for those amplitudes for which the energy of its oscillations is an integral multiple of $h\nu$. In order to maintain the energy at these particular values, the oscillator may draw energy from, or deposit surplus energy with, other degrees of freedom which partake neither in emission nor absorption, but act merely as storehouses.

Photo-electric Effect.—When investigating the production of electromagnetic waves, Hertz had noticed that a spark passed more readily between the terminals of his oscillator when the negative electrode was illuminated by light from another spark. Further investigation by Hallwachs, Elster and Geitel, and others showed that this effect was due to the emission of electrons by a metal exposed to the influence of ultra-violet light. Lenard discovered that the energy with which a negatively charged particle is ejected is entirely independent of the intensity of the light, and further investigation showed it to depend only on the frequency. Einstein suggested that the electrons appearing in this so-called photo-electric effect start from within the metal with an initial energy $h\nu$. In passing through the surface a resistance is encountered, however, so he concluded that the energy with which the fastest moving electrons appear outside the metal should be equal to $h\nu$ less the work done in overcoming this resistance. Recent experiments not only confirm this relation, but provide a most satisfactory method of determining the value of h. Millikan[16] finds it to be $6{\cdot}57(10)^{-27}$ ergs sec., which gives the quantum for yellow light a value sixty times as great as the heat energy of a monatomic gas molecule at 0°C. That this large amount of energy can be transferred from the incident light to the ejected electron is quite out of the question; it must come from within the atom. In this way some indication is obtained of how vast intra-atomic energies must be.

Structure of the Atom.—The generally accepted model of the atom is that due chiefly to Rutherford.[17] He considers it to be constituted of electrons revolving about a positive nucleus either singly or grouped in concentric rings, in much the same manner as the planets revolve around the sun. Experiments on the scattering of alpha rays, however, show that the nucleus, while it must have a positive charge sufficient to neutralize the charges of all the electrons moving around it, cannot have a volume of an order of magnitude greater than that of the electron. The number of unit charges residing on it, except in the case of hydrogen, which is supposed to consist of a singly charged nucleus and only one electron, is found to be approximately half the atomic weight. Thus helium, with an atomic weight of about four, has a doubly charged nucleus with two electrons revolving about it, and lithium a triply charged nucleus and three electrons. The number of unit charges on the nucleus is supposed to correspond with the atomic number used by Moseley in interpreting the results of his experiment on the X-ray spectra of the elements.

Now the electron which is revolving around the posi-

[16] R. A. Millikan, Phys. Rev., 7, 355, 1916.
[17] E. Rutherford, Phil. Mag., 21, 669, 1911.

tive nucleus of a hydrogen atom, must, according to electrodynamic laws, radiate energy. This radiation will act as a resistance to its motion, causing its orbit to become smaller and its frequency to increase. Hence luminous hydrogen would be expected to give off a continuous spectrum. The very fine lines actually found seem inexplicable on the classical dynamical and electrodynamical theories. These lines, and those of many other spectra, may even be grouped into series, and the relations between them expressed in mathematical form. Formulæ have been proposed by Balmer, Rydberg, Ritz and others, all of which contain a universal constant N as well as certain parameters which must be varied by unity in passing from one line of a series to the next.

In 1913 Bohr[18] proposed an atomic theory which brings to light a remarkable numerical relationship between this quantity N and Planck's constant h. He postulated that the electron in the hydrogen atom, for instance, cannot revolve in a circle of any arbitrary radius, but is confined to those orbits for which its kinetic energy is an integral multiple of $\frac{1}{2}\,h\,n$, n being its orbital frequency. Now at times this electron is supposed to jump from an outer to an inner orbit, when the excess energy of the first orbit over the second is radiated away. But the energy emitted is also taken to be equal to $h\nu$, where ν is the frequency of the radiation. Hence ν can be determined, and the expression obtained for it is exactly that given long before by Balmer as an empirical law. The most remarkable thing about it, however, is that Bohr's result contains a constant involving h and the electronic charge and mass which has precisely the value of the universal constant N of Balmer's and Rydberg's formulæ. In all, the theory accounts for three series of hydrogen, and yields satisfactory results for helium atoms which have lost an electron, or lithium atoms which have a double positive charge. But for atoms which retain more than a single electron it seems no longer to hold.

The three mentioned are only the most clearly defined of a growing group of phenomena in which the quantum manifests itself. Its significance and the alteration in our fundamental conceptions to which it seems to be leading is for the future to make clear. That it presents the most important and interesting problem as yet unsolved few physicists would deny.

[18] N. Bohr, Phil. Mag., 26, 1, 1913 *et seq.*

American Physicists.—In attempting to cover the progress of physics during the last hundred years in the space of a few pages, many important developments of the subject have of necessity remained untouched, and the treatment of many others has been entirely inadequate. Among those appearing in this Journal of which no mention has been made are LeConte's (**25**, 62, 1858) discovery of the sensitive flame and Rood's (**46**, 173, 1893) invention of the flicker photometer. However, enough has been recounted to indicate the pre-eminent position in the history of physics in America occupied by four men: Joseph Henry, of the Albany Academy, Princeton, and the Smithsonian Institution; Henry Augustus Rowland, of Johns Hopkins University; Josiah Willard Gibbs, of Yale; and Albert Abraham Michelson, of the United States Naval Academy, Case School of Applied Science, Clark University, and the University of Chicago. Of these, the last named has the distinction of being the only American physicist to have received the Nobel prize, though there is little doubt that the other three would have been similarly honored had not their important work been published prior to the institution of this award. All four occupy high places in the ranks of the world's great men of science, and the investigations carried out by them and their fellow workers in America have given to their country a position in the annals of physics which is by no means insignificant.

The Journal's Part in Meteorology.

The meteorological investigations published in the early numbers of this Journal have played an important role in establishing a correct theory of storms. Before the origin of the United States Signal Service in 1871 no systematic weather reports were issued by any governmental agency in this country, and consequently the work of collecting as well as interpreting meteorological data rested entirely in the hands of interested individuals and institutions. The earliest important studies of storms to appear in the Journal were contributed by Redfield of New York, whose first paper (**20**, 17, 1831) treated in considerable detail a violent storm which passed over Long Island, Connecticut and Massachusetts in 1821. He concluded that "the direction of the wind at a particular place, forms no part of the essential character of a storm, but is only incidental to that particular portion

. . . of the track of the storm which may chance to become the point of observation, . . . the direction of the wind being, in all cases, compounded of both the rotative and progressive velocities of the storm." A few years later, analyses of twelve "gales and hurricanes of the Western Atlantic" (**31**, 115, 1837) led to the statement that the phenomena involved "are to be ascribed mainly to the mechanical gravitation of the atmosphere, as connected with the rotative and orbital movements of the earth's surface." In this paper is emphasized the fact that the wind may blow in diametrically opposite directions at points near the storm center. "While one vessel has been lying-to in a heavy gale of wind, another, not more than thirty leagues distant, has at the very same time been in another gale equally heavy, and lying-to with the wind in quite an opposite direction." From an accompanying sketch showing wind directions, the reader would infer that, at this time, Redfield believed the motion of the air to be very nearly in circles about the storm center. The same idea is conveyed by a later paper (**42**, 112, 1842). Espy (**39**, 120, 1840) of Philadelphia, however, claimed that observation showed rather that the wind blew inwards toward a central point, if the storm were round in shape, or toward a central line, if it were oblong. This view Redfield (**42**, 112, 1842) contested, and brought forth much evidence to prove its falsity. A later statement (**1**, 1, 1846) of his own theory is as follows: "I have never been able to conceive, that the wind in violent storms moves only in *circles*. On the contrary, a vortical movement . . . appears to be an essential element of their violent and long continued action, of their increased energy towards the center or axis, and of the accompanying rain. . . . The *degree* of vorticular inclination in violent storms must be subject, locally, to great variations; but it is not probable that, on an average of the different sides, it ever comes near to forty-five degrees from the tangent of a circle,—and that such average inclination ever exceeds two points of the compass, may well be doubted." A qualitative explanation of the effect of the earth's rotation on the direction of the wind near the storm center had already been given by Tracy (**45**, 65, 1843), and this was followed some years later by Ferrel's (**31**, 27, 1861) very thorough quantitative investigation of the dynamics of the atmosphere.

A number of individuals kept systematic records of meteorological observations, among whom was Loomis, whose storm analyses did much to settle the merits of the rival theories of Redfield and Espy. In studying the storm of 1836 (**40**, 34, 1841) he had drawn on the map lines through those points in the track of the storm where the barometer, at any given hour, is lowest. While this method revealed the general direction in which the storm was progressing, it failed to give much indication of its size or shape. In discussing the two tornadoes of February, 1842, one of which had already been described in this Journal (**43**, 278, 1842), he adopted a new and more illuminating graphical method. Instead of connecting points of lowest pressure, he drew a curve through all points where the barometer stood at its normal level, then one through those points at which the pressure was 2/10 of an inch below normal, and so on. Temperature he treated in much the same way, and the strength and direction of the wind were indicated by arrows. This innovation gave to his storm analyses a significance which had been entirely lacking in those of his predecessors, and led to the familiar systems of isobars and isotherms in use on the daily charts issued by the Weather Bureau at the present time. Loomis advocated careful observations for one year at stations 50 miles apart all over the United States, so that sufficient data might be obtained to settle once for all the law of storms. His efforts, seconded by those of Henry, Bache, Pierce, Abbe, and Lapham, led eventually to the establishment of the Signal Service, and the publication of daily weather maps according to the plan advocated thirty years before. These maps afforded a basis for further analyses of storms, which he published in numerous "Contributions to Meteorology" (**8**, 1, 1874, *et seq.*) between 1874 and his death in 1890.

In addition to his work on storms, Loomis made a careful study of the earth's magnetism (**34**, 290, 1838 *et seq.*), and of the aurora borealis (**28**, 385, 1859 *et seq.*). That a connection existed between sunspots, aurora, and terrestrial magnetism was already recognized. Loomis (**50**, 153, 1870 *et seq.*), however, showed that the periodicity of the aurora borealis, as well as of excessive disturbances in the earth's magnetic field, corresponds very closely with that of sunspots.

ART. XI.—*A Century of Zoology in America;* by WESLEY R. COE.

This article is intended as a brief survey of the development of zoology in America, and no attempt is made to give a general history of the science. There are numerous accounts in several languages of zoological history in general, among them being W. A. Locy's "Biology and its Makers." Brief outlines of the history of zoology may be found in many zoological and biological text-books.

For the history of American zoology the reader is referred to Packard's report on "A Century's Progress in American Zoölogy," published in the American Naturalist, (**10**, 591, 1876), to Packard's "History of Zoology," published in volume **1** of the Standard Natural History (pp. lxii to lxxii, 1885); to G. B. Goode's "Beginnings of Natural History in America,"[1] and "Beginnings of American Science,"[2] and to H. S. Pratt's Manual of the Common Invertebrate Animals (pp. 1-9), 1916. In Binney's "Terrestrial Air-breathing Mollusks of the United States" (1851) is a chapter on the rise of scientific zoology in the United States which well describes the zoological conditions in the early part of the century, while numerous monographs and papers give the history of the investigations on the various groups of animals or on special fields of study.

Brief biographical sketches of the most distinguished of our older Naturalists—Wilson, Audubon, Agassiz, Wyman, Gray, Dana, Baird, Marsh, Cope, Goode and Brooks are given in "Leading American Men of Science," edited by David Starr Jordan, 1910.

The developmental history of zoology in America falls naturally into four fairly well marked periods, namely:—1, *Period of descriptive natural history,* previous to 1847, embracing the early studies on the classification and habits of animals, characteristic of the zoological work previous to the arrival of Louis Agassiz in America. 2, *Period of morphology and embryology,* 1847-1870, during which the influence of Agassiz directed the

[1] Proc. Biol. Soc. Washington, 3, 35, 1886.

[2] Ibid, 4, 9, 1888. Both of these papers are reprinted in Ann. Rept. Smithsonian Inst., 1897, U. S. Nat. Mus., Pt. 2, pp. 357-466, 1901.

zoological studies toward problems concerning the relationships of animals as indicated by their structure and developmental history. 3, *Period of evolution,* 1870-1890, when the principle of natural selection received general recognition and the zoological studies were largely devoted to the applications of the theory to all groups of animals. 4, *Period of experimental biology,* since 1890, during which time have occurred the remarkable advances in our knowledge of the nature of organisms through the application of experimental methods in the various branches of the modern science of biology.

American Zoology in 1818.

At the beginning of the century which this volume commemorates, the accumulated biological knowledge of the world consisted mainly of what is to-day called descriptive natural history. The zoological treatises of the time were devoted to the names, distinguishing characters and habits of the species of animals and plants known to the naturalists of Europe either as native species or as the results of explorations in other parts of the world. This required little more than a superficial knowledge of their general anatomical structures.

The naturalists of those days had no conception of the life within the cell which we now know to form the basis of all the activities of animals and plants, nor had they even the necessary means of studying such life. The compound microscope, so necessary for the study of even the largest of the cells of the body, was not adapted to such use until 1835, although the instrument was invented in the 17th century. With the perfection of the microscope came a period of enthusiastic study of microscopic organisms and microscopic structures of higher animals and plants. It was not until twenty years after the founding of this Journal that the cell theory of structure and function in all organisms was established by the discoveries of Schleiden and Schwann.

At the beginning of the century there was great zoological activity in Europe, and particularly in France. Buffon's great work on the Natural History of Animals had recently been completed, Cuvier had only one year before published his classic work in comparative anatomy, "Le Regne Animal," and Lamarck's "Philosophie

Zoologique'' had then aroused a new interest in classification and comparative anatomy from an evolutionary standpoint. É. Geoffroy St.-Hilaire was at the same time supporting an evolutionary theory based on embryonic influences resulting in sudden modifications of adult structure. These epoch-making discoveries and theories gained a considerable following in France, Germany and England, but seem to have had little influence on the zoological work of the following half century in America.

The science of zoology as understood to-day is commonly said to have been founded by Linnæus by the publication of the modern system of classification in the tenth edition of his ''Systema Naturæ'' in 1758. The influence of Linnæus aroused an interest in biological studies throughout Europe and stimulated new investigations in all groups of organisms. Such studies as related to animals naturally followed first the classification and relationship of species, that is, systematic zoology, and then led gradually into the development of the different branches of the subject, as morphology, comparative anatomy, physiology, and embryology, which eventually were recognized as almost independent sciences.

Of these sciences systematic zoology, which has come to mean the classification, structure, relationship, distribution and habits, or natural history, is the pioneer in any region. Thus we find in our new country at the time of the founding of this Journal in 1818, only sixty years after the publication of Linnæus' great work, the beginning of American zoology taking the form of the collection and description of our native animals.

It is true that many of our more conspicuous and easily collected animals were described long before the opening of the 19th century, but this is to be credited mainly to the work of European naturalists who had made expeditions to this country for the purpose of studying and collecting. These collections were then taken to Europe and the results published there. We thus find in the 12th edition of Linnæus descriptions of over 500 American species, about half of which were birds. As an illustration of the extent to which some of these works covered the field even in those early days may be mentioned a monograph in two quarto volumes with many beautifully colored plates on the ''Natural History of the rarer Lepidopterous Insects" of Georgia. This was published in London in 1797 by J. E. Smith from the notes and drawings of John Abbot, one of the keenest naturalists of any period.

During the early years of the 19th century, however, economic conditions in our country became such as to give opportunity for scientific thought. Educated men then formed themselves into societies for the discussion of scientific matters. This naturally led to the establishment of publications whereby the papers presented to the societies could be published and made available to the advancement of science generally. The most influential of these was the Journal of the Philadelphia Academy of Natural Science, which was established in 1817, and was devoted largely to zoological papers. The Annals of the New York Lyceum of Natural History date from 1823, and the Journal of the Boston Society of Natural History from 1834. The Transactions of the American Philosophical Society in Philadelphia and the Memoirs of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences in Boston also published many zoological articles.

In these publications and in this Journal, which was founded in 1818, appear the descriptions of newly discovered animal species, with observations on their habits.

The number of investigators in this field in the first quarter of the 19th century was but few, and most of these were compelled to take for the work such time as they could spare from their various occupations.

Gradually the workers became more numerous until about the middle of the century zoology was taught in all the larger colleges. The science thereby developed into a profession.

For some years the studies remained largely of a systematic nature, and embraced all groups of animals, but long before the close of the century the attention of the majority of the ever increasing group of zoologists was directed into more promising channels for research and there came the development of the sciences of comparative anatomy, physiology, embryology, experimental zoology, cytology, genetics, and the like, while the systematists became specialists in the various animal groups.

But the work in systematic zoology remains incomplete and many native species are still undescribed or imperfectly classified. It is perhaps fortunate that a few faithful systematists remain at their tasks and tend to keep the experimentalists from the disaster which might well result from the unwitting confusion of their species.

Period of Descriptive Natural History.—Previous to 1847.

Of the few American naturalists whose writings were published toward the end of the eighteenth century and at the beginning of the nineteenth the names of William Bartram (1739-1823), Benjamin Barton (1766-1815), Samuel Mitchill (1764-1831), William Peck (1763-1832), and Thomas Jefferson (1743-1826), require special mention. Bartram's entertaining volume describing his travels through the Carolinas, Georgia and Florida, published in 1793, contains a most interesting account of the birds and other animals which he found.

Barton wrote many charming essays on the natural history of animals, but was more particularly interested in botany. Mitchill's most important works include a history of the fishes of New York (1814), and additions to an edition of Bewick's General History of Quadrupeds. The latter, published in 1804, contains descriptions and figures of some American species and is the first American work on mammals.

Peck has the distinction of writing the first paper on systematic zoology published in America. This was a paper on new species of fishes and was printed in 1794. He is also well known for his work on insects and fungi.

Jefferson in 1781 published an interesting book describing the natural history of Virginia, and during his presidency was of inestimable service to zoology through his support of scientific expeditions to the western portions of the country.

Previous to Agassiz's introduction of laboratory methods of study in comparative anatomy and embryology in 1847, American naturalists generally confined their attention to the study of the classification and habits of the multitude of undescribed animals and plants of the region.

Such studies were naturally begun on the larger and more generally interesting animals such as the birds and mammals, and although many of these were fairly well described as to species before the opening of the 19th century, little was known of their habits. The natural history of our eastern birds first became well known through the accurate illustrations and exquisitely written descriptions of Alexander Wilson (in 1808-1813). Bonaparte's continuation of Wilson's work was published in four folio volumes beginning in 1826.

In 1828 appeared the first of Audubon's magnificent folio illustrations of our birds. These were published in England, with later editions of smaller plates in America. Nuttall's Manual of the Ornithology of the United States appeared in 1832-1834.

The second work on American mammals appeared in the second American edition of Guthrie's Geography, published in 1815. The author is supposed to have been George Ord, although his name does not appear. In 1825 Harlan published his "Fauna Americana: Descriptions of the Mammiferous Animals inhabiting North America." This was largely a compilation from European writers, particularly from Demarest's Mammalogie, and had little value.

In 1826 Amos Eaton published a small "Zoological Text-book comprising Cuvier's four grand divisions of Animals: also Shaw's improved Linnean genera, arranged according to the classes and orders of Cuvier and Latreille. Short descriptions of some of the most common species are given for students' exercises. Prepared for Rensselaer school and the popular class-room." "Four hundred and sixty-one genera are described in this text-book. They embrace every known species of the Animal Kingdom." This is a compilation from European sources with a few American species of various groups included. On the other hand, Godman's Natural History, in three volumes (1826-1828), was an illustrated and creditable work. Such was also the case with Sir John Richardson's Fauna Boreali Americana of which the volume on quadrupeds was published in England in 1829. The other volumes on birds, fishes and insects appeared between 1827 and 1836. Audubon and Bachman's beautifully illustrated "Quadrupeds of North America" was issued between 1841 and 1850.

About 1840 several of the states inaugurated natural history surveys and published catalogues of the local faunas. The reports on the animals of Massachusetts and New York are the most complete zoological monographs published in America up to that time. This is particularly true of DeKay's Natural History of New

York published between 1842 and 1844 in beautifully illustrated quarto volumes.

The leader in the systematic studies in the early part of the century was Thomas Say, who published descriptions of a large number of new species of animals, particularly reptiles, mollusks, crustacea and insects. Say's conchology, printed in 1816 in Nicholson's Cyclopedia, is the first American work of its kind. This was reprinted in 1819 under the title "Land and Fresh-water Shells of the United States." In 1824-1828 appeared the three volumes of Say's American Entomology.

The prominent position held by Say in the zoological work of this period is illustrated by the following paragraph from Eaton's Zoological Text-book (1826, p. 133). "At present but a small proportion of American Animals, excepting those of large size, have been sought out . . . And though Mr. Say is doing much; without assistance, his life must be protracted to a very advanced period to afford him time to complete the work. But if every student will contribute his mite, by sending Mr. Say duplicates of all undescribed species, we shall probably be in possession of a system, very nearly complete, in a few years." How different is the attitude of the zoologist of to-day who sees the goal much further away after a century's progress through the industry of hundreds of investigators.

During the period of Say's most active work he is reported to have "slept in the hall of the Philadelphia Academy of Natural Sciences, where he made his bed beneath the skeleton of a horse and fed himself on bread and milk."

Next to Say, the most active zoologist of the early part of the century was Charles Alexander Lesueur, who described and beautifully illustrated many new species of fishes, reptiles, and marine invertebrates. A memoir by George Ord, published in this Journal (**8**, 189, 1849), gives a full list of Lesueur's papers.

One of the most prolific writers of the period was Constantine Rafinesque, a man of great brilliancy but one whose imagination so often dominated his observations that many of his descriptions of plants and animals are wholly unreliable.

United States Exploring Expedition.—In 1838 a fortunate circumstance occurred which eventually brought

American systematic zoology into the front ranks of the science. This opportunity was offered by the United States Exploring Expedition under the command of Admiral Wilkes. With James D. Dana as naturalist, the expedition visited Madeira, Cape Verde Islands, eastern and western coasts of South America, Polynesia, Samoa, Australia, New Zealand, Fiji, Hawaiian Islands, west coast of United States, Philippines, Singapore, Cape of Good Hope, etc.

Of the extensive collections made on this four-years' cruise, Dana had devoted particular attention to the study of the corals and allied animals (Zoophytes) and to the crustacea. In 1846 the report on the Zoophytes was published in elegant folio form with colored plates. Six years later the first volume of the report on Crustacea appeared, with a second volume after two additional years (1854). These reports describe and beautifully illustrate hundreds of new species, and include the first comprehensive studies of the animals forming well-known corals. They remain as the most conspicuous monuments in American invertebrate zoology. Unfortunately the very limited edition makes them accessible in only a few large libraries. The other, equally magnificent, volumes include: Mollusca and Shells, by A. A. Gould, 1856; Herpetology, by Charles Girard, 1858; Mammalogy and Ornithology, by John Cassin, 1858.

Principal investigators.—Of the many writers on animals at this period of descriptive natural history, the following were prominent in their special fields of study:

Ayres, Lesueur, Mitchill, Storer, Linsley, Wyman, DeKay, Smith, Kirtland, Rafinesque and Haldeman described the fishes.

Green, Barton, Harlan, Le Conte, Say, and especially Holbrook, studied the reptiles and amphibia. Holbrook's great monograph of the reptiles (North American Herpetology) was published between 1834 and 1845.

Wilson, Audubon, Nuttall, Cooper, DeKay, Brewer, Ord, Baird, Gould, Bachman, Linsley and Fox, were among the numerous writers on birds.

Godman, Ord, Richardson, Audubon, Bachman, DeKay, Linsley and Harlan, published accounts of mammals.

On the invertebrates an important general work entitled "Invertebrata of Massachusetts; Mollusca, Crustacea, Annelida and Radiata" was published by A. A. Gould in 1841, which contains all the New England species of these groups known to that date.

Lea, Totten, Adams, Barnes, Gould, Binney, Conrad, Hildreth, Haldeman, were the principal writers on mollusks. The crustacea were studied by Say, Gould, Haldeman, Dana; the insects by Say, Melsheimer, Peck, Harris, Kirby, Herrick; the spiders by Hentz; the worms by Lee; the coelenterates and echinoderms by Say, Mantell and others.

The history of entomology in the United States previous to 1846 is given by John G. Morris in this Journal (**1**, 17, 1846). In this article F. V. Melsheimer is stated to be the father of American Entomology, while Say was the most prolific writer. Say's entomological papers, edited by J. L. Le Conte, were completely reprinted with their colored illustrations in 1859. The first economic treatise is that by Harris on Insects injurious to Vegetation, printed in 1841. This has had many editions. The Entomological Society of Pennsylvania was formed in 1842.

The establishment of this Journal gave a further impetus to the scientific activities of Americans in furnishing a convenient means for publishing the results of their work. In the first volume of the Journal, for example, are two zoological articles by Say and a dozen short articles on various topics by Rafinesque, the latter being curious combinations of facts and fancy. Most of the zoological papers appearing in its first series of 50 volumes are characteristic of an undeveloped science in an undeveloped country. They deal, naturally, with observational studies on the structure and classification of species discovered in a virgin field, with notes on habits and life histories.

Many of the papers are purely systematic and include the first descriptions of numerous species of our mollusks, crustacea, insects, vertebrates and other groups. Of these, the writings of C. B. Adams, Barnes, A. A. Gould and Totten on mollusks, of J. D. Dana on corals and crustacea, of Harris on insects, of Harlan on reptiles, and of Jeffries Wyman and D. Humphreys Storer on fishes are representative and important.

The progress of zoology in America during the first twenty-eight years of the Journal's existence, that is, up to the year 1846, is thus summarized by Professor Silliman in the preface to vol. 50 (page ix), 1847:

"Our zoology has been more fully investigated than our mineralogy and botany; but neither department is in danger of being exhausted. The interesting travels of Lewis and Clark have recently brought to our knowledge several plants and animals before unknown. Foreign naturalists are frequently visiting our territory; and, for the most part, convey to Europe the fruits of their researches, while but a small part of our own is examined and described by Americans: certainly this is little to our credit and still less to our advantage. Honorable exceptions to the truth of this remark are furnished by the exertions of some gentlemen in our principal cities, and in various other parts of the Union."

During these 28 years the Journal had been of great service to zoology not only in the publication of the results of investigations but also in the review of important zoological publications in Europe as well as in America. There were also the reports of meetings of scientific societies. In fact all matters of zoological interest were brought to the attention of the Journal's readers.

The Influence of Louis Agassiz.

At the time of the founding of this Journal and for nearly thirty years thereafter descriptive natural history constituted practically the entire work of American zoologists. In this respect American science was far behind that in Europe and particularly in France. It was not until the fortunate circumstances which brought the Swiss naturalist, Louis Agassiz, to our country in 1846 that the modern conceptions of biological science were established in America.

Agassiz was then 39 years of age and had already absorbed the spirit of generalization in comparative anatomy which dominated the work of the great leaders in Europe, and particularly in Paris. The influence of Leuckart, Tiedemann, Braun, Cuvier and Von Humboldt directed Agassiz's great ability to similar investigations, and he was rapidly coming into prominence in the study of modern and fossil fishes when the opportunity to continue his research in America was presented. On arriving on our shores the young zoologist was so inspired with the opportunities for his studies in the new country that he decided to remain.

Bringing with him the broad conceptions of his distinguished European masters, he naturally founded a similar school of zoology in America. It is from this beginning that the present science of zoology with its many branches has developed.

It must be remembered in this connection that the great service which Agassiz rendered to American zoology consisted mainly in making available to students in America the ideals and methods of European zoologists. This he was eminently fitted to do both because of his European training and because of his natural ability as an inspiring leader.

The times in America, moreover, were fully ripe for the advent of European culture. There were already in existence natural history societies in many of our cities and college communities. These societies not only held meetings for the discussion of biological topics, but established museums open to the public, and to which the public was invited to contribute both funds and specimens. This led to a wide popular interest in natural history. It was therefore comparatively easy for such a man as Agassiz to develop this favorable public attitude into wide popular enthusiasm.

The American Journal of Science announces the expected visit of Agassiz as a most promising event for American Zoology (**1**, 451, 1846): "His devotion, ability, and zeal—his high and deserved reputation and . . . his amiable and conciliating character, will, without doubt, secure for him the cordial coöperation of our naturalists . . . nor do we entertain a doubt that we shall be liberally repaid by his able review and exploration of our country." We of to-day can realize how abundantly this prophecy was fulfilled.

In the succeeding volume (**2**, 440, 1846) occurs the record of Agassiz's arrival. "We learn with pleasure that he will spend several years among us, in order thoroughly to understand our natural history."

Immediately on reaching Boston, Agassiz began the publication of articles on our fauna, and the following year he was appointed to a professorship at Harvard. The Journal says (**4**, 449, 1847): "Every scientific man in America will be rejoiced to hear so unexpected a piece of good news." The next year the Journal (**5**, 139, 1848) records Agassiz's lecture courses at New York and Charleston, his popularity with all classes of the people and the gift of a silver case containing $250 in half eagles from the students of the College of Physicians and Surgeons.

The service of Agassiz to American zoology, therefore, consisted not only in the publication of the results of his researches and his philosophical considerations therefrom, but also, and perhaps in even greater degree, in the popularization of science. In the latter direction were his inspiring lectures before popular audiences and the early publication of a zoological text-book. This book, published in 1848, was entitled "Principles of Zoology, touching the Structure, Development, Distribution and Natural arrangement of the races of Animals, living and extinct, with numerous illustrations." It was written with the coöperation of Augustus A. Gould. The review of this book in the Journal (**6**, 151, 1848) indicates clearly the broad modern principles underlying the new era which was beginning for American zoology.

"A work emanating from so high a source as the Principles of Zoology, hardly requires commendation to give it currency. The public have become acquainted with the eminent abilities of Prof. Agassiz through his lectures, and are aware of his vast learning, wide reach of mind, and popular mode of illustrating scientific subjects . . . The volume is prepared for the student in zoological science; it is simple and elementary in style, full in its illustrations, comprehensive in its range, yet well considered and brought into the narrow compass requisite for the purpose intended."

The titles of its chapters will show how little it differs in general subject matter from the most recent text-book in biology. Chapter I, The Sphere and fundamental principles of Zoology; II, General Properties of Organized Bodies; III, Organs and Functions of Animal Life; IV, Of Intelligence and Instinct; V, Of Motion (apparatus and modes); VI, Of Nutrition; VII, Of the Blood and Circulation; VIII, Of Respiration; IX, Of the Secretions; X, Embryology (Egg and its Development); XI, Peculiar Modes of Reproduction; XII, Metamorphoses of Animals; XIII, Geographical Distribution of Animals; XIV, Geological Succession of Animals, or their Distribution in Time.

A moment's consideration of the fact that all these topics are excellently treated will show how great had been the progress of zoology in the first half of the 19th century. The sixty years that have elapsed since the publication of this book have served principally to develop these separate lines of biology into special fields of science without reorganization of the essential principles here recognized. This remained for many years the standard zoological and physiological text-book, and was republished in several editions here and in England. Another popular book is entitled "Methods of Study in Natural History" (1864).

More than 400 books and papers were written by Agassiz, over a third of which were published before he came to America. They cover both zoological and geological topics, including systematic papers on living and fossil groups of animals, but most important of all are his philosophical essays on the general principles of biology.

One of Agassiz's greatest services to zoology was the publication of his "Bibliographia Zoologiæ et Geologiæ" by the Ray Society, beginning with 1848. The publication of the Lowell lectures in Comparative Embryology in 1849 gave wide audience to the general principles now recognized in the biogenetic law of ancestral reminiscence. As stated in the Journal (**8**, 157, 1849), the "object of the Lectures is to demonstrate that a natural method of classifying the animal kingdom may be attained by a comparison of the changes which are passed through by different animals in the course of their development from the egg to the perfect state; the change they undergo being considered as a scale to appreciate the relative position of the species." These "principles of classification" are fully elucidated in a separate pamphlet, and are discussed at length in the Journal (**11**, 122, 1851).

One of the most interesting of Agassiz's numerous philosophical essays, originally contributed to the Journal (**9**, 369, 1850), discusses the "Natural Relations between Animals and the elements in which they live." Another philosophical paper contributed to the Journal discusses the "Primitive diversity and number of Animals in Geological times" (**17**, 309, 1854). Of this systematic papers, those on the fishes of the Tennessee river, describing many new species, were published in the Journal (**17**, 297, 353, 1854).

Agassiz's beautifully illustrated "Contributions to the Natural History of the United States" cover many subjects in morphology and embryology, which are treated with such thoroughness and breadth of view as to give them a place among the zoological classics. The Essay on Classification, the North American Testudinata, the Embryology of the turtle, and the Acalephs are the special topics. These are summarized and discussed at length in the Journal (**25**, 126, 202, 321, 342, 1858; **30**, 142, 1860; **31**, 295, 1861).

The volume on the "Journey in Brazil" (1868) in joint authorship with Mrs. Agassiz is a fascinating narrative of exploration.

The conceptions which Agassiz held as to the most essential aim of zoological study are well illustrated in his autobiographical sketch, where he writes:[3]

> "I did not then know how much more important it is to the naturalist to understand the structure of a few animals, than to command the whole field of scientific nomenclature. Since I have become a teacher, and have watched the progress of students, I have seen that they all begin in the same way; but how many have grown old in the pursuit, without ever rising to any higher conception of the study of nature, spending their life in the determination of species, and in extending scientific terminology!"

It is not surprising, then, that under such influence the older systematic studies should be replaced in large measure by those of a morphological and embryological nature.

The personal influence of Agassiz is still felt in the lives of even the younger zoologists of the present day. For the investigators of the present generation are for the most part indebted to one or another of Agassiz's pupils for their guidance in zoological studies. These pupils include his son Alexander Agassiz, Allen, Brooks, Clarke, Fewkes, Goode, Hyatt, Jordan, Lyman, Morse, Packard, Scudder, Verrill, Wilder, and others—leaders in zoological work during the last third of the nineteenth century. Through such men as these the inspiration of

[3] Louis Agassiz: his Life and Correspondence, by Elizabeth Carey Agassiz, p. 145, 1885.

Agassiz has been handed on in turn to their pupils and from them to the younger generation of zoologists.

The essential difference between the work of Agassiz and that of the American zoologists who preceded him was in his power of broad generalizations. To him the organism meant a living witness of some great natural law, in the interpretation of which zoology was engaged. The organism in its structure, in its development, in its habits furnished links in the chain of evidence which, when completed, would reveal the meaning of nature. Of all Agassiz's pupils, probably William K. Brooks most fittingly perpetuated his master's ideals.

Period of Morphology and Embryology. 1847-1870.

The new aspect of zoology which came as a result of the influence of Agassiz characterized the zoological work of the fifties and sixties, that is, until the significance of the natural selection theory of Darwin and Wallace became generally appreciated.

The work in these years and well into the seventies was largely influenced by the morphological, embryological and systematic studies of Louis Agassiz and his school. The structure, development, and homologies of animals as indicating their relationship and position in the scheme of classification was prominent in the work of this period. The adaptations of animals to their environment and the application of the biogenetic law to the various groups of animals were also favorite subjects of study.

The most successful investigators in this period on the different groups of animals include:—Louis Agassiz on the natural history and embryology of coelenterates and turtles; A. Agassiz, embryology of echinoderms and worms; H. J. Clark, embryology of turtles and systematic papers on sponges and coelenterates; E. Desor, echinoderms and embryology of worms; C. Girard, embryology, worms, and reptiles; J. Leidy, protozoa, coelenterates, worms, anatomy of mollusks; W. O. Ayres and T. Lyman, natural history of echinoderms; McCrady development of acalephs; W. Stimpson, marine invertebrates; A. E. Verrill, coelenterates, echinoderms, worms; A. Hyatt, evolutionary theories. bryozoa and mollusks; Pourtales, deep sea fauna; C. B. Adams, A. and W. G. Binney, Brooks, Carpenter, Conrad, Dall, Jay, Lea,

S. Smith, Tryon, mollusks; E. S. Morse, brachiopods, mollusks; J. D. Dana, coelenterates and crustacea; Kirtland, Loew, Edwards, Hagen, Melsheimer, Packard, Riley, Scudder, Walsh, insects; Gill, Holbrook, Storer, fishes; Cope, evolutionary theories, fishes and amphibia; Baird, reptiles and birds; J. A. Allen, amphibia, reptiles and birds; Brewer, Cassin, Coues, Lawrence, birds; Audubon, Bachman, Baird, Cope, Wilder, mammals.

The progress of ornithology in the United States previous to 1876 is well described in a paper by J. A. Allen in the American Naturalist (**10**, 536, 1876). A sketch of the early history of conchology is given by A. W. Tryon in the Journal (**33**, 13, 1862).

Jeffries Wyman was the most prominent comparative anatomist of this period. His work includes classic papers on the anatomy and embryology of fishes, amphibia, and reptiles.

The fifty volumes of the second series of this Journal, including the years 1846 to 1870, cover approximately this period of morphology and embryology. During this period the Journal occupied a very important place in zoological circles, for J. D. Dana was for most of this period the editor-in-chief, while Louis Agassiz and Asa Gray were connected with it as associate editors. Moreover, in 1864 one of the most promising of Agassiz's pupils, Addison E. Verrill, was called to Yale as professor of zoology and was made an associate editor in 1869.

In the Journal, therefore, may be found, in its original articles, together with its reports of meetings and addresses and its reviews of literature, a fairly complete account of the zoological activity of the period. The most important zoological researches, both in Europe and America, were reviewed in the bibliographic notices.

The most important series of zoological articles are by Dana himself. As his work on the zoophytes and crustacea of the U. S. Exploring Expedition continued, he published from time to time general summaries of his conclusions regarding the relationships of the various groups. Included among these papers are philosophical essays on general biological principles which must have had much influence on the biological studies of the time, and which form a basis for many of our present concepts.

The importance of these papers warrants the list being given in full. The titles are here in many cases abbreviated and the subjects consolidated.

General views on Classification, **1**, 286, 1846.
Zoophytes, **2**, 64, 187, 1846; **3**, 1, 160, 337, 1847.
Genus Astraea, **9**, 295, 1850.
Conspectus crustaceorum, **8**, 276, 424, 1849; **9**, 129, 1850; **11**, 268, 1851.
Genera of Gammaracea, **8**, 135, 1849; of Cyclopacea, **1**, 225, 1846.
Markings of Carapax of Crabs, **11**, 95, 1851.
Classification of Crustacea, **11**, 223, 425; **12**, 121, 238, 1851; **13**, 119; **14**, 297, 1852; **22**, 14, 1856.
Geographical distribution of Crustacea, **18**, 314, 1854; **19**, 6; **20**, 168, 349, 1855.
Alternation of Generations in Plants and Radiata, **10**, 341, 1850.
Parthenogenesis, **24**, 399, 1857.
On Species, **24**, 305, 1857.
Classification of Mammals, **35**, 65, 1863; **37**, 157, 1864.
Cephalization, **22**, 14, 1856; **36**, 1, 321, 440, 1863; **37**, 10, 157, 184, 1864; **41**, 163, 1866; **12**, 245, 1876.
Homologies of insectean and crustacean types, **36**, 233, 1863; **47**, 325, 1894.
Origin of life, **41**, 389, 1866.
Relations of death to life in nature, **34**, 316, 1862.

Of the above, the articles on cephalization as a fundamental principle in the development of the system of animal life have attracted much attention. The evidence from comparative anatomy, paleontology, and embryology alike supports the view that advance in the ontogenetic as well as in the phylogenetic stages is correlated with the unequal growth of the cephalic region as compared with the rest of the body. Dana shows that this principle holds good for all groups of animals. His homologies of the limbs of arthropods and vertebrates, however, do not accord with more modern views.

Other papers on the same and allied topics were published by Dana in other periodicals. His most conspicuous zoological works, however, are his reports on the Zoophytes and Crustacea of the United States Exploring Expedition, 1837-1842. The former consists of 741 quarto pages and 61 folio plates, describing over 200 new species, while the Crustacea report, in two volumes, has 1620 pages and 96 folio plates, with descriptions of about 500 new species. Each of these remains to-day as the most important contribution to the classification of the respective groups. The relationships of the species, genera and families were recognized with such remarkable judgment that Dana's admirable system of classification has remained the basis for all subsequent work.

Dana's critical reviews (**25**, 202, 321, 1858) of Agassiz's "Contribution to the Natural History of the United States" are among the most interesting of his philosophical discussions concerning the relationships of animals as revealed by their structure, their embryology, and their geological history.

The remaining zoological articles in this series cover nearly the whole range of systematic zoology. Especially important are the articles by Verrill on coelenterates, echinoderms, worms and other invertebrates.

In the years following the publication of Darwin's Origin of Species in 1859 occur many articles on the theory of natural selection. Some of the writers attack the theory, while others give it more or less enthusiastic support.

Experimental methods in solving biological problems were little used at this time, although a few articles of this nature appear in the Journal. Of these, a paper by W. C. Minor (**35**, 35, 1863) on natural and artificial fission in some annelids has considerable interest to-day.

Of the important zoological expeditions the following may be selected as showing their influence on American Zoology:

The North Pacific Expedition, with William Stimpson as zoologist, returned in 1856 with much new information concerning the marine life of the coasts of Alaska and Japan and many new species of invertebrates.

In 1867-1869 the United States Coast Survey extended its explorations to include the deep-sea marine life off the southeastern coasts and Gulf of Mexico under the leadership of Pourtales and Agassiz.

The Challenger explorations (1872-1876) added greatly to the knowledge of marine life off the American coast as well as in other parts of the world.

The explorations of the United States Fish Commission succeeded those of the Coast Survey in the collection of marine life off our coasts and in our fresh waters. These have continued since 1872 and have yielded most important results from both the scientific and economic standpoints.

Under the charge of Alexander Agassiz the Coast Survey Steamer "Blake," in 1877 to 1880, was engaged in dredging operations in three cruises to various parts of the Atlantic. The U. S. Fish Commission Steamer "Albatross," also in charge of Agassiz, made three expeditions in the tropical and other parts of the Pacific in the years from 1891 to 1905. The study of these collections has added greatly to our knowledge of systematic zoology and geographical distribution. The reports on some of the groups are still in course of preparation.

Period of Evolution.

The time from 1870 to 1890 may be appropriately called the period of evolution, for although it commences eleven years after the publication of the Origin of Species, the importance of the natural selection theory was but slowly receiving general recognition. The hesitation in accepting this theory was due in no small degree to the opposition of Louis Agassiz. After the acceptance of evolution, although morphological and embryological studies continued as before, they were prosecuted with reference to their bearing on evolutionary problems.

Following closely the methods which had produced so much progress during the life of Agassiz, the field of zoology was now occupied by a new generation, among whom the pupils of Agassiz were the most prominent.

The teaching of biology at this time was also strongly influenced by Huxley, whose methods of conducting laboratory classes for elementary students were adopted in most of our large schools and colleges. This placed biology on the same plane with chemistry as a means for training in laboratory methods and discipline, with the added advantage that the subject of biology is much more intimately connected with the student's everyday life and affairs.

This increasing demand for instruction in biology and the consequent necessity for more teachers brought an increasing number of investigators into this field. New zoological text-books were also required. The "Standard Natural History," published in 1885, remains the most comprehensive general work on animals.

Conspicuous in this period was the work of E. D. Cope, best known as a paleontologist, but whose work on the classification of the various groups of vertebrates stands preeminent, and whose philosophical essays on evolution had much influence on the evolutionary thought of the time. He was a staunch supporter of the Lamarckian doctrine. Alpheus Hyatt also maintained this theory, and brought together a great accumulation of facts in its support. He thereby contributed largely to our knowledge of comparative anatomy and embryology. A. S. Packard, whose publications cover a wide range of topics, was best known for his text-books of zoology and his manuals on insects.

W. K. Brooks was a leading morphologist and embryologist. S. F. Baird, for many years the head of the United States Fish Commission, was the foremost authority on fish and fisheries and is also noted for his work on reptiles, birds and mammals. The man of greatest influence, although by no means the greatest investigator, was C. O. Whitman. It is to him that we owe the inception of the Marine Biological Laboratory, the most potent influence in American zoology to-day; the organization of the American Morphological Society, the forerunner of the present American Society of Zoologists; and the establishment of the Journal of Morphology. G. B. Goode was distinguished for his work on fishes and for his writings on the history of science.

E. L. Mark, C. S. Minot, and Alexander Agassiz were acknowledged leaders in their special fields of research—Mark in invertebrate morphology and embryology, and Minot in vertebrate embryology, while Alexander Agassiz made many important discoveries in the systematic zoology and embryology of marine animals, and to him we owe in large measure our knowledge of the life in the oceans of nearly all parts of the world.

The knowledge of the representatives of the different divisions of the American fauna had now become sufficient to allow the publication of monographs on the various classes, orders and families. At this time also particular attention was given to the marine invertebrates of all groups.

Of the many investigators working on the various groups of animals at this time only a few may be mentioned. The protozoa were studied by Leidy, Clark, Ryder, Stokes; the sponges by Clark, Hyatt; the coelenterates by A. Agassiz, S. F. Clarke, Verrill; the echinoderms by A. Agassiz, Brooks, Kingsley, Fewkes, Lyman, Verrill; the various groups of worms by Benedict, Eisen, Silliman, Verrill, Webster, Whitman; the mollusks by A. and W. G. Binney, Tryon, Conrad, Dall, Sanderson Smith, Stearns, Verrill; the Brachiopods by Dall and Morse; the Bryozoa by Hyatt; the crustacea by S. I. Smith, Harger, Hagen, Packard, Kingsley, Faxon, Herrick; the insects by Packard, Horn, Scudder, C. H. Fernald, Williston, Norton, Walsh, Fitch, J. B. Smith, Comstock, Howard, Riley and many others; spiders by Emerton, Marx, McCook; tunicates by Packard and Verrill; fishes by Baird, Bean, Cope, Gilbert, Gill, Goode, Jordan, Putnam; amphibians and reptiles by Cope; birds by Baird, Brewer, Coues, Elliott, Henshaw, Allen, Merriam, Brewster, Ridgway; and the mammals by Allen, Baird, Cope, Coues, Elliott, Merriam, Wilder.

Interest in the evolutionary theory continued to increase and eventually developed into the morphological and embryological studies which reached their culmination between 1885 and 1890 under the guidance of Whitman, Mark, Minot, Brooks, Kingsley, E. B. Wilson and other famous zoologists of the time. In these years the Journal of Morphology was established and the American Morphological Society was formed.

The morphological, embryological and paleontological evidences of evolution as indicated by homologies, developmental stages and adaptations were the most absorbing subjects of zoological research and discussion.

The third series of the Journal (1870-1895), likewise including fifty volumes, embraces this period of zoological activity in morphological and embryological studies, culminating with the inception of the modern experimental methods.

In this period also occurred the greatest progress in marine systematic zoology, due to the explorations of the United States Fish Commission off the Atlantic Coast. The Journal had an important share in the zoological development of this period also, for A. E. Verrill, who was now an associate editor, was in charge of the collections of marine invertebrates. Consequently most of the discoveries in this field were published in the Journal in numerous original contributions by Verrill and his associates. The explorations of the U. S. Fish Commission Steamer "Albatross" are described from year to year by Verrill, with descriptions of the new species of invertebrates discovered.

The numerous original contributions by Verrill on subjects of general zoological interest as well as on those of a systematic nature give this third series of the Journal much zoological importance. Verrill's papers cover almost the whole field of descriptive zoology, but are mainly devoted to marine invertebrates. Those which were originally contributed to the Journal or summarized by him in his literature reviews include the following topics:

Sponges, **16**, 406, 1878.

Coelenterates, **37**, 450, 1864; **44**, 125, 1867; **45**, 411, 186, **46**, 143, 1868; **47**, 282, 1869; **48**, 116, 419, 1869; **49**, 370, 1870; **3**, 187, 432, 1872; **6**, 68, 1873; **21**, 508, 1881; **6**, 493, 1898; **7**, 41, 143, 205, 375, 1899; **13**, 75, 1902.

Echinoderms, **44**, 125, 1867; **45**, 417, 1868; **49**, 93, 101, 1870; **2**, 430, 1871; **11**, 416, 1876; **49**, 127, 199, 1895; **28**, 59, 1909; **35**, 477, 1913; **37**, 483, 1914; **38**, 107, 1914; **39**, 684, 1915.

Worms, **50**, 223, 1870; **3**, 126, 1872.

Mollusks, **49**, 217, 1870; **50**, 405, 1870; **3**, 209, 281, 1872; **5**, 465, 1873; **7**, 136, 158, 1874; **9**, 123, 177, 1875; **10**, 213, 1875; **12**, 236, 1876; **14**, 425, 1877; **19**, 284, 1880; **20**, 250, 251, 1880; **2**, 74, 91, 1896; **3**, 51, 79, 162, 355, 1897.

Crustacea, **44**, 126, 1867; **48**, 244, 430, 1869; **25**, 119, 534, 1908.

Ascidians, **1**, 54, 93, 211, 288, 443, 1871; **20**, 251, 1880.

Dredging operations and marine fauna, **49**, 129, 1870; **2**, 357, 1871; **5**, 1, 98, 1873; **6**, 435, 1873; **7**, 38, 131, 405, 409, 498, 608, 1874; **9**, 411, 1875; **10**, 36, 196, 1875; **16**, 207, 371, 1878; **17**, 239, 258, 309, 472, 1879; **18**, 52, 468, 1879; **19**, 137, 187, **20**, 390, 1880; **22**, 292, 1881; **23**, 135, 216, 309, 406, 1882; **24**, 360, 477, 1882; **28**, 213, 378, 1884; **29**, 149, 1885.

Miscellaneous, **39**, 221, 1865; **41**, 249, 268, 1866; **44**, 126, 1867; **48**, 92, 1869; **3**, 386, 1872; **7**, 134, 1847; **10**, 364, 1875; **16**, 323, 1878; **20**, 251, 1880; **3**, 132, 135, 1897; **9**, 313, 1900; **12**, 88, 1901; **13**, 327, 1902; **14**, 72, 1902; **15**, 332, 1903; **24**, 179, 1907; **29**, 561, 1910.

S. I. Smith describes the metamorphosis of the crustacea (**3**, 401, 1872; **6**, 67, 1873) species of crustacea (**3**, 373, 1872; **7**, 601, 1874; **9**, 476, 1875), and dredging operations in Lake Superior (**2**, 373, 448, 1871). In this series occurs also a series of papers on comparative anatomy and embryology from the Chesapeake Zoological Laboratory in charge of W. K. Brooks. In the 39th and 40th volumes of the third series (1890) occur several papers on evolutionary topics by John T. Gulick (**39**, 21; **40**, 1, 437) which have attracted much attention.

Before the end of this period, however, this Journal was relieved from the necessity of publishing zoological articles by the establishment of several periodicals devoted especially to the various fields of zoology. We find, therefore, but few exclusively zoological papers after 1885, although articles of a general biological interest and the reviews of zoological books continue.

In the fourth series of the Journal, beginning in 1896, occur also a number of articles on systematic zoology by Verrill and others and several papers having a general biological interest. Brief reviews of a small number of zoological books are still continued, but at the present day the Journal, which played so important a part in the early development of American zoology, has been given over to the geological and physical sciences in harmony with the modern demand for specialization.

Period of Experimental Biology.

Zoological studies remained in large measure observational and comparative until about 1890 when the experimental methods of Roux, Driesch and others came into prominence. Interest then turned from the accumulation of facts to an analysis of the underlying principles of biological phenomena. The question now was not so much what the organism does as how it does what is observed, and this question could be answered only by the experimental control of the conditions. These experimental studies met with such remarkable success that in a few years the older morphological studies were largely abandoned, the Morphological Society changed its name to the Society of Zoologists, and in 1904 the Journal of Experimental Zoology was established. The experimental methods were applied to all branches of biological science; and while it must be freely admitted that little progress has been made toward an understanding of the ultimate causes which underlie biological phenomena, a great advance has been made in the elucidation of the general principles involved.

Experimental embryology, histology, regeneration, comparative physiology, neurology, cytology, and heredity have in recent years successfully adopted an experimental aspect and have made significant progress thereby. Biology has now taken its place beside chemistry and physics as an experimental science.

The latest great advance in biology has been in the field of heredity. The rediscovery of the Mendelian principles of heredity in 1900 brought to light the most important generalization in biology in recent times. The new science of genetics is essentially the experimental study of heredity.

We are at the moment in the midst of an effort to establish in biology a few relatively simple laws by using for the purpose the vast accumulations of observational data gathered in past years, supplemented by such experimental data as have been provided by these more recent investigations. Such hypotheses as have been formulated are for the most part only tentatively held, for their validity is generally incapable of a critical test. But wherever such tests have been possible, the laws of mathematics, physics and chemistry are found applicable to biological phenomena.

The number of investigators has now become so great and their activities so prolific that the list and synopses of the zoological publications each year cover upwards of 1000 to 1500 pages in the International Catalogue of Scientific Literature.

American Leadership.—During the first half of the century the progress of zoology in America remained distinctly behind that of Europe. At the beginning of the century the science was farthest developed by the French and English, although Linnæus was a Swede and took his degree in Holland. Under the influence of Von Baer and his monumental treatise on embryology (Ueber Entwicklungsgeschichte der Thiere, 1828), and supported later by the great physiologist, Johannes Müller, whose "Physiologie des Menschen" (1846) forms the basis of modern physiology, the German school forged rapidly ahead and eventually assumed the leadership in zoology, as in several other branches of science.

In the latter half of the century the influence of the German universities dominated in a large measure the zoological investigations in America. The reason for this is partly due to the fact that many of our young zoologists, after finishing their college course, completed their preparation for research by a year or more at a German university. The more mature zoologists, too, looked forward with keen anticipation to spending their summer vacations and sabbatical years in research in a German laboratory or at the famous Naples station in which the German influence was dominant.

With the rise of experimental biology since 1890, however, the American zoologists have shown so high a degree of originality in devising experiments, so much skill in performing them, and such keenness in analyzing the results, that they have assumed the world leadership in several of the special fields into which the science of zoology is now divided.

Biological Periodicals.

Perhaps in no better way can the progress of biology in America be illustrated than by a brief survey of the origin and development of the more important biological journals. For it will be seen that these publications have become more numerous and more specialized as the science has advanced in specialization.

The early publications—which as is well known, treated mainly of the birds, mammals and other vertebrates, and of insects, crustacea and shells—consisted mainly of separate books or pamphlets, published by private subscription. After the establishment of the so-called Academies of Science, or of Arts and Sciences, toward the end of the 18th and in the first quarter of the 19th century, the reports of the meetings began to be published as periodical Journals, supported by the academies. In these publications, and in this Journal which was founded at the same time, appear papers on all branches of science, including zoology. As soon as zoology in America assumed its modern aspects through the influence of Louis Agassiz and his followers the earliest strictly zoological journals were established.

It should be noted, however, that the journals of the scientific and natural history societies were more or less fully devoted to zoological topics according to the nature of the activities of the members and correspondents. After the establishment of the Museum of Comparative Zoology by Louis Agassiz came the founding in 1863 of its Bulletin and later its Memoirs. These publications have continued to the present day as a standard of excellence for the reports of zoological investigations. In connection with the systematic work on mollusks, the American Journal of Conchology was established in 1865. The American Naturalist was founded in 1867 by four of Louis Agassiz's pupils, Hyatt, Morse, Packard and Putnam. It was later edited by Cope as a leading periodical for the publication of biological papers, particularly those relating to evolution, and is at present devoted to evolutionary topics. It is now in the 52nd volume of its new series.

With the awakened interest in comparative anatomy and embryology came the need for an American journal which should supply a means of publication for the reports of researches accomplished by the increasing number of workers in these fields. This need was fully met by the establishment of the Journal of Morphology in 1887. This publication, now in its 30th volume, has equalled the best European journals in the character of its papers. A few years later (1891) came the Journal of Comparative Neurology for the publication of investigations relating to the morphology and physiology of the nervous system and to nervous and allied phenomena in all groups of organisms. Twenty-eight volumes of this journal have been completed. The Zoological Bulletin was started under the auspices of the Marine Biological Laboratory in 1897 for the publication of papers of a less extensive nature and which could be more promptly issued than those in the Journal of Morphology where elaborate plates were required. After two years the scope of the Bulletin was enlarged to include botanical and physiological subjects. The name was correspondingly changed to the Biological Bulletin. Of this important periodical 33 volumes have been issued.

For the publication of papers on human and comparative anatomy and embryology, the American Journal of Anatomy was established in 1901, and is now in its twenty-third volume.

Meanwhile the trend of zoological interest was toward topics connected with the ultimate nature of biological phenomena. The meaning of these phenomena could be determined only by the experimental method. Researches in this field became more prominent and the adequate publication of the numerous papers required the establishment of a new journal in 1904. This was named the

Journal of Experimental Zoology. It immediately took its place in the front rank of American zoological periodicals. Twenty-four volumes have been published.

In spite of the constantly increasing number of journals, the science grew faster than the means of publication. So crowded did the American journals become that long delays often resulted before the results of an investigation could be issued. This condition was met in part by the sending of many papers to be published in European journals (a necessity most discreditable to American zoology) and in part by the establishment ef additional means of publication. Of the latter the Anatomical Record, now in its fourteenth volume, was begun in 1906 for the prompt publication of briefer papers on vertebrate anatomy, embryology and histology and for preliminary reports and notes on technique.

During the past few years has come a great advance in the experimental breeding of plants and animals. Problems in heredity and evolution have taken on a new interest since the importance and validity of Mendel's discovery have been recognized. To meet this development of biology the journal Genetics was begun in 1916 for the publication of technical papers, while the Journal of Heredity, modified from the American Breeders Magazine, is devoted to popular articles on animal and plant breeding, and Eugenics.

On the whole, the science of zoology is now assuming a closer relation to practical affairs. Entomology, for example, is now represented by the Journal of Economic Entomology, of which 10 volumes have been issued since 1907. The Journal of Animal Behavior covers another practical field of research. The Proceedings of the Society for Experimental Biology and Medicine, starting in 1903, the American Journal of Physiology, and several other publications cover the physiological field. Among other important periodicals are the following:

The Journal of Parasitology, established 1914, now in its fourth volume, is devoted to the interests of medical zoology. The Auk, now in the 34th volume of its new series (42d of old series) is the official organ of the American Ornithologists Union and is devoted to the dissemination of knowledge concerning bird life. The Annals of the Entomological Society of America, established in 1908, and now in its 10th volume, is one of several important entomological journals. The Nautilus, of which 28 volumes have been issued, is one of the more successful journals devoted to conchology.

In addition to these are the many volumes of systematic papers in the Proceedings of the United States National Museum, the practical reports in the Bulletin of the United States Fish Commission, the vast literature issued yearly by the various divisions of the United States Department of Agriculture, Public Health Service and other Governmental departments, while the list of publications by scientific societies, museums, and other institutes is constantly increasing and covers all fields of biological research.

At the present time facilities for the publication of research on any branch of zoology are as a rule entirely adequate. For this highly satisfactory condition the science is indebted to the support given five of its most important journals by the Wistar Institute of Anatomy and Biology.

Biological Associations.

An important light on the history of biology in America can be thrown by a glance at the rise and development of societies or associations for the report and discussion of papers relating to that branch of science. In the first half of the 19th century natural history societies were formed in most cities and centers of learning. These were very important factors in the promotion of scientific research as well as in the diffusion of popular knowledge of living things. The aims and activities of twenty-nine such scientific societies, many of which were devoted especially to natural history, are described in one of the early volumes of the Journal (**10**, 369, 1826). The Connecticut Academy of Arts and Sciences, dating from 1799, and the Philadelphia Academy of Natural Sciences from 1812 are among the oldest of those which still exist.

Of national institutions the American Philosophical Society was founded in 1743, the American Academy of Arts and Sciences in 1780, and the National Academy of Sciences in 1863.

The American Association for the Advancement of Science, with its thousands of members, now has separate sections for each of the special branches of science. This society, organized in 1850, is said to have been the successor of the Association of American Geologists and Naturalists. This was itself a revival of the American Geological Society which first met at Yale in 1819. Its meetings have given a great support to the scientific work of the country.

In 1890, toward the end of the period in which morphological studies were being emphasized, the professional zoologists of the eastern states founded the American Morphological Society. This association held annual meetings during the Christmas holidays for the presentation of zoological papers. This name became less appropriate after a few years because of the gradual decrease in the proportion of morphological investigations owing to the greater attention being directed to problems in experimental zoology and physiology. Consequently the name was changed to the American Society of Zoologists. To be eligible for membership in this society a person must be an active investigator in some branch of zoology, as indicated by the published results.

The American Society of Naturalists was founded in 1883. The original plan of the society was for the discussion of methods of investigation, administration and instruction in the natural sciences, but its program is now entirely devoted to discussions and papers of a broad biological interest. It also arranges for an annual dinner of the several biological societies and an address on some general biological topic.

The American Association of Anatomists includes in its membership investigators and teachers in comparative anatomy, embryology, and histology as well as in human anatomy. Many professional zoologists and experimental biologists present their papers before this society.

These national societies have been of great service in fostering a high standard of zoological research. A still more important service, though generally less conspicuous, is rendered by the journal clubs in connection with all the larger zoological laboratories, and by local scientific societies which are now maintained in all the larger centers of learning throughout the country. There are also specific societies for some of the different fields of biological work.

Biological Stations.

No insignificant factor in the development of biological science has been the establishment of biological stations where investigators, teachers and students meet in the Summer vacation for special studies, discussions and research. The most successful of these laboratories have been located on the seashore and here the study of marine life in Summer supplements the work of the school or university biological courses. The famous Naples Station was founded in 1870, and was shortly after followed by several others. Similar biological stations are now supported on almost every coast in Europe and in several inland localities.

The first such American school was established by Louis Agassiz at the island of Penikeese on the coast of Massachusetts in 1873, succeeding his private laboratory at Nahant. During that Summer more than forty students gained enthusiasm for the work of future years. Unfortunately the laboratory so auspiciously started was of brief duration, for the death of Agassiz occurred in December of the same year, and the laboratory was discontinued at the end of the following Summer. Shortly afterward Alexander Agassiz equipped a small private laboratory at Newport, Rhode Island, and W. K. Brooks established the Chesapeake Bay Zoological Laboratory.

At this time the United States Fish Commission was engaged under the direction of Spencer F. Baird in a survey of the marine life of the waters off the Eastern Coast. Between 1881 and 1886 the Commission established the splendidly equipped biological station at Woods Hole, Massachusetts. Both here and at the Fish Commission Laboratory at Beaufort, North Carolina, much work in general zoology as well as in economic problems is accomplished. These laboratories are designed particularly for specialists engaged in researches connected with the work of the Fish Commission.

A need was soon felt for a marine laboratory along broader lines, and one available to the students and teachers of the schools and colleges. To meet these requirements the Woods Hole Marine Biological Laboratory was started in 1887, as the successor to an earlier laboratory at Annisquam, and has since become a great Summer congress for biologists from all parts of the country. It is safe to say that no other institution has been of equal service in securing for biology the high plane it now occupies in American science. The leading spirit in the establishment of this laboratory and its director for many years was Charles O. Whitman.

Successful marine laboratories are located also at Cold Spring Harbor, Long Island; at Harpswell, Maine; and at Bermuda. The Carnegie Institution maintains a laboratory at Tortugas Island, Florida, for the investigation of tropical marine life.

On the Pacific Coast marine laboratories are located at Pacific Grove and at La Jolla, California, and at Friday Harbor, Washington. Several other biological laboratories are open each Summer on our coasts, as well as a number of fresh-water laboratories on the interior lakes. There are also several mountain laboratories. The influence of these laboratories on American biology is immeasurable.

Natural History Museums.

Museums of Natural History or "Cabinets of Natural Curios" as they were sometimes called, were established in the first half of the 19th century in connection with the various natural history societies. These were of much service in stimulating the collection of zoological "specimens" and in arousing a popular interest in natural history.

The zoological museum of earlier days consisted of rows on rows of systematically arranged specimens, each carefully labelled with scientific name, locality, date of collection and donor—much like the pages of a catalogue. All this has now been changed; the bottles of specimens have been relegated to the storeroom, and the great plate glass cases of the modern museum represent individual studies in the various fields of modern zoological research, or individual chapters in the latest biological text-books. Often the talent of the artist and the skill of the taxidermist are cunningly combined to produce most realistic bits of nature.

The United States National Museum, the American Museum of Natural History, the Field Columbian Museum and the Museum of Comparative Zoology are among the finest museums of the world, while many of the states, cities, and universities maintain public museums as a part of their educational systems.

Systematic Zoology and Taxonomy.

The work in systematic zoology is now mainly carried on by specialists in relatively small groups of animals. This is necessitated both by the increasingly large number of species known to science and by the completeness and exactness with which species must now be defined. The majority of systematic workers are now connected with museums where the large collections furnish material for comparative studies.

Prominent in this field is the United States National Museum, the publications of which are mainly taxonomic and zoogeographic, and cover every group of organism. The adequacy of this great museum for such studies may be illustrated by the collection of mammals. This museum has the types of 1135 of the 2138 forms (including species and subspecies) of North American mammals recognized in Miller's list,[4] and less than 200 forms lack representatives among the 120,000 specimens of mammals. Systematic monographs of several of the orders of mammals have been published.

Systematic study of the birds has brought the number of species and subspecies known to inhabit North and Middle America to above 3000. The most comprehensive systematic treatise is the still incomplete report of Ridgeway[5] of which seven large volumes have already been issued.

On the reptiles, the most complete monograph is that by Cope[6] entitled "The Crocodilians, Lizards and Snakes of North America."

The Amphibia have also been studied by Cope, whose report on the Batrachia of North America[7] is the standard taxonomic work.

The most comprehensive systematic work on fishes is the Descriptive Catalogue of the Fishes of North and Middle America by Jordan and Evermann.[8]

The invertebrate groups have been in part similarly monographed by the members of the U. S. National Museum staff and others, and further studies are in prog-

[4] List of North American Land Mammals in the United States National Museum, 1911. Bull. 79, U. S. Nat. Mus., 1912.

[5] Birds of North and Middle America, Bull. 50, parts I-VII, U. S. Nat. Mus., 1901-1916.

[6] Report U. S. Nat. Mus. for 1898, pp. 153-1270, 1900.

[7] Bull. 34, U. S. Nat. Mus., 1889.

[8] Bull. 47, parts I-IV, U. S. Nat. Mus., 1896-1900.

ress. Other taxonomic monographs published by this museum include the various groups of animals from many different parts of the world.

A number of the larger State, municipal, and university museums publish bulletins on special groups represented in their collections as well as articles of general zoological interest.

Expeditions, subsidized by museum and private funds, are from time to time sent to various parts of the world and their results are often published in sumptuous manner.

The total number of living species of animals is unknown, but considering that about a quarter of a million new species have been described during the past thirty years, it is probable that several million species are in existence to-day. More than half a million have been described. These are probably but a small fraction of the number that have existed in past geological ages.

Thus, in spite of all the work that has been done in systematic zoology and as the number of known species continues to increase, there still remain many groups of animals, some of which are by no means rare or minute, in which probably only a small proportion of the species are as yet capable of identification.

It is only since the publication of Ward and Whipple's "Fresh-water Biology" within the past year that the amateur zoologist could hope to find even the names of all the organisms to be found in a single pool of water.

During the past few years there has been a tendency on the part of some of our biologists engaged in experimental work to disparage the studies of the systematists. It must be granted, however, that both lines of work are essential to the sound development of zoological science, for experimental investigations in which the accurate diagnosis of species is ignored always result in confusion.

Ecology.—The marvelous modifications in structure and instincts by which the various animals are adapted to their surroundings now forms a special topic in biological research and one of the most fascinating. The adaptations in habitat, time, behavior, appearance and even in structure are found capable of a certain individual modification when studied experimentally.

Zoogeography.—Closely associated with systematic zoology, and indeed a part of the subject in its broader sense, is the study of the geographical distribution of animal species and larger groups.

Paleontology.—The geological succession of organisms embraces a field where zoologist and geologist meet. Most of the studies in this subject, however, have been made by geologists.

Biometry.

Since Darwin's theory of evolution postulated the origin of new species by means of natural selection, it was obviously necessary in order to apply a critical test to determine the precise limits of a species. It was, therefore, proposed to subject a given species to a strict examination by the application of statistical methods to determine the range of variation of its members and the extent to which the species intergrades with others. Other problems, particularly those concerning heredity, were treated in similar manner. This branch of biological science was particularly developed by the English School, led by Sir Francis Galton, followed by Karl Pearson and William Bateson.

In America the methods of biometry have been utilized extensively by Charles B. Davenport, Raymond Pearl, H. S. Jennings and others in the solution of problems in genetics and evolution. Their work shows the great value of critical statistical analysis in the interpretation of biological data. A thorough training in mathematics is now found to be hardly less important for the biologist than is a knowledge of physics and chemistry, for the science of biometry has become one of the most important adjuncts to the study of genetics.

Comparative Anatomy and Embryology.

Comparative Anatomy.—Upon the foundations laid down by Cuvier a century ago the present elaborate structure of comparative anatomy of animals, both vertebrate and invertebrate, has been developed. Vast as is the present accumulation of facts and theories many important problems still await their solution. Jeffries Wyman was long a leader in this field, where many workers are now engaged.

Embryology.—The embryological studies, so brilliantly begun by Von Baer early in the nineteenth century, are still in progress. They have now been entended to the groups more difficult of investigation and into the earliest stages of fertilization and implantation in the mammals. Artificial cultural methods have yielded important results. Louis and Alexander Agassiz, Mark, Minot, Brooks, Whitman, Conklin and E. B. Wilson have taken prominent parts in this work.

In the early nineties embryological studies were directed to the arrangement of cells in the dividing egg, and there was much discussion of "cell lineage" in development. Valuable as were these studies they threw comparatively little light on the general problems of evolution.

Experimental Embryology.—A more fertile field, developed at the same period and a little later, was found in experimental embryology. The discoveries made by Driesch and others in shaking apart the cells of the dividing egg or by destroying one or more of these cells gave a new insight into the potency of cells for compensatory and regenerative processes. These studies attracted many able investigators, who made still further advance by subjecting the germ cells, developing eggs, embryos, and developing organs to a great variety of artificial conditions.

Artificial Parthenogenesis.—Another question concerns the nature of the process of fertilization and the agencies which cause the fertilized egg to develop into an embryo. In 1899 Jacques Loeb succeeded in causing development in unfertilized sea-urchin eggs by subjecting them to concentrated sea water for a period and then returning them to their normal environment. To this promising field of experimental work came many of the foremost biologists both in America and Europe. It was soon found that the eggs of most groups of animals except the higher vertebrates could be made to develop into more or less perfect embryos and larval forms by treatment with a great variety of chemical substances, by increased temperature, by mechanical stimuli and by other means. This artificial parthenogenesis, as it is called, has also been successful in plants (*Fucus*), and recently Loeb has reared several frogs to sexual maturity by merely puncturing with a sharp needle the eggs from which they were derived. Loeb, then, maintains that "the egg is the future embryo and animal; and that the spermatozoon, aside from its activating effect, only transmits Mendelian characters to the egg.''[9]

Further experimental analyses of the nature of the fertilization mechanism have recently been made by Morgan, Conklin, F. R. Lillie, and others.

Germinal Localization.—The question as to whether the egg contains localized organ-forming substances has been studied experimentally particularly by means of the centrifuge. The results indicate that neither of the older opposing theories of ''performation'' or ''epigenesis'' is applicable to all eggs, but that in certain organisms the eggs possess a well-marked differentiation while in others each part of the egg is essentially, although probably not absolutely, equipotential.

The Germplasm Cycle.—Since Weismann's postulation of the independence of soma and germplasm in 1885 many attempts have been made to trace the path of the hereditary substance from one generation to the next. A recent book by Hegner[10] summarizes the success attained in various groups of animals.

Cytology.

Another important field of investigation which has attracted many workers is that which pertains to the life of the cell—the science of cytology. Although the cell-theory was established as early as 1839, little advance was made in this subject in America before 1880. Since that time, however, Americans have been so successful in cytological discoveries that they are now among the world's leaders in this field.

These studies have been followed along both descriptive and experimental lines. The most prominent of the early workers in this field are E. L. Mark and E. B. Wilson. Mark's description of the maturation, fecundation, and segmentation of the egg is the most accurate and complete of the early cytological studies. Wilson's discoveries concerning the details of fertilization and his ''Atlas of Fertilization and Karyokinesis,'' published in 1895, have now become classic. Wilson, too, has published the only American text-book on cytology,[11] and has more recently taken the lead in studies concern-

[9] J. Loeb, The Organism as a Whole, p. 126, 1916.
[10] The Germ-cell Cycle in Animals, 1914.
[11] The Cell in Development and Inheritance, 1896; second edition, 1900.

ing the relation between the chromosomes and sex. Besides Wilson, Montgomery, Mark, McClung, Morgan, Miss Stevens, Conklin and their associates and students have now furnished conclusive evidence that the sex of an organism is determined by, or associated with, the nuclear constitution of the fertilized egg. This constitution is moreover shown to be dependent upon the chromosomes received from the germ cells.

This explanation is in strict accordance with the results of experimental breeding. It is also quite in harmony with the Mendelian law of inheritance, and in fact forms one of the strongest supports for the view that all Mendelian factors are resident in the chromosomes. Recent work has also discovered the mechanism which governs the complicated conditions of sex which occur in those animals which exhibit alternating sexual and parthenogenetic generations. These remarkable processes are in all cases found to depend upon a definite distribution of the chromosomes.

Other recent experimental work has shown that while the sex is thus normally determined in the fertilized egg, it is in some animals not irrevocably fixed, and the normal effect of the sex chromosomes may be inhibited by abnormal conditions in the developing embryo, as is demonstrated by the recent work of Lillie and others.

The cytological basis for Mendelian inheritance has been very extensively studied by Morgan and his pupils in connection with their work on inheritance in the common fruit fly *Drosophila.* The evidence supports Weismann's earlier hypothesis that the chromosomes are the bearers of the heritable factors, and that these are arranged in a series in the different chromosomes. This theory is shown to be in such strict accord with both the cytological studies and the results of experimental breeding that Morgan has ventured to indicate definite points in particular chromosomes as the loci of definite heritable factors, or genes.

Confirmation of this view is furnished by the behavior of the so-called sex-linked characters, the genes for which are situated in the same chromosome as that which carries the sex factor. Many ingenious breeding experiments indicate further that all the hereditary characters in *Drosophila* are borne in four great linkage groups corresponding with the four pairs of chromosomes which the cells of this fly possess.

Comparative Physiology.

None of the experimental fields has been of greater importance in zoological progress than that which concerns the functions of the various organs. Without this companion science morphology and comparative anatomy would have become unintelligible. American investigators, among whom G. H. Parker stands prominent, have taken a leading part in this field also.

Neurology.—The physiological analysis of the components of the nervous system, both in vertebrates and invertebrates, is another important branch of experimental biology. The 28 volumes of the Journal of Comparative Neurology attest the large influence that American investigators have had in the development of this science.

Regeneration.—Experimental studies on the powers of regeneration in plants and animals have been made from the earliest times. During the past few years, however, there has been made a concerted attempt to analyze the factors which determine the amount and rate of regeneration. Much progress has been made toward the postulation of definite laws applicable to the regenerative processes of the parts of each organism. The critical analyses of Child have been particularly stimulating.

Tissue Culture.—Another line of experimental work which has been developed within the past few years by Harrison, Carrell, and others is the culture of body tissues in artificial media. These experiments have included the cultivation in tubes or on glass slides of the various tissues of numerous species of animals. They have yielded much information regarding the structure, growth and multiplication of cells, the formation of tissues, and the healing of wounds.

Transplantation and Grafting.—Closely associated experiments consist in the transplantation of organs or other portions of the body to abnormal positions, to the bodies of other animals of the same species or of other species. In this way much has been learned about the potentiality of organs for self-differentiation, for regulation, for regeneration and for compensatory adaptations. The experiments have shown, further, the independence of soma and germplasm and have revealed the nature of certain organs whose functions were previously obscure.

Tropisms and Instincts.—Another field of experimental biology concerns the analysis of behavior of organisms in response to various forms of stimuli. These studies are being prosecuted on all groups of organisms, including the larval stages of many animals, and are yielding most remarkable results. The success in this field of research is largely due to stimulating influence of Jacques Loeb, Parker, Jennings, and their co-workers.

Biological Chemistry.—Still another experimental field which has developed into one of the most important of the biological sciences relates to the fundamental chemical and physical changes which underlie all organic phenomena. A knowledge of both physiological and physical chemistry is to-day essential for all advanced biological work. The peculiar nature of life itself, of growth, disease, old-age, degeneration, death and dissolution are presumably only manifestations of chemical and physical laws. The ultimate goal of all experimental biology, therefore, will be reached only when the basic physico-chemical properties of life are understood. At that time only will the perennial controversy between vitalism and mechanism be ended.

Economic Zoology.

A moment's reflection will show that economic biology is the most essential of all sciences to the human welfare and progress. For man's relation to his environment is such that the penalty for ignorance or neglect of the biological principles involved in the struggle for existence quickly overwhelms him with a horde of parasites or other enemies.

It is only by the intelligent application of biological knowledge that our food supplies, our forests, our domesticated animals and our bodies can be protected from the ever ravenous organisms which surround us.

The losses to food supplies and other products by insects alone amounts to 100 millions of dollars a month in the United States. And the parasites cause losses in sickness and premature deaths each year of many millions more. Then there are the destructive rodents and other animals which add largely to our burdens of support. These enemies next to wars and fungi are the most destructive agencies on earth. Could they but be eliminated man's struggle against opposing forces would be in large measure overcome. The results of recent work in economic zoology, both in regard to the destruction of enemies and protection of useful mammals, birds and fishes, furnish a bright outlook for the future.

Protozoology.—Partly as an experimental field for the solution of general biological problems and partly because of its practical applications the study of protozoa has now developed into a special science.

The results of the investigations of Calkins, Woodruff, Jennings and others have greatly supplemented our understanding of the signification of such important biological phenomena as reproduction, sexual differentiation, conjugation, tropisms, and metabolism.

From an economic standpoint the protozoa have recently been shown to be of the greatest importance because of the human and animal diseases for which they are responsible.

Parasitology.—The animal parasites of man, domesticated animals and plants include numerous species of protozoa, worms, and insects. Together with the bacteria and a few higher fungi they cause all communicable diseases. When we consider that not only our health but also our entire food supply is dependent upon the elimination of these organisms we must admit that parasitology is the most important economically of all the sciences.

The reports of the investigations of Stiles and his associates in the Hygienic Laboratory and of Ransom and his staff in the Bureau of Animal Industry are widely distributed by the federal government. The systematic studies so ably begun by Joseph Leidy in the middle of the last century have been continued by Ward, Linton, Pratt, Curtis and others on the parasites of many groups of animals.

Economic Entomology.—Another extremely important biological science, the practical applications of which are second only to those of parasitology in importance, is entomology. In the last few years economic entomology has exceeded any of the other branches of biology in the number of its investigators. The American Association of Economic Entomologists has a membership of about five hundred. The work of most of these is supported by appropriations from the State and federal governments, and the results of their investigations are widely published.

It is now well known that some of the protozoon parasites are conveyed from man to man only through the bites of insects. The local eradication of several of our most fatal diseases has recently been brought about by the application of measures to destroy such insects. This is the greatest triumph of economic zoology.

Economic Ornithology and Mammalogy.—In addition to the local bird clubs and the American Ornithologists Union for the study and preservation of bird and mammal life, the Bureau of Biological Survey has for some years conducted investigations on the economic importance of the various species. The publications of this Bureau are of great value both in determining the economic status of our birds and mammals, and also in recommending means for the protection of the beneficial species and the destruction of the injurious. Several of the States issue similar publications.

Economic Ichthyology.—The U. S. Fish Commission has for many years been actively engaged in investigations on the food fishes, including methods for increasing the food supply by suitable protection and artificial propagation. The work includes also edible and otherwise useful mollusks and crustacea. Their marine and fresh-water laboratories have also been of great service to general biological science.

Genetics.

One of the most interesting chapters in biology relates to the development of the modern science of heredity, or genetics.

Previous to the year 1900, when the Mendelian principle of inheritance was re-discovered, the relative importance of heredity and of environment in the development of an organism was little understood. It is true that Weismann had insisted on the independence of soma and germplasm some years earlier (1883), but the body of the individual was still generally considered the key to its inheritance.

The recognition of the general application of Mendel's discovery gave a great impetus to experimental breeding both in plants and animals. While heretofore it had been necessary to depend upon the somatic characters as evidence of the hereditary constitution of an individual, it now became possible, knowing the hereditary constitution of the parents of any pair of individuals, to predict with almost mathematical certainty the characters of their possible offspring.

In general, the laws of possible chance combinations of any group of characters determine the probability of any particular offspring possessing one or many of those characters. The physical basis for such Mendelian inheritance is evidently the chance combinations of chromosomes which result from the processes of maturation and union of the germ cells.

Certain limitations to the law are met with because the relatively small number of chromosomes involves linkage of genes, because of the occasional interchange of groups of genes between homologous chromosomes, and because the relative activity or potency of any particular gene may differ in different races, and, finally, because the normal activity of any given gene may be modified or inhibited by the action of other genes. It is by no means certain, however, that all inheritance is Mendelian, for there still remains much evidence that the hereditary basis of certain characters may be resident in the cytoplasm, rather than in the chromosomes. A recent book by Morgan, Sturtevant, Müller and Bridges (1915), entitled "the mechanism of Mendelian heredity" gives the cytological explanation of Mendelian inheritance.

Americans have from the first taken a leading part in this field of research and have been quick to recognize its practical applications to the improvement of breeds in both animals and plants. This prominent position is largely due to the experimental work of Castle, Davenport, Morgan, Jennings, Pearl, and their co-workers on animals and that of East, Emerson, Davis, Hayes and Shull on plants.

The geneticist now realizes that the appearance of the body (phenotype) gives but little clue to the inheritance (genotype). That two white flowers produce only purple offspring, or two white fowls only deeply colored chickens, or that a pair of guinea pigs, one of which is black and the other white, have only gray agouti offspring, while other apparently similar white flowers or white animals produce offspring like themselves, is now readily comprehensible and mathematically predictable.

The most important application of our newly acquired knowledge of inheritance is in the improvement of the human race. The wonderful opportunity in this direction must be apparent to all. The welfare of humanity depends upon the immediate adoption of eugenic principles. The Eugenics Record Office has secured many of the essential data.

With the destruction of the world's best germ plasm at a rate never equalled before, the outlook for the future race would be appalling were it not for the hope that with the advent of a righteous peace will come a realization of the necessity of applying these new biological discoveries to improving the races of men. That the discoveries have been made too late in the world's history to be of such use to humanity must not be thought possible.

Evolution.

Previous to the publication of Darwin's Origin of Species in 1859, American zoologists were generally inclined toward special creation, in spite of the evidences for evolution which had been presented by Erasmus Darwin, Lamarck, and Geoffroy St. Hilaire. Indeed this attitude of mind continued for some years after the publication of the natural selection theory of Darwin and Wallace. This was in part due to the powerful influence of Louis Agassiz who bitterly opposed the Darwinian theory. As late as 1876, J. D. Dana only half-heartedly accepted it as indicated in his last essay on "Cephalization a fundamental principle in the development of animal life" (**12**, 245-251, 1876). He says:

"The method by repeated creations through communications of Divine power to nature should be subordinated, as much as any other, to molecular law and all laws of growth; for molecular law is the profoundest expression of the Divine will, the very essence of nature; and no department of nature is without its appointed law of development. But the present state of science favors the view of 'progress through the derivation of species from species, with few occasions for Divine intervention. For the development of Man, gifted with high reason and will, and thus made a power above Nature, there was required, as Wallace has urged, the special art of a Being above Nature, whose supreme will is not only the source of natural law, but the working force of Nature herself,' and this I still hold." He further explains that cephalization "is not at all at variance with

Darwinism." In his later years he gave the theory his complete, though reluctant, acceptance.

A modified Lamarckian doctrine was widely accepted in the last quarter of the century, due largely to the influence of Cope, Hyatt and Packard. The inheritance of "acquired characters" demanded by this theory seems incompatible with the discoveries of recent times, so that "today the theory has few followers amongst trained investigators, but it still has a popular vogue that is widespread and vociferous."[12]

The origin of new varieties and species by accidental modifications of the germplasm is now the most widely accepted theory of evolution.

Some of the most important discoveries regarding the origin of new forms have been recently made by Morgan and his pupils. From a stock of the common fruit fly (*Drosophila ampelophila*) more than 125 new types have arisen within six years. Each of these types breeds true. "Each has arisen independently and suddenly. Every part of the body has been affected by one or another of these mutations." To arrange these mutations arbitrarily into graded series would give the impression of an evolutionary series, but this is directly contrary to the known facts concerning their origin, for each mutation "originated independently from the wild type." "Evolution has taken place by the incorporation into the race of those mutations that are beneficial to the life and reproduction of the individual." This evolutionary process is usually accompanied by the elimination of those forms which have remained stable or which have developed adverse mutations.

A question that is being vigorously debated at this time concerns the possible effects of selection on the hereditary factors. Are the genes fixed both qualitatively and quantitatively or does a given gene vary in potency under different conditions and in different individuals? In the former case selection can only separate the existing genes into separate pure strains. But if the gene be quantitatively variable, then selection will result in the establishment of new types.

Castle has long stoutly maintained the effect of such selection, and his forces have recently been augmented by Jennings. The experimental work now in process will doubtless yield a decisive answer.

[12] Morgan, T. H. A critique of the theory of evolution, p. 32, 1916.

Art. XII.—*The Development of Botany as shown in this Journal;* by George L. Goodale.

> *"Our Botany, it is true, has been extensively and successfully investigated, but this field is still rich, and rewards every new research with some interesting discovery."*

Such are the words with which the sagacious and far-sighted founder of the American Journal of Science and Arts, in his general introduction to the first volume, alludes to the study of plants. It is plain that the editor, embarking on this new enterprise, appreciated the attractions of this inviting field and sympathetically recognized the good work which was being done in it. It is not surprising, therefore, to find that he welcomed to the pages of his initial number contributions to botany.

Early Botanical Works.—The collections of dried and living North American plants, which had been carried from time to time to botanists in Europe, had been eagerly studied, and the results had been published in accessible treatises. Besides these general treatises, there had been issued certain works, wholly devoted to the American Flora. Among these latter may be mentioned Pursh's Flora (1814) and Nuttall's Genera (1818). There were also a few works which were rather popular in their character, such as Amos Eaton's Manual of Botany for North America (1817), and Bigelow's Collection of the Plants of Boston and environs (1814). These handbooks were convenient, and possessed the charm of not being exhaustive; consequently a botanist, whether professional or amateur, was stimulated to feel that he had a good chance of enriching the list of species and adding to the next edition.

The Early Years of Botany in the Journal.

At that time, the botanists had no journal in this country devoted to their science. Here and there they found opportunity for publishing their discoveries in some medical periodical or in a local newspaper. Hence American botanists availed themselves of the welcome extended by Silliman to botanical contributors to place their results on record in a magazine devoted to science in its wide sense. Specialization and subdivision of science had not then begun to dissociate allied subjects, and, consequently, botanists felt that they would be at home in this journal conducted by a chemist. Botanists responded promptly to this invitation with interesting contributions.

It is well to remember that the appliances at the command of naturalists at the date when the Journal began its service, were imperfect and inadequate. The botanist did not possess a convenient achromatic microscope, and he was not in possession of the chemical aids now deemed necessary in even the simplest research. Hence, attention was given almost wholly to such matters as the forms of plants and the more obvious phenomena of plant-life. In view of the poverty of instrumental aids in research, the results attained must be regarded as surprising.

In the very first volume of the Journal, bearing the date of 1818, there are descriptions of four new genera and of four new species of plants; certainly a large share to give to systematic botany. Besides these articles, there are some instructive notes concerning a few plants, which up to that time had been imperfectly understood. There are four Floral Calendars which give details in regard to the blossoming and the fruiting of plants in limited districts, a botanical subject of some importance but likely to become tedious in the long run. Just here, the skill of the editor in limiting undesirable contributions is shown by his tactful remark designed to soothe the feelings of a prolix writer whose too long list of plants in a floral calendar he had editorially cut down to reasonable limits. The editor remarks, "such extended observations are desirable, but it may not always be convenient to insert very voluminous details of daily floral occurrence." It is convenient to consider by themselves some of the botanical contributions published in the first series of volumes of the Journal during a period of twenty years, the period before Asa Gray became actively and constantly associated with the Journal.

In systematic and geographical botany one finds communications from Douglass and Torrey (**4**, 56, 1822) on the plants of what was then the North-west; Lewis C. Beck (**10**, 257, 1826; **11**, 167, 1826; **14**, 112, 1828) contributed valuable papers on the botany of Illinois and Missouri; there is a literal translation by Dr. Ruschenberger

(**19**, 63, 299, 1831; **20**, 248, 1831; **23**, 78, 250, 1833) of a very long list of the plants of Chili; Wolle and Huebener (**37**, 310, 1839) gave an annotated catalogue of botanical specimens collected in Pennsylvania; Tuckerman (**45**, 27, 1843) presented communications in regard to numerous species which he had examined critically; Darlington (**41**, 365, 1841) published his lecture on grasses; Asa Gray (**40**, 1, 1841) gave an instructive account of European herbaria visited by him, and he contributed also a charming account (**42**, 1, 1842) of a botanical journey to the mountains of North Carolina. The most extensive series of botanical communication at this time was the Caricography by Professor Dewey of Williams College, presented in many numbers of the Journal; the first of these in **7**, pp. 264-278, 1824. There were also descriptions of certain new genera, and species, and critical studies in synonyms.

Cryptogamic botany is represented in the first series of volumes of the Journal by L. C. Beck's (**15**, 287, 1829) study of ferns and mosses, by Bailey's (**35**, 113, 1839) histology of the vascular system of ferns, by Fries' Systema mycologicum (**12**, 235, 1829), and by De Schweinitz (**9**, 397, 1825) and Halsey, who had in hand a cryptogamic manual. There are two important papers by Alexander Braun, translated by Dr. George Engelmann, one on the Equisetaceæ of North America (**46**, 81, 1844) and the other on the Characeæ (**46**, 92, 1844).

Vegetable paleontology had begun to attract attention in many places in this country, and therefore the translated contributions by Brongniart on fossil plants were given space in the Journal. Plant-physiology received a good share of attention either in short notices or in longer articles. Such titles appear as, the respiration of plants, the circulation of sap, the excrementitious matter thrown off by plants, the effects of certain gases and poisons on plants, and the relations of plants to different colored light. One of the most important of the notes is that in which is described the discovery by Robert Brown (**19**, 393, 1831) of the constant movement of minute particles suspended in a liquid, first detected by him in the fovilla of pollen grains, and now known as the Brownian (or Brunonian) movement. The heading under which this note appears is of interest, "The motion of living particles in all kinds of matter."

One side of botany touches agriculture and economics. That side was represented even in the first volume of the Journal by a study of "the comparative quantity of nutritious matter which may be obtained from an acre of land when cultivated with potatoes or wheat." Succeeding volumes in this series likewise present phases which are of special interest regarded from the point of view of economics; for example, those which treat of rotation of crops and of enriching the soil. Probably the economic paper which may be regarded as the most important, in fact epoch-making, is the full account of the invention by Appert of a method for preserving food indefinitely (**13**, 163, 1828). We all know that Appert's process has revolutionized the preservation of foods, and in its modern modification underlies the vast industry of canned fruits, vegetables and so on. There are suggestions, also, as to the utilization of new foods, or of old foods in a new way, which resemble the suggestions made in these days of food conservation. For example, it is shown that flour can be made from leguminous seeds by steaming and subsequent drying, and pulverizing. There are excellent hints as to the best ways of preparing and using potatoes, and also for preserving them underground, where they will remain good for a year or two. It is shown that potato flour can be made into excellent bread. Another method of making bread, namely from wood, is described, but it does not seem quite so practicable. There are interesting notes on the sugar-beet as a source of sugar, and here appears one of the earliest accounts of the Assam tea-plant, which was destined to revolutionize the tea industry throughout the world. Cordage and textile fibers of bark and of wood should be utilized in the manufacture of paper. In fact one comes upon many such surprises in economic botany as the earlier volumes of the Journal are carefully examined.

Early numbers of the Journal present with sufficient fulness accounts of the remarkable discovery by Daguerre and others of a process for taking pictures by light, on a silver plate or upon paper (**37**, 374, 1839; **38**, 97, 1840, etc.). Before many years passed, the Journal had occasion to show that these novel photographic delineations could be made useful in the investigation of problems in botany. In the pages of the Journal it would be easily possible to trace the development of this art in its relations to natural history. Silliman possessed great sagacity in selecting for his enterprise all the novelties which promised to be of service in the advancement of science. In 1825 (**9**, 263) the Journal republished from the Edinburgh Journal of Science an essay by Dr. (afterwards Sir) William Jackson Hooker, on American Botany. In this essay the author states that "the various scientific Journals" which "are published in America, contain many memoirs upon the indigenous plants. Among the first of these in point of value, and we think also the first with regard to time, we must name Silliman's Journal of Science." The author enumerates some of the contributors to the Journal and the titles of their papers.

It has been a useful practice of the Journal, almost from the first, to transfer to its pages memoirs which would otherwise be likely to escape the notice of the majority of American botanists. The book notices and the longer book reviews covered so wide a field that they placed the readers of the Journal in touch with nearly all of the current botanical literature both here and abroad. These critical notices did much towards the symmetrical development of botany in the United States. And as we shall now see, the Journal notices and reviews in the hands of Asa Gray continued to be one of the most important factors in the advancement of American botany.

Asa Gray and the Journal.

In 1834 there appears in the Journal (**25**, 346) a "Sketch of the Mineralogy of a portion of Jefferson and St. Lawrence Counties, New York, by J. B. Crawe of Watertown and A. Gray of Utica, New York." This appears to be the first mention in the Journal of the name of Dr. Asa Gray, who, shortly after that date, became thoroughly identified with its botanical interests. In the early part of his career both before and immediately after graduating in medicine, Gray gave much attention to the different branches of natural history in its wide sense. He not only studied but taught "chemistry, geology, mineralogy, and botany," the latter branch being the one to which he devoted most of his attention. Among his early guides in the pursuit of botany may be mentioned Dr. Hadley, "who had learned some botany from Dr. Ives of New Haven,'' and Dr. Lewis C. Beck of Albany, author of Botany of the United States North of Virginia. At that period he made the acquaintance of Dr. John Torrey of New York, with whom he later became associated in most important descriptive work. During the years between his graduation in medicine and 1842, the year when he came to Harvard College, his activities were diverse and intense; so that his preparation for his distinguished career was very broad and thorough. His first visit to Europe, in 1838, brought him into personal relations with a large number of the botanists of Great Britain and the Continent. This extensive acquaintance, added to his broad training, enabled him even from the outset to exert a profound influence upon the progress of his favorite science. He made the Journal tributary to this development. His name first appears as associate editor in 1853, but there are articles in the Journal from his pen which bear an earlier date. The first of these early botanical papers is the following: ''A Translation of a memoir entitled 'Beiträge zur Lehre von der Befruchtung der Pflanzen,' (contributions to the doctrine of the impregnation of plants, by A. J. C. Corda:) with prefatory remarks on the progress of discovery relative to vegetable fecundation; by Asa Gray, M. D.'' (**31**, 308, 1837). Dr. Gray says that he made the translation from the German for his own private use, but thinking that it might be interesting to the Lyceum, he brought it before the Society, with ''a cursory account of the progress of discovery respecting the fecundation of flowering plants, for the purpose of rendering the memoir more generally intelligible to those who are not particularly conversant with the present state of botanical science.'' The translation occupies six pages of the Journal, while the prefatory remarks fill nine pages. The prefatory remarks constitute an exhaustive essay on the subject, embodied in attractive and perfectly clear language. The translator shows complete familiarity with the matter in hand and gives an adequate account of all the work done on the subject up to the date of M. Corda's paper. A second important paper by him near this period is his review of ''A Natural System of Botany: or a systematic view of the Organization, Natural Affinities, and Geographical Distribution of the whole Vegetable Kingdom; together with the use of the more important species in Medicine, the Arts, and rural and domestic economy, by John Lindley. Second edition, with numerous additions and corrections, and a complete list of genera and their synonyms. London: 1836" (**32**, 292, 1837). A very brief notice of this work in the first part of the volume for 1837 closes with the words, "A more extended notice of the work may be expected in the ensuing number of the Journal." The extended notice proved to be a critical study of the work, signed by the initials A. G. which later became so familiar to readers of the Journal. Citation of a few of its sentences will indicate the strong and quiet manner in which Dr. Gray, even at the outset, wrote his notices of books. In speaking of the second edition of Professor Lindley's work, he says:

"It is not necessary to state that a treatise of this kind was greatly needed, or to allude to the peculiar qualifications of the learned and industrious author for the accomplishment of the task, or the high estimation in which the work is held in Europe. But we may properly offer our testimony respecting the great and favorable influence which it has exerted upon the progress of botanical science in the United States. Great as the merits of the work undoubtedly are, we must nevertheless be excused from adopting the terms of extravagant and sometimes equivocal eulogy employed by a popular author, who gravely informs his readers that no book, since printed Bibles were first sold in Paris by Dr. Faustus, ever excited so much surprise and wonder as did Dr. Torrey's edition of Lindley's Introduction to the Natural System of Botany. Now we can hardly believe that either the author or the American editor of the work referred to was ever in danger, as was honest Dr. Faustus, of being burned for witchcraft, neither do we find anything in its pages calculated to produce such astonishing effects, except, perhaps, upon the minds of those botanists, if such they may be called, who had never dreamed of any important changes in the science since the appearance of good Dr. Turton's translation of the Species Plantarum, and who speak of Jussieu as a writer who has greatly improved the natural orders of Linnæus."

In the Journal for 1840 there is a large group of unsigned book reviews under the heading, "Brief notices of recent Botanical works, especially those most interesting to the student of North American Botany." The first of these short reviews deals with the second section of Part VII of De Candolle's Prodromus. In 1847 the consideration of the Prodromus is resumed by the same author and the initials of A. G. are appended. This indicates that Dr. Gray was probably the writer of some of the unsigned book-reviews which had appeared in the Journal between 1837 and 1840. Doubtless Silliman availed himself of the assistance of his associates, Eli Ives and others, in New Haven, in the examination of current botanical literature, and it is extremely probable that he early secured help from young Dr. Gray, who had shown himself to be a keen critic as well as a pleasing writer. The notices of botanical works from 1840 bear marks of having been from the same hand. They cover an extremely wide range of subjects. While they are good-tempered they are critical, and they had much to do with the development of botany, in this country, along safe lines.

Gray as Editor.—Gray's name as associate editor of the Journal appears in 1853. He had been a welcome contributor, as we have seen, for many years. His influence upon the progress of botany in the United States was largely due to his connection with the Journal. His reviews extended over a very wide range, and supplemented to a remarkable degree his other educational work. It must be permitted to allude here to his sagacity as a writer of educational treatises. In his first elementary text-book, published in 1836, he expressed wholly original views in regard to certain phases of structure and function in plants, which became generally adopted at a later date. His Manual of Botany was constructed, and subsequent editions were kept, on a plan which made no appeal to those who wanted to work on lines of least resistance; in fact he had no patience with those who desired merely to ascertain the name of a plant. In the Journal he emphasizes the desirability of learning all the affinities of the plant under consideration. At a later period, when entirely new chapters had been opened in the life of plants, he sought by his contributions in the Journal to interest students in this wider outlook.

Professor C. S. Sargent has selected with good judgment some of the more important scientific papers by Professor Gray and has re-published them in a convenient form.[1] Many of these papers were contributed to the Journal in the form of reviews. These reviews

[1] Scientific Papers of Asa Gray. Selected by Charles Sprague Sargent. Two volumes, Boston, 1889 (see notice in vol. 38, 419, 1889).

touch nearly every branch of the science of botany. As Sargent justly says, "Many of the reviews are filled with original and suggestive observations, and taken together, furnish the best account of the development of botanical literature during the last fifty years that has yet been written." In these longer reviews in the Journal, Gray was wont to take a book under review as affording an opportunity to illustrate some important subject, and many of the reviews are crowded with his expositions. For example, in his examination of vonMohl's Vegetable Cell (**15**, 451, 1853) he takes up the whole subject of microscopic structure, so far as it was then understood, and he points out the probable errors of some of Mohl's contemporaries, showing what and how great were Mohl's own contributions to histology. Such a review is a landmark in the science. The physiology of the cell and the nutrition of the plant were favorite topics with Professor Gray, and he brought much of his knowledge in regard to them into such a review as that of Boussingault (**25**, 120, 1858) on the "Influence of nitrates on the production of vegetable matter."

As a systematic botanist, Gray was naturally much interested in the vexed question of nomenclature of plants. One of his most important communications to the Journal is his review, in the volume for 1883 (**26**, 417), of DeCandolle's work on the subject. He deals with this strictly technical matter much as he did in a contribution to the Journal which he made in 1868 (**46**, 63). In both of these papers he states with clearness the general features of the code of nomenclature. He says explicitly that the code does not make, but rather declares, the common law of botanists. The treatment of the subject at his hands would rightly impress a general reader as showing a strong desire to have common sense applied to doubtful cases, instead of insisting on inflexible rules. For this reason, his rule of practice was not always acceptable to those who were anxious to secure conformity to arbitrary rules at whatever cost. As he said in a paper published in the Journal in 1847 (**3**, 302), "The difficulty of a reform increases with its necessity. It is much easier to state the evils than to relieve them; and the well-meant endeavors that have recently been made to this end, are, some of them, likely, if adopted, to make confusion worse confounded.'' This feeling led him to be very conservative in the matter of reform in nomenclature.

This subject of botanical nomenclature illustrates a method frequently employed by Professor Gray to elucidate a difficult matter. He would find in the treatise under review a text, or texts, on which he would build a treatise of his own, and in this way he made clear his own views relative to most of the important phases of botany. When he faced controverted matters, his attitude still remained judicial. While he was tolerant of opinions which clashed with his own, he was always severe upon charlatanism and impatient of inaccuracy. The pages of the Journal contain many severe criticisms at his hands, but an unprejudiced person would say that the severity is merited.

Sometimes, however, instead of reviewing a book or an address, he would follow the custom inaugurated early in the history of the Journal, of making copious extracts, and thus give to its readers an opportunity of examining materials which otherwise might not fall in their way.

Gray's contributions to the Journal comprise more than one thousand titles, without counting the memorial notices and the shorter obituary notes. In these notices he sums up in a few well-chosen words the contributions made to botany by his contemporaries. Even in the few instances in which he felt obliged to note with disapproval some of the work, he expressed himself with personal friendliness. The necrology, at it appeared from month to month, was a labor of love. All of the longer memorial notices are what it is the fashion now-a-days to call appreciations, and these are so happily phrased that it would seem as if the writer in many a case asked himself, ''Would my friend, about whom I am now writing, make any change in this sketch?''

Gray on Darwinism.—In October, 1859, Darwin's epoch-making work, The Origin of Species, was published. An early copy was sent to the editor of the Journal, Professor James D. Dana. This arrived in New Haven on December 21, but it was preceded by a personal letter which is of so much interest that it is here transcribed in full. It should be added that Dana was at this time in Europe where he was spending a year in the search for health after a serious nervous breakdown.

In his absence the book was noticed by Gray as stated below. The letter is, as follows:

Down, Bromley, Kent.
Nov. 11th, 1859.

My dear Sir,

I have sent you a copy of my Book (as yet only an abstract) on the Origin of Species. I know too well that the conclusion, at which I have arrived, will horrify you, but you will, I believe and hope, give me credit for at least an honest search after the truth. I hope that you will read my Book, straight through; otherwise from the great condensation it will be unintelligible. Do not, I pray, think me so presumptuous as to hope to convert you; but if you can spare time to read it with care, and will then do what is far more important, keep the subject under my point of view for some little time occasionally before your mind, I have hopes that you will agree that more can be said in favour of the mutability of species, than is at first apparent. It took me many long years before I wholly gave up the common view of the separate creation of each species. Believe me, with sincere respect and with cordial thanks for the many acts of scientific kindness which I have received from you,

My dear Sir,
Yours very sincerely,
CHARLES DARWIN.

In March, 1860 (**29**, 153), Gray published in the Journal an elaborate and cautious review of Darwin's work. He alluded to the absence of the chief editor of the Journal in the following words:

"The duty of reviewing this volume in the American Journal of Science would naturally devolve upon the principal editor whose wide observation and profound knowledge of various departments of natural history, as well as of geology, particularly qualify him for the task. But he has been obliged to lay aside his pen to seek in distant lands the entire repose from scientific labor so essential to the restoration of his health, a consummation devoutly to be wished and confidently to be expected. Interested as Mr. Dana would be in this volume, he could not be expected to accept its doctrine. Views so idealistic as those upon which his 'Thoughts upon Species' are grounded, will not harmonize readily with a doctrine so thoroughly naturalistic as that of Mr. Darwin . . . Between the doctrines of this volume and those of the great naturalist whose name adorns the title-page of this Journal [Mr. Agassiz] the widest divergence appears."

Gray then proceeds to contrast the two views of Darwin and Agassiz, "for this contrast brings out most prominently and sets in strongest light and shade the main features of the theory of the origination of species by means of Natural Selection." He then states both sides with great fairness, and proceeds:

"Who shall decide between such extreme views so ably maintained on either hand, and say how much truth there may be in each. The present reviewer has not the presumption to undertake such a task. Having no prepossession in favor of naturalistic theories, but struck with the eminent ability of Mr. Darwin's work, and charmed with its fairness, our humbler duty will be performed if, laying aside prejudice as much as we can, we shall succeed in giving a fair account of its method and argument, offering by the way a few suggestions such as might occur to any naturalist of an inquiring mind. An editorial character for this article must in justice be disclaimed. The plural pronoun is employed not to give editorial weight, but to avoid even the appearance of egotism and also the circumlocution which attends a rigorous adherence to the impersonal style."

In this review he moves slowly and thoughtfully, but not timidly, over the new paths. There is no clear indication in the review that he has yet made up his mind as to the validity of Darwin's hypothesis. But, in a second article appearing in the Journal for September of the same year (**30**, 226), under the title "Discussion between two readers of Darwin's treatise on the origin of species upon its natural theology" Gray plainly begins to incline to take a very favorable view of the Darwinian theory, and makes use of the following ingenious illustration to show that it is not inconsistent with theistic design. A few paragraphs here quoted show the felicity of his style in a controverted matter:

"Recall a woman of a past generation and show her a web of cloth; ask her how it was made, and she will say that the wool or cotton was carded, spun, and woven by hand. When you tell her it was not made by manual labor, that probably no hands have touched the materials throughout the process, it is possible that she might at first regard your statement as tantamount to the assertion that the cloth was made without design. If she did, she would not credit your statement. If you patiently explained to her the theory of carding-machines, spinning-jennies, and power-looms, would her reception of your explanation weaken her conviction that the cloth was the result of design? It is certain that she would believe in design as firmly as before, and that this belief would be attended by a higher conception and reverent admiration of a wisdom, skill, and power greatly beyond anything she had previously conceived possible.''

By this review Gray disarmed hostility to such an extent that some persons who had been antagonistic to Darwinism accepted it with only slight reservation. It may be fairly claimed that the Journal bore a leading part in influencing the views of naturalists in America in regard to the Darwinian theory.

Dr. Gray soon put the Darwinian hypothesis to a severe test. In the Journal for 1840 he had called attention to the remarkable similarity which exists between the flora of Japan and a part of the temperate portion of North America. The first notice of this subject by him occurs in a short review of Dr. Zuccarini's ''Flora Japonica,'' a work based on material furnished by Dr. Siebold, who had long lived in Japan. In this review (**39**, 175, 1840), he enumerates certain plants common to the two regions, and says, ''It is interesting to remark how many of our characteristic genera are reproduced in Japan, not to speak of striking analogous forms.'' In a subsequent paper (**28**, 187, 1859), he recurs to this subject, and, after alluding to geological data furnished by J. D. Dana, he says:

''I cannot resist the conclusion that the extant vegetable kingdom has a long and eventful history, and that the explanation of apparent anomalies in the geographical distribution of species may be found in the various and prolonged climatic or other vicissitudes to which they have been subject in earlier times; that the occurrence of certain species, formerly supposed to be peculiar to North America, in a remote or antipodal region, affords in itself no presumption that they were originated there, and that interchange of plants between eastern North America and eastern Asia is explicable upon the most natural and generally received hypothesis (or at least offers no greater difficulty than does the arctic flora, the general homogeneousness of which round the world has always been thought compatible with local origin of the species) and is perhaps not more extensive than might be expected under the circumstances. That the interchange has mainly taken place in high northern latitudes, and that the isothermal lines have in earlier times turned northward on our eastern and southward on our northwest coast, as they do now, are points which go far towards explaining why eastern North America, rather than Oregon and California, has been mainly concerned in this interchange, and why the temperate interchange, even with Europe, has principally taken place through Asia.''

This paper was communicated in 1859, on the eve of the publication of Darwin's Origin of Species. At a later date he applied the Darwinian theory to the possible solution of the problem, and came to the conclusion that the two floras had a common origin in the Arctic zone, during the Tertiary period, or the Cretaceous which preceded it, and the descendants had made their way down different lines towards the south, the species varying under different climatic conditions, and thus exhibiting similarity but not absolute identity of form. Before the American Association for the Advancement of Science, in his Presidential address, in 1872, he used the following language:

''According to these views, as regards plants at least, the adaptation to successive times and changed conditions has been maintained, not by absolute renewals, but by gradual modifications. I, for one, cannot doubt that the present existing species are the lineal successors of those that garnished the earth in the old time before them, and that they were as well adapted to their surroundings then, as those which flourish and bloom around us are to their conditions now. Order and exquisite adaptation did not wait for man's coming, nor were they ever stereotyped. Organic Nature—by which I mean the system and totality of living things, and their adaptation to each other and to the world—with all its apparent and indeed real stability, should be likened, not to the ocean, which varies only by tidal oscillations from a fixed level to which it is always returning, but rather to a river, so vast that we can neither discern its shores nor reach its sources, whose onward flow is not less actual because too slow to be observed by the ephemeræ which hover over its surface, or are borne upon its bosom.''

Gray's active interest in the Journal continued until the very end of his life. There were many critical notices from his pen in 1887. His last contribution to its pages was the botanical necrology, which appeared posthumously in volume **35**, of the third series (1888). His connection with the Journal covered, therefore, a period of more than a half a century of its life.[2]

The changes that were wrought in botany by the application of Darwinism were far reaching. Attempts were promptly made to reconstruct the system of botanical classification on the basis of descent. The more suc-

[2] A notice of Gray's life and works is given by his life-long friend, J. D. Dana, in the Journal in 1888 (**35**, 181-203).

cessful of these endeavors met with welcome, and now form the groundwork of arrangement of families, genera, and species, in the Herbaria in this country, in the manuals of descriptive botany, and in the text-books of higher grade. This overturn did not take place until after Gray's death, although he foresaw that the revolution was impending.

One of the most obvious changes was that which gave a high degree of prominence in American school treatises to the study of the lower instead of the higher or flowering plants, these latter being treated merely as members in a long series, and with scant consideration. But of late years, there has been a renewed popular interest in the phænogamia, leading to a more thorough investigation of local floras, and also to the examination of the relations of plants to their surroundings. The results of a large part of this technical work are published in strictly botanical periodicals and now-a-days seldom find a place in the pages of a general journal of science.

Cryptogamic Botany in the Journal since 1846.

In glancing rapidly at the First Series it has been seen that a fair share of attention was early paid by the Journal to the flowerless plants. So far as the means and methods of the time permitted, the ferns, mosses, lichens, and the larger algæ and fungi of America were studied assiduously and important results were published, chiefly on the side of systematic botany.

The Second Series comprises the years between 1846 and 1871. In this series one finds that the range of cryptogamic botany is much widened. Besides interesting book notices relative to these plants, there are a good many papers on the larger fungi, on the algæ, and mosses. Here are contributions by Curtis, by Ravenel, by Bailey, and by Sullivant. The lichens are treated of in detail by Tuckerman, and there are some excellent translations by Dr. Engelmann of papers by Alexander Braun. Some of the destructive fungi are considered, as might well be the case in the period of the potato famine. It is in these years that one first finds the name of Daniel Cady Eaton, who later had so much to do with developing an interest in the subject of ferns in this country. He was a frequent contributor of critical notices.

Cryptogamic Botany, as it is now understood, is a comparatively modern branch of science. The appliances and the methods for investigating the more obscure groups, and especially for revealing the successive stages of their development, were unsatisfactory until the latter half of the last century. Gray recognized this condition of affairs, and appreciated the importance of the new methods and the better appliances. Therefore he viewed with satisfaction the pursuit of these studies abroad by one of his students and assistants, William G. Farlow. Dr. Farlow carried to his studies under DeBary and others unusual powers of observation and great industry. He speedily became an accomplished investigator in cryptogamic botany and enriched the science by notable discoveries, one of which to-day bears his name in botanical literature. On his return to the United States, Farlow entered at once upon a successful career as an inspiring teacher and a fruitful investigator. He became a frequent contributor to the Journal, keeping its readers in touch with the more important additions to cryptogamic botany. He had wisely chosen to deal with the whole field, and consequently he has been able to preserve a better perspective than is kept by the extreme specialist. The greater number of cryptogamic botanists in this country have been under Professor Farlow's instruction.

Systematic and Geographical Botany of Late Years.

The usefulness of the Journal in descriptive systematic botany of phanerogams is shown not only by its acceptance of the leading features of DeCandolle's Phytography, where very exact methods are inculcated, but by the very numerous contributions by Sereno Watson and others at the Harvard University Herbarium, as well as from private systematists. It is in the pages of the Journal that one finds the record of much of the critical work of Tuckerman and of Engelmann, in interesting Phanerogamia. Of late years the Journal has had the privilege of publishing a good deal of the careful work of Theo Holm, in the difficult groups of Cyperaceæ, and also his admirable studies in the morphology and the anatomy of certain interesting plants of higher orders.

Attention was called, in passing, to Gray's deep interest in geographical botany. In this important branch, besides his contributions, one finds, among many others, such papers as LeConte's "Flora of the Coast Islands of California in Relation to Recent Changes of Physical Geography" (**34**, 457, 1887), and Sargent's "Forests of Central Nevada" (**17**, 417, 1879). Examination reveals a surprising number of communications which bear indirectly upon this subject.

Paleontological Botany.

When the Journal began its career, the subject of fossil plants was very obscure. Brongniart's papers, especially the Journal translations, enabled the students in America to undertake the investigation of such fossils and the results were to a considerable extent published in the Journal. Since the subject belongs as much to geology as to botany, it finds its appropriate home in the pages of the Journal. The recent papers on this topic show how great has been the advance in methods and results since the early days of the Journal's century. Under the care of George R. Wieland, the communications and the bibliographical notices of paleontological treatises show the progress which he and others are making in this attractive field.

Economic Botany, Plant Physiology, etc.

At the outset, the Journal, as we have seen, devoted much attention to certain phases of economic botany, and, even down to the present, it has maintained its hold upon the subject. The correspondence of Jerome Nicklès from 1853 to 1867 brought before its readers a vast number of valuable items which would not in any other way have been known to them. And the Journal dealt wisely with the scientific side of agriculture, under the hands of S. W. Johnson and J. H. Gilbert, and others, placing it on its proper basis. This work was supplemented by Norton's remarkable work in the chemistry of certain plants, the oat, for example, and certain plant-products. In fact it might be possible to construct from the pages of the Journal a fair synopsis of the important principles of agronomy.

Physiology has been represented not only by the studies which had been inaugurated and stimulated by the Darwinian theory, such as the cross-fertilization and the close-fertilization of plants, plant-movements, and the like, but there have been a good many special communications, such as Dandeno on toxicity, Plowman on electrical relations, and ionization, and W. P. Wilson on respiration.

There are many broad philosophical questions which have found an appropriate home in the Journal, such as "The Plant-individual in its relation to the species" (Alexander Braun, **19**, 297, 1855; **20**, 181, 1855), and "The analogy between the mode of reproduction in plants and the alternation of generations observed in some radiata" (J. D. Dana, **10**, 341, 1850). Akin to these are many of the reflections which one finds scattered throughout the pages of the Journal, frequently in minor book-notices. As might be expected, some attention has been paid to the very special branch of botany which is strictly called medical. For example, early in its history, the Journal published a long treatise by Dr. William Tully (**2**, 45, 1820), on the ergot of rye. This is considered from a structural as well as from a medical point of view and is decidedly ahead of the time in which it was written. There are a few references to vegetable poisons, and there is a fascinating account of the effect of the common white ash on the activities of the rattlesnake. In short it may be said that the editor did much towards making the Journal readable as well as strictly scientific.

The list of reviewers who have been permitted to use the pages of the Journal for notices of botanical and allied books in recent years is pretty long. One finds the initials of Wesley R. Coe, George P. Clinton, Arthur L. Dean, Alexander W. Evans, William G. Farlow, George L. Goodale, Arthur H. Graves, Herbert E. Gregory, Lafayette B. Mendel, Leo. F. Rettger, Benjamin L. Robinson, George R. Wieland, and others.

At the present time, in the biological sciences, as in every department of thought, there is great specialization, and each specialty demands its own private organ of publication. Naturally this has led to a falling off in the botanical communications to the Journal, but it cannot be forgotten that the history of North American Botany has been largely recorded in its pages.

THE

AMERICAN JOURNAL OF SCIENCE

[FOURTH SERIES.]

Art. XIII.—*The Melting Points of Cristobalite and Tridymite;* by J. B. Ferguson and H. E. Merwin.

I. *Cristobalite.*

While investigating the system CaO-MgO-SiO_2 at high temperatures, we were impressed with the need for further work on the melting point of cristobalite, the high temperature form of silica, and wish in this paper to present some new results.

In 1906 Day and Shepherd[1] upon heating finely powdered quartz in an iridium furnace at different temperatures observed a partial melting even at 1650°, and noting the sluggish nature of this phenomenon estimated the melting point of silica to be at 1625°.[2] The experimental conditions were such, however, that it is uncertain to which crystalline form of silica this melting point belongs.[3]

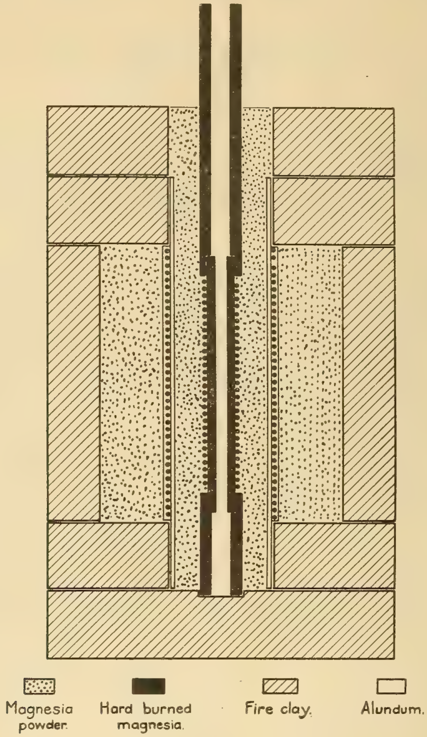
In 1912 Endell and Rieke[4] determined the melting point of cristobalite to be 1685° ± 10°. They heated cristobalite powder in an iridium furnace and measured their temperatures by means of an Ir:Ir-Ru thermoelement. They carefully calibrated this thermoelement at the gold, palladium and platinum points, but such an element under their working conditions could not remain unchanged even during one experiment. The amount of the resulting contamination and the direction of its ther-

[1] A. L. Day and E. S. Shepherd, this Journal, 22, 265, 1906.
[2] Recalculated on the basis of the temperature scale given by R. B. Sosman, ibid., 30, 1-15, 1910.
[3] C. N. Fenner, ibid., 36, 381, 1913.
[4] K. Endell and R. Rieke, Z. anorg. Chem., 79, 239, 1913.

moelectric effect is somewhat doubtful, but probably would lead to too low results.

The following year Fenner[5] attempted to confirm these results of Endell and Rieke and heated cristobalite in a graphite furnace which had been specially designed to prevent changes in either his charges or the Pt:Pt-Rh

Fig. 1.



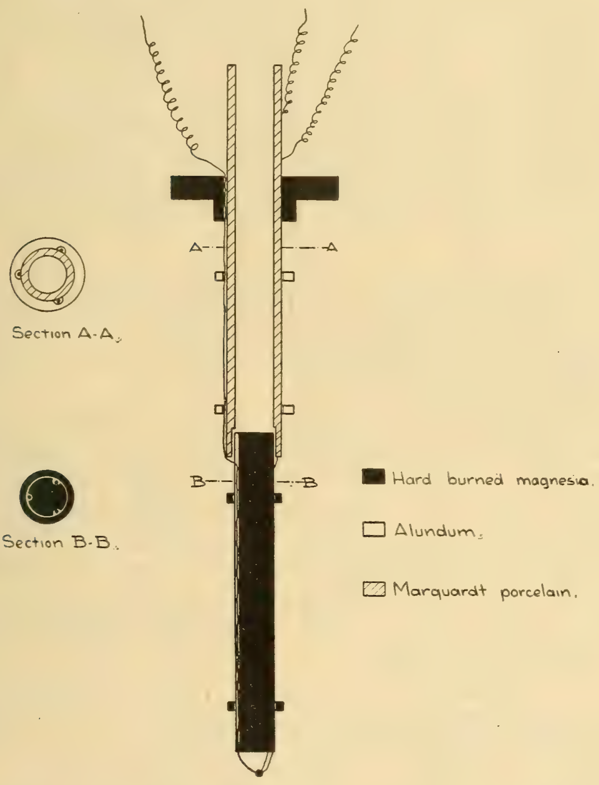
thermoelement by the reducing gases. The first determinations indicated a melting temperature of 1680°-1690° thus confirming Endell and Rieke, but later he found that by prolonging the time of heating to half-an-hour, traces of fusion could be detected at much lower temperatures and so was led to place the real melting point at 1625°.

Some doubt, however, was cast upon this value by Bowen,[6] although he made no direct determination of the

[5] C. N. Fenner, loc. cit.
[6] N. L. Bowen, this Journal, 38, 218, 1914.

melting point. In the ternary system diopside-fosterite-silica he found the cristobalite liquidus rose too steeply from the boundary curve separating the silica field from the pyroxene field to warrant such a low value, and suggested that the melting point probably was at a higher

Fig. 2.



temperature even than that assigned to it by Endell and Rieke.

Our work on the system CaO-MgO-SiO_2 has confirmed Bowen's results and has led to our undertaking the redetermination of the melting point of cristobalite.

Such an investigation required a furnace capable of maintaining a charge at temperatures above 1700° for periods of time up to an hour in length. The iridium-tube furnace will reach these temperatures but is unsuitable for such long heats; the ordinary platinum furnace is not suitable, therefore one of different design built on the well-known cascade principle was evolved and did duty throughout the entire investigation.

A vertical cross-section of this furnace is shown in fig. 1. The outer heater, of platinum wire 0·8 mm. in diameter, is wound on a helically grooved alundum tube and held in place with alundum cement; the outer insulation consists of magnesia powder surrounded by a heavy fire clay shell. The inner heater, of Pt-20% Rh wire 0·5 mm. in diameter, is wound on a helically grooved magnesia tube and held in place by tie-wires of the same alloy. The two heaters are insulated from each other with magnesia powder and the furnace is so constructed as to facilitate the addition of more magnesia powder at any time.[7]

The quenching apparatus[8] with the Pt:Pt-10% Rh thermoelement and its leakage wire is shown in fig 2. The upper cap is cemented to the Marquardt porcelain tube but all the other parts are snug fitting and held in place by the wires.

The operation of the furnace was very simple. Enough current was sent through the outer coil to maintain a temperature of 1450° in the furnace without the use of the inner coil. The furnace was then heated to the required higher temperature by passing the necessary current through the inner coil. The temperatures were measured by means of the usual potentiometer set-up, single shielding being used, and there was no trouble from electrical leakage.

The determinations were made in the following manner: a small amount of the sample was wrapped up in platinum foil and tied with a platinum wire to the thermoelement in such a way that it hung close to the thermoelement junction. The thermoelement tube with the charge was then inserted into the furnace which had

[7] In the earlier runs several such additions were necessary during an afternoon. The magnesia did not pack evenly and between runs the caked material was broken up by means of a special iron drill. This assured a fairly uniform insulating layer and had it not been done there would have been spaces in which there was no insulating material except air between the heaters.

[8] The usual form of quenching apparatus could not be used as experimentation showed that the furnace was too small and the platinum too soft. The charge stuck to the globules of platinum which lined the furnace tube and which resulted from the fusing of the fine wire holding the charge.

previously been heated to approximately the desired temperature. After the heat treatment, the tube was quickly withdrawn and the charge plunged into mercury. When cold the charge was removed from the thermoelement, opened, and the sample examined microscopically. In some experiments two charges instead of one were tied to the thermoelement, but on account of the small diameter of the furnace tube more could not be used at one time.

Results.

1. CaO-MgO-SiO_2 charges made up in the usual manner by repeated grindings and heatings to about 1600°. Crystals of cristobalite form during the heatings and are present in the charge used for quenchings.

(*a*) CaO 24, MgO 7, SiO_2 69.

Temperature (corrected).	Sample Quenched after:	Results.
1691°	30 min.	Almost entirely glass but a few grains of cristobalite which appear to be dissolving in the glass.
1675°	120 min.	Glass.
Part of this latter quench heated again.		
1638°	30 min.	A number of good crystals of cristobalite.
A second part of this latter quench taken and brought to the required temperature in 6 minutes.		
1638°	20 min.	A number of good crystals.

(*b*) CaO 11·5, MgO 3·5, SiO_2 85.

Temperature (corrected).	Sample Quenched after:	Results.
1718°	30 min.	Glass.
1708°	30 min.	A quantity of large cristobalite crystals and some glass.

2. Silica glass tube heated for ½ hour at 1550° by R. B. Sosman. Material: cristobalite with specks of more highly refracting glass.

Temperature (corrected).	Sample Quenched after:	Results.
1653°	30 min.	A little more glass, some having higher refraction and some lower than cristobalite.
1691°	30 min.	2-3% glass all having lower refraction than cristobalite.

3. Single clear crystal of quartz.

Temperature (corrected).	Sample Quenched after:	Results.
1691°	60 min.	Quartz with layer of glass, and then outside a homogeneous layer of cristobalite.

4. Clear quartz crystals that had been heated all night at 1550°. Material was entirely crystallized to cristobalite.

Temperature (corrected).	Sample Quenched after:	Results.
1698°	30 min.	No glass, the crystals perhaps a little larger.
1737°	30 min.	All glass.
1718°	30 min.	Trace of crystals, and rest glass.
1708°	32 min.	Main part of charge all crystals, but a few grains were mostly glass.

5. Silica glass made by heating some of the cristobalite obtained from clear quartz as in (3) to 1737°.

Temperature (corrected).	Sample Quenched after:	Results.
1646°	45 min.	Not all crystallized, but where crystallized at all the whole mass is cristobalite.
1679°	30 min.	All crystals, not a trace of glass.

6. Baker and Adamson specially purified quartz finely ground; contains many minute inclusions which are not determinable but are mostly of much lower refractive index; after heating for two hours at 1550° has all changed to cristobalite with the exception of some minute specks too small to identify.

Temperature (corrected).	Sample Quenched after:	Results.
1646°	45 min.	Unchanged.
1679°	30 min.	Trace of material with refraction higher than cristobalite; probably glass.
1693°	38 min.	Charge seems similar to that at 1679°.

1705°	30 min.	¾ Glass.
1714°	30 min.	Trace of crystals + glass.
1714°	10 min.	Trace of crystals + glass.

7. Cristobalite made by heating clear quartz crystals for 144 hours at temperatures ranging from 1300 to 1400°. Two lots were made at the same time, one from lumps a few mm. in diameter, the other from powder 0·5 mm. and finer. At the end of 100 hours there was present a few percent of unconverted quartz in each lot, and at the end of 144 hours traces of quartz. Also during the final selection of material free from quartz, some of the larger grains were found to have hard, clear nuclei of tridymite. The cristobalite was very white and friable.

Temperature (corrected).	Sample Quenched after:	Results.
1695°	22 min.	No melting detected.
1707°	15 min.	A few grains showed traces of melting; others were melted into clear beads.
1715°	18 min.	All melted to one mass of clear glass.

After heating No. 4, a calibration at the Pd point gave 16040 microvolts, after No. 6, 16025 microvolts, and after No. 7, 16080 microvolts. The high value after No. 7 was the result of the cutting out of the most contaminated portions of the thermoelement prior to the No. 7 experiments. A standard element gives 16140 microvolts.

Discussion of Results on Cristobalite.

The fluxing of cristobalite crystals above the liquidus by a ternary melt very high in silica appears to be slow compared with the growth of cristobalite crystals in a similar melt the same number of degrees below the liquidus. A possible explanation of the phenomenon may be that during fluxing the crystal is surrounded by a thin film of greater silica content and during crystallization a thin film of less silica content than the average composition of the melt. The rate mentioned would be a function of the viscosity of this liquid film.

The silica-glass tube (No. 2 above), although supposed to be very pure material, carried enough impurity to give a large temperature interval of melting. The highly refracting specks were evidence of impurity, and possibly a similar explanation may account for Fenner's results.

The superheating of quartz is perhaps better illustrated by experiment 3 than by any experiment that has heretofore been made. In the case of pure substances this phenomenon is probably due to the rigidity of the crystals themselves and, unlike the solution of a crystal in a melt of different composition, is independent of the viscosity of the melt.

Cristobalite formed at a temperature of 1350° behaved in a similar manner to that formed at higher temperatures. If Fenner's[9] conception of the molecular structure of cristobalite is correct, the molecular readjustment must take place in the crystals themselves.

The melting point[10] of cristobalite is placed at 1710° ± 10°. This is as narrow a limit as the observations will permit, although the temperature measurements were more accurate. (See results on tridymite.)

II. *Tridymite.*

In an attempt to duplicate the observations of Le Chatelier[11] upon the tridymite-cristobalite inversion we were fortunately able to obtain and examine microscopically specimens of silica bricks from two types of glass furnaces which had been in continuous operation for a long time. The one specimen from the crown of a furnace of the regenerative type in which the direction of the flue gases is reversed every 15 or 20 minutes contained good crystals of tridymite while the other specimen from the crown of a furnace of the recuperative type contained cristobalite. There could be no question but that this latter specimen was subjected to a higher temperature than the former since the flames continuously played upon it and it was not affected by the cold air which leaked into the furnace through the crevices about the furnace door.

These observations do not agree with those made by Le Chatelier, and we therefore decided to determine the melting point of tridymite which if obtained would clearly indicate the relation this form of silica bears to cristobalite.

[9] N. L. Bowen, this Journal, 38, 218, 1914; C. N. Fenner, ibid., 36, 366, 1913.

[10] The softening points of silica bricks were found by C. W. Kanolt to be 1700, 1705, 1700 respectively. Technologic paper No. 10, Bur. Standards 1912.

[11] Henry Le Chatelier, Bull. Soc. Fr. Min. 1917, p. 44.

The furnace and set-up used in the determination of the melting point of cristobalite were available and were used without change in this work.

Results.

1. Natural tridymite, kindly furnished by G. P. Merrill from the collection in the New National Museum. Occurrence: Lander Co., Nevada, associated with "wood tin," described by A. Knopf;[12] aggregate having radiating structure and no visible impurities except minute amounts of granular quartz; refractive index measured 0·003 higher than the other four samples here described.

Temperature (corrected).	Sample Quenched after:	Results.
1655°	4 min.	The quartz alone had fused.
1659°	10 min.	" " " " "
(1659-82°)	5 min.	Practically all melted.
1667°	10 min.	Quartz only melted.
1675°	10 min.	Practically all melted.
1675°	20 min.	A few grains partly melted, but many entirely melted.

2. Artificial tridymite. After heating some pure quartz crystals at approximately 1350° for 144 hours the quartz has inverted mostly to cristobalite but a few grains inverted to tridymite and these grains were used in these experiments. (See results under No. 7 above.)

Temperature (corrected).	Sample Quenched after:	Results.
1667°	10 min.	The tridymite in both cases inverted to dense grains of cristobalite without melting.
1677°	6 min.	

3. Natural tridymite. Locality: Cerro San Cristobal, near Pachuca, Mexico. National Museum No. 51,288. Clear, faceted crystals, having the same refractive index as (1) the artificial tridymite above, (2) the tridymite from the glass furnace, (3) some natural tridymite crystals obtained through the kindness of Mr. E. S. Larsen, Jr., of the U. S. Geological Survey.

Temperature	Sample Quenched after:	Results.
1677°	5 min.	Many grains all glass, some few partly melted.
1667°	10 min.	A clear crystal which showed no sign of inversion or melting.

[12] U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. **640**, 133, 1916. Schaller's values of the refractive indices of this material are about 0·004 higher than Fenner's for pure tridymite.

The thermoelements when calibrated at the Pd point gave 16080 microvolts. A standard element gives 16140 microvolts.

Discussion of Results on Tridymite and Cristobalite.

This is, we believe, the first time that the inversion of quartz to tridymite by dry heat has ever been observed experimentally. In No. 2 we have inverted quartz to tridymite and then this tridymite to cristobalite by means of this agency alone. Tridymite melts sharply at a temperature of 1670° ± 10°.

Our results confirm the earlier observations of Fenner,[13] who considered the region of stability of cristobalite to be above that of tridymite.

Summary.

1. A new type of furnace has been described capable of maintaining, in an oxidizing atmosphere, a charge at temperatures slightly above 1700° for periods of time of at least a few hours. This furnace is constructed on the cascade principle; the inner coil is of an alloy of platinum with 20% rhodium, the outer coil of pure platinum. The two coils are insulated from each other by well burned magnesia powder and the inner coil is wound on a helically grooved magnesia tube.

2. The melting point of cristobalite has been redetermined with the aid of the above-described furnace. The new value is 1710° ± 10°C.

3. The melting point of tridymite has been determined for the first time. It melts at 1670° ± 10°C.

4. Quartz has been directly inverted to tridymite by means of dry heat alone.

The region of stability for cristobalite lies above that for tridymite.

Geophysical Laboratory,
Carnegie Institution of Washington,
Washington, D. C.

[13] C. N. Fenner, this Journal, 36, 381, 1913.

Art. XIV.—*The Application of Rapidly Rotating Metallic Reductors in the Determination of Vanadic Acid;* by F. A. Gooch and Walter Scott.

(Contributions from the Kent Chemical Laboratory of Yale Univ.,—ccci.)

I.

The Reduction of Vanadic Acid in Analysis.

It has been shown by Edgar[1] that vanadic acid in solution with sulphuric acid or hydrochloric acid may be reduced definitely to the condition of the tetroxide by the action of metallic silver, also that the reaction between silver and vanadic acid in presence of sulphuric acid, may be applied in extremely accurate methods for the determination of vanadium, the amount of that element being indicated either by the loss in weight of the silver, by titration of the dissolved silver sulphate with standard thiocyanate, or by oxidation of the vanadium tetroxide by standard permanganate. It was found that massive silver in the form of fine wire (1·5 grm.) gave complete reduction of 0·1200 grm. V_2O_5, but only after long boiling (1 hr.) of the solution in contact with that metal, and that the form of silver best adapted to the purpose was electrolytic silver deposited from the nitrate solution as a "bush" of finely divided crystals subsequently purified by boiling in dilute sulphuric acid, filtering off in an alundum crucible, and igniting to a low red heat. With silver thus prepared the action is very rapid in a boiling solution of the vanadic and sulphuric acids and a complete reduction of an amount of vanadic acid equivalent to 0·1200 grm. of the pentoxide was obtained by boiling for ten minutes with 2 grm. of the silver.

The work of which an account is here given originated in an attempt to substitute massive silver for the finely divided silver, the preparation of which is somewhat elaborate. Subsequently the experimentation was extended to the similar use of copper and of zinc as the reducing metal. In all the experiments to be described the vanadic acid acted upon by the reducer was liberated by sulphuric acid from a preparation of ammonium vanadate which yielded on ignition an average content of 77·25% of vanadium pentoxide.

[1] Jour. Am. Chem. Soc., 38, 1297, 1916.

Reduction by Massive Silver.—The first experiments with massive silver were made to test the effect of increasing the superficial area of the silver which is exposed to the action of the vanadic and sulphuric acids. In these experiments pure sheet silver weighing about 5 grm. and measuring about 2 centimeters square and a millimeter thick was cut with radial slits, bent to rose form and placed in a trapped Erlenmeyer flask, in a solution made by dissolving the ammonium vanadate in water (50 $cm.^3$) and adding sulphuric acid. The solution was boiled, the volume of the liquid, 75 $cm.^3$ at the start, being kept above 60 $cm.^3$ by addition of water as necessary during the process. At the end of the boiling the silver was removed from the liquid, washed, dried by heating gently and weighed, the loss in weight representing the vanadium pentoxide reduced according to the expression 2Ag V_2O_5. In three of these experiments, the reduced vanadic acid in hot solution was titrated by nearly N/10 potassium permanganate standardized against sodium oxalate. A correction (amounting to 0·12 $cm.^3$; 0·00082 grm. in terms of V_2O_5) for the permanganate required to produce a reading color in a similar solution of sulphuric acid, silver sulphate and unreduced vanadic acid was applied in these determinations. The details of these experiments are given in Table I.

TABLE I.

Reduction of Vanadic Acid by Massive Silver in the Boiling Solution.

V_2O_5 taken as ammonium vanadate grm.	Loss of silver grm.	V_2O_5 equivalent to loss of silver grm.	V_2O_5 equivalent to $KMnO_4$ (corrected) grm.	Error by loss of silver grm.	By $KMnO_4$ process grm.	Time min.
0·0776	0·0902	0·0762		—0·0014		20
0·0807	0·0950	0·0803		—0·0004		25
0·0803	0·0941	0·0795		—0·0008		25
0·0777	0·0920	0·0777		0·0000		35
0·0807	0·0950	0·0803	0·0806	—0·0004	—0·0001	30
0·0777	0·0920	0·0777	0·0778	0·0000	+0·0001	30
0·0803	0·0941	0·0795	0·0803	—0·0008	0·0000	30

These experiments show that massive silver of sufficient surface may effect the reduction of vanadic acid within a reasonable time from the boiling solution containing sulphuric acid, a reacting surface of about 10 cm.^{2} of silver insuring the complete reduction of vanadic acid equivalent to about 0·08 grm. of vanadium pentoxide within thirty minutes. No advantage was gained when the liquid was stirred by a cylinder of silver or a silver-platinum couple rotating rapidly in the hot solution. We have, however, been able to effect a very considerable improvement in the rapidity of reduction of vanadic acid in presence of sulphuric acid by the use of a rapidly rotating anode of silver in the electrolytic cell containing the dissolved acids.

Reduction with the Aid of the Silver Anode.—It has been shown by Truchot[2] that when vanadic acid in the presence of very small amounts of sulphuric acid is submitted to the slow action of an electric current of low amperage, between platinum electrodes, vanadium in a condition of oxidation lower than that of the tetroxide may be deposited upon the cathode. The presence of too much sulphuric acid interferes with this deposition. In some experimenting with the rapid reduction of vanadic acid between platinum electrodes in dilute sulphuric acid and at high amperage we have found, as is natural (inasmuch as the reduced vanadium compounds remain in solution), that the reduction is irregular and dependent upon the relation of the areas of the anode and the cathode. Our attention was directed, therefore, to the use of an electrolytic cell in which a rapidly rotating cylinder of silver served as the anode.

In the following experiments, the amounts of ammonium vanadate indicated (approximately 0·1 grm.) were dissolved in 75 cm.^{3} of hot water, sulphuric acid (10 cm.^{3} 1:1) was added and the solution was heated to the boiling temperature and then submitted to the action of the electric current passing between a rotating silver anode and a stationary platinum cathode measuring 2 cm. $\times$ 5 cm. For the silver anode we made use of a cylindrical silver crucible, 10 cm. long and 2·5 cm. in diameter, dipping in the liquid to a depth of about 4 cm. and exposing to action a surface of about 30 cm.^{2} which, after considerable use had resulted in the eating away of the bottom of the crucible so that the anode became an open tube, was practically doubled. The anode was attached to the rotating spindle

[2] Ann. Chem. Anal., 7, 165, 1902.

by means of a bored rubber stopper and electrical connection was made between the iron spindle and the tubular anode by a strip of platinum foil held in contact with both by the pressure of the rubber stopper.

The current was delivered from a 16-volt storage battery and the rotating motor, on a 110-volt circuit, was run at a rate of 700-900 revolutions per minute. In the action of this cell the vanadic acid was quickly reduced to the condition of the tetroxide and the reduction may proceed further, but the action of the silver sulphate formed by the solution of the anode will automatically restore the condition of oxidation to that of the tetroxide with the precipitation of metallic silver, as shown by Gooch and Gilbert.[3] The end of reduction to the stage of the tetroxide is therefore indicated by the appearance of precipitated silver in suspension. After the electrolytic reduction the liquid was therefore boiled for five minutes to coagulate the suspended silver, filtered, diluted to a volume of 250 $cm.^3$, again heated to boiling and titrated with standard potassium permanganate. The results of preliminary experiments showing the rate of reduction under the conditions are given in *A* of Table II. The results of a final series of experiments in which the reduction was stopped when a distinct cloudiness appeared in the solution are given in *B* of Table II. The experimentally determined correction for the amount of permanganate needed to produce color in the blank determination (0·12 $cm.^3$) was precisely the same as in the experiments of Table I. It is plain that this procedure yields exact and regular results with great rapidity.

Reduction with the Aid of the Copper Anode.—The successful use of the silver anode in the reduction of vanadic acid suggested the similar use of the cheaper copper. In the experiments immediately following the procedure was essentially similar to that adopted in the preceding experiments with the silver anode.

In preliminary tests to determine the rate of reduction the anode was a hollow cylinder of commercial copper exposing a surface of about 25 $cm.^2$ to the action of 60 $cm.^3$ of solution containing 5 $cm.^3$ of concentrated sulphuric acid. The platinum cathode measured 2 cm. by 5 cm. The results of these tests are given in Table III.

[3] This Journal, **15**, 389, 1903.

TABLE II.

Reduction of Vanadic Acid with the Aid of the Silver Anode in the Electrolytic Cell.

V_2O_5 taken as ammonium vanadate grm.	V_2O_5 found by $KMnO_4$ (corrected) grm.	Error grm.	Period of reduction min.	Revolutions of anode: approximate number per minute	Strength of current amp.
		A.			
0·0780	·0211	—·0569	1	700-900	2
0·0786	·0639	—·0147	2	700-900	2
0·0790	·0750	—·0040	3	700-900	2
0·0783	·0741	—·0042	3	700-900	2
0·0780	·0757	—·0023	4	700-900	2
0·0781	·0768	—·0013	4	700-900	2
0·0779	·0774	—·0005	5	700-900	2
0·0779	·0783	+·0004	5	700-900	2
0·0781	·0781	·0000	6	700-900	2
0·0785	·0781	—·0004	6	700-900	2
		B.			
0·0773	·0770	—·0003	5*	700-900	2
0·0781	·0776	—·0005	5*	700-900	2
0·0784	·0785	+·0001	5*	700-900	2
0·0786	·0783	—·0003	5*	700-900	2
0·0781	·0781	·0000	5*	700-900	2
0·0785	·0787	+·0002	5*	700-900	2
0·0778	·0778	·0000	5*	700-900	2
0·0786	·0786	·0000	5*	700-900	2
0·0773	·0774	+·0001	5*	700-900	2
0·0786	·0781	—·0005	5*	700-900	2
0·0776	·0777	+·0001	5*	700-900	2
0·0773	·0770	—·0003	5*	700-900	2

*Approximate: to appearance of distinct cloudiness.

These results were sufficient to show that the reduction proceeds more rapidly at the higher temperature and to serve as a guide in the following experiments in which over-reduction of vanadic acid was corrected by the addition of silver sulphate, as in the procedure of Gooch and Gilbert,[4] boiling of the solution, and filtration from the precipitated silver. The correction to be applied in the permanganate titration (determined by experiments in blank) proved to be somewhat variable when the anode was made of commercial copper; while with electrolytic

[4] Loc. cit.

copper the amount of the permanganate solution necessary to produce the reading color (in a solution which had undergone treatment precisely as in the usual determinations, excepting that the ammonium vanadate was added just before the titration and after the electrolysis, treatment with silver sulphate, boiling, and filtration) was regular and definite.

TABLE III.

Rate of Reduction of Vanadic Acid with the Aid of the Anode of Commercial Copper:

Preliminary Experiments.

V_2O_5 taken as ammonium vanadate grm.	V_2O_5 found by $KMnO_4$ (corrected) grm.	Error grm.	Period of reduction min.	Revolutions of anode (approx.) per min.	Strength of current amp.
		A.			
		At room temperature: 20°-23°.			
0·0781	0·0203	—0·0578	2	800	2
0·0784	0·0292	—0·0492	3	800	2
0·0779	0·0432	—0·0347	4	800	2
0·0784	0·0533	—0·0251	5	800	2
0·0780	0·0587	—0·0193	6	900	2
0·0781	0·0680	—0·0101	7	800	2
0·0783	0·0787	+0·0004	9	800	2
0·0784	0·0953	+0·0169	11	800	2
		B.			
		Started at boiling temperature.			
0·0779	0·0563	—0·0216	2	800	2
0·0784	0·0809	+0·0025	3	800	2
0·0779	0·0944	+0·0165	4	800	2

In the experiments recorded in Table IV, therefore, the anode was made of electrolytic copper plated from a solution of iron-free copper sulphate upon a silver tube. The conditions of action were similar to those of the previously described experiments with the silver anode: viz.—volume of solution heated to boiling at the outset, 75 cm.^{3}; sulphuric acid (conc.), 5 cm.^{3}; diameter of anode 2·5 cm. and area exposed to action, 30 cm.^{2}; area of platinum cathode, 10 cm.^{2}; revolutions of anode, about 800 per minute. At the end of the process of reduction the solution was treated with silver sulphate (10 cm.^{3} of the saturated solution), heated to boiling, filtered from the precipitated silver, diluted to a volume of 150 cm.^{2} and titrated with standard permanganate. The carefully determined correction in blank, amounting very regularly to 0·2 cm.^{3} of the permanganate solution, was applied to the direct results of titration. The record of Table IV shows plainly that excellent results may be obtained very rapidly in the reduction of vanadic acid with the use of an electrolytic copper anode in the electrolytic cell, and correction with silver sulphate for over-reduction, in the manner described.

TABLE IV.

Reduction of Vanadic Acid by means of Electrolytic Copper in the Electrolytic Cell and Correction by Silver Sulphate.

V_2O_5 taken as ammonium vanadate grm.	V_2O_5 found by $KMnO_4$ (corrected)* grm.	Error grm.	Period of reduction min.	Revolutions of anode: number per min.	Approximate strength of current amp.
0·0784	·0782	—·0002	3·5	800	2
0·0773	·0775	+·0002	3·5	800	2
0·0782	·0784	+·0002	3·5	800	2
0·0776	·0778	+·0002	3·5	800	2

* 0·20 cm.^{3} $KMnO_4$ solution.

Reduction of Vanadic Acid by Zinc.—As is well known, the reduction of vanadic acid in sulphuric acid solution is easy and in the Jones reductor action may be readily pushed to the stage of vanadium dioxide, V_2O_2.[5] It is to be expected, therefore, that the reduction by means of the rotating cylinder of zinc will be rapid without the aid of the electric current; nevertheless, in our earlier experiments with this device it was found that the dimensions of the rotating cylinder must be considerable in relation to the volume of liquid in order that the stirring of the liquid may be sufficient to bring about the reduction with rapidity. For example, at the end of seven minutes the vanadic acid corresponding to 0·1 grm. of the ammonium vanadate in the hot sulphuric acid solution was not completely reduced to the condition of the tetroxide, V_2O_4, by the action of a rod of zinc 0·5 cm. in diameter, making a

[5] Roscoe, Ann. Chem. Suppl. vi, 77, 1868; Glasman, Ber. d. chem. Ges., 38, 600, 1905; Gooch and Gilbert, this Journal, 15, 389, 1903; Gooch and Edgar, ibid., 25, 233, 1908; ibid., 25, 322, 1908.

thousand revolutions per minute and exposing a reaction surface of about ·9 cm.^{2} in 80 cm.^{3} of liquid; on the other hand, under similar conditions, the reduction passed the stage of the tetroxide within two minutes when the diameter of the cylinder was 2 cm., and the exposed surface about 25 cm.^{2} In the experiments to be described the zinc cylinder was cast from the best commercial spelter in the form of a hollow cylinder, closed at one end, having a diameter of 2 cm. and a length of 9·5 cm. In use, this cylinder was immersed to a depth of about 4 cm. and exposed an active surface of about 25 cm.^{2} It was attached to the rotating axis by means of a rubber stopper. At the end of the process of reduction the solution was diluted to a volume of 250 cm.^{3}, heated to boiling, and titrated with standard permanganate. The correction in blank for the materials used, which proved to be regular and amounted to 0·18 cm.^{3} of the permanganate solution, was applied to the titration figures. The results of determinations of the rapidity of reduction made under the conditions indicated are given in Table V. The details of these preliminary experiments show that the rapidity of the reduction depends upon the initial temperatures, as well as upon the rate of rotation and the volume of the solution, but that it makes very little difference whether the zinc cylinder is simply rotated in the solution or is made an anode in the electrolytic cell.

These preliminary experiments show a considerable degree of variation in the rapidity of the reduction, the influential factors being chiefly the volume of the solution, relative size and rate of rotation of the reducing cylinder, and the temperature. The slight advantage in the use of the electric current would not seem to warrant its use in the reduction of vanadic acid by means of the rotating zinc cylinder. The following determinations, in which over-reduction of the vanadic acid was corrected by the use of silver sulphate, were made therefore without the aid of electrolytic action. In these experiments the conditions were the following: viz.—volume of solution heated to boiling at the outset, 80 cm.^{3}; sulphuric acid (conc.) 5 cm.^{3}; diameter of cylinder, 2 cm.; surface of cylinder exposed to action, 25 cm.^{2}; revolutions of cylinder per minute, 850. At the end of the process of reduction the solution was diluted to a volume of 250 cm.^{3}, treated with silver sulphate (10 cm.^{3} of the saturated

TABLE V.

Reduction of Vanadic Acid by the Rotating Zinc Cylinder: Preliminary Experiments.

V_2O_5 taken as ammonium vanadate grm.	V_2O_5 found by $KMnO_4$ (corrected) grm.	Error grm.	Period of reduction min.	Revolutions of anode: number per min.	Approximate strength of current amp.	Conc. H_2SO_4 present cm^3
			A.			
		Reduction at room temperature.				
0·0781	0·0218	—0·0563	1	800	2	5
0·0782	0·0249	—0·0533	1	800	2	5
0·0781	0·0455	—0·0325	2	800	2	5
0·0777	0·0654	—0·0123	4	800	2	5
0·0782	0·0839	+0·0157	6	800	2	5
0·0780	0·0994	+0·0214	6	800	2	5
0·0781	0·1140	+0·0359	8	800	2	5
			B.			
		Reduction begun at boiling temperature.				
0·0779	0·0782	+0·0003	1	800	2	1
0·0775	0·1208	+0·0429	2	800	2	1
0·0779	0·0746	—0·0033	1	800	2	2·5
0·0775	0·0882	+0·0107	1	800	2	2·5
0·0780	0·0664	—0·0116	1	800	2	2·5
0·0776	0·1155	+0·0379	2	800	2	2·5
0·0776	0·0917	+0·0141	2	800	2	2·5
0·0777	0·0678	—0·0099	1	800	None	1
0·0777	0·1070	+0·0293	2	800	"	1
0·0778	0·0756	—0·0022	1	800	"	2·5
0·0780	0·0918	+0·0138	2	800	"	2·5
0·0776	0·0399	—0·0377	1	300	"	5
0·0775	0·0751	—0·0024	1	800	"	5
0·0785	0·0790	+0·0005	1	800	"	5
0·0785	0·0838	+0·0053	1	800	2	5

solution), filtered from the precipitated silver, heated to boiling, and titrated with standard permanganate. A correction amounting regularly to 0·18 cm.[3] of the permanganate solution, as determined in blank, has been applied in every case.

These results indicate the extreme rapidity and accuracy with which vanadic acid in the presence of sulphuric

TABLE VI.

Reduction of Vanadic Acid by means of the Rotating Cylinder of Zinc and Correction by Silver Sulphate.

V_2O_5 taken as ammonium vanadate grm.	V_2O_5 found by $KMnO_4$ (corrected) grm.	Error grm.	Period of reduction	Revolutions of reducing cylinder: number per minute
0·0780	0·0799	—0·0001	1 min. 10 sec.	850
0·0777	0·0777	0·0000	1 " 10 "	850
0·0779	0·0777	—0·0002	1 " 15 "	850
0·0776	0·0777	+0·0001	1 " 15 "	850
0·0779	0·0780	+0·0001	1 " 15 "	850

acid may be reduced by the rotating zinc reductor. Experiments with an amalgamated zinc cylinder showed that in this case the reduction proceeds similarly but much more slowly.

It has been shown that while vanadic acid may be reduced within a reasonable time, in presence of dilute sulphuric acid, by the action of massive silver of considerable area in the boiling solution, the reduction may be made very rapid with the aid of rapidly rotating anodes of silver or copper in the electrolytic cell, or by a rapidly rotating reducer of zinc, over-reduction being corrected by the action of silver sulphate.

Art. XV.—*Notes on the Geology of Rhode Island;* by A. C. Hawkins.

Introduction.

The recent paper by B. K. Emerson,[1] covering the geology of Massachusetts and Rhode Island, with its geologic map, sets forth in a somewhat generalized way that of the area included in western Rhode Island. The material herewith submitted, largely the results of investigations in the latter area by the present writer during the years 1912-1916, is in accord in many important respects with Professor Emerson's conclusions, and may serve to furnish certain of the geologic details not hitherto available.

Acid Igneous Rocks.

The State of Rhode Island is underlain by a great granitic batholith, whose members, now all more or less badly sheared, are represented by three principal types, the Milford, Northbridge, and Sterling granite gneisses. These are biotite granite gneisses of closely similar composition,[2] each with its distinguishing characteristics (although certain phases of each resemble the others very closely at times), and together or separately they have invaded all of the older rocks of this region. The part of the granitic mass exposed to the west of the Carboniferous sediments of the Narragansett Basin is in its arrangement about as follows: In the northwestern portion of the State, as far south as the vicinity of Moosup Valley, and from thence southeastward toward East Greenwich, is found the Northbridge granite gneiss, covering the western half of Providence County and a portion of Kent County; northwest and west of Providence, in the eastern half of Providence County, as far west as the general vicinity of Woonsocket, and perhaps somewhat farther westward (compare Emerson, op. cit.), occurs the Milford granite gneiss; and farther south, from East Greenwich southward toward Point Judith and

[1] U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 597, 1917.

[2] Emerson, B. K., and Perry, J. H., U. S. Geol. Surv., Bull. 311, 9-10, 45-47, 1907; Loughlin, G. F., this Journal, 29, 447-457, 1910; U. S. Geol. Surv., Bull. 492, 35-38, 1912.

westward to the Connecticut line, the Sterling granite gneiss is to be seen. Their age relationships are somewhat obscure, since contact zones are usually either covered with glacial debris or occupied by streams or tidal estuaries. Some evidence as to age is, however, available.

Much of the contact zone between the Northbridge and Milford granite gneisses is occupied by an acidic granite phase like the "northfieldite" of Emerson.[3] Yet a mile northwest of Oak Valley, R. I., near the road, at a point where it makes a sudden detour, just southwest of the right-angled cross-roads, a granite gneiss of Milford type is in contact with a very dark phase of the Northbridge granite gneiss. The former appears to intrude the latter and to include portions of it. From these rather unsatisfactory bits of evidence it has been concluded that the Milford is probably at least slightly younger in age than the Northbridge.[4] Between the Northbridge and the Sterling, aplites are found to obscure the relations in the principal places where exposures are available. On Nooseneck Hill, and again just north of Summit, however, a coarse porphyritic pink granite gneiss is found to be thoroughly interlaminated with a fine-grained gray granite gneiss type. This is interpreted to represent the contact zone between the Northbridge and the Sterling and to indicate that the contact is gradational. The Northbridge and Sterling granite gneisses are alike in many respects, and it might be reasonable even to suggest that the Northbridge type may be a modification of that of the Sterling, due to excessive assimilation of basic material (hereafter to be more fully discussed), perhaps in conjunction with processes of differentiation which were possibly set in motion by the latter process. It is to be hoped that in spite of scarcity of good exposures the relations of these granite gneisses may in time be discovered in detail. (See further discussion below.)

East of the Carboniferous sediments of the Narragansett Basin a similar series of granite gneisses is exposed. Exact relationships with the foregoing types are not known, but it has been suggested[5] that certain of the rocks closely resemble the Milford and Northbridge type; and

[3] Emerson, B. K., this Journal, 40, 212-217, 1915.

[4] Warren, C. H., and Powers, S., Bull. Geol. Soc. Am., 25, 459, 1914. (See also Emerson, op. cit.)

[5] (a) Emerson and Perry, op. cit., 10. (b) Shaler, N. S., Woodworth, J. B., and Foerste, A. F., U. S. Geol. Surv., Mon. XXXIII, 274, 1899.

while there is little or no evidence of the relative age of this granite gneiss series where it is adjacent to the green schists of Little Compton, R. I., it is the writer's opinion that they do intrude and include these schists.

The pre-Carboniferous age of the Northbridge granite gneiss is established beyond doubt by its relations to the Carboniferous sediments in the area south of Woonsocket. From the latter city, a long narrow area of siliceous sedimentary rocks, the southward extension of the "Bellingham Series" of Warren and Powers,[6] called by the present writer the Woonsocket Basin Series, mentioned and outlined in the Report of the Natural Resources Survey of Rhode Island for 1909, and so named, extends from the Massachusetts line for a distance of thirteen miles into Rhode Island. These sedimentary rocks resemble the Carboniferous sediments of the Narragansett basin (compare analyses in Table I), although they are much more thoroughly metamorphosed than the latter, being in places changed into biotite schists; but their age is established by a few fragmentary imprints of stems of Cordaites, obtained by the writer from a railroad cut just west of Woonsocket and northeast of Woonsocket Hill. The structure of the granite gneiss bordering this basin, as indicated by the dip and strike of its foliation, shows that the Woonsocket Basin sediments occupy the eroded summit of an anticline with slightly northward pitching axis in the Northbridge and Milford granite gneisses (see map, fig. 1). For a distance of several miles south of Woonsocket the border of the sediments is indistinguishable from the granite gneiss of the side of the basin, the former grading into the latter through arkosic beds (which are best shown on the west side of the basin just north of West Greenville, R. I.). South of the Waterman Reservoir, north of North Scituate, is exposed a great thickness of Carboniferous sedimentary arkoses, basal beds of the series, containing large amounts of blue quartz grains which are especially typical of the Milford granite gneiss and at times are also present in the Northbridge. The Carboniferous sediments have been removed by erosion south of North Scituate, although the structural basin persists to South Scituate, where on account of the pitch of the anticlinal axis, it disappears.

[6] Warren and Powers, op. cit., 448-449.

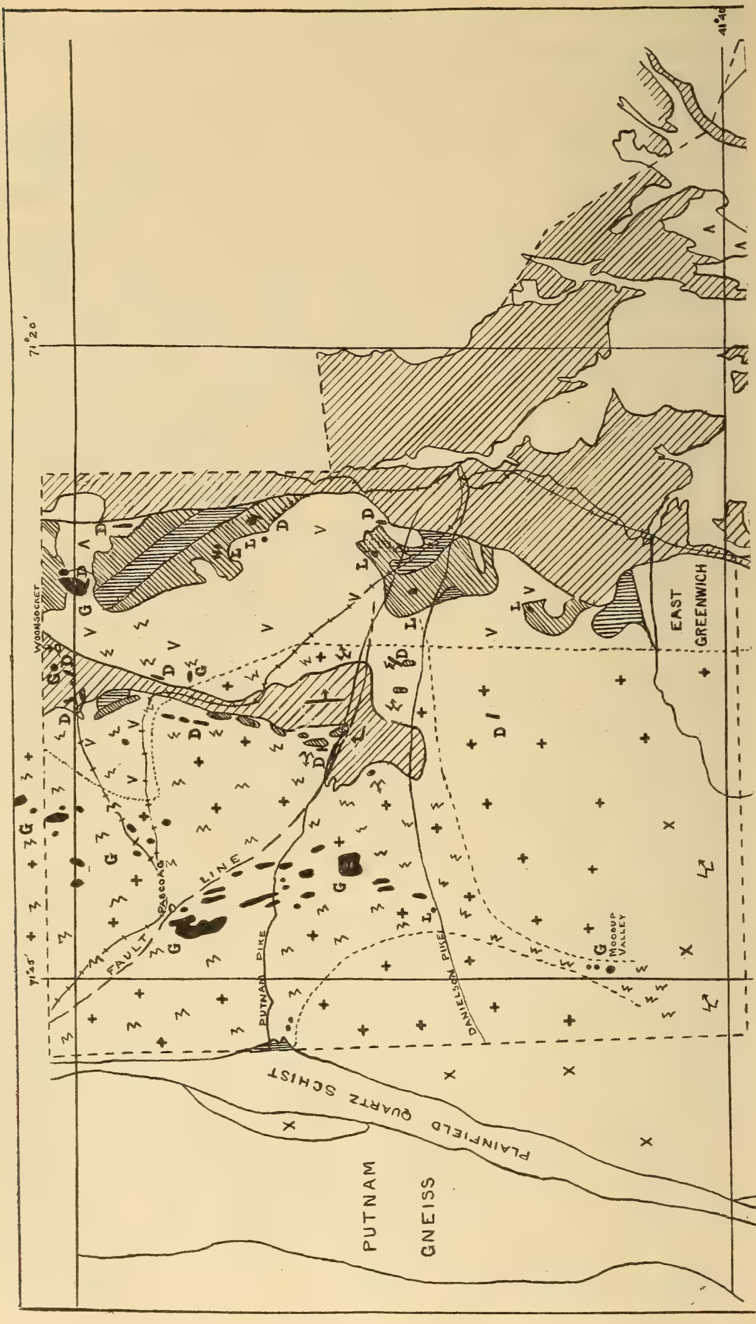


Fig. 1. Geological map of Rhode Island.

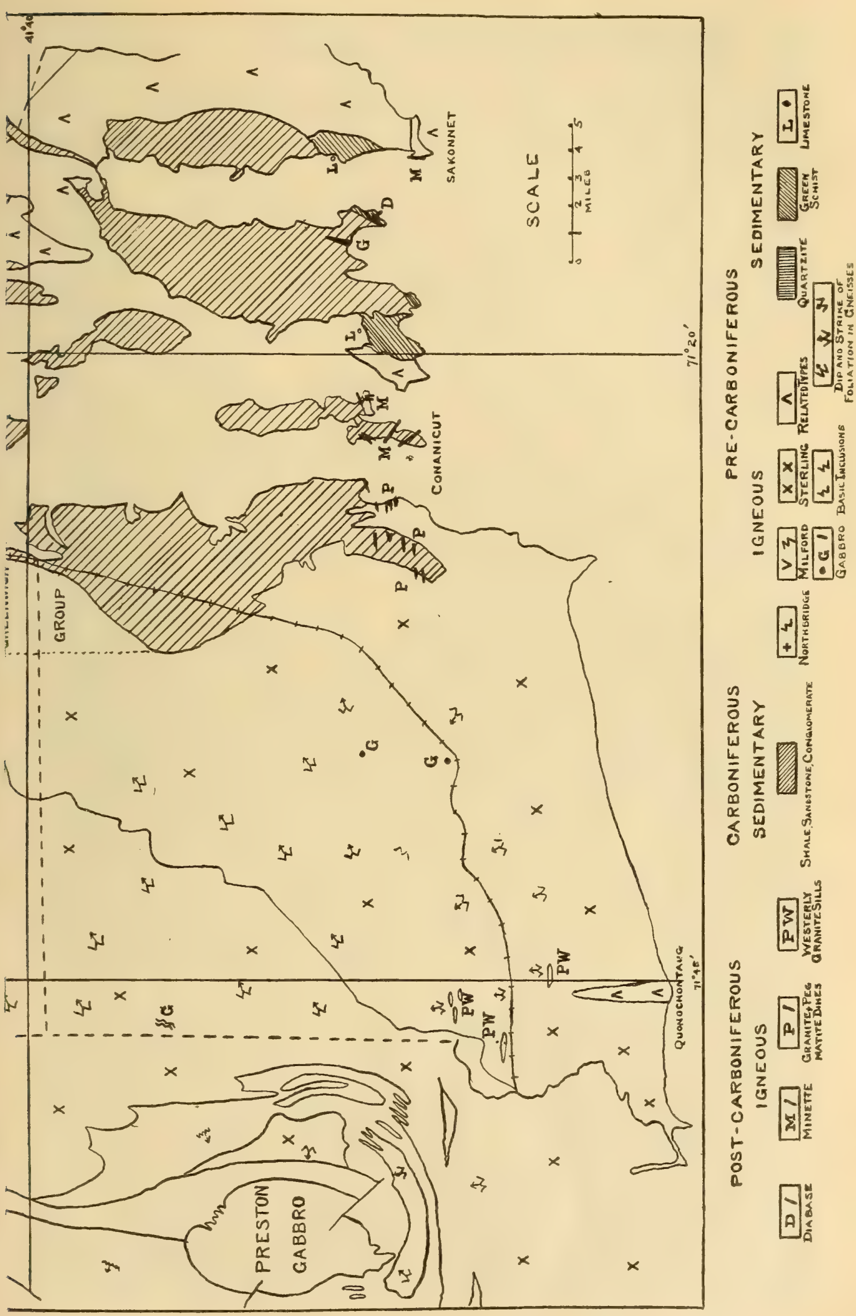

PRESTON GABBRO
GROUP
CONANICUT
SAKONNET
QUONOCHONTAUG
71°45'
71°20'
SCALE
MILES
POST-CARBONIFEROUS
IGNEOUS
D / DIABASE
M / MINETTE
P / GRANITE, PEGMATITE DIKES
PW WESTERLY GRANITE SILLS
CARBONIFEROUS
SEDIMENTARY
SHALE, SANDSTONE, CONGLOMERATE
PRE-CARBONIFEROUS
IGNEOUS
NORTHBRIDGE
MILFORD
STERLING
RELATED TYPES
GABBRO
BASIC INCLUSIONS
DIP AND STRIKE OF FOLIATION IN GNEISSES
SEDIMENTARY
QUARTZITE
GREEN SCHIST
LIMESTONE

Table I.

Analyses of Carboniferous Sediments from Rhode Island.

No.	24	25
SiO_2	79·77%	61·70%
Al_2O_3	13·99	27·18
Fe_2O_3	·64	8·02
MgO	·37	·47
CaO	·30	·50
Na_2O	2·40	
K_2O	2·54	Igni-
H_2O	·38	tion
CO_2	·06	Loss = 2·90
S		None
MnO	Tr.	
	100·45%	100·77%
Sp. Gr.	2·690 (porous).	

24. Arkose, Summit of Snake Hill, Harmony, R. I.; Woonsocket Basin. A. C. Hawkins.
25. Shale, Windmill Hill, Providence, R. I.; Narragansett Basin. A. F. Buddington. (Composite sample every 2 feet across quarry, excluding ottrelitic shales on west wall.)

The Milford granite gneiss also, together with its included quartzites and basic rocks, is clearly pre-Carboniferous. At Nautaconkanut Hill, southwest of Providence, for instance, a basal Carboniferous conglomerate, exposed along the east side of the hill, contains pebbles of granite gneiss, green schist, and quartzite, plainly derived from adjacent outcrops of the latter rocks in the immediate vicinity. On the east side of Narragansett Bay, arkosic gradations of Carboniferous sediments into the bordering granite gneiss are very plainly exposed, as at Steep Brook, north of Fall River, and in the railroad cut at Tiverton. On Conanicut Island similar conditions are found.

The Sterling granite gneiss is at first much more difficult to place as to age relations to the Carboniferous, whereas all the contacts along the Narragansett Bay front appear to be obscured, largely by a long tidal estuary (Pattaquamscott River) which occupies the contact line. Loughlin[7] has maintained that certain coarse pegmatites and granites which intrude the Carboniferous sediments at Tower Hill and elsewhere in that vicinity are probably connected with the Sterling granite gneiss and seem to indicate the post-Carboniferous age of the latter.

[7] Loughlin, G. F., this Journal, 29, 450-455, 1910.

It should be noted, however, that similar pegmatites also cut the Sterling as freely as they do the sediments (op. cit.). Such intrusions of both the granite and its bordering invaded rocks does not destroy the possibility that the pegmatites may be a late phase following the intrusion of the main portion of the Sterling batholith. The pegmatites, however, seem quite free from gneissic shear effects similar to those in the Sterling. Intrusion after solidification of the Sterling batholith would naturally appear in strongest development along its border, especially if there were some faulting along that border, as there may have been in the vicinity of Tower Hill. These pegmatite and granite dikes, as suggested by Professor C. W. Brown, may well be more easily supposed to be contemporaneous with the Westerly granite intrusion (post-Sterling) than with the Sterling granite gneiss itself; then, too, a small dike of granite similar in type to the Westerly granite, to which the writer's attention was called by Professor Brown, intrudes the Carboniferous sediments at Hamilton, just south of the point where the trolley track intersects the highway. If actually connected with the Westerly intrusive granite sills, this dike would establish the post-Carboniferous age of the Westerly granite. Additional and seemingly conclusive evidence of the pre-Carboniferous age of the Sterling granite gneiss is furnished by the following field evidence:—

A few years ago the Natural Resources Survey of Rhode Island (with which the writer was at that time working in the field), in the course of work in the western part of the State, made careful records, under the direction of the Superintendent, Professor Brown, of dips and strikes of gneissic foliation of the various outcrops of granite gneisses and associated rocks of the area. In spite of scarcity of good outcrops, and the obscurity of data caused by the extreme metamorphism, many good readings were made and recorded. These the writer, in the course of this present work, subsequently plotted, in addition to other, personal, observations in the northwestern portion of the State. The Sterling granite gneiss is a rock whose gneissic character is pronounced and widespread, in Rhode Island as well as in eastern Connecticut (a point not noted by Loughlin), giving it a banded structure, which, whether due to flowage or regional metamorphism, or both, is definitely connected with a pitching geo-synclinal and -anticlinal structure of Alpine proportions in southern and western Rhode Island (see map, fig. 1). The largest and most clearly defined fold in the granite, concerning whose anticlinal or synclinal nature no conclusion can be reached, on account of insufficient and ill-defined exposures, curves sharply around the resistant mass of the Preston gabbro in the adjacent part of Connecticut. The latter gabbro mass is included in the granite gneiss; hence the observed phenomena might be attributed to actual flow of the granite about the inclusion, or to later shear effects about the resistant gabbro body during regional metamorphism. The present writer favors the latter hypothesis because the foliation in the granite gneiss seems to be connected with the presence of feldspar phenocrysts and augen best explained as secondary in origin due to such regional deformation. If this latter supposition be true, then a kind of deformation greatly different from and probably vastly older than the folds of the Appalachians to the westward is indicated. This deformation swings eastward toward the Narragansett Basin; it then turns northward and extends in this direction through northern Rhode Island and into Massachusetts, and northeastward apparently to Boston Bay, forming a complicated series of synclinal and anticlinal folds, one of the latter, after deep erosion of the mountain mass in pre-Carboniferous times, being filled with the Carboniferous sediments of the Woonsocket Basin. It appears that the Carboniferous sediments of the Narragansett Basin were similarly laid down at this time in a more deeply and widely eroded structural basin between the mass of deformed granites just described and the very similarly deformed granites of the eastern side of the Narragansett Basin. Along the foliation caused by the deformation the Westerly granite[8] found its way upward, the intrusion following an east-west line along the Connecticut and Rhode Island shore and appearing probably in the small north-south granite sill at Foster, and farther north, and possibly in the vicinity of a small outcrop of a granite of similar appearance on the Rhode Island-Massachusetts line. The Westerly granite is massive and does not share in the gneissic structure which is so typical of the

[8] For a new analysis of the Westerly granite, see Table III, analysis no. 23.

Sterling and the Northbridge, and forms welded contacts at times across the gneissic banding of the former. But the field evidence shows clearly that the enormous pre-Carboniferous deformation, above described, affected the Sterling, Northbridge, and Milford granite gneisses all alike, together with the ancient quartzites and basic rocks included in them. It is therefore indicated that all of these granite gneisses are of pre-Carboniferous age.

Loughlin has sought to demonstrate the post-Carboniferous age of the Northbridge granite gneiss in northeastern Connecticut, stating that it intrudes the Putnam gneiss, which he considers to be Carboniferous,[9] since it "has been traced northward into Massachusetts, where it is represented by the Bolton gneiss. This rock at Worcester, Mass., has been shown by Perry and Emerson to lie conformably with quartzite and fossiliferous phyllite of known Carboniferous age, and is regarded by them as Carboniferous." But geological conformity seems to have little value in this region as a means of establishing identity of age. This is brought forcibly to our attention by the discovery of Carboniferous sediments on the eastern slope of Woonsocket Hill, in perfect apparent conformity with the finely exposed white quartzite of Cambrian or possibly earlier age which forms the backbone of the hill. Moreover, the writer, as already stated, has found the Northbridge granite gneiss in pre-Carboniferous relations along the Woonsocket Basin, and has followed it from thence westward through the northwestern part of Rhode Island into Connecticut, throughout which area, though the outcrops are widely scattered and the granite gneiss is modified in different ways, it preserves its essential characteristics. At a point a mile south of the hamlet of West Gloucester, R. I., on the Putnam Pike, at the base of the southwestern slope of a hill of Northbridge granite gneiss, the latter may be seen as apparently well-defined sills in a quartzite. This quartzite is the Plainfield quartz schist,[10] which Rice and Gregory[11] regard as "only a prominent and

[9] Loughlin, G. F., Conn. State. Geol. and Nat. Hist. Surv., Bull. 13, 146-148, 1910. This formation is mapped by Emerson (op. cit., 79) as gneiss of "Age Undetermined."

[10] Westboro ("Grafton") quartzite of Emerson, which he finds to lie unconformably upon the Northbridge granite gneiss.

[11] Rice, W. N., and Gregory, H. E., Conn. State Geol. & Nat. Hist. Surv., Bull. 6, 134, 1906.

clearly marked variation of the Putnam formation;" which invades Rhode Island from the west in a semicircular area not more than a mile long and half a mile wide. "All igneous rocks of the district occur as intrusions in the Putnam gneiss, and this formation is therefore older than the various dikes, sheets, pegmatite veins, and igneous masses found associated with it" (op. cit.). "The abundance of sheets of Sterling granite gneiss intruded into the Putnam formation" is especially emphasized; the same relationships obtain at Preston, Connecticut, farther south. The Putnam gneiss and associated quartzites of the Plainfield series are hence older than the Sterling and Northbridge members which here compose the great granite batholith by which they are surrounded; and for this reason they must be pre-Carboniferous in age; in fact the writer believes that this whole sedimentary series, including quartzite and gneiss, belongs among the rocks of vastly more ancient origin (which may be of Cambrian age or may possibly belong to a still older series like the Grenville,[12] but whose age, in the absence of fossils or other conclusive evidence, remains unknown), represented by the quartzites, limestones, green schists, and gabbros (the Blackstone series), presently to be described. Through intense metamorphism the basic rocks and the Carboniferous sediments have locally been altered so as to approach each other in appearance and mineral composition; by intrusion the Carboniferous shales of Wakefield, R. I., have been changed into hornblende schists, and by shearing in the Woonsocket Basin they have become mica schists; fundamental changes of this kind are such as to render correlation difficult by lithologic characteristics alone. Thus, for instance, there is little evidence to show whether the dark inclusions in the Westerly granite are Carboniferous in age or much older; (the writer, on account of facts observed in the field, favors the latter opinion).

A part of the southern portion of Conanicut Island is underlain by a granite which bears a strong resemblance to the Sterling granite gneiss to the west[13]; phenocrysts derived from it are found in the adjacent Carboniferous

[12] All classified together as "Algonkian?" by Emerson (idem).
[13] Loughlin, G. F., U. S. Geol. Surv., Bull. 492, 134, 1912.

arkose,[14] thus proving it to be "pre-Carboniferous."[15] Similar granites are found at Mount Hope, in Bristol, and at Common Fence Point, on the northern end of Aquidneck Island.

At three points along the southern Rhode Island coast there are exposures of granite of a different and perhaps later type. A very coarse reddish biotite granite with white feldspars underlies Sakonnet Point. It shows spots of dioritic appearance, inclusions, or due to differentiation. It cuts chlorite schist and is cut by aplite and minette. It becomes more gneissic eastward. Contact relations with surrounding formations are not exposed. A granite of closely similar appearance is extensively exposed at Newport.[16] Again relations are concealed. A similar state of affairs exists at the headland of Quonochontaug, which is formed of a coarse red biotite granite, cut by heavy pinkish pegmatite dikes.

Emerson and Perry[17] favor "the early Carboniferous age" of the East Greenwich granite group; yet "there is indication of a blending of the (granite porphyry) breccia upward with the ordinary Carboniferous conglomerate." This is taken to "suggest the idea that they are the result of an eruption of tuffaceous material rather than the result of slow erosion on the surface of the laccolith," the fragments seeming "to have been carried along and to have been cemented by a small quantity of the granite porphyry." However, "the recent discussions of Barrell, Mansfield, and others on the continental transportation of unaltered feldspathic material in semiarid regions suggests another explanation of the fresh granite pebbles in the conglomerate" (op. cit.). "The conclusive evidence seems to be lacking" (Foerste)[18]; but "the succession of events becomes simpler if we assume that the porphyries and microgranites of the series formed the surface of a rather thinly covered batholith, which was just exposed by erosion in early Carboniferous time."[17] The present writer agrees with the latter statements. The contact of the East Greenwich granite group with the adjacent

[14] Shaler, Woodworth, and Foerste, op. cit., 233.
[15] Emerson and Perry, op. cit., 46.
[16] Shaler, Woodworth, and Foerste, op. cit., 316.
[17] Op. cit., 69.
[18] Shaler, Woodworth, and Foerste, op. cit.

"pre-Cambrian" Northbridge gneiss is mapped by Emerson and Perry as an intrusive one, the East Greenwich granites being the younger. Relations with the Milford granite gneiss are not discussed by them. The field relations are obscure, but dikes of aplitic and granitic material which cut the granite gneisses in the vicinity of Riverpoint and Arctic might perhaps be referred to the East Greenwich group.

Felsites are not prominent in this State, and yet small occurrences are present in at least two places. In the adjacent area of South Attleboro, Massachusetts, they are extensively developed, being associated with Carboniferous sediments and diabase. At Diamond Hill, Cumberland, R. I., a considerable mass of dense felsite has been largely replaced by vein quartz,[19] but fragments of it are still plainly visible. There is also present on the crest of this quartz mass a small area of unknown extent underlain by a coarse biotite granite similar in appearance to that exposed in the quarries a mile farther west; relations of granite and vein quartz are not exposed. Again on the northwest slope of Bald Hill, in Scituate, in local drift, are found narrow red felsite dikes cutting a granite gneiss. This latter occurrence extends the zone of rhyolite occurrences in Rhode Island southward a little farther toward the far-away field of similar rocks at South Mountain, Pennsylvania.

A very well-defined zone extending from Wakefield through Newport to Sakonnet Point is occupied by pre-Carboniferous green schist, quartzite, limestone, and granite, cut by prominent intrusions of pegmatite, granite, diabase, gabbro, and minette, and bordered on the north and possibly also on the south by sediments of Carboniferous age. The writer suggests that this zone of ancient rocks may represent an elevated block or horst, separated by fault zones of nearly east-west strike (probably pre-Carboniferous in age) from adjacent blocks which have fallen away on the north and south. Within this zone of disturbance, at various times, the numerous intrusions have found their way upward. It is in line with the Westerly granites and pegmatites, also parallel to the coast line.

[19] Warren, C. H., and Powers, S., Bull. Geol. Soc. Am., 25, 472, 1914.

Basic Igneous Rocks.

Of basic igneous rocks there are three distinct types in the region herein studied, viz: Green Schist, Diabase, and Gabbro.

(1). *The Green Schist.*

This occurs at several localities within the area under consideration, namely, in the Blackstone Valley, northwest of Providence, and in Johnston and Cranston, west of Providence, where it is associated with white quartzite, as already mentioned; in similar relations at Premisy Hill, a small eminence 3 miles west-southwest of Woonsocket; and in several scattered exposures between West Greenville and Primrose. In the Blackstone Valley it has been mapped by Emerson and Perry (op. cit.) and assigned to the Cambrian (Marlboro formation). Other writers of earlier (Shaler, et al., op. cit.) and later date (Warren and Powers, op. cit.) would place it in the pre-Cambrian. (Compare also Emerson, op. cit.) On account of lack of evidence, determinations of the age of the green schist-quartzite series have been made from lithologic similarity of these rocks to others not visibly connected with them but of known age (the Cheshire and Westboro ("Grafton") quartzite; compare views of Emerson and Perry (op. cit.) with those of Warren and Powers (op. cit.)). ("Algonkian?" of Emerson). There are several localities in the southern part of the State where the occurrence of green schists or slaty rocks has repeatedly attracted attention. They have been enumerated by Foerste (op. cit.) as follows:

At Church's Cove, west of Tiverton Four Corners, and southward to Little Compton, a series of greenish shales is exposed, associated with rusty limestones intersected by numerous quartz veins. Green schists and slates on Sachuest Point are described, also those on Conanicut Island south of Jamestown, in the vicinity of the Dumplings, and those at Newport. At least two of these localities show the greenish rocks only in the most uncertain relations with the known Carboniferous sediments and the other adjacent rocks, so that little is known of their age, except that they are probably for the most part pre-Carboniferous. The altered dioritic "dikes" of "Paradise," near Newport, and a hornblende and actinolite schist along Sin and Flesh Brook, southeast of Tiverton, are apparently of similar age.

In the extreme northern part of the State, at Round Top, a fissile, closely plicated muscovite schist is associated with quartzite. The schist carries chlorite, and also garnets of small size and rarely black tourmaline. It is probably also closely related to the green schist series, being mapped as part of the Westboro quartzite by Emerson.

The green schists are quite generally gabbroid in composition (see analyses, Table II), and in appearance and behavior, though badly sheared, suggest "the derivation of some part of the material from basic tuffs" (Emerson and Perry, op. cit.), the tuffs being interbedded with the quartzites. Interlayering of the two kinds of rock at the contacts also affords for these authors additional evidence of sedimentary origin for the schist. There are a few beds of the green schist in the quartzite, however, which seem to actually represent intrusive sills in lit-par-lit injection. One of these appears as a breccia of quartzite fragments in green schist matrix at Violet Hill, Manton (underneath the perched granite bowlder on the hill just north of the Manton Avenue quarry); and thin, ramifying, sill-like layers of schist in a quartzite at a small exposure southeast of Oak Valley, in North Smithfield. The appearance of large, isolated masses of quartzite, too large and isolated to represent conglomeratic bowlders, seems also to point toward actual intrusion.

The schists in their coarser phases exhibit a mass of long green actinolite blades intermingled sometimes with areas of granular or saccharoidal feldspar. An extreme case of the production of secondary feldspars of this kind is in the rock exposed along the highway at West Greenville, where it is filled with closely set pseudo-phenocrysts of a saccharoidal feldspar near albite in composition, lath-shaped, some attaining a size of 1 cm. × 3 cm., and showing roughly parallel arrangement simulating flow structure. About two miles north of this latter place the green schist grades into a true gabbro. In contrast to this, the gabbro at Woonsocket (Huntington Avenue) contains inclusions of green schist surrounded by reaction rims.

TABLE II.

Analyses of Basic Igneous Rocks from Rhode Island.

(A.) Green Schists.

	11	12	13	14	15
SiO_2	66·58	43·60	50·87	46·39	41·62
Al_2O_3	13·04	26·90	19·47	18·32	13·16
Fe_2O_3	7·08	3·20	4·29	6·44	6·71
FeO	1·40	8·60	7·88	6·82	4·48
MgO	1·01	2·51	2·85	4·66	8·88
CaO	2·76	10·83	8·99	12·58	17·71
Na_2O	5·26	1·75	2·21	1·98	1·42
K_2O	3·44	2·52	2·57	1·31	1·08
H_2O	·16	·64	·73	·73	·72
CO_2	Tr	.....	·75	·43	4·76
MnO	.....	·07	.....	Tr	.....
S	.....	.....	·10	·12	·14
TiO_2	.....	.....	.....	·25	.....
	100·73	100·62	100·71	100·03	100·68
Sp. Gr.	2·844	.....	.....	.....	.....

11. Manton, R. I. (Unaffected by granitic intrusion). A. C. Hawkins.
12. Manton, R. I. (Largely affected by intrusion). A. F. Buddington.
13. Neutaconkanut Hill, Thornton, R. I. (Slightly affected). A. C. Hawkins.
14. Berkeley, R. I. (Unaffected by granitic intrusion). A. C. Hawkins.
15. Berkeley, R. I. (Somewhat affected by intrusion). A. C. Hawkins. Local drift; porphyritic augites.

TABLE II.

Analyses of Basic Igneous Rocks from Rhode Island.

(B.) Gabbros and Related Types.

	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
SiO_2	22·35	46·48	50·48	49·57	44·36	44·33	48·43	51·86	46·11	39·30
Al_2O_3	5·26	15·69	21·26	12·40	18·15	20·58	15·76	15·72	14·52	15·58
Fe_2O_3	14·05	7·10	2·05	3·58	5·46	1·29	1·92	....	2·20	2·65
FeO	28·84	8·66	6·86	7·04	11·62	11·39	7·68	14·87	4·51	4·62
MgO	16·10	2·74	2·15	5·76	4·12	4·79	6·34	5·50	5·73	4·00
CaO	1·17	11·42	7·23	15·86	10·19	7·40	10·19	7·20	7·82	13·49
Na_2O	·44	2·14	3·03	2·13	2·65	2·94	2·22	....	1·29	1·27
K_2O	·10	·70	2·07	2·29	1·91	·37	1·48	....	3·84	4·03
H_2O+	....	·20	·83	·48	·20	·08	·56	....	2·90	2·28
H_2O-	·42	·03	·40	·02	·12	·12	·04	....	....	·37
TiO_2	10·11	3·80	2·00	Tr	1·05	5·00	3·00	2·75	·84	·15
CO_2	·02	·28	·95	·26	·64	·68	2·34	....	7·32	7·21
P_2O_5	·02	·11	·98	·16	Tr	·17	Tr	·73	·22*	5·14
S	·38	·80	·08	·77	Tr	·60	·26	·06	1·37	·39
MnO	·43	Tr	Tr	Tr	Tr	Tr	Tr	1·15	Tr	Tr
	100·74	100·15	100·53	100·32	100·47	99·94	100·26	100·40	99·65	100·25
Sp. Gr.	3·92	3·036	2·928	2·970	3·112	3·203	2·962	....	2·904	2·961

* P_2O_5 by A. C. H.

Norms of the Basic Igneous Rocks Analyzed (Table II).

	1	2	3	4	5	6	7
Q	.....	.....	5·79	.....	.....	.....	.....
Or	·56	4·24	12·58	13·74	10·29	2·30	9·97
Ab	3·67	19·45	25·82	18·32	20·35	24·90	7·94
An	5·56	34·39	30·81	18·01	29·50	32·93	33·25
Di	.....	20·91	.....	.....	16·24	.....	6·68
Hy	.....	.....	13·28	.....	.....	.....	.....
Ens	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	17·64
Ol	45·70	8·09	.....	19·76	13·23	15·50	9·14
Mt	20·65	.....	2·65	5·24	7·38	1·86	3·14
Il	19·00	7·75	3·80	.....	1·71	9·50	6·26
Pr	1·15	.....	.....	2·55	.....	.....	.....
Ap	.....	.....	2·02	.....	.....	.....	.....
Ak	.....	4·50	.....	21·76	.....	.....	.....
Cor	.....	.....	3·25	.....	.....	.....	.....
Gar	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	11·50	.....
Spinel	3·55	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Calcite	.....	·67	.....	·62	1·30	1·51	5·98

Classification of the Basic Igneous Rocks Analyzed (Table II).

1. Peridotite, rhodose, V.3.1.2. Iron Mine Hill, Cumberland.* C. H. Warren.
2. Gabbro, auvergnose, III.5.4.3. Ironstone Reservoir, Mass.† A. C. Hawkins.
3. Gabbro (Hybrid), shoshonose, II.5.3.3. Woonsocket, R. I. A. C. Hawkins.
4. Gabbro, oronose-auvergnose, III.5.4.2. Pascoag, R. I. A. C. Hawkins.
5. Gabbro (Actinolite Schist), auvergnose, III.5.4.3. West Greenville, R. I. A. C. Hawkins.
6. Gabbro, near auvergnose, III.5.4.5. Moosup Valley, R. I. A. C. Hawkins.
7. Olivine Diabase, oronose-auvergnose, III.5.4.2. Snake Den, R. I. A. C. Hawkins.
8. Diabase, South Attleboro, Mass. Chemist, Am. Steel and Wire Co.
9. Minette, Conanicut Island, R. I. J. P. Iddings.
10. Minette, Sakonnet Point, R. I. A. C. Hawkins.

The last four rocks were probably not fresh.

* Compare Emerson (op. cit., 183 and 185).
† Compare Emerson (idem, 170).

(2). *The Diabases.*

The development of diabases is strongest toward the northern border of the State; western Rhode Island is free from them. They show a tendency to follow prominent joint-planes which mark lines of structural weakness, arranged in several zones with a north-south or northeast-southwest strike. One of these appears to be along the western margin of the Carboniferous basin at Woonsocket and southward, while another lies a few miles to the eastward, and still another extends southward from Cumberland Hill. Most of these diabases, both dikes and sills, are not very large, the most extensive ones sometimes attaining a length of a quarter of a mile, with a width varying from one or two inches to 50 or 60 feet.

The diabasic dikes are of four distinct ages, as follows:

First, dark-colored dikes, now hornblende schist, in the Harris quarries at Limerock.[20] This type cuts limestone of supposedly Cambrian or pre-Cambrian age (Smithfield limestone), and is in turn intruded by fine-grained aplitic granite offshoots, which probably belong to the adjacent Milford granite series. This hornblende dike material is the "odinite" of Emerson and Perry (op. cit.), and is immediately post-shearing.

Second are the diabasic sills of South Attleboro, Massachusetts,[21] just across the Rhode Island line, which rarely appear as dikes. They are somewhat later than the red Carboniferous beds of the Attleboro area (Wamsutta group), being perhaps post-Carboniferous. But these traps, which cut felsites, are now found by C. W. Brown to be definitely cut by felsites of another age, a relationship which has not been shown in the earlier work (op. cit.).

Third are placed the minette, or "mica trap" dikes, apophyses corresponding to mica syenites. Dikes of this rare rock have been described as occurring on Conanicut Island, R. I.[22] The latter writer, in the paper just cited, gives an analysis of the rock (here quoted, see analysis No. 9, Table II). There is also a new dike, of the same nature, now to be reported from Sakonnet Point, some fifteen miles farther east. This is a five-foot dike with a strike of N. 30° W. and a dip of 75° W.; it cuts coarse red granite of unknown age. Attention was originally called to this dike by Mr. H. I. Richmond. The determination of phosphoric acid in the minette of Conanicut, here stated for the first time (see analysis No. 9, Table II), shows it to contain only a very small amount. The minette of Sakonnet, however, is unusual in containing about 12% of apatite, forming large idiomorphic crystals which are very prominent in the microscopic section. (Also see analysis, No. 10, Table II.) These minettes have been described as cutting granites and Carboniferous sediments at Conanicut. They have also recently been found to intrude the green schists, at a point

[20] See Emerson (idem, 185).

[21] Shaler, Woodworth, and Foerste, op. cit., 152.

[22] Collie, G. L., Trans. Wis. Acad. Sci., 10, 36, 1895.

just south of Jamestown. They are in turn cut by quartz veins.

Fourth are fine-grained dikes of diabase, usually in vertical or steeply dipping position, and of the type usually referred to the Triassic. The necessary proof of exact age is lacking. They are all in the northern third of the State, occurring, together with the adjacent intrusive sills of Attleboro, Massachusetts, already mentioned, within an area about 12 miles square, lying to the northeast, north, and northwest of Providence, and including Cumberland Hill and Woonsocket. To this type belong the 60-foot dike at Woonsocket (cutting Carboniferous sediments), the 10-foot one at Snake Den (in granite gneiss), the 8-inch one at Miner's Crossing (in green schist), the narrow one at Cumberland Hill (intruding gabbro), and others at Wionkhiege Hill, Primrose, and in the cut for the new State road on Lawton Hill, west of Thornton. Usually these diabasic dike rocks show abnormal mineral constituents resulting from entire or partial solution of portions of acid terranes adjacent. Daly finds this process often occurring with the same result,[23] and Powers[24] has quite fully discussed the nature and origin of such foreign materials. The large diabase dike at Woonsocket, 60 feet or more across, encloses relatively enormous quantities of angular and rounded fragments of quartz, granite, diorite, and Carboniferous shale. The inclusions in this dike have been observed to be at times four feet long by two feet wide, and the foreign materials frequently make up as much as 50% of the total rock mass. Dikes in the region to the southward and eastward of Woonsocket show similar phenomena to a more limited extent. One dike (that at Snake Den in Johnston) is filled with microscopic cavities ("Kugel" Structure).

These rocks are typical olivine diabase, of which one of the best developed, that at Snake Den, has been selected as the type, for microscopical and chemical investigation. A chemical analysis of it is given (see analysis No. 7, Table II). This diabase shows two periods of crystallization during cooling, as is typical of this rock type. The phenocrysts are olivine, labradorite (Ab_1An_1), and pyroxene. The groundmass is composed

[23] Daly, R. A., "Igneous Rocks and Their Origin," 1914.
[24] Powers, S., Jour. Geol., 23, 1-10, 166-182, 1915.

largely of lath-shaped labradorites of medium composition, near Ab_2An_5, augite, biotite, and ilmenite. The Rosiwal test yields percentages as follows:

Ab_1An_1	= 47·75%
Ab_2An_5	= 7·51
Pyx	= 16·29
Ol	= 8·12
Il	= 6·02
Calcite	= 13·92
	99·61%

The unusually high percentage of TiO_2 indicated by the analysis is notable, and the large amount of CO_2 in calcite, which shows that the rock is not fresh.

(3). *The Gabbros.*

There are also several stocks of predominantly gabbroid nature, included in the granite gneisses.[25] These gabbro masses are often lenticular in shape and widely separated in position. Such basic rocks are shown in scattered areas throughout the northern part of Rhode Island, and to some extent in its southern, western, and even in its eastern parts. The most important ones are at Cumberland Hill, Woonsocket, Ironstone Reservoir, Pascoag, Chepachet, West Greenville, Smith and Sayles Reservoir, Sneech Pond, Moosup Valley, and at Preston[26] and Wequetequock,[27] Connecticut. They are distinctly pre-Carboniferous, as indicated at the gabbro outcrop at Huntington Avenue and Gaskill Street, Woonsocket, which lies in the Carboniferous basin. Their precise age is unknown, although they are doubtless very old, being older than any of the granite gneisses in the batholith which underlies this region. They now appear only in scattered fragments and groups of fragments, roof pendants[28] which have partly sunk in the granite

[25] For various reasons, as hereafter enumerated, these gabbros are regarded by the writer as original intrusive rocks and not as reaction rims of granites. Epidote is formed by reaction of the granite upon intrusion against the basic rock, as described below (see discussion of the contact metamorphism). (Compare Emerson, idem, 167-170.)

[26] Loughlin, G. F., U. S. Geol. Surv., Bull. 492, 1912.

[27] Hatch, L. (unpublished thesis).

[28] Daly, op. cit., 100.

batholith, and through subsequent diastrophic action have been modified greatly in distribution and shape, and in some cases in texture, mineralogical composition, and appearance. Exposures now available show them to be nearly vertical strips of lenticular sheets, lying in the granite gneiss parallel to its gneissic strike and dip throughout. This is to be seen at Westerly and at White Rock, four miles to the north of the latter place, in a small granite quarry. In plan they are evidently of lens- or pod-shaped form, similar to that assumed by deposits of metallic sulphides in the ancient crystalline rocks, as the result of diastrophism; transverse faults dislocate the series. (Compare the relative positions of the Ironstone gabbro masses, the fault of similar direction and throw which traverses the gabbro mass at Preston, and the fault with horizontal dislocation of approximately two miles which passes through the vicinity of Greenville and Wallum Pond.) The phenomena so observed are closely similar to those recorded by Fenner[29] as occurring in northern New Jersey. This also indicates the relationships and probable shape and extent of the well-known peridotite of Cumberland Hill, which, as an included fragment rather than a true dike or stock, still may be regarded as having a considerable downward extent. Its close relationships with the other gabbros of the series are more fully discussed below.

The larger gabbro masses of western Rhode Island may be one or two miles long and nearly as wide. The rock of these masses is homogeneous, coarse, and almost entirely untouched by either intrusion or shearing. Apparently it is resistant to both agencies, and the granitic intrusions have failed to penetrate far into it. The texture of the gabbro is generally allotriomorphic, and similar to that of Preston, though certain phases are porphyritic, as at Moosup Valley, and diabasic, as in parts of the Ironstone Reservoir mass and at Woonsocket. Along planes of shearing it becomes hornblende or biotite schist, as in the exposures shown south of Pascoag, on the west side of the reservoir. From the larger gabbro masses smaller ones, usually in the form of long lenticular strips (see map), have separated; their present position and appearance presumably is due to a combination of contact action (stoping) and diastro-

[29] Fenner, C. N., Jour. Geol., 22, 594 et seq., 1914.

phism on a large scale. The stoping off of strips by the granite which everywhere surrounds and invades the margins of the gabbro may be seen with great clearness just east of the gabbro mass of Pascoag, in the granite gneiss ledges at the east end of the dam just south of the town. These gabbro strips may be a mile or two long and only a few hundred feet wide. Often they are massive, but at other times are sheared into hornblende and biotite schists. Their present outcrop is partly the result of glaciation which has greatly modified the topography, but more largely the result of the resistant nature of the rock to other erosive agencies. Each strip of gabbro is marked by a long roche moutonnée, and the granite can often be traced for long distances on either side of it.

Field Relations of the Gabbro-Green Schist Group.

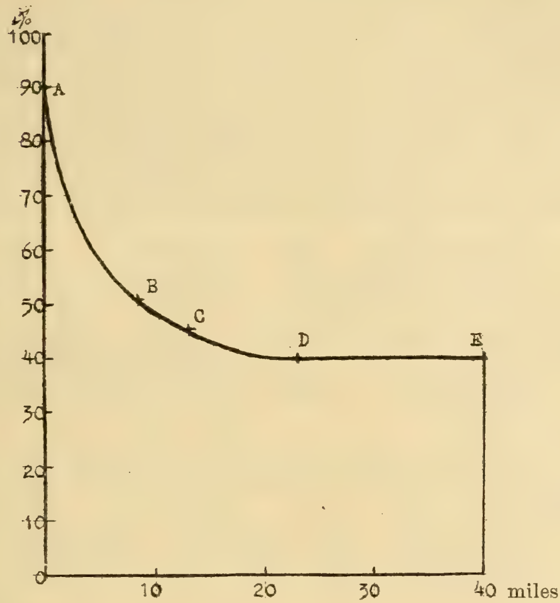
The gabbros and green schists of western Rhode Island lie in two curving lines, extending across the northern part of the State from north to south, the curve being convex toward the east (see map). The eastern belt consists of basic schists, (related to those in the Blackstone Valley to the east), and extends from Woonsocket to West Greenville, with a southward representative in the fragment a mile south of Harrisdale. This belt of schists has been carried a couple of miles eastward by the fault which intersects it at West Greenville. Originally it was only about five miles from the western belt of gabbros. The western belt comprises a series of coarse to fine-grained gabbros, extending in a widening band from fragmentary outcrops near Beach Pond and small but typical exposures at Moosup Valley, northward to Round Top and Ironstone Reservoir. This belt also is dislocated in its northern portion, so that this part appears about two miles to the east of its original position.

The invasion of the granite took place under a thick cover of quartzose sediments interspersed with this series of basic intrusives and tuffs. Broken fragments of the cover, stoped off, became engulfed in the granite and were folded with it during the deformation which followed and possibly accompanied its intrusion. Subsequent erosion has left probably only the deeper portions of the batholith, to give us its history, but the presence of numerous basic inclusions in the granite of the Westerly region, as suggested to the writer, may indicate that the roof of the batholith was lower toward the south; and perhaps also that the present coast line may be imagined to have resulted from lack of resistance to erosion on account of predominant amounts of the weaker basic schists in the granite still farther southward. A similar lowering of the batholithic roof to the eastward may explain the present distribution of exposures of schist in the Blackstone Valley and gabbros farther west; or downward tilting toward the east (indicated by the attitude of the sediments in the Woonsocket basin) may have caused erosion to expose deeper seated rocks to the westward.

The arrangement of parallel belts already mentioned suggests a synclinal or anticlinal structure. Minor structures so obscure the larger ones, and exposures are so scanty, however, that its exact nature has not been discovered. The fact that two rock types on opposite limbs of the fold (those at West Greenville and Moosup Valley; see analyses) are closely related in chemical composition might be construed as favoring this hypothesis.

The chemical analyses of the gabbros taken collectively (Table II) show them to be uniformly of very basic types, but varying systematically in content of femic and salic constituents. The most basic example in the State is the peridotite or cumberlandite of Cumberland Hill. This may represent the ancient center of igneous activity in intrusion. Westward and southwestward from it the gabbros steadily decrease in femic content, rapidly at first, then more and more slowly, to Moosup Valley, and finally to Preston, Conn. When plotted graphically, the line connecting the points representing femic content of the various types form a continuous curve (fig. 2). This would seem to indicate something of the nature of the *areal* distribution of igneous intrusive activity in western Rhode Island before the great granite batholith invaded the region. The writer also ventures to suggest that the study of related rock types from Cumberland Hill northward into Massachusetts might add further interesting facts with regard to this basic intrusive series, and ultimately establish proof whereby the geologic age of the whole peridotite-gabbro-green schist series might be established.

Fig. 2.



Chemical relations of the Gabbros.

Fig. 2.—The vertical component in the diagram represents femic content in per cent. The horizontal component represents distance in miles from Ironmine Hill, Cumberland, R. I.

Tabulation of Norms of Gabbros of this Group in Rhode Island and Vicinity. (See Fig. 2.)

Point	Locality	Classification	Sal	Fem	F	P + O	M	A	Analyst
A.	Cumberland, R. I.,	peridotite ..	9·79	90·05	9·79	49·25	39·65	1·15%	C. H. Warren
B.	Ironstone, Mass.,	gabbro	49·68	50·32	49·68	24·81	16·18	9·32%	A. C. Hawkins
C.	Pascoag, R. I.,	gabbro	57·18	42·82	57·18	39·64	7·37	5·81%	A. C. Hawkins
D.	Moosup Valley, R. I.,	gabbro ..	60·13	39·87	60·13	27·00	11·36	1·51%	A. C. Hawkins
E.	Preston, Conn.,	Cse. Hb. gabbro	57·10	40·61	57·10	34·43	6·18	...%	W. A. Drushel

Sal = salic content.
Fem = femic content, upon which the curve of fig. 2 is based.
F = feldspar content.
P + O = pyroxene + olivine.
M = iron ores, including magnetite and ilmenite.
A = accessory minerals.

Characteristics of this Gabbro Group.

The gabbros when fresh are typical rocks of medium size of grain; with increase of hornblende these pass into a black rock with bladed structure, usually rather coarse. Under the hand lens the coarser gabbros show laths of white plagioclase (also sometimes dark-colored), hornblende and pyroxene crystals, frequently some fresh biotite plates, and black grains of magnetite and ilmenite. The microscopic characters of the group are as follows:—

(1). Diabasic texture with labradorite.
(2). Graphic intergrowth of magnetite and ilmenite with biotite and basaltic hornblende.
(3). Corona structure involving olivine and iron ores with rims of hornblende, biotite, and hydrous alteration products.
(4). Inclusions of quartz carrying rutile and constantly moving bubbles.

The chemical characters of the group are generally as follows:—

(1). Low in SiO_2, MgO, Na_2O, K_2O, P_2O_5, H_2O.
(2). High in FeO and CaO.

Endomorphic and Exomorphic Chemical Changes Due to Contact Metamorphism.

(Production of Hybrid Granites, Pseudo-Diorites, and Limestones.)

The characteristics of many of the contacts of granite with the basic rocks have been mentioned above. In other instances, however, a well-defined gabbro, of massive, holocrystalline nature, may be surrounded for a distance of a mile or more by a complex of hybrid rocks resulting from the intimate intermixture of gabbroid material with granite, evidently a partial assimilation of the basic material by the latter rock. (Compare Emerson, idem, 173-175.) The injection gneisses of this type are light gray, or streaked with wavy light bands of granite or material resulting from pneumatolytic effects from the latter. Of this sort of occurrence the finest example is found at South Foster, of which further mention will be made. (Compare Dana Diorite of Emerson, especially figs., 245 (idem).)

Near contacts with the basic rocks, and often for distances of several miles from visible contacts with large masses of basic rock, the intrusive granite gneisses commonly, though not always, have been found to show an abnormally dark color, increasing as the contact is approached. With this darkening of color, small dark fragments of unassimilated basic rock appear,[30] scattered at intervals throughout the granite gneiss. At the same time the granite becomes increasingly porphyritic, the orthoclase phenocrysts often attaining a length of one or two inches. The best example of this phenomenon is found in the ''Absalona'' type of the Northbridge granite gneiss, well shown on Absalona Hill, east of Chepachet.[31] That a real and not inconsiderable change in the composition of the granite has actually taken place is plainly indicated by the analyses of the granite and green schist types (to be more fully discussed; see Table III). The granites also apparently have had the power to assimilate a certain amount of quartzite and similar acid rocks, becoming more acid thereby; but on account of similarities of composition of the intruding and intruded rock types, the changes in a physical way are certainly not so noticeable.

The result of this assimilation process is seen in the field in the widespread production of rocks which are both in their appearance and in their physical and chemical composition intermediate between the gabbro and granite types. Coarse, porphyritic, dark-colored granites of almost dioritic aspect are in places extensively developed, and appear at first to add much to the complexity of the geologic situation. (Compare Hybrid Rocks, Bowen,[32] also analyses 3, Table II, and 18, Table III.) This is especially true of the Northbridge granite gneiss, which is made up of a variety of abnormally basic granite types throughout northwestern Rhode Island. It is found in this condition, dark-colored, porphyritic, and filled with basic masses, stringers and fragments, as indicated on the map, throughout an area bounded on the north by the Rhode Island-Massachusetts line, its south-

[30] The orbicular Westerly granite type of Quonochontaug, R. I. (See Kemp, J. F., Trans. N. Y. Acad. Sci., 13, 140-144, 1894), is probably similar in origin.

[31] This is the ''Carboniferous conglomerate'' mentioned by Emerson (idem, 229).

[32] Bowen, N. L., Jour. Geol., 23, Supplement, 85, 1915.

ern boundary passing through a point south of the junction of the Putnam Pike with the Rhode Island-Connecticut line, thence southward as far as Moosup Valley, and from thence northeastward, its southern border passing, apparently, south of North Scituate (see map). The Milford granite gneiss in the Blackstone Valley-Woonsocket region is similarly affected, where it has intruded and embayed the margins of the green schists, and torn off portions of them. On the east side of Narragansett Bay the granite gneisses show the same characteristics.

The green schists exposed in the region immediately west and north of Providence are normally fine-grained, greatly sheared rocks of essentially gabbroid composition (see analyses of green schists, Table II). The schists ''become coarsely crystalline'' near contact with the granite at Neutaconkanut Hill, as observed by Emerson and Perry (op. cit., 29). Moreover, this coarseness of crystallization increases in such measure as to cause the appearance of the ''diorite'' of the above authors (idem, 44), which, as a type, on account of its origin, will be referred to as the ''pseudo-diorite,'' a name suggested by Professor C. W. Brown, who also first conceived of its formation in this way. ''Little or no trace of crushing'' (idem, 44) is far more generally shown in the pseudo-dioritic contact zone than in the adjacent schists. The resulting rock closely simulates the true diorite in its coarse groundmass of short black amphiboles in feldspar (idem, 29). Some replacement of secondary phenocrysts has occurred (idem, 30); these phenocrysts are either hornblende, as described (idem, 44), or pyroxene, as observed in local drift material from Berkeley; these latter pyroxenes are nearly equidimensional, measuring 1 to 2 cm. or more in diameter, and showing bright cleavage at 87°. An analysis of this latter rock, which unfortunately is not very fresh, is given in Table II (analysis 15). The pseudo-diorite zone is very irregular; in places where the granite appears to be in contact with the schist it does not even seem to be present sometimes; at other times it may be two or three hundred feet wide. With it are associated narrow epidotic stringers that extend beyond the pseudo-diorite zone often for some distance, it may be for tens or hundreds of feet, into the adjacent schist.

TABLE III.

Chemical Relationships of Green Schists and Pseudo-Diorites with Adjacent Granites in Rhode Island.

	Series A.						Series B.			Series C.	
	13	16	17	18	19	20	14	21	22	23	15
SiO_2	50·87	54·79	47·04	65·55	74·06	55·39	46·39	48·61	58·39	68·13	41·62
Al_2O_3	19·47	18·79	21·67	17·67	13·58	·04	18·32	19·72	18·44	16·34	13·16
Fe_2O_3	4·29	3·08	1·44	2·57	·67	8·54	6·44	6.05	2·45	1·03	6·71
FeO	7·88	6·72	14·50	1·68	·96	2·32	6·82	6·01	5·64	1·90	4·48
MgO	2·85	2·17	4·27	·82	·25	26·63	4·66	3·13	·82	·46	8·88
CaO	8·99	8·00	1·37	4·57	·47	2·33	12·58	11·20	6·63	2·08	17·71
Na_2O	2·21	3·17	5·20	4·30	5·30	·38	1·98	2·05	4·66	4·58	1·42
K_2O	2·57	2·09	3·08	2·50	3·71	·46	1·31	1·34	·76	4·41	1·08
H_2O	·73	·77	·18	·20	·34	1·23	·73	1·26	·65	·10	·72
CO_2	·75	·79	1·18	·26	·34	3·08	·43	·22	·75		4·76
TiO_2	....	....	....	....	None	....	·25	·25	·15	·50	....
P_2O_5	....	....	....	....	Tr	....	....	....	·69	....	....
S	·10	·12	·10	....	·24	....	·12	·12	·04	....	·14
MnO	Tr	Tr	Tr	Tr	Tr	Tr	Tr	Tr	Tr	Tr	Tr
	100·71	100·49	100·03	100·12	99·91	100·40	100·03	99·96	100·07	99·53	100·68
Sp. Gr.		2·953				2·910			2·931	2·694	

Series A.

13. Green Schist, Neutaconkanut Hill, Thornton, R. I. A. C. Hawkins.
16. Pseudo-Diorite, Neutaconkanut Hill, Thornton, R. I. A. C. Hawkins.
17. Green Schist Xenolith, Neutaconkanut Hill, Thornton, R. I. A. C. Hawkins.
18. Granite 20′ from Contact, Neutaconkanut Hill, Thornton, R. I. A. C. Hawkins.
19. Milford Granite Gneiss, 1000′ from Contact, Hughesdale, R. I.* A. C. Hawkins.
20. Steatite, Manton, R. I.† A. C. Hawkins.

Series B.

14. Green Schist, Berkeley, R. I. A. C. Hawkins.
21. Pseudo-Diorite, Berkeley, R. I. A. C. Hawkins.
22. Biotite Granite (Cqg), Berkeley, R. I. A. C. Hawkins.

Series C.

23. Westerly Granite, Klondike Quarries, Bradford, R. I.‡ A. C. Hawkins.
15. Green Schist, Porphyritic Augites; Local Drift, Berkeley, R. I. A. C. Hawkins.

* Compare Loughlin, G. F., U. S. Geol. Survey Bull. **492**, 123, analyses No. 1 and No. 2; also Emerson, op. cit., analyses No. 1–No. 5, 167.
† Compare Emerson, 215.
‡ Compare Emerson, 231.

Five analyses of rocks from Neutaconkanut Hill are given in Table III (analyses 13, 16, 17, 18, 19) and three from Berkeley (analyses 14, 21, 22). Analysis 13 was made upon material taken at a point about 100 feet from the granite, and represents an apparently little altered green schist, while the rock of analysis 16 has a typically coarse speckled appearance, giving it a dioritic aspect; it was taken from within 25 feet of the contact. The "xenolith" of schist was found as a well-defined dark-colored inclusion in the granite, which lies close together with several other xenoliths in the ledge at a point nearly 50 feet from the nearest green schist outcrop. The granite of analysis 18 is mapped as Milford granite by Emerson and Perry, on the southeast flank of the hill. It is abnormally dark-colored and is filled with closely spaced chunky phenocrysts of secondary feldspar. It is about 20 feet from the green schist contact. The nearest granite that is free from inclusions and abnormal dark color, with which the above intrusive can be compared, is at Hughesdale, a mile and a half west (analysis 19). This latter type is fully 1000 feet from the nearest included rock, which is a quartzite, and seems to be a type of the Milford granite gneiss free from any large amount of foreign substances.

The exposures at Berkeley are not so satisfactory in character, but the same phenomena are strongly developed. The rock represented by analysis 14 is at least 200 feet from the granite; that of analysis 21, the pseudodiorite, is about 100 feet from it. The granite is dark and porphyritic, but zenoliths suitable for analysis were not found. There is also no granite in the vicinity free from schist.

Comparison of the analyses shows what appears to be a unity of action in the exchange of elements by pneumatolysis during this contact metamorphism. Alumina becomes segregated somewhere near the contact, as does also soda and to some extent potash (although apparently not enough to form much biotite, as has been generally supposed). Ferric iron is very largely reduced to the ferrous state and magnetite appears, both in the granite and in the invaded rocks (especially noticeable in the case of the wall rocks surrounding some Rhode Island pegmatites). It is interesting to note that W. G. Foye, in a recent publication concerning the contact action of the nepheline syenites and related rocks in Ontario, Canada, finds in general the same transfers taking place.[33]

It was probably on account of the abundance of available silica in the solutions accompanying the Rhode Island granites that no rare rocks were formed. It will be noticed, however, that of all the materials exchanged in this process of contact metamorphism, the lime is apparently the most easily displaced. Some of this lime the granite has assimilated, as is shown by its abnormally high content of CaO. A considerable portion of the lime, however, which is not found in the original rocks on either side of the contact, has been expelled, reappearing as calcite veins, shown near the granite contact on the east slope of Neutaconkanut Hill and in similar relations on the west slope (compare Emerson and Perry, op. cit., 25). A reasonable enlargement or extension of this action leads us to a consideration of Professor Brown's further suggestion, that the limestone deposits of Limerock and elsewhere in that part of Rhode Island might be entirely the product of contact metamorphism resulting from invasion of the green schist by granite batholiths at considerable depth.

The limestones of the State, belonging to what Emerson and Perry have called the Smithfield limestone member of the Marlboro Formation (op. cit., 16 et seq.), are crystalline marbles appearing as lens-shaped bodies, usually in the green schist, often near its contact with the granite, though at times wholly surrounded by the granite itself. The total volume of limestone represented is probably somewhat more than a million cubic yards. Much of it is a very pure limestone; parts of it are more or less magnesian, and the marginal portions, for thicknesses at times as great as ten feet next to the schist walls, are often dolomite. This latter fact might be attributed to segregation in metamorphism, although it may of course have been an original feature. Irregular zones are filled with pure white bladed and fibrous tremolite (shown to be such in the thin section), which in one sample of limestone from the Dexter quarry was found to constitute 80·54% of the rock, the remaining 19·46% being all that was soluble in boiling hydrochloric acid. According to Van Hise[34] such silicification in

[33] Foye, W. G., this Journal, 40, 413-436, 1915.

[34] Van Hise, C. R., U. S. Geol. Surv., Mon. 47, 971, 1904.

limestone goes on as a natural result of burial in the zone of anamorphism, and is not dependent upon introduction of siliceous emanations from invading granites. Talc and serpentine (bowenite), occurring locally in the limestone, must have been derived from hydration of the silicates by circulating waters; the bowenite may possibly represent included layers or fragments of material from the adjacent schist. Analyses of the limestone have been published (Emerson and Perry, op. cit., 17-18). The additional analyses which follow (Table III) may serve to show the relations of the granites, pseudodiorites, and green schists, where they are found together. The details appear to be somewhat as follows:—

The granite from the east slope of Neutaconkanut Hill is found to show the following gains when compared with the normal Milford granite at Hughesdale:—

Al_2O_3	4·09%
Fe_2O_3	1·90
FeO	·72
MgO	·57
CaO	4·10
	11·38%

This sum indicates that, if the increase in basicity be due, as it apparently is, to assimilation of the basic rock, 11·38% of the granite at a distance of 20 feet from the contact is assimilated schist. If this be true at 20 feet from the contact, it is reasonable to suppose the same conditions to continue the same on the average from the contact to a point at a distance of 25 feet from it. Then in this 25-foot band of granite there is 11·38% of schist intermixed, i. e., 11·38% of the amounts of elements gained by the granite, present in the schist analysis, is present in every like amount of the granite, to a distance of 25 feet; or the full amounts of elements present in the schist analysis are present in every 11·38% of 25 feet, or 2·84 feet, of the granite; this represents the amount of schist (2·84 feet) that has been assimilated. For the Neutaconkanut Hill locality this much at least is indicated by analysis, although possibly more schist was assimilated in portions of the granite nearer to, and less in those farther away from, the contact. These zones are not shown on account of lack of exposures. To distances of 25 feet and more from the contact, small schist xenoliths 2 by 4 or 5 cm. are not uncommon in the granite, which is dark colored, porphyritic, and surrounded by and intermixed with schist.

The amount of CaO in the green schist of Neutaconkanut Hill is 8·99%. Of this the granite has been able to assimilate 4·10%. The small fragmentary xenoliths of schist remaining in the granite retain 1·37%. The residue which goes to form calcite deposits is thus about 3·52% of CaO, or an amount equivalent to 3·52% of the original schist. As $CaCO_3$ this would be 6·28%.

If 2·84 feet of schist be assimilated, in any portion of the contact zone 2·84 feet wide, 10 feet deep and one mile long, containing 5,554 cubic yards, or, in other words, along a mile of contact line where the contact is 10 feet deep and the granite is affected as the analysis indicates for at least 25 feet from the contact:—

	CaO liberated as calcite =	195·5	cu. yd.
	$CaCO_3$ produced as calcite =	349·06	cu. yd.
For similar contact			
100 ft. deep	$CaCO_3$ produced as calcite =	3,490·6	cu. yd.
10,000 ft. deep	$CaCO_3$ produced as calcite =	349,060·	cu. yd.

Contact lines are in all probability fully as deep as the last figure noted. A careful and conservative estimate of the actual volume of the limestone present in field exposures is as follows:—

Harris Quarries, total volume = 465,275 cu. yd.
Dexter Quarry, total volume = 333,333 cu. yd.

The Harris deposit consists of three limestone lenses, probably disconnected and perhaps overlapping; the total length between north and south extremities of this series is about 1000 feet. The Dexter limestone is a single lens located 2 miles east of the Harris quarries. Its length does not much exceed 500 feet.

Comparison of the above figures, especially those from the Harris quarries, with the theoretical results obtained from the analysis, seem to indicate that, given a sufficiently deep line of contact between granite and green schist, such limestone deposits as those here found might have originated from contact action alone. The writer, however, for reasons stated below, does not believe that they actually are the result of such a process.

A summary of the behavior of the CaO in the contact zone between the granite and the green schist at Neutaconkanut Hill appears to be as follows:—

The amounts of CaO present in the various types analyzed are:—

	In Green Schist.	In Pseudo-Diorite.	In Xenolith.	In Modified Gr.	In Unchanged Granite.
CaO=	8·99%	8·00%	1·37%	4·57%	·47%

Comparison of the above amounts of CaO with the amount of CaO originally present in the schist indicates its distribution as follows:—

- 8·99% CaO originally present: (100·%)
  - 1·37% CaO left in xenoliths: (15·24%)
  - 7·62% CaO lost thr. metamorphism: (84·76%)
    - 3·52% CaO forming calcite: (39·15%)
    - 4·10% CaO assimilated by granite: (45·61%)

If the limestones be metamorphic in origin, a source must be found for the CO_2 required in the formation of so much carbonate. The CO_2 must then probably be regarded as derived from emanations from the intrusive. That such discharge of CO_2 does take place is recorded by Van Hise.[35] The fact that under such conditions calcium silicates were not formed must then be regarded as the result of the inferior strength of silicic acid compared with that of carbonic acid under conditions of not very deep burial, where temperatures and pressures were not high (op. cit., 173).

Closely associated with the limestone there are often interesting deposits of steatite, with associated hydrated and carbonated minerals. These soapstones are commonly gray in color with obscure fibrous structure, and occasionally carry veins of green foliated talc of a superior degree of purity (as at Manton and at Manville). On the borders of the steatite areas, which are at times 50 feet or more wide, there are gradations into green schist, suggesting a derivation of the soapstone from the schist, supposedly by a weathering process (Van Hise, op. cit., 24), although the possible action of heated waters

[35] Van Hise, C. R., op. cit., 960-970.

connected with granitic intrusions might have caused the formation of the original silicate minerals from which the steatite must have been formed. In the writer's opinion the steatite, and the limestones associated with it, at least the smaller limestone masses, are the product of subsequent alteration of earlier silicates of magnesia and lime which were formed in connection with the intrusion of the granite, replacing portions of the schist. An analysis of the fine-grained gray steatite of this type is hereby given (Table III, analysis 20). This rock is closely associated with a coarser phase which has a groundmass principally composed of fibrous talc and steatite with a little calcite, in which are embedded black, lustrous ankerite crystals, 5 mm. in diameter, with bright cleavage. This latter phase shows the mineral composition to be expected in the finer grained mass analyzed. A recast from the analysis to form these minerals gives the following results:—

Recast of Chemical Analysis of Steatite from Manton, R. I.
(Analysis 20.)

Ankerite	Calcite	= 4·10%	
	Siderite	= 3·37	
Magnetite		= 4·73	
Pyrite		= ·02	
		12·22%	
Soapstone Matrix	SiO_2	= 55·39%	An aggregate of green schist, partly changed to talc.
	Al_2O_3	= ·04	
	FeO	= 4·04	
	MgO	= 26·63	
	Na_2O	= ·38	
	K_2O	= ·46	
	H_2O	= 1·23	
		88·17%	
Total		100·39%	

Of the soapstone matrix (88·17%), the amount of water present therein (1·23%, compared with 4·80% in talc), indicates that talc forms 25·64%.

The soapstone analysis (20) when compared with that of the unaltered schist (analysis 12), shows changes which have taken place in the schist as follows, during alteration to soapstone:—

Almost complete loss of Al_2O_3.
Some loss of Iron.
Relatively enormous gain in MgO.
Large loss of CaO, and also of Na_2O and K_2O.

Oxides thus lost to the schist are segregated in talc veins or elsewhere in the vicinity, as shown in the case of the narrow, irregular veins replacing green schist along joint planes in the Manton Avenue quarry, adjacent to the steatite deposits, containing the following minerals, in their order of crystallization:—

Pink orthoclase; short chunky crystals 1 or 2 mm. in diameter, shown by petrographic examination to be Carlsbad twins. Sheaf-like rosettes and typical crystals in cavities.

Epidote; fine granular crystalline mass, forming slender acicular crystals in cavities.

Calcite, filling all remaining openings.

The presence of epidote and of orthoclase argues in favor of deposition by hot waters probably emanating from an intrusive granite.

Another contact deposit is to be seen just west of South Foster (Hopkins' Mills), where the new State road passes the white school-house near the top of the hill. Here there is rather poorly exposed at least 50 feet of a marbled gneiss composed of biotitic gabbroid material thoroughly intruded in lit-par-lit fashion by granite,[36] and 25 feet from this, a 25-foot outcrop of a fine-grained, rather impure looking limestone marble (shown upon treatment with hydrochloric acid to contain about one-fourth of its volume of silicates, resembling tremolite and scapolite). Between the basic gneiss and the marble there lies a vein deposit which appears to have been formed as a result of the invasion of siliceous emanations from a granitic intrusion, reacting with the gabbro or limestone, or both. Pneumatolytic action of this sort is shown by the presence of apatite. The irregular vein deposit shows minerals developed as follows:

Wernerite; light gray, well formed individuals, some as large as 3 cm. in diameter and 5 to 10 cm. long, tapering at the ends, without definite terminations; within, they are fine grained

[36] Compare Emerson (idem, Pl. V, Fig. A, and Pl. IX, Figs. A and B).

granular in appearance, containing a small quantity of intermixed biotite particles. These crystals are embedded in biotite.

Then follow several minerals intergrown, as follows:—

Actinolite; a felt of light green blades.

Biotite; large finely crystalline masses, free crystals in cavities.

Epidote; compact, feldspathic, with occasional grains of quartz.

Apatite; tiny, brilliant white crystals, on the biotite in cavities. The crystallographic forms were determined as follows by use of the two-circle goniometer:—*o*, $(00\bar{0}1)$; *s*, $(11\bar{2}1)$; *y*, $(20\bar{2}1)$; *x*, $(10\bar{1}1)$; *r*, $(10\bar{1}2)$; *z*, $(30\bar{3}1)$; *a*, $(10\bar{1}0)$. Also a pair of faces belonging probably to a first order pyramid near $(6 \cdot 6 \cdot \bar{12} \cdot 1)$, a form whose presence could not be fully established because of lack of material, but which is new to the species. (Letters given are those of Goldschmidt.)

That the limestone beds of Rhode Island were sedimentary in origin was the conclusion of Emerson and Perry (op. cit., 16), and is also the opinion favored as the result of the present studies. In metamorphism all traces of original bedding or of possible fossil remains have apparently been destroyed, and other misleading features, such as bands of color, have been introduced by the same agency. There are restricted areas of marble, however, in the Dexter quarry especially, which possess a very marked gray color, and seem to represent brecciation products of certain zones in which the dark material was earlier segregated. In the laboratory this limestone was treated with hydrochloric acid, the insoluble residue being gray. When this was brought to red heat in a crucible the color quickly changed to a light yellow, indicating the source of the dark color to be carbon. This amounts locally to about half of one per cent of the rock. It is also shown by the application of further chemical tests to be in the form of finely divided graphite. Carbon of this kind when present in limestone is usually thought to have had its origin in organic remains and to indicate the sedimentary nature of the limestone. A study of the geology in Porto Rico has shown[37] that the occurrence of lime beds in a sedimentary series of volcanic tuffs (such as the green schists may once have been) is very common in that country.

[37] Berkey, C. P., Annals N. Y. Acad. Sci., 26, 1-70, 1915.

Along the western side of the southern Harris limestone quarry there is exposed a block of fine-grained granite containing sharply defined inclusions of green schist and of crystalline limestone, within a few inches of each other. Neither of the included fragments seems different from the adjacent large exposures of similar rocks. The granite surrounding them may be an aplitic phase, and later in age than the main granitic intrusion, but its presence certainly suggests that the limestone as well as the green schist may be pre-granite in age.

Throughout the western and northwestern portions of the State, where granites greatly modified by assimilation of basic rocks are repeatedly found in contact with the latter, only one small limestone deposit was found, the rather insignificant one at South Foster mentioned above. Apparently the granite was able to assimilate all of the lime which it derived from the partial assimilation of the gabbros throughout this area, possibly because of more deep-seated intrusion than in the area farther east.

Whether sedimentary or metamorphic in origin, the limestone of Rhode Island has without doubt been secondarily segregated by solution during metamorphism, contact or regional. If it be attributed to contact action, the solutions may have been rising to points above, toward the top of the batholithic dome. The present attitude of the beds at least is highly inclined. Subsequent shearing has also helped in the formation of the present lens-shaped bodies (Emerson and Perry, op. cit., 16).

The sincere thanks of the author are due to Professor C. W. Brown of Brown University for his many helpful suggestions and guidance during the course of this investigation; to Professor Charles Palache of Harvard University for aid in the crystallographic study of the minerals here described, and to all others who in various ways have contributed something to the work.

Houston, Texas.
December, 1917.

Art. XVI.—*A Possible Source of Vanadium in Sedimentary Rocks;* by Alexander H. Phillips.

Included in the materials collected at the Tortugas and analyzed for metals (some of the results of which were reported and published in the annual report of the Carnegie Institute for 1917), was a brown spotted holothurian, *Sticopus möbii,* which was analyzed by the methods there indicated. When the ash from this material was dissolved in hydrochloric acid, a deep blue solution was obtained, resembling in depth of color that of a saturated solution of copper sulphate, but to my great surprise this color was not due to copper but to vanadium. The material when collected was cleaned of all sand externally and the sand content of the intestines was also removed. It was then dried at 110°C.

The amount of each constituent determined in a 20 gram sample of this dried material is here expressed in grams.

Copper	Iron	MnO	Vanadium
·0009	·0178	·00022	·0247

The amount of the element vanadium in this material is 0·123 per cent of the weight of the entire animal dried at 110°C.

Vanadium, I believe, has never been reported from seawater; however, this holothurian must have collected its vanadium either directly from the seawater or from its food which in turn must have concentrated it from the seawater.

The Tortugas are far enough removed from the continental shore or the mouth of any river, not to be influenced by the sediments carried into the gulf. Their formation is practically entirely that of carbonates of calcium and magnesium, both of which are either of organic or precipitated origin.

Occurrence of Vanadium.—Vanadium occurs disseminated in small quantities in almost all igneous rocks. There are, however, few localities in igneous rocks where it has been concentrated in sufficient quantities to pay commercially for the labor of mining. The source of commercial vanadium is practically that of the sedimentary rocks or coals.

Vanadium has been reported in a fresh water from Brookline by A. A. Hays, and in the blood of an acidian from the Bay of Naples by M. Henze,[1] to the amount of 18·5 per cent of V_2O_5 of the chromogen. This vanadium content of the blood does not seem to be a characteristic of all acidians, as two species from the Tortugas yielded no vanadium, neither did two other species of holothurians yield vanadium.

These two species in which vanadium has been found in considerable quantities are widely separated in the scale of animal life, one being a Chordata and the other is an Echinoderm, indicating the possibility of other forms which may use vanadium as an oxygen carrier in their vascular system.

The source of vanadium in sedimentary rocks and coals has always been somewhat of a puzzle, and while we have no way of determining the density of holothurian life in the past or whether the use of vanadium physiologically was developed paleontologically early or late, holothurians very similar to the recent species are present in the Jurassic of Europe, and according to Walcott they existed in the middle Cambrian shales of British Columbia.

It does not seem impossible that such forms as *Stickopus möbii* concentrating vanadium to the amount of 0·12 per cent by weight of their dried tissues, living in shallow waters in large numbers, where sediments were collecting or limestones were forming, that this vanadium content of their tissues, at death, could easily be fixed and held as a constituent of the sedimentary rocks thus formed.

The fixation of vanadium in the sediments of the Tortugas would be a simple matter, as there is an excess of calcium carbonate always present and in the presence of which, vanadium salts are practically insoluble.[2] Vanadium also forms many salts with calcium, some of which are soluble in water and others are difficultly soluble, but all are practically insoluble in slightly alkaline waters, such as seawater, and in the presence of calcium carbonate.

A second possibility of the fixation of vanadium under the above conditions is the presence of hydrogen sulphide, which is constantly liberated in the slimes of the mangrove lagoons and shallows. This in a slightly alkaline

[1] Z. Phys. Chem., 79, 223.

[2] Notestein, F. B., Econ. Geology, 13, 50. Origin of Uranium and Vanadium ores.

solution would precipitate vanadium as the sulphide, to be covered up and preserved as a small vanadium content, in this case, of a future limestone.

Vanadium also forms double salts with copper and calcium, as in case of the minerals volborthite $(CuCa)_3$-$(OH)_3VO_46H_2O$ and calciovolborthite $(CuCa)_2(OH)$-VO_4. It would seem that both of these minerals would be possible under the conditions described, as the ash of this holothurian also contains 0·0045 per cent of copper, and it has been shown that many forms contain both copper and zinc which also enters into the composition of vanadium minerals.

With small amounts of vanadium disseminated in certain sedimentary rocks and limestones, it is not difficult to explain its secondary concentration in the fissures, faults or joints of these same or nearby rocks.

Geological Department,
Princeton University, May 18th, 1918.

SCIENTIFIC INTELLIGENCE.

I. Geology and Mineralogy.

1. *Fossil Plants: A text-book for students of Botany and Geology;* by A. C. Seward. Vol. III, small 8vo, pp. xviii, 656, with 253 text-figures, and frontispiece portrait of Zeiller. Cambridge, 1917 (The University Press).—A notice of the first volume of this work (1898) was given by G. L. Goodale in this Journal in June, 1898 (**5**, 472); and of the second by the writer in November, 1910 (**30**, 356). Continuing from the Pteridosperms not directly recognized as seed-bearing, with which vol. II closes, the main topics of the present volume are: Pteridospermeæ, Cycadofilicales, Cordaitales, Cycadophyta. The introductory pages are occupied by an interesting account of the existing cycads; the critical discussion of mesarch bundles (p. 32) being noteworthy. The bibliography appended is not impeccable; both the monographs of Fontaine on the Mesozoic Floras are unnoted, and this omission of fine American material represents a serious gap in Professor Seward's general discussion.

There are many special features in the assemblage of indispensable data for both reader and student. In some cases there is a tendency to arbitrary treatment, always most difficult to avoid during condensation of extensive work in the light of new facts. Generally the points are well taken. *Lyginodendron* becomes *Lyginopteris,* and *Bennettites* is relegated to the synonomy; though one may doubt whether paleobotanists will willingly give up *Yuccites,* long used for striking forms of the Lias and other Mesozoic formations.

Always a zealous reader, Professor Seward enlivens his pages with many apt references, and there is a real charm to the quotations of well-put opinion, rescued from the ever increasing mass of contributions. For instance, it was Williamson (p. 305), who suspected from the great variety of ancient seeds that "there were in the Carboniferous forests many gymnospermous stems clothed with foliage of which we have not yet discovered any traces, probably because these Gymnosperms did not flourish upon the low swampy grounds which were the homes of the great mass of the coal producing plants." Even the detection of the seed ferns fails to rob this view of all its force.

The account of the Williamsonians brings into full view this remarkable Mesozoic tribe. *Williamsoniella* with its small cuneate stamens confirms and extends previous observations. But the interpretation of what Lignier felicitously termed the "litigious" Williamsonian disk and cone casts, is far from convincing. These are held to indicate a terminal [apical] whorl of concrescent microsporophylls surmounting the ovulate cone (fig. 547). Nevertheless, in the reviewer's judgment it is still probable that these flowers, though capable of great variation, as well as dioecism, all adhered to, or varied directly from, the essentially magnoliaceous plan, with the stamens hypogynous.

It is stated (page 126) that precise information as to the structure of *Codonotheca* is not yet available; but this ought rather to be said of the various comparable European types, some of which are probably miscalled seeds. Also, *Codonotheca* suggests the disk hypothesis of Wieland just as distinctly as the synangial theory of Benson, for the origin of the ancient leafy seeds.

No one will find the round number of text figures large, and full half as many more would have been welcome. Some of the halftones are, however, vague, and the "fruit cavity" in the historic Dresden *Cycadeoidea* (fig. 534) looks mysterious.

While giving momentary attention to some of these mooted points, in which it must be confessed paleobotany still abounds, it is mainly wished to accentuate the importance of Professor Seward's work. His volumes must long remain a standard. Indeed they constitute a great milestone in the effort to reach precision in the study of ancient plants, and it is hoped the concluding volume (or volumes) may soon appear. G. R. W.

2. *The Cedar Mountain Trap Ridge near Hartford;* by W. M. Davis (communicated).—The writer desires to put on record an observation made during a recent visit to Hartford, concerning the trap ridge known as Cedar Mountain that extends southward from near that city. The ridge was interpreted by Prof. Wm. North Rice of Middletown, who was associated with me 25

years ago in reporting on the Triassic formation of the Connecticut valley for the U. S. Geological Survey, as a part of the so-called "main sheet" of trap, locally uplifted on a north-south fault; although the normal sequence of overlying sandstones with the thin posterior trap sheet was found to the east of the ridge, the underlying sandstones were not then visible at the west base of the ridge. In their absence the thickness of the ridge-making trap sheet could not be determined and its identity with the heavy main sheet in other ridges to the south and west remained to that extent uncertain.

In later years a large quarry, conspicuously visible from the main railroad line near Newington station about a mile away, has been opened in the west face of Cedar mountain; the trap is thus laid bare for about a quarter-mile north and south in three great excavations. The northern quarry has its floor about 20 feet above the drift-covered low land to the west; no underlying sandstone is there exposed. The middle quarry is cut down to the lowland level, and the underlying red sandstone, dipping eastward about 20 degrees, is well exposed in its southwestern part to a thickness of 10 or 15 feet; at the contact of sandstone and trap, the trap is dense and much finer grained than in the greater part of the quarry face; and the sandstone is indurated and jaspery for a foot or two below; the bedding is hardly disturbed. The southern quarry has its floor about 50 feet above the lowland; here the sandstone is laid bare, with a steep glaciated face, between two rock-crusher buildings; also at the southern entrance to the quarry, but no contact with the trap is visible.

The thickness of the trap sheet is thus limited underneath at a measure that is closely comparable with the thickness found elsewhere. On crossing the trap ridge to the east, a ravine followed by a road was seen to enter it obliquely from the north, probably a consequence of a branch fault; farther down on the eastern slope, no sandstone could be discovered in contact with the upper surface of the trap sheet; but the stone walls contained a good number of blocks composed of grayish sandstone containing fragments of vesicular trap, such as characterizes the sandstone at overlying contacts on the back slope of the main sheet in other ridges, which are thereby proved to be extrusive lava flows. The identification of Cedar mountain as an upfaulted part of the main trap sheet is thus supported.

3. *Canada, Department of Mines.*—The following list contains the titles of recent publications of the Canadian Department of Mines. (See vol. 44, pp. 81-83.)

(1.) *Geological Survey Branch;* William McInnes, Directing Geologist.

Memoirs.—No. 84. An exploration of the Tazin and Taltson rivers, North West Territories; by Charles Camsell. Pp. 124, 1 map, 18 pls.

No. 87. Geology of a portion of the Flathead Coal area, British Columbia; by J. D. MacKenzie. Pp. 53, 2 maps, 1 plate, 1 fig.

No. 95. Onaping Map-Area; by W. H. Collins. Pp. 57, 2 maps, 11 pls.

No. 98. Magnesite deposits of Grenville district, Argenteuil county, Quebec; by M. E. Wilson. Pp. 88, 3 maps, 11 pls., 2 figs.

No. 99. Road material surveys in 1915; by L. Reinecke. Pp. 190, 2 maps, 10 pls., 10 figs.

No. 100. The Cretaceous Theropodus Dinosaur Gorgosaurus; by Lawrence M. Lambe. Pp. 84, 49 figs. This is a carnivorous Dinosaur from the Belly river formation of Red Deer river, Alberta, first described by the author in April, 1914 (Ottawa Naturalist, vol. **28**). It had an estimated length of some 28 or 29 feet and the restoration of the type specimen is well shown on a separate plate (x 1/18), fig. 49.

No. 101. Pleistocene and recent deposits in the vicinity of Ottawa, with a description of the soils; by W. A. Johnston. Pp. 69, 1 map (scale 1 mile to 1 inch, to be had separately), 8 pls.

No. 102. Espanola district, Ontario; by Terrence T. Quirke. Pp. 92, 1 map, 6 pls., 8 figs.

No. 103. Timiskaming County, Quebec; by M. E. Wilson. Pp. 197, 1 map, 16 pls., 6 figs.

Museum Bulletin.—No. 27. Contributions to the Mineralogy of Black Lake area, Quebec; by Eugene Poitevin and R. P. D. Graham. Pp. 82, 12 pls., 22 figs. See the following notice.

Summary Report for 1916. Pp. 419, 13 maps, 12 figs.

(2.) *Mines Branch;* Eugene Haanel, Director.

No. 217. Iron Ore Occurrences in Canada. In two volumes, compiled by E. Lindeman and L. L. Bolton. Introductory by A. H. A. Robinson, with appendixes containing numerous maps in separate covers.

Bulletins.—No. 14. The Coal Fields and Coal Industry of Eastern Canada; a general survey and description; by Francis W. Gray. Pp. 67, 1 map, 26 pls., 1 fig.

No. 15. The Mining of thin coal seams as applied to the Eastern Coal Fields of Canada; by J. F. Kellock Brown. Pp. 135, 1 map, 1 plate, 61 figs.

No. 17. The value of peat fuel for the generation of steam; by John Blizard. Pp. 42, 1 plate, 5 figs.

No. 19. Test of some Canadian sandstones to determine their suitability as pulpstones; by L. Heber Cole. Pp. 6, 6 pls., 4 figs.

Summary Report for 1916. Pp. 183, 14 pls., 10 figs.

Also separate reports on the production for 1916 of copper, gold, lead, nickel, silver, etc.; of iron and steel; of coal and coke.

Further, the Preliminary Report on the Mineral Production of Canada for 1917 (John McLeish, Chief of Division of Mineral Resources and Statistics). The total valuation of all products is estimated at very nearly 200 million dollars. This is an increase of about 9 p. c. over 1917, and 40 p. c. over 1916.

4. *Contributions to the Mineralogy of Black Lake Area, Quebec;* by EUGENE POITEVIN and R. P. D. GRAHAM. Mus. Bull. No. 27, Dept. Mines, Can. Geol. Surv., 1918, pp. 82, pls. 12, figs. 22.—An important asbestos and chromic iron district is located in the southeastern part of Ireland and the northwestern part of Coleraine townships, Megantic county, province of Quebec. Unusual minerals have been obtained from the various mines and pits of this district for a considerable time but no systematic study of them has previously been published. After a short introduction giving the general geological features of the area and a section devoted to a consideration of the genesis of the minerals, the authors give a detailed description of the different species observed. Some thirty-four different minerals are noted, chemical analyses and the results of crystallographic and optical study being given for the most important. The following minerals are especially interesting; Stichtite, previously known only from Tasmania, has been identified here. Diopside is found in minute crystals of unusual habit, their color being either colorless, lilac or yellow; some eleven new forms have been identified on the crystals together with a large number of rare forms; analyses show that the material is almost of the normal type represented by the formula $CaMg(SiO_3)_2$. Both grossularite and andradite garnets are found; the crystals are notable frequently having rare tetrahexahedral and hexoctahedral forms, one type showing the hexoctahedron (853) almost in simple development. Small and exceptionally brilliant crystals of vesuvianite also occur, showing the following colors: colorless, lilac, emerald-green, pale yellow and reddish brown. A new mineral coleraineite was also found. An abstract of its description has been given in this Journal, see **45**, 478, 1918. W. E. F.

II. MISCELLANEOUS SCIENTIFIC INTELLIGENCE.

1. *Field Museum of Natural History.*—Annual Report of FREDERICK J. V. SKIFF, Director, to the Board of Trustees for the year 1917. Pp. 147-222, with numerous illustrations. Notwithstanding adverse conditions gratifying progress on the new museum building in Grant Park is noted. It is stated that the steel for the roof of the entire building (except entrances) would probably be in place by April, 1918.

Botanical Series. Vol. **4**, No. 1. *New Species of Xanthium and Solidago;* by CHARLES FREDERICK MILLSPAUGH and EARL E. SHERFF. Pp. 7, 6 pls.

2. *The Sarawak Museum Journal;* issued by the Sarawak Museum under the authority of His Highness the Rajah.—Part III of vol. **2**, pp. 287-424 contains an important memoir, entitled "Keys to the Ferns of Borneo;" this is by E. B. COPELAND, professor of plant biology, University of the Philippines.

3. *The Normal and Pathological Histology of the Mouth;* by Arthur Hopewell-Smith. Vol. I, Normal Histology. Pp. xvii, 345, with 2 colored plates and 262 text figures. Philadelphia, 1918 (P. Blakiston's Son and Co.).—This is the first of the two volumes of a second, revised and enlarged edition of the author's ''Histology and Patho-histology of the teeth and associated parts.'' It describes the cellular formation and histogenesis of all the organs of the mouth, but has particular reference to the structure and development of the teeth. The subject is treated comprehensively, the dental structures found in various mammals, reptiles and fishes being introduced for comparison. Debated questions concerning the functions of various types of cells are discussed in an appendix. Both text and illustrations require the highest commendation. W. R. C.

4. *Helvetica Chimica Acta* (Georg & Co., Basel, Geneva).—The Swiss Chemical Society, founded some seventeen years ago, has recently issued the first part (pp. 1-96) of a new periodical, under the title given above; it is to be devoted to pure chemistry and to serve as the organ of the Society. The editorial committee consists of MM. Bosshard, Fichter, Guye, Pictet, Rupe and Werner, all of Switzerland. The present plan is to issue 6 to 8 parts yearly, aggregating from 500 to 1000 pages; the subscription price is 25 francs per year. This undertaking is particularly noteworthy in view of the difficult situation economically occupied by Switzerland at the present time, and the disinterested contributions which the country is so freely making in behalf of suffering humanity.

Obituary.

William Earl Hidden, well known for his work in American Mineralogy, died at his country home, Ocean Grove, N. J., on June 12, 1918, at the age of sixty-five years. He was early engaged as an artist, but his interest in minerals led to his spending many years in the search for rare specimens, particularly those of commercial value found in the South. One of the remarkable localities investigated by him was that in Alexander County, N. C.; from it came the emerald-green variety of spodumene, used as a gem and which received the name *Hiddenite* (1881). He also developed the deposit of rare minerals at Burnett, Llano Co., Texas. The pages of this Journal contain many notes and articles on minerals by him particularly from 1880 to 1905.

Sir Alexander Pedler, F.R.S., died on May 13 at the age of sixty-eight years. He was early an active investigator in chemistry and in 1873 was made professor of chemistry at Calcutta; later he was prominent in the meteorological service and in other official lines; since 1907 he had been honorary secretary of the British Science Guild.

THE

AMERICAN JOURNAL OF SCIENCE

[FOURTH SERIES.]

Art. XVII.—*A Modification of the Periodic Table;* by Ingo W. D. Hackh.

About fifty years ago Newland[1] recognized a certain periodicity among the elements and compiled his well known "octaves." At that time chemical knowledge had progressed so far, that Lothar Meyer[2] and Mendeléeff[3] could express it in the form of the periodic system. But it was still somewhat fragmentary, that is to say while the periods were clearly recognized as such, there was a certain discrepancy in connecting them. In other words, there was a missing link, which was not found until the discovery of the rare gases by Ramsay, Rayleigh, Travers and Cleve in 1894 and 1895. These elements seemed at first to have no place in the system and aroused much controversy as to their position in the periodic system. But in spite of the fact that some, *e. g.* Dennstedt,[1] believed argon to be a kind of nitrogen$=N_3$ (like ozone $= O_3$) they were placed either in a new group, the zero group, or in the eighth group by Thomson,[5] Ramsay,[6] Crookes[7] and others.

As Thomson has pointed out, the electropotential of these rare gases may be regarded as ± 0 or $\pm \infty$. Thus they form the connecting link between the periods, viz. the halogens and the alkali metals, and we obtain a continuous line of elements when arranged with increasing atomic weights.

But there was still some uncertainty as to the limits of the periodic system (compare Losanitsch[8]) which was not

[1] For references see the end of this paper.

cleared up until the recent discovery of the high-frequency spectra of the elements by Moseley,[9] and the assignment of atomic numbers to the elements. From the work of Broglie,[10] Hicks,[11] and Rydberg,[12] and others we are now comparatively certain as to the relative atomic numbers of the elements and the spaces left blank by so far undiscovered elements.

We can, therefore, proceed to establish the periodic system in a more rigid form. The customary table of Mendeléeff and Meyer is not correct, owing to the extreme difficulty of classifying the elements Nos. 59-72. If they

	0	1A	2A	3A	4	5A	6A	7A	0	
Ia	2.He	3.Li	4.Be	5.B	6.C	7.N	8.O	9.F	10.Ne	Ib
IIa	10.Ne	11.Na	12.Mg	13.Al	14.Si	15.P	16.S	17.Cl	18.A	IIb
IIIa	18.A	19.K	20.Ca	21.Sc	22.Ti 32.Ge	33.As	34.Se	35.Br	36.Kr	IIIb
IVa	36.Kr	37.Rb	38.Sr	39.Y	40.Zr 50.Sn	51.Sb	52.Te	53.I	54.Xe	IVb
Va	54.Xe	55.Cs	56.Ba	57.La	58.Ce 72.Lu 82.Pb	83.Bi	84.Po	85.	86.Nt	Vb
VIa	86.Nt	87.	88.Ra	89.Ac	90.Th					
	±∞	+	⟶		±0	⟶		−	±∞	

TABLE I. The periods of the system: Group O being the terminals, Group 4 being the transition points.

are placed in the usual way, we would expect to find another rare gas between Xe and Nt; another alkali metal between Cs and No. 87; and so on—but we know that this is not the case, and the considerations of this paper will prove this.

Many attempts have been made to harmonize these facts with the periodic system, either by means of "pleyads" Σ Ce, Σ Fe as proposed by Biltz,[13] Büchner[14] and others, or by subdivision into smaller groups, *e. g.* by R. J. Meyer;[15] or by simply writing these elements into the different groups, without regard to their properties, as done *e. g.* by Brauner;[16] or by the more convenient way of simply ignoring them and writing into the proper place of the system: "Ce etc.," as is the usual and customary method of procedure.

Our present knowledge enables us now to make the assumption that the rare gases are so to speak the terminals of the periods. Beginning in any period with a rare gas, whose electro potential we consider to be $\pm \infty$ we find that the elements following it change from positive to negative until the period ends in a rare gas again. This is shown in Table I. It will be noticed that in this arrangement only the first four and last four members of the periods are recorded and that the elements of the carbon group form the transition line from a positive to a negative element. The elements of the carbon group may be regarded as the zero point in each period respectively. We have then in the first and second period one zero point each (C, Si) and in the third and fourth period two zero points each (Ti-Ge, Zr-Sn), while the very long fifth period has three zero points. When we plot the relative position of the elements in the displacement series against the atomic numbers, we obtain the following interesting curve (p. 484).

The displacement series was constructed from such data as offered by Wilsmore,[17] Palmaer,[18] Abegg[19] and those given in the Chemiker Kalender[20] and Landolt Börnstein.[21] There are interesting analogies in this curve. The first six and the last seven elements of the four complete periods have similar positions; this makes thirteen elements whose position is determined. It is, therefore, clear that in the fifth period from X to Nt there can be no unknown rare gas with its corresponding thirteen elements; we must rather assume that, as the potential difference between the first and last member in each group is the same, and divided among 7, 17, 35 elements, the difference in potential among the 35 elements is naturally very small and gives a group of very similar elements, that is the group of the rare earth metals. In other words the potential difference from Li to F, and from Na to Cl in the first two periods, is divided among seven elements. The potential difference from K to Br, and from Rb to I in the two long periods, is divided among seventeen elements, which show already the formation of "vertical" groups (Mn-Fe-Co-Ni, etc.). In the fifth period this same potential is divided among 35 elements, thus forming naturally a very long group of elements in which the difference of their properties is very slight.

A similar curve is obtained by plotting the maximum polar number of the elements against the atomic number as shown in fig. 2. The negative or positive polar num-

Fig. 1.

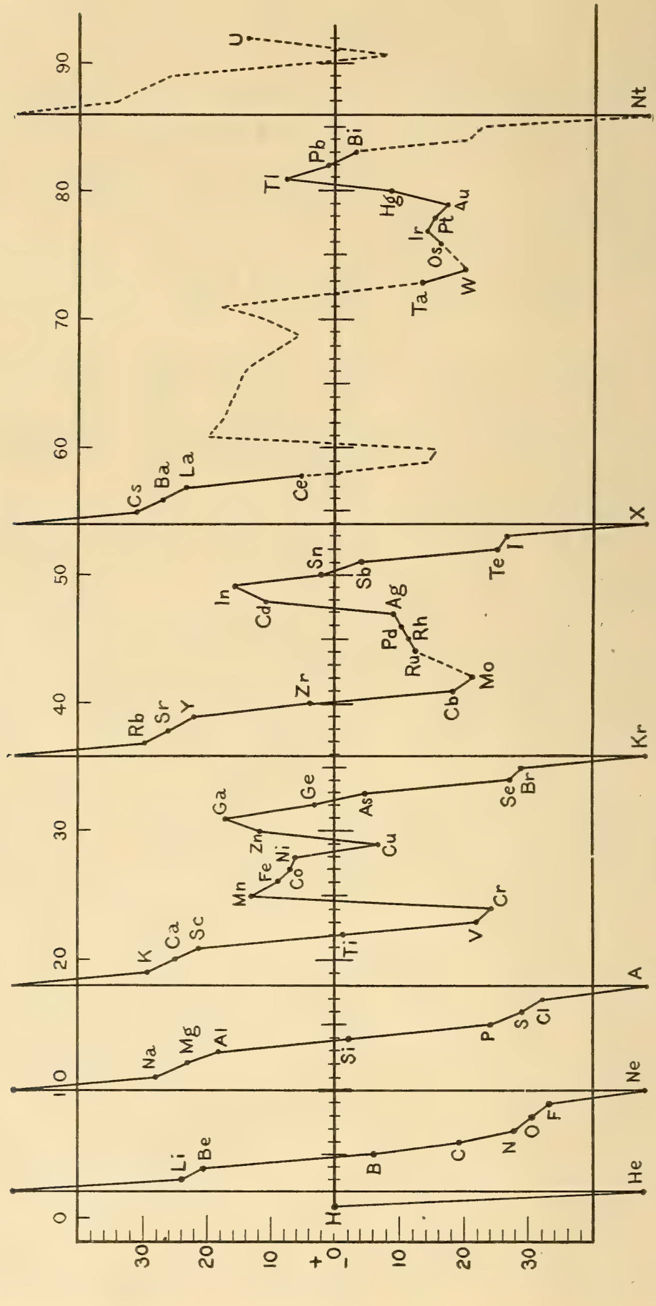


Fig. 1. The relative electromotive force of the elements.

FIG. 2.

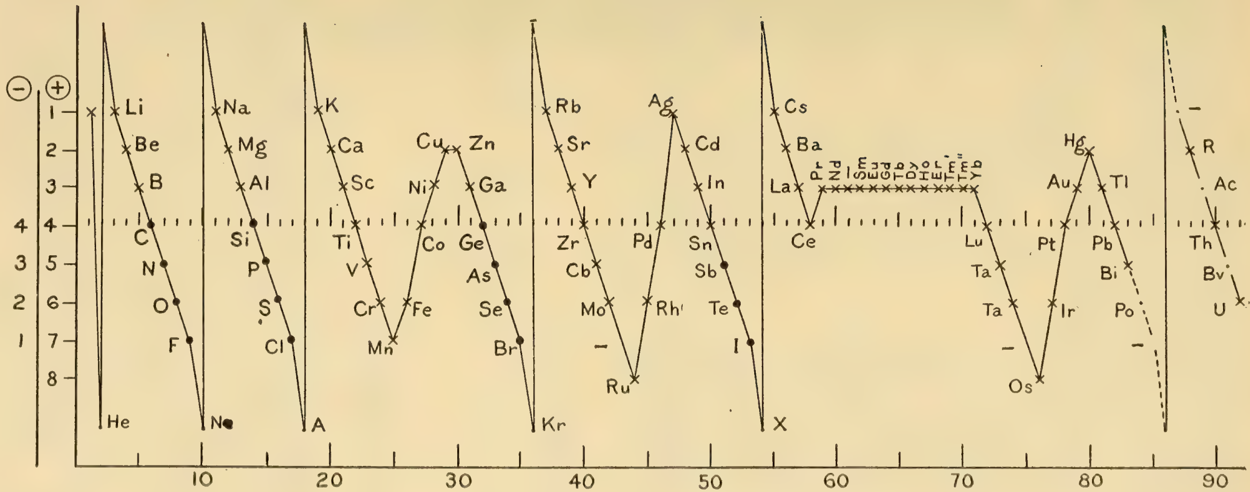


FIG. 2. The Maximum Polar number of the elements.

The Minimum Polar number is 0, except for the nonmetals, where the minimum polar number is indicated by a dot ●, *e. g.*, N −3 and +5, Cl −1 and +7, etc.

ber of an element is the mathematical expression of their valence on the basis of oxygen = —2, according to Bray and Branch.[22] A table of all the polar numbers is given in Table II which gives also an indication of the character of the compounds. It will be noted that the

		1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8
1	H	0							
2	He								
3	Li	⦶							
4	Be		Ó						
5	B			⊖̲					
6	C				⊖̲				
7	N	o	o	⊜̲	o	⊜			
8	O		_						
9	F	⊜̲						0	
10	Ne								
11	Na	⦶							
12	Mg		Ó						
13	Al			⊗					
14	Si			o	⊖̲				
15	P	o		⊜̲	o	⊜			
16	S		⊜̲		⊜		⊜		
17	Cl	⊜̲		o	o	o		⊜	
18	A								

		1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8
18	A								
19	K	⦶							
20	Ca		Ó						
21	Sc			0					
22	Ti		o	o	⊖				
23	V		o	0	o	0			
24	Cr		o	0			⊖		
25	Mn		Ó	o	0		o	⊜	
26	Fe		Ó	Ó			⊖		
27	Co			Ó	o				
28	Ni		Ó	o					
29	Cu	o	Ó						
30	Zn		⊗						
31	Ga			⊖					
32	Ge		o		⊖̲				
33	As			⊖̲		⊜			
34	Se		⊖̲		o		⊜		
35	Br	⊖̲		o		o		⊜	
36	Kr								

		1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8
36	Kr								
37	Rb	⦶							
38	Sr		Ó						
39	Y			Ó					
40	Zr				0				
41	Cb		o	0	o	⊖			
42	Mo		o	o	0	o	⊖		
43								.	
44	Ru		o	o	0		o	o	⊖
45	Rh		o	0	o		0		
46	Pd	Ó	0		0				
47	Ag	Ó							
48	CD		0						
49	In	o	o	0					
50	Sn		0		⊖				
51	Sb			0̲	o	⊖			
52	Te		0̲		o		⊖		
53	I	0̲		o		o		⊜	
54	Xe								

		1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8
54	Xe								
55	Cs	⦶							
56	Ba		⦶						
57	La			Ó					
58	Ce			o	Ó				
59	Pr			Ó		o			
60	Nd			0					
61									
62	Sm			0					
63	Eu			o					
64	Gd			o					
65	Tb			o					
66	Dy			o					
67	Ho			o					
68	Er			o					
69	Tm'			o					
70	Tm"			o					
71	Yb			0					
72	Lu			o	0				
73	Ta			o	o	0			
74	W		o		0	o	⊖		
75								.	
76	Os		o	o	o		0		⊖
77	Ir		o	o	0		⊖		
78	Pt		0	o	0				
79	Au	0		0					
80	Hg	0	Ó						
81	Tl	Ó		0					
82	Pb	o	Ó		0				
83	Bi		o	0	o	⊜			
84	Po						.		
85								.	
86	Nt								
87		.							
88	Ra		Ó						
89	Ac			.					
90	Th				0				
91	Bv					.			
92	U		0	o	0	o	⊖		

Positive Polarnumbers of
0 = stable compounds
⦶ = " " " " " ,oxides of strong basic character
Ó = " " " " " " " weak " "
⊗ = " " " " " " " amphoteric " "
⊖ = " " " " " " " weak acid " "
⊜ = " " " " " " " strong acid " "
o = unstable or little known compounds

Negative Polarnumbers of
_ = mainly stable compounds.

"OXIDATION" is the augmentation of the polarnumber, that is the increase in valency, while the reverse "REDUCTION" is the diminution of the polarnumber, e.g. the change from ferrous = 2 to ferric = 3, and from ferric = to ferrate = 6 is "oxidation".

TABLE II. The polar numbers (valence) of the elements.

first and second periods are analogous, also the third and fourth, while in the fifth we recognize in the beginning and end the analogy. The first five and the last eight elements of each period are similar to each other, as was exactly the case in fig. 1.

From these two generalizations of facts we are entitled to divide the elements into periods, similar to the divisions already proposed by Batschinsky,[23] Werner,[24] Adams,[24a] Harkins,[25] and myself.[26] We have, accordingly, the following periods:

1	from	He	to	F	$8 = 2 \times 2^2$	elements	(first short period)
2	"	Ne	"	Cl	$8 =$ "	"	(second " ")
3	"	A	"	Br	$18 = 2 \times 3^2$	"	(first long period)
4	"	Kr	"	I	$18 =$ "	"	(second " ")
5	"	Xe	"	85	$32 = 2 \times 4^2$	"	(very long period)
6	"	Nt	"	U	7 elements		

(together with $H = 1 \times 2^2$ elements)

The explanation for this periodic increase in the number of the elements between the rare gases must be found in the constitution of the atoms. That is to say that the positive and negative charges, or corpuscles, in the rare gases form a stable and neutral system. Let us indicate this stable system of negative electrons around the positive nucleus as x, then this x must be 8 or a multiple of 8, for we have in the first period (according to Parson's scheme)

He	Li	Be	B	C	N	O	F	Ne
x	$x+1$	$x+2$	$x+3$	$x+4$	$x+5$	$x+6$	$x+7$	$x+8=2x$

and so on for the other periods, *e. g.* the third period:

A	K	Ca	Sc	Ti				
$3x$	$3x+1$	$3x+2$	$3x+3$	$3x+4$				
				Ge	As	Se	Br	Kr
				$4x+4$	$4x+5$	$4x+6$	$4x+7$	$4x+8=5x$

This would indicate that the atoms of the elements near the rare gases constitute more stable systems of electrons, and thus exhibit a more distinct characteristic in their properties. On the other hand the larger the number of electrons becomes, the less rigid, and easier interchangeable they become. The interchange of electrons may be illustrated by the remaining elements of the fifth period as follows:

	Ce	Pr	Nd	61	Sm	Eu	Gd	Tb	Dy	Ho
$7x+$	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13
$8x+$						1	2	3	4	5
$9x+$										

	Er	Tm′	Tm″	Yb	Lu	Ta	W	75	Os	Ir	Pt
$7x+$	14	15	16								
$8x+$	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14	15	16
$9x+$				1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8

	Au	Hg	Tl	Pb
$9x+$	9	10	12	12
$10x+$	1	2	3	4

This indicates that *e. g.* the atom of gold is an equilibrium of the system $9x+9=10x+1$ etc. It is outside the scope of this paper to treat the constitution of the atoms, and the above was mentioned in order to bring out the length of the different periods, together with the impossibility of the existence of another rare gas between Xe and Nt.

The next task is then to arrange these results in the best possible way. There are numerous modifications of the periodic table, a proof that the table is not perfect. One of the main objections to the periodic table is the placing of the main and sub groups together in one column; another, far more serious objection is that no indication is made of the different length of the periods. Table III will meet these objections, besides having other advantages. This table was derived from a curve[27] by the simple method of using the upper part of a spiral in its relation to the lower part like an image and its mirrored semblance.

The ideal way of representing the periodic system is naturally a curve, which may take the form of a spiral drawn on a plane, or a helix constructed in space, as has been pointed out by Harkins.[28] In the literature we find many such spirals, compare *e. g.* those of Reynolds,[29] Spring,[30] Huth,[31] Crookes,[32] Houghton,[33] Stoney,[34] Erdmann,[35] Tocher,[36] Emerson,[37] Rayleigh,[38] Scheringa,[39] Hack,[40] Hackh,[41] Rydberg,[42] Soddy,[43] Bilecki,[44] Loring,[45] Kunz[46] and others. But the more extensive use of those spirals is encumbered by the technical difficulties of reproducing them, and for this reason a table derived from a spiral and embodying its advantages is practical and useful. The table presented in this paper preserves not only those relationships among the elements which are expressed by the customary table of the periodic system, but illustrates also a number of new correlations among the elements.

So, for example, the groups and subgroups of the elements are clearly separated, bringing thus the respective elements closer together. From a study of the table we may draw the rule that the *similarity among the properties of the elements in the upper half of the table is more pronounced in the vertical direction* (*analogy in groups*),

	4	5A	6A	7A		Group 0		1A	2A	3A	4	
Vb	82 Pb	83 Bi	84 Po	85		86 Nt		87	88 Ra	89 Ac	90 Th	VI
IVb	50 Sn	51 Sb	52 Te	53 I		54 Xe		55 Cs	56 Ba	57 La	58 Ce	Va
IIIb	32 Ge	33 As	34 Se	35 Br		36 Kr		37 Rb	38 Sr	39 Y	40 Zr	IVa
IIb	14 Si	15 P	16 S	17 Cl		18 Ar		19 K	20 Ca	21 Sc	22 Ti	IIIa
Ib	6 C	7 N	8 O	9 F		10 Ne		11 Na	12 Mg	13 Al	14 Si	IIa
0				1 H		2 He		3 Li	4 Be	5 B	6 C	Ia
III'	22 Ti	23 V	24 Cr	25 Mn	26 Fe	27 Co	28 Ni	29 Cu	30 Zn	31 Ga	32 Ge	III'
IV'	40 Zr	41 Cb	42 Mo	43	44 Ru	45 Rh	46 Pd	47 Ag	48 Cd	49 In	50 Sn	IV'
V"	58 Ce	59 Pr	60 Nd 61	62 Sm	63 Eu 64 Gd	65 Tb	66 Dy 67 Ho	68 Er	69 Tm' 70 Tm"	71 Yb	72 Lu	V"
V'	72 Lu	73 Ta	74 W	75	76 Os	77 Ir	78 Pt	79 Au	80 Hg	81 Tl	82 Pb	V'
VI	90 Th	91 Bv	92 U									
	4	5B	6B	7B		Group 8		1B	2B	3B	4B	

TABLE III. The periodic table, showing groups and periods.

while the *similarity among the elements in the lower half of the table is more pronounced in the horizontal direction* (*analogy in periods*). Accordingly we may speak of group relations and period relations, *e. g.*, the group relation of Au is in regard to Ag and Cu, while the period relation of Au is in regard to Hg and Pt. Or in other words, we may say, *e. g.*, that the chromium *group* includes Cr, Mo, W, U; while the chromium *period* may embrace Cr, Mn, Fe, Co.

A classification of the elements into nonmetals and metals is easily made by considering the elements to the left of the rare gases as nonmetals, those to the right as light metals, and those in the lower half of the table as the heavy metals. The carbon group furnishes the transition elements framing in the elements of the table and guiding from one line to the other.

Among other general properties common to elements in certain areas of the table may be mentioned:

The elements in the *upper* half of the table have the highest electro-potential, the simplest spectra, colorless ions and mostly soluble compounds, and possess mostly a single valence.

The elements in the *lower* half of the table have a lower electro-potential, complex spectra, colored ions and form complex double salts, and possess mostly more than one valence.

On the *left* side of the table are the electro-negative elements forming acids.

On the *right* side of the table are the electro-positive elements, forming bases and oxysalts, sulphides, etc.

In the center of the lower half are the amphoteric elements, forming weak acids, weak bases, many complicated compounds and double salts, many insoluble and colored ions.

A new and striking feature of the table is also the illustration of the somewhat notorious chemical affinity. This often criticized term affinity is employed to express the tendency or selective preference for certain elements. Such a tendency exists and is characteristic of certain regions in the table. We have for instance:

Elements combining with nitrogen and forming typical nitrides are those around boron:

	Ca	Sc	Ti
	Mg	Al	
Li	Be	B	

Elements having a weak tendency to combine with oxygen (the noble metals) are those neighboring gold:

	Ag	
Platin-metals	Au	Hg

Elements combining with sulphur, forming typical sulphides, are:

Mn	Fe	Co	Ni	Cu	Zn	Ga	Go	As
				Ag	Cd	In	Sn	Sb
				Pd	Hg	Tl	Pb	Bi

where the maximum of affinity is at Pd and decreases gradually toward Mn, which has the lowest affinity for sulphur.*

The elements combining with hydrogen fall into two distinct areas:

(*a*) The nonmetals, giving gaseous or liquid hydrogen-compounds in which hydrogen is positive.

(*b*) The light metals, giving hydrides in the form of salts, with hydrogen being negative.

Elements combining with cyanogen (CN′) and forming characteristic radicals and cyanid-ions also occupy neighboring places:

Cr	Mn	Fe	Co	Ni	Cu	Zn	
Mo	—	Ru	Rh	Pd	Ag	Cd	
		Os	Ir	Pt	Au		Tl

Typical ammoniac compounds are formed by the ele--ments around nickel:

Co	Ni	Cu	
	Pd		Cd
	Pt		

These illustrations of the selective tendency or the chemical affinity among the elements could be multiplied indefinitely, *e. g.*, organometallic compounds, etc. Closely related to this is the polar number, already mentioned, and the isomorphism.

Table II has shown the positive or negative polar numbers of the elements, and from it the periodicity of the valence is clearly shown. It appears that the last

* The affinity for sulphur is given as follows: Pd Hg Ag Cu Bi Cd Sb Sn Pb Zn Ni Co Fe As Tl Mn, which forms a kind of a displacement series of importance in mineralogy; see Schuermann, Liebig's Annalen, 249, p. 326, 1888.

Weed, Eng. & Min. J., 50, p. 484, 1890.

Van Hise, U. S. Geol. Surv. Monograph, 47, p. 1114, 1904.

Buckley & Buehler, Missouri Bur. Geol., 4 (2d ser.), p. 90.

Emmons, U. S. Geol. Surv., Bull. 625, 1917.

four members of each period have polar numbers always two units apart, *e. g.*, 1-3-5-7, 2-4-6, 1-3-5, 2-4, etc., while the polar numbers of the elements in the middle of a period are odd and even. A survey of their compounds show, that isomorphism is closely related to the polar number of the elements. Thus the table of isomorphism as given by Nernst can be completed as follows:

Polar number 1: Li-Na-K-Rb-Cs; Cu-Ag-Pd-Au-Hg-Tl.
Polar number 2: Be-Mg-Ca-Sr-Ba; Zn-Cu-Ni-Co-Fe-Mn-Cr-V-Ti; Cd-In-Sn; Hg-Pb.
Polar number 3: B-Al-Sc-Y-La; Sc-Ti-V-Cr-Mn-Fe-Co-Ni; Ga-In-Tl; La-Ce-rare earth, etc.
Polar number 4: C-Si-Ti-Zr-Th; Ge-Sn-Pb; etc.
Polar number 5: N-P-As-Sb-Bi; V-Cb-Ta.
Polar number 6: S-Se-Te; Cr-Mo-W-U; Mn-Fe; Ru-Rh; W-Os-Ir.
Polar number 7: F-Cl-Br-I; Mn.

We may take, for example, group 6, with the maximum polar number 6 and find the following general formulas for some of their compounds:

-2: H_2X = Hydrogen-x-ides, where X is S-Se-Te.
$+4$: $XO_2 + H_2O = H_2XO_3$ = x-ites, resp. their salts where X can be practically each element.
$+6$: $XO_3 + H_2O = H_2XO_4$ = x-ates, resp. salts.

thus we have sulphates, selenates, tellurates, chromates, manganates, molybdates, tungstates, uranates, ferrates, etc., etc., in all of them X being hexavalent. Fig. 3 illustrates this relationship. We may *e. g.* take the bivalent and trivalent elements and find two distinct series of compounds: the metall-*ous* compounds, crystallizing all with 7 mol. of H_2O and commonly known as the *vitriols* of

(Ti)	(V)	Cr	Mn	Fe	Co	Ni	Cu	Zn	Mg(Be)
		Mo			Rh	Pd		Cd	
		(W)			Ir	Pt			

all of them being soluble and forming double salts with the elements of group 1. On the other hand we have the metall-*ic* compounds of the simple formula $M_2(SO_4)_3 \cdot 12H_2O$ which forms the well-known series of alumes $XM(SO_4)_2 \cdot 24H_2O$ where X is a monovalent metal or NH_4' and M a trivalent element, either

(Tl) In Ga Al Sc Ti V Cr Mn Fe Co

In both cases we have seen that the elements occupy neighboring positions in the table, and the connecting

Fig. 3.

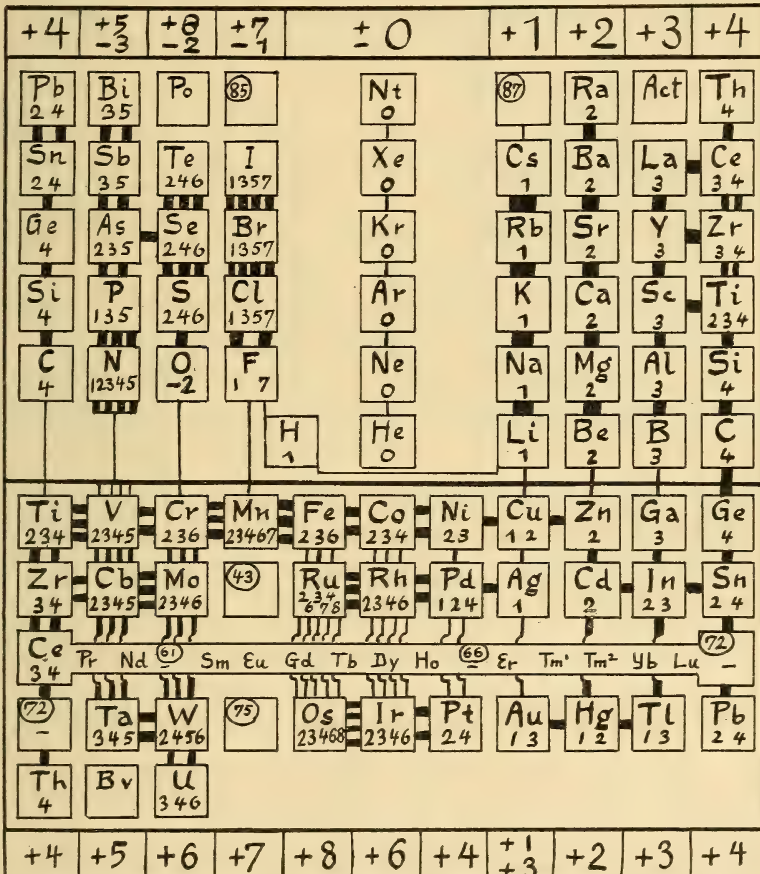


Fig. 3. Polar number and Isomerism of the elements.

medium is its polar number. The closer the elements stand to each other, the closer are its properties related to each other.

We may take, for instance, the chlorides of any A-group, say LiCl, NaCl, KCl, RbCl, CsCl and we find, as is well known, close relationship not only in regard to their forms of crystallization, their solubility, their melting-points, but also in regard to their chemical behavior and stability. This periodicity can be extended to the mono-

Pb 11.25	Bi 9.82			Nt		Ra		Th 11.0
Sn 7.29	Sb 6.71	Te 6.26	I 4.958	Xe 3.52	Cs 1.88	Ba 3.78	La 6.163	Ce 6.68
Ge 5.49	As 4.64	Se 4.26	Br 3.187	Kr 2.155	Rb 1.52	Sr 2.5	Y 3.80	Zr 4.15
Si 2.49	P 2.26	S 1.95	Cl 1.33	Ar 1.212	K 0.865	Ca 1.578	Sc 2.5	Ti 4.87
C 2.2	N 0.80	O 1.134	F 0.988	Ne ?	Na 0.978	Mg 1.743	Al 2.583	Si 2.49
			H 0.061	He 1.44	Li 0.594	Be 2.1	B 2.68	C 2.2

Ti 4.87	V 5.5	Cr 6.50	Mn 7.39	Fe 7.84	Co 8.65	Ni 8.28	Cu 8.945	Zn 6.915	Ga 5.95	Ge 5.496
Zr 4.15	Cb 7.06	Mo 9.01		Ru 12.26	Rh 12.1	Pd 11.4	Ag 10.47	Cd 8.546	In 7.42	Sn 7.178

Ce 6.7	Pr 6.5	Nd 6.9		Sm 7.8	Eu ?		Gd ?	Tb ?	Dy ?	Ho ?		Er 4.8	Tm ?		Yb ?	Lu ?

	Ta 16.6	W 16.54		Os 22.48	Ir 22.15	Pt 21.5	Au 19.26	Hg 13.59	Tl 11.86	Pb 11.25
Th 11.0		U 18.68	1 cc H_2O at 18°C, 760 mm = 1,00							

TABLE IV. The specific gravity of the elements (calculated to $H_2O = 1$).

chlorides of Cu, Ag, Au with the addition, however, that in the lower half of the table the similarity along periods dominates the similarity along groups; therefore the properties of these chlorides, CuCl, AgCl, AuCl, will be more affected by the period relation than the group relation. Thus we find that CuCl and AgCl, while still stable, are less soluble and ionized, while AuCl is unstable and hydrolyzes with water forming Au and $AuCl_3$, this latter chloride being more stable and closely related to $PtCl_3$, as should be expected from the rule given above.

To give further illustrations of this rule of "vertical" resemblance in the upper half, and "horizontal" resemblance in the lower half of the table, is unnecessary; an

metallic ←			non-metallic
32.Germanium Ge 5.496	33.Arsenic As_1 / As_2 / As_8 / As_x crst / gray / brwn / yllw. 5.74 / 4.64 / 3.7 / 2.21	34.Selenium Se_1 / Se_8 / Se_x metl / mncl / amph. 4.8 / 4.46 / 4.26	35.Br 3.187
14.Silicon Si_1 / Si_x crst / amph. 2.49 / 2.35	15.Phosphorus P_2 / P_8 / P_4 violet / red / white 2.34 / 2.16 / 1.83	16.Sulphur S_8 / S_8 / S_3 octr / mncl / amph. 2.07 / 1.95 / 1.92	17.Cl liqu. 1.33
6.Carbon C_1 / C_x / C_x Dmnd / Grph / amph 3.53 / 2.2 / 1.8	7.Nitrogen N 0.80	8.Oxygen O_3 / O_2 liqu. 1.134	9.F liqu. 0.988
crst.- cristallinic metl.- metallic liqu.- liquid	amph.- amorphous mncl.-monoclinic		1.Hydrogen H_1 / H_x metl / liqu. 0.62 / 0.061

TABLE V. The allotropic forms of some nonmetals, showing the position toward the metallic side.

examination will make this self-evident. It should be pointed out, however, that by the separation of the elements into their A and B groups, the periodicity of their properties is more clearly exhibited and one can grasp the increasing or decreasing tendencies of these properties in a more convenient and shorter way. A very good illustration is furnished by Table IV, showing the specific gravity of the elements. The arrows indicate the increasing density, which follows the arrows with the exception of some elements of the first period, in a striking manner. It is well known that in a given group of elements the metallic character increases with increasing density and this fact can even be extended to the allotropic forms of the elements. Table V represents a section of the main table in which the density of the allotropic forms of some elements are placed. These

Pb 600.5	Bi 544.08			Nt 170		Ra 1300 ?		Th 2010
Sn 504.9	Sb 902.5	Te 723	I 386.6	Xe 133	Cs 301.5	Ba 1122	La 1090	Ce 896 ?
Ge 1231	As 770 ?	Se 490	Br 265.8	Kr 104	Rb 312.1	Sr 1070	Y 1550	Zr 1990
Si 1687	P 317.1	S 383.3	Cl 169.6	Ar 83.5	K 336.6	Ca 1076	Sc 1600 ?	Ti 2068
C 4000 ?	N 62.61	O 54.7	F 40	Ne 20	Na 371.0	Mg 905.5	Al 931.7	Si 1687
			H 14.08	He 1	Li 459	Be 1237	B 3000 ?	C 4000 ?

Ti 2068	V 1990	Cr 1823	Mn 1530	Fe 1803	Co 1751	Ni 1725	Cu 1356	Zn 692.5	Ga 303	Ge 1231
Zr 1990	Cb 2400	Mo 2808		Ru 2225	Rh 2215	Pd 1822	Ag 1234.0	Cd 594.0	In 428	Sn 504.9

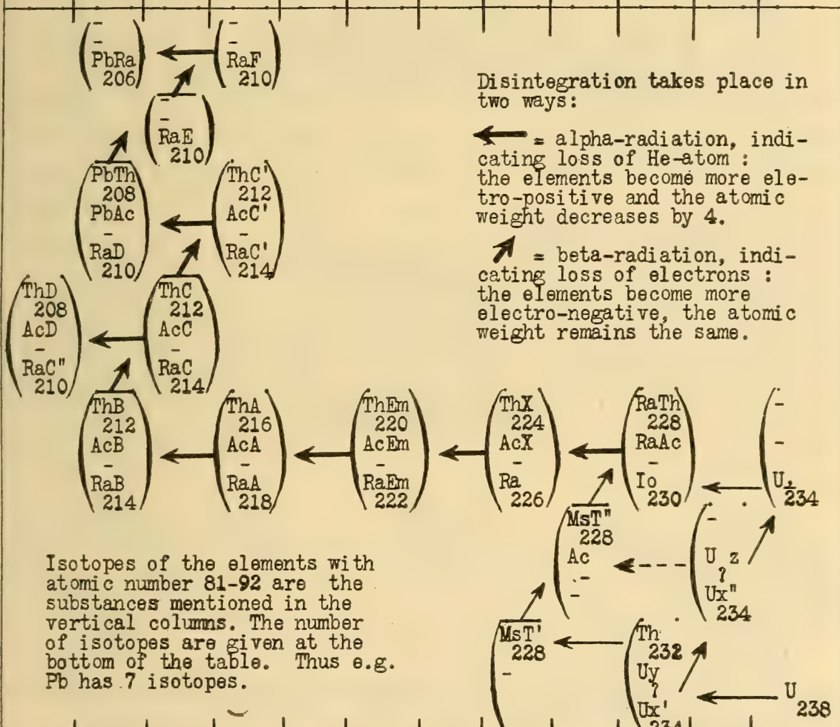
Ce 896	Pr 1210	Nd 1110		Sm 1600	Eu ?		Gd ?	Tb ?	Dy ?	Ho ?		Er ?	Tm 2170		Yb ?	Lu ?

	Ta 3120	W 3540		Os 2970	Ir 2670	Pt 2028	Au 1335.5	Hg 234.28	Tl 574.8	Pb 600.5
Th 2010		U 2700	T = t − 273.13							

TABLE VI. Melting points of the elements (absolute degrees).

allotropic forms are so placed that they follow the general direction of increasing density and the result is, that the more metallic allotropes come toward the carbon group, which forms the transition to the metals, while the allotropic forms of a nonmetallic character are placed toward the halogen group, thus fitting very well into the system. The melting points given in Table VI follow not so generally a certain direction, nevertheless their

3B	4	5A	6A	7A	0	1A	2A	3A	4	5B	6B
81 Tl	82 Pb	83 Bi	84 Po	85	86 Nt	87	88 Ra	89 Ac	90 Th	91 Bv	92 U



4	7	4	7	0	3	0	4	2	6	2	2

TABLE VII. System of radioactive elements, from thallium to uranium.

periodicity is better exhibited than in the old table. I have used the table in keeping a permanent record of all the numerical data about the elements; each property that can be expressed in a numerical value has its own table, and I have found this method very satisfactory and better than the customary alphabetical tables. New determinations are constantly added and the reference recorded. In doing this work, I was surprised to find how very fragmentary our knowledge is; with the exception of the specific gravity and the melting point, which are known of nearly every element, there are hardly any data of properties in the literature for more than forty

	4	5	6	7	0	1	2	3	4	
					RARE EARTH METALS					
V"	Ce	Pr	Nd	Sm	Eu Gd Tb Dy Ho	Er	Tm' Tm"	Yb	Lu	V"
		NON METALS			INERT ELEMENTS	LIGHT METALS				
IVb	Sn	Sb	Te	I	Xe	Cs	Ba	La	Ce	Va
IIIb	Ge	As	Se	Br	Kr	Rb	Sr	Y	Zr	IVa
IIb	Si	P	S	Cl	Ar	K	Ca	Sc	Ti	IIIa
Ib	C	N	O	F	Ne	Na	Mg	Al	Si	IIa
0				H	He	Li	Be	B	C	Ia
					HEAVY METALS					
III'	Ti	V	Cr	Mn	Fe Co Ni	Cu	Zn	Ga	Ge	III'
IV'	Zr	Cb	Mo		Ru Rh Pd	Ag	Cd	In	Sn	IV'
V'	Lu	Ta	W		Os Ir Pt	Au	Hg	Tl	Pb	V'
					RADIOACTIVE ELEMENTS					
Tl	Pb	Bi	Po		Nt		Ra	Ac	Th	Bv U

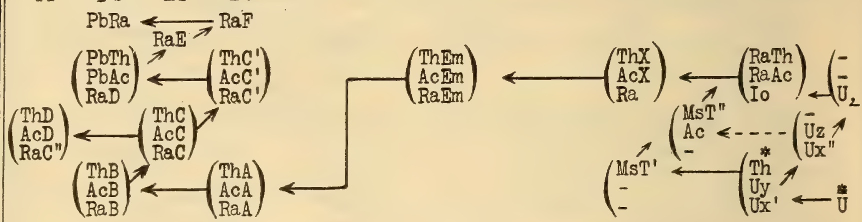


TABLE VIII. The complete periodic system (elements and isotopes).

elements; most of those are limited to twenty and even ten elements. There is still a great field open for physical determinations of element-constants.

The isotopes of the radioactive elements are given in Table VII, in which the three series of disintegration, *e. g.*, uranium, actinium, thorium, are combined into one. It will be seen, that with the exception of the beginning of these series, the disintegration of all three series is analogous from the isotopes of thorium (RaTh, RaAc, Io) to the isotopes of lead (PbTh, PbAc, RaD). The connection between the uranium and actinium series is doubtful (U-Uy-Uz-Ac) and indicated by a broken arrow. The other series begin as follows:

U-Ux′-Ux″ (Bv)-U_2-Io-Ra, etc.
Th-MsT′-MsT″-RaTh-ThX, etc.
Ac-RaAc-AcX, etc.

At the bottom of the table are given the number of known isotopes and their atomic weights. The atomic weights of the isotopes of the longest life periods are underlined, while the missing atomic weights of the actinium series are indicated by an arrow. A regularity in the atomic weights is naturally to be expected and clearly seen from a study of the table.

This table of the radioactive elements can be attached at the bottom of the main table, or as done in Table VIII, these elements may be put in brackets, indicating their isotopes, and also their group-relationship, indicated by horizontal or vertical lines respectively.

An exhaustive treatise on the periodic system is in preparation, of which this paper is intended to be a preliminary statement.

Conclusion.

1. By plotting the elements, as to their atomic numbers against their relative position in the displacement series, a periodic curve is obtained, in which a similarity among the element groups and periods exists. (Fig. 1.)

2. A similar periodicity is shown by the polar numbers of the elements (fig. 2); accordingly the elements are divided into two short, two long and one very long period.

3. From both curves it can be predicted that no new rare gas can be discovered, because such a new element would demand characteristic properties of about thirteen other elements, and of these thirteen elements none is known, or in other words, no known element between the atomic numbers 63 and 76 exhibits these characteristic properties. Therefore all the elements of the electropotential $\pm \infty$ are known.

4. In establishing a more rigid form of the periodic system these elements (He, Ne, A, Kr, X, Nt) are used as the starting and ending points of the periods; between these terminals the properties change periodically, and the more elements there are between (fifth period), the less characteristic is the change. This accounts for the formation of such groups as Fe-Co-Ni, Ru-Rh-Pd, Os-Ir-Pt, and the rare earths.

5. The periodic system is best expressed in a continuous curve, *e. g.*, spiral. But as such graphic representations are difficult, a table has been derived which shows the relationship among the elements better than the customary table. A number of characteristic features of the table have been pointed out and the rule established that: *The Similarity* among the elements in the upper half of the table is in a vertical direction, while the similarity among the elements in the lower half is in a horizontal direction.

6. The term affinity is vindicated, when its use is restricted to a characteristic tendency of the elements in a certain area of the new periodic table.

7. A table showing the close relationship between polar number and isomorphism is presented.

8. The periodicity of the specific gravity is shown in Table V and the allotropic forms of the elements are introduced into the periodic system by Table VI, representing a section of the main table. An accumulation of more facts regarding the allotropic forms of other elements will justify an enlarged table, giving also the transition points.

9. A condensed system of the radioactive elements has been constructed (Table VII) which can be used as an appendix to the main table (Table VIII).

Berkeley, California.

REFERENCES.

[1] Chem. News, **13**, pp. 113 and 130, 1866.
[2] Ann. Chem. Pharm., **7**, 354, 1870.
[3] Journ. Russ. Phys. Chem. Ges., **1**, pp. 60 and 229, 1869.
[4] Chem. Zeitg., **19**, p. 2164, 1895.
[5] Z. anorg. Chem., **9**, pp. 190 and 283, 1895.
[6] Ber., **31**, p. 3111, 1898.
[7] Z. anorg. Chem., **18**, p. 72, 1898.
[8] Die Grenzen des periodischen Systems, Belgrad, 1906, and Ion, **1**, 259, 1910.

[9] Phil. Mag., **26**, p. 1024, 1913.
[10] Compt. rend., **159**, p. 304, 1914.
[11] Phil. Mag., **28**, p. 139, 1914.
[12] Phil. Mag., **28**, p. 144, 1914.
[13] Ber., **35**, p. 562, 1902.
[14] Ber., **46**, p. 422, 1915; also Chem. Weekbl., **12**, p. 336, 1915.
[15] Naturwissenschaften, **2**, p. 781, 1914.
[16] Z. Elektrochem., **14**, p. 525, 1908.
[17] Z. Elektrochem., **7**, p. 254, 1900; also Z. phys. Chem., **35**, p. 291, 1900.
[18] Festschrift Nernst, p. 332, 1912.
[19] Handbuch der anorg. Chem., III, 2, p. 2, 1907.
[20] Chem. Kal., II, p. 333, 1915.
[21] Phys. Chem. Tabellen, p. 1208.
[22] J. Am. Chem. Soc., **35**, p. 1440, 1913.
[23] Z. phys. Chem., **43**, p. 372, 1893.
[24] Ber., **38**, p. 914, 1905.
[24a] J. Am. Chem. Soc., **33**, p. 648, 1911.
[25] J. Am. Chem. Soc., **38**, p. 169, 1916.
[26] Weltwissen, **3**, p. 63, 1915.
[27] Hackh, Das Synthetische System der Atome, Hamburg, 1915.
[28] J. Am. Chem. Soc., **38**, p. 169, 1916.
[29] Chem. News, **54**, p. 1, 1886.
[30] Ber., **19**, p. 3092, 1886.
[31] Periodische Gesetz, Berlin, 1887.
[32] Chem. News, **78**, p. 25, 1898; also Proc. Roy. Soc., **63**, p. 408, 1898, and Z. anorg. Chem., **18**, p. 72, 1898.
[33] Chem. News, **58**, pp. 93 and 103, 1888.
[34] Phil. Mag., **4**, p. 411, 1902; also Chem. News, **57**, p. 163, 1888; and Proc. Roy. Soc., **46**, p. 115, 1888.
[35] Lehrbuch der anorg. Chem., Beilage.
[36] Pharm. J., **84**, p. 159, 1910.
[37] Am. Chem. J., **45**, p. 160, 1911.
[38] Proc. Roy. Soc., **85**, p. 471, 1911.
[39] Chem. Weekblad, **8**, p. 389, 1911.
[40] Erklärung der chemischen Wertigkeit und periodischen Regelmässigkeit des elements durch ein model, Hamburg, 1913.
[41] Weltwissen, **3**, p. 63, 1915.
[42] Rev. geh. sci., **25**, p. 734, c/o Chem. Abstr., **9**, p. 540, 1915.
[43] Le Radium, **11**, p. 6; also in Chemistry of the Radioactive Elements, part 2, p. 11, 1915.
[44] Chem. Zentr., **2**, p. 1, 1915.
[45] Chem. News, **111**, p. 157, 1915.
[46] Orig. Com., 8th Int. Congr. Appl. Chem., **22**, p. 187.

ART. XVIII.—*On the Cretaceous Age of the "Miocene Flora" of Sakhalin;* by A. N. KRYSHTOFOVICH.[1]

The following pages form a summary of the results of the elaboration of a part of plant fossils collected on Sakhalin Island during 1917, the balance of the collections having been shipped to Petrograd.

The fossil flora of the island of Sakhalin comes chiefly from two localities, Dui and Mgach. It was described originally by Heer[2] in 1878 who referred it to the Miocene. Since it is rather extensive it has usually been taken as a type for purposes of comparison with other Tertiary floras despite the presence of *Nilssonia,* a genus quite unusual in Tertiary deposits. No doubts as to the Tertiary age of this flora have been expressed except that on purely geological grounds Messrs. Tikhonovich and Polevoi[3] have suggested recently that the Dui series (and consequently its flora) was of considerable older Tertiary age than the Mgach series, which is also characterized by a rich flora, and which they regarded as belonging to the Miocene. The matter of special interest is that *Nilssonia* was believed to be a member of this Mgach flora.

Having been despatched by the Comité Géologique in 1917 to Sakhalin, I have been able to prove that the fossil flora of Sakhalin does not belong merely to the Miocene or Tertiary, but comprises several different horizons from the Miocene down to the Cenomanian and in part probably still more ancient. Heer unfortunately described mixed collections from Mgach, where, as I noticed, the exposures of plant-bearing Cenomanian and Miocene beds outcrop close together, although the two are unconformable, a fact which Schmidt and other explorers failed to observe. The predominance of specimens collected in the upper Tertiary exposures in the Heer collection convinced him that the whole flora was Tertiary. However, the presence in my collections made at this locality of *Dammara borealis, Protophyllocladus subintegrifolius,* many ferns, cycads and typical Angio-

[1] Communicated and edited by Prof. Edward W. Berry.

[2] Heer, 1878, Die Miocene Flora der Insel Sachalin, Fl. foss. Arct., vol. 5, pt. 3.

[3] Tikhonovich and Polevoi, 1915, Geomorphological Sketch of Russian Sakhalin, Mémoires de la Comité Géologique, Russia, vol. 120 (new series).

sperms, all collected in lower coastal outcrops, as well as the entire absence of any of these in the flora of upper exposures, leads me to regard the former as really Cretaceous.

The paleobotanical explorations along the sea shore to the south and to the north from the capital of Russian Sakhalin, Alexandrovsk, disclosed many Cretaceous outcrops, not yet fully determined.

The presence of the Cretaceous flora in Sakhalin is particularly important because in Russia as well as in the countries of the Far East we have only meager Cretaceous floras of Angiosperms, notwithstanding that Cretaceous rocks are widely distributed, as was recently noticed by Berry in the description of the Lower Cretaceous of Maryland. Except some fossil woods and Lower Cretaceous forms from the Province of Moscow,[4] and the Ryoseki flora of Japan,[5] we know but one Angiosperm flora from Ural Province,[6] one leaf of Cretaceous *Platanus* conf. *Heeri* Lesq. from Turkestan,[7] and some plants from Hokkaidō, mostly preserved as petrified fragments.[8] In a subsequent paragraph I will indicate that some floras of Siberia, hitherto believed to be Tertiary, partly even Miocene, must be regarded rather as Cretaceous after the present elucidation of the composition of the vegetation during the Cretaceous period in Sakhalin.

Geological sketch of the area.

In addition to the Paleozoic rocks, without any organic remains except *Radiolaria,* and chiefly limited in the eastern part of Sakhalin, the Russian Sakhalin, especially its western part, is made up of Cretaceous, Tertiary and Postpliocene deposits. Former interpretations of the geology of the island, based upon the plant fossils, may now be regarded as wrong.

Orographically in this part of Sakhalin the Coast

[4] Trautschold, 1876, Der Klin'sche Sandstein in Russland, Nouv. Mémoires de la Sōc. Imper. des Nat. de Moscou, vol. 13, p. 191.

[5] Yokoyama, 1894, Mesozoic Plants from Kozuke, Kii, Awa, and Tosa, Jour. Coll. Imp. Univ. Tokyo, vol. 7, p. 3.

[6] Kryshtofovich, 1914, The discovery of the Angiosperm Flora in the Cretaceous of Ural Province, Bull. de l'Acad. Imper., 1914, p. 603.

[7] Romanowsky, 1890, Materialien zur Geologie von Turkestan, vol. 3, p. 139.

[8] See Stopes, 1913, The Cretaceous flora, Bibliography.

Range stretching from the Japanese frontier terminates somewhat to the south of Alexandrovsk, in Cape de la Jonquière, being limited by the Gulf of Tartary on the west and by the graben of Dui river (Alexandrovka) on the east. In the same direction but farther toward the north stretches the Western Range. This mountain chain is separated by the Coast Range from the sea shore to the south from Alexandrovsk. Farther to the north the country is quite open from the sea. According to the testimony of the animal fossils the median part of the Coast Range consists chiefly of the Cretaceous, especially its upper series, which further to the east is interrupted by the fault along the left bank of Alexandrovka river. The Cretaceous here contains sandstones with conglomerates as well as the dark slate with coal, and characterized by both faunal and floral remains. This is overlain without discordance by the Lower Tertiary with two beds of conglomerate at the boundary, in turn intercalated with the coaly shales the age of which is not yet determined although some fossil plants were collected at this horizon. We observe the Cretaceous further to the east beyond the valley of Alexandrovka, where it appears on the slopes of the Western Range. Here it is also coal bearing and at least a part of it represents a more ancient series, characterized only by the fossil plants and lacking the fauna found associated with plants in the Coast Range. As I have observed, the whole western slope as far as Cape Khoi is made up of the same Cretaceous partly unconformably overlain by the younger Tertiary. In the same area, somewhat to the northeast from Alexandrovsk, are exposed the most ancient known Cretaceous strata of the region, characterized by a flora of ferns—mainly *Gleichenia*.

According to the differences indicated by the floras represented at the different horizons of the Cretaceous, and having in mind the presence of the Senonian *Inoceramus* fauna[9] in the upper beds, I propose dividing the Cretaceous into the following three series: I, Upper or Orokkian Series; II, Middle or Gyliakian Series; III, Lower or Ainuan Series.

[9] Sokolow, Kreideinoceramen des russischen Sachalin. Mém. de la Comité géol., n. s., livr. 83, St.-Pétersb. Also Schmidt. 1873, Ueber die Kreide Petrefacten von Sakhalin, Mém. Acad. Sci. St.-Pétersb. (7) vol. 19, No. 7; Yabe, 1909, Zur Stratigraphy und Paleontologie der oberen Kreide von Hokkaido and Sachalin, Zeitschrift der Deutsche Geol. Gesell., vol. 61, p. 402.

The Tertiaries are represented by Older and Younger series called respectively the Dui and Mgach series by Tikhonovich and Polevoi (op. cit.). The Lower series or Dui series takes a prominent part in the composition of the Coast Range, being concordant with the Cretaceous. It consists of sandstones and slates partly marine with shells, but chiefly coal-bearing and containing the best quality of coal in Sakhalin which can be compared only with the English Cardiff and the best Japanese Takashima coal. The series is exposed chiefly on the sea shore and has not been observed out of the boundaries of the Coast Range. It is pierced by eruptive rocks and intercalated by several basaltic sheets and tuffs.

The Mgach or Younger Tertiary series consists of a coal-bearing division below and is represented in the upper part by loose shales and sandstones containing marine shells. To this series belong the slow burning non-coking coals worked at Mgach. This Younger Series also fills the graben of Alexandrovka and nonconformably overlies the Cretaceous to the north of Alexandrovsk, where no traces of the Lower Tertiary Dui series were observed.

The Paleobotanical evidence.

The younger horizon of the Cretaceous developed in the Coast Range is particularly interesting, since it contains representatives of both the fauna and flora at Cape de la Jonquière. The whole appearance of this broad leaf flora overlaid by *Inoceramus* and *Ammonites* horizons is so recent that Schmidt, influenced by Heer's determinations, erroneously regarded this bed as true Tertiary and inverted, just as he believed similar inverted conditions of exposures of beds containing an Angiosperm flora and typically Cretaceous fauna in the island of Vancouver.

In addition to the fact that the flora of Cape de la Jonquière is not of the usual Tertiary type, the rich Cretaceous fauna of *Ammonites, Helcion, Inoceramus,* etc., fixes the age of this horizon as Senonian, thus giving us a knowledge of a true Senonian flora in the extreme East of Asia.

In some exposures on the slopes of the Western Range and on the sea shore to the north from Alexandrovsk I have found a flora of more archaic appearance that must be regarded as representing a more ancient horizon although without associated invertebrate faunas. Thus the three established Series of the Cretaceous in Russian Sakhalin, the Orokkian, Gyliakian, and Ainuan, may be florally characterized as follows:

I. The *Orokkian.* This series is chiefly characterized by broad leaved types besides a few ferns and some conifers, from which I have as yet identified only

Asplenium dicksonianum Heer
Sequoia smittiana Heer
Populus arctica Heer
Credneria sp.
Hedera mcclurii Heer
Viburnum schmidtianum Heer

II. The *Gyliakian* flora, very rich and varied, and studied in more detail by me, contains

Dicksonia mamiyai n. sp.
Asplenium dicksonianum Heer
Pecopteris virginiensis Fontaine[10]
Pecopteris cf. *bohemica* Corda?
Pteris frigida Heer
Stenopteris jimboi n. sp.
Sagenopteris variabilis (Vel.) Velen.
Cycas steenstrupii Heer
Glossozamites aff. *schenckii* Heer
Nilssonia serotina Heer
Ginkgo sp. A.
Ginkgo sp. B.
Protophyllocladus subintegrifolius (Lesq.) Berry
Dammara borealis Heer
Sequoia reichenbachii (Gein.) Heer
S. fastigiata Sternberg
Thuja cretacea (Heer) Newberry
Populus arctica Heer
Cocculus aff. *extinctus* Velenovsky
Credneria aff. *integerrima* Zenker
Bauhinia cretacea Newberry
Celastrophyllum yokoyamai n. sp.
Aralia polevoii n. sp.
A. tikhonovichii n. sp.
MacClintockia sachalinensis n. sp.

III. The Ainuan flora, studies in less detail, shows only the following species:

[10] Referred by Berry to *Cladophlebis browniana* (Dunker) Seward.

Gleichenia rigida Heer
G. zippei (Corda) Heer
Gleichenia sp.
Asplenium dicksonianum Heer
Populus cf. *potomacensis* Ward

The general composition of these floras and the presence in the youngest horizon of an Ammonite fauna compels me to regard the whole flora as undoubtedly Cretaceous. However, its different horizons show some peculiar features. Thus the flora of the uppermost series, the Orokkian, shows a younger aspect, and might very readily be mistaken for Tertiary on account of containing many species common in the so-called Arctic Tertiary floras of Greenland, Spitzbergen, etc., but scarcely anything is common to the latter and the true Tertiary flora of Sakhalin. The undoubted Cretaceous age of the Sakhalin floras listed above and the presence in them of elements characteristic of the "Arcto-Tertiary" flora leads me to suggest a revision of the age of the latter, which may be really even older than the similar floras in Sakhalin, on account of their more northern position, if the migration of floras was really from the north.

The characteristic form of Orokkian, *Populus arctica,* has not yet been found in the Dui series (though it occurs in the lower Tertiary flora of Onnenai in Japanese Sakhalin) but it is abundantly represented in the Gyliakian together with some typical Cretaceous plants. I regard this horizon as an equivalent of the Patoot of Greenland, and being not very different in age from the prebasaltic deposits of Atanekerdluk, the latter undoubtedly Cretaceous and not Tertiary as it has been hitherto considered. Thus the age of this Series may be taken as Senonian and possibly partly Turonian.

The flora of the Gyliakian is very rich in ferns resembling those of the Atane and Dakota floras and partly those of the Patapsco formation. Several cycads also suggest those of the Atane beds of Greenland and the Cenomanian of other countries. The Conifers and the Angiosperms are also very typical of the Cretaceous, especially of the Raritan and Dakota, *e. g., Protophyllocladus. Dammara, Bauhinia cretacea; Aralia polevoi* is very similar to *Araliaephyllum magnifolium* of the Patapsco; *Celastrophyllum yokoyamai* closely resembles the *Celastrophylla* of the Dakota. *Sagenopteris variabilis* and *Cocculus affinis* are common in the Cenomanian of Bohemia, and *Aralia tikhonovichii* is represented there by a closely allied species. Having many features common with the Cenomanian flora of Europe, the Gyliakian flora is, however, more closely allied to those of North America and Greenland. If in making more close comparisons with the American Cretaceous floras we notice that the Gyliakian flora has some elements of the Patapsco flora, its resemblance with those of the Dakota and Raritan is more striking. The presence in the Gyliakian of *Populus arctica,* not yet discovered in the Atane beds or even in some younger (in which, however, it was probably recorded under some other names) also compels me to correlate the Gyliakian with the younger rather than the older, and I am therefore inclined to regard it as the equivalent of Dakota, Raritan and Atane, being Cenomanian and probably partly Turonian. Thus the paradoxal presence of the *Nilssonia* of real Mesozoic aspect in the "Mgach Flora" of Heer is quite simply explained, and the botanists must give up the hope of finding it still living somewhere in China as was expressed by some of them on account of its supposed existence as late as in the "Miocene Flora" of Sakhalin.

The flora of the Ainuan Series shows very few features of resemblance either with the upper or Orokkian flora or even with that of the Gyliakian Series, being represented mainly by ferns, in part not yet determined. There are only a few remains of a *Populus* of primitive aspect identified by me as *Populus* cf. *potomacensis* Ward which occurs in what is probably an uplifted horizon of this series. I believe this flora corresponds to the Kome flora of Greenland as it is not younger than Albian, but the complete investigation of it is not yet made.

The importance of correctly determining the age of the Sakhalin fossil floras may be understood when it is recalled that in all Asia there have not before been known any upper Cretaceous floras except single remains mentioned in my introductory paragraphs and some petrified specimens hardly comparable with the flora of impressions of other countries, and presenting therefore insufficient materials for judging the evolution of the flora in Asia.

The Cretaceous flora now discovered in Sakhalin becomes still more remarkable if we remember that its upper horizon shows associated with the flora a rich fauna which can be correlated not only with those of Hokkaido but even with the more distant fauna of Hindustan and Vancouver. On the other hand the flora itself, representing a considerable interval of time, fills the gap hitherto existing between Europe and America in the ring of the floras around the North Pole, the supposed center of origin and migration of the Angiosperm flora.

When completely elaborated the Mesozoic flora of Sakhalin, since it is extensive and its upper limit is fixed in age by the associated fauna, may furnish a helpful scale for the revision of age of the Arctic floras and those of Canada, on account of presence in the Orokkian of such species as *Populus arctica, Hedera mcclurii,* etc., believed to be Tertiary in the above mentioned floras. In addition there are numerous floras scattered all over the vast Siberian expanse and hitherto without a good scale for the judging of their age. Already after a preliminary study of the Sakhalin flora I decidedly put into the rank of the Cretaceous the flora of Simonova[11] as being older than the uppermost horizon of this system. Still younger but undoubtedly Cretaceous appear some floras in Amurland partly described previously as Tertiary. One of the latter, namely the flora of Boguchan mountain near Sagibova on Amur river, I put into the Cretaceous in 1916. Others may represent the transitional floras corresponding to the Laramie of western North America. On the other hand, the true Tertiary flora of Sakhalin is rich in species and also represents several horizons. Freed from the unfortunately admixed Cretaceous elements it also may be taken as a good scale for comparison with the Siberian floras, especially on account of the intercalation of the flora of the Dui series in Sakhalin with several faunal horizons. Some interesting deductions may also result from the comparison of the Sakhalin floras with those of Japan.

The following diagram represents the relation of the Sakhalin Cretaceous floras to those best known in the Old and New World:[12]

[11] Heer, 1878, Beiträge zur foss. Flora Sibiriens und des Amurlandes, Fl. foss. Arctica, vol. 5, part 2.

[12] American and European correlations taken from Berry, E. W., Lower and Upper Cretaceous floras of the World, 1911 and 1916.

	Europe	America	Greenland	Russian Sakhalin	Other Asiatic localities
Danian		Laramie			Bureya River
					Boguchan
Senonian		Fox Hills	Patoot		
				Orokkian	
	Priesen	Niobrara			
	Teplitz				
Turonian	Malnitz				
		Magothy			Simonova (Yenissei province)
	Weissenberg				
Cenomanian	Niederschoena	Dakota	Atane	Gyliakian	Kuldenen-Temir (south Ural)
	Perutz	Raritan			
Albian	Bellas	Patapsco			
			Kome	Ainuan	
Aptian	Almargem				
Barremian	Klin	Arundel			
	Wernsdorf				
					Ryoseki (Japan)
Neocomian		Patuxent			

Art. XIX.—*Paleozoic Glaciation in Southeastern Alaska;* by Edwin Kirk.*

Evidence of glaciation in the Paleozoic is of interest even though the discovery of tillites has become the commonplace of geologic field work. During the past field season a tillite of Silurian age was found in southeastern Alaska. This is particularly interesting as being the first record of Silurian glaciation. Fairly conclusive evidence of Permian glaciation was also secured. There is some reason to believe that glacial deposits occur in the Devonian of the region as well.

Cairnes in 1914 described a conglomerate of ''Permo-Carboniferous?'' age which he found on the Alaska side of the international boundary just north of 65° north latitude. He considered the conglomerate as possibly of glacial origin. The conglomerate has a thickness of 700 to 800 feet and his description leaves little doubt but that it is a true tillite. One of his arguments against the probable glacial origin of the beds is that no other deposits of like character are known in Alaska. This objection has been met by the discovery of conglomerates in southeastern Alaska that apparently hold the same stratigraphic position and have most of the characteristic features of tillites. The conglomerate described by Cairnes has been accepted by Coleman as a tillite without question. Apart from this discovery of Cairnes no other paleozoic glacial deposits have been reported from Alaska.

The Silurian conglomerates which have proved to be of glacial origin were first noted by the Wrights[1] in their bulletin on the Ketchikan and Wrangell mining districts, Alaska. They were given an estimated thickness of 1200 feet and were placed within and at the base of the Lower Devonian. No special description of the conglomerates was given by the Wrights and no suggestion of possible glacial origin was made. These conglomerates are a conspicuous feature of the area on the west coast of Prince of Wales Island bordering on Davidson Inlet and Sea Otter Sound. The conglomerates are found scattered over an area of some 200 or 300 square

* Published by permission of the Director of the U. S. Geological Survey.

[1] Wright, F. E. and C. W., U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 347, 1908.

miles in this immediate region, and further study would no doubt considerably extend the range to the south, east, and north. The best exposures of the Silurian glacial beds seen were on Heceta Island, although good outcrops are to be found on the south shore of Kosciusko Island, about 15 miles to the north. Apparently the same beds occur along El Capitan passage betwen Kosciusko and Prince of Wales islands. At the north end of Kuiu Island, some 125 miles to the north, a bowlder bed holds the same stratigraphic position and, I believe, represents the same glacial deposit. Kosciusko and Heceta islands, where the best Silurian glacial deposits are to be found, lie between 55° and 60° north latitude, and 133° and 134° west longitude. These islands are situated on the west coast of Prince of Wales Island, toward the northern end. Prince of Wales Island is the large island of the southeastern Alaska group, the southern point of which just clears the Alaskan-Canadian boundary. Kuiu Island lies to the north and slightly west of Prince of Wales Island.

The most favorable locality for an examination of the conglomerate is in the large bay about midway on the north shore of Heceta Island. The coast here is well protected from storms and there is a continuous outcrop of the limestone underlying the conglomerate, the conglomerate itself, and the overlying limestone. In places the conglomerate is well broken down by weathering, making the collection of pebbles and bowlders an easy matter. As exposed, the beds outcrop along the shore between tide levels and give an outcrop perhaps 2000 to 3000 feet in length. The beds strike about N. 30° W. and have an average dip of about 30° N.E. At the east end of Heceta Island, on what is locally known as Blue Bluff, several hundred feet of the conglomerate are exposed in an abrupt face together with the basal portion of the overlying limestone. Both this exposure and that on the south side of Kosciusko Island are difficult of access except under exceptionally favorable weather conditions.

The glacial conglomerate is underlain and overlain by fossiliferous marine limestones. The succession of beds is clearly shown and unmistakable. The same relations can even more clearly be seen on the bold cliff at the east end of Heceta Island as to the upper limit of the conglomerate. The relations of the conglomerate to the underlying limestone are well shown on Kosciusko Island. The strata as a whole in this region are badly disturbed and, as is the case throughout southeastern Alaska, contacts are very poorly shown, being as a rule indicated by an indentation of the shore line and a depression running back into the timber. At present, therefore, although the relative positions of stratigraphic units are obvious, the character of the unconformity and the nature of the passage beds are only partly known.

The limestone series overlying the conglomerate carries a rich *Conchidium* fauna. In certain thin beds the rock is almost wholly made up of the brachiopods. This fauna appears to be identical with that of the limestone near Meade Point at the northern end of Kuiu Island. At the base of the limestone at this locality is a bowlder bed which I believe to be glacial in origin and to be correlated with the conglomerate of Heceta. The limestones below the conglomerate likewise carry a rich fauna consisting of pentameroids, corals, and gastropods. The general aspect of both faunas seems to place them as approximately late Niagaran in age.

The conglomerate itself has a thickness of between 1000 and 1500 feet. It will probably be found to vary considerably from place to place. In the main the conglomerate appears to consist of heterogeneous, unstratified or poorly stratified material. Rarely lenticular bodies of cross-bedded sandstone occur in the mass. These are clearly water-laid and indicate current action.

The bowlders in the tillite range in size up to 2 or 3 feet in length, as seen. They consist of greenstone, graywacke, limestone, and various types of igneous rocks; limestone bowlders are scarce. All the bowlders are smoothed and rounded. Facetted bowlders are numerous, and given the proper type of rock, characteristic glacial scratches are common. The scratches show best on the fine-grained, dense greenstones. Limestone bowlders and certain types of igneous rocks do not show them at all. The shore line is strewn with these pebbles and bowlders which were undoubtedly derived from the conglomerate as they are not to be found on the adjacent limestone shores. All the material collected was taken from the conglomerate itself. This is well broken down by weathering in some places, and the pebbles may be picked out with the fingers or tapped out with the hammer. When fresh the conglomerate as a rule is massive and exceedingly hard.

The nature of the deposit is such as to suggest a till. The heterogeneous character of the bowlders, both as regards size and material, and the apparent lack of stratification in the main, point to a true till rather than a submarine bed of ice-transported glaciated material. Such evidence as is at hand indicates that the Heceta area was very near the shore line and might easily have been land while the glacial material was being deposited.

The question of interglacial periods in the Silurian of the region can not at present be discussed with any degree of certainty. The finer points of stratigraphic succession are not known owing to the complex structural relations, the poorly shown outcrops, and the apparent lateral variation in character of sediments. I believe, however, that there are several distinct bodies of tillite separated by marine sediments. At the old Haida village of Klinkwan on the southwest coast of Prince of Wales Island and a few miles north of the west shore of Klakas Inlet are what I take to be beds of tillite interbedded with Silurian graptolite shales. The same condition obtains on the east shore of Dall Island in the neighborhood of View Cove. These tillites and shales I believe come above the limestone series overlying the tillite on Heceta Island. On Heceta Island itself, unless there has been considerable repetition by faulting, which does not seem probable, two or three distinct beds of tillite are indicated.

Permian Glacial Deposits.

In Pybus Bay, Admiralty Island, and on the Screen Islands off the west shore of Etolin Island are conglomerates strongly suggesting glacial material. In both cases these overlie high Carboniferous beds which have been correlated by Girty with the Gscshelian. Overlying the conglomerates are Upper Triassic beds. Where seen the conglomerates had not weathered down and it was not possible to obtain loose bowlders which might show scratches; facetted bowlders occur in the conglomerate, however. It will probably be found that this is a true glacial deposit and to be correlated with the conglomerate described by Cairnes near the Alaskan-Canadian boundary. A conglomerate similar to that described above underlies the upper Triassic rocks of Dall Head, Gravina Island, and may prove of the same age and of similar character.

The occurrence of Permian glacial deposits in Alaska is of special interest inasmuch as most of the reported occurrences of tillites of this age have been in the tropics or to the south of the equator. Alaskan glaciation coupled with that near Boston, Mass., the two being possibly synchronous, indicate widespread glacial conditions in North America during this time. A conglomerate in southwestern California of approximately the same age is worth noting. This conglomerate is described in a U. S. Geological Survey Report, now in press, on the geology of the Inyo Range, California, by Adolph Knopf and Edwin Kirk. This conglomerate is composed of ill-assorted pebbles and bowlders and carries contemporary potholes. Sandstones and conglomerates, probably to be correlated with this conglomerate, extend widely through Utah and Nevada and possibly correlate with the Weber. A careful study of these sediments offers interesting possibilities in the way of adding to our knowledge of land and possibly glacial conditions in Permian times.

Possible Devonian Glaciation.

In the *Stringocephalus*-bearing limestone zone of the Middle Devonian small facetted pebbles up to 2½ inches in length are of fairly frequent occurrence at one locality on the west coast of Prince of Wales Island. In Freshwater Bay and in Port Frederick, which lie near the northern end of Chicagof Island some 250 miles to the north, conglomerates occur in the Lower or Middle Devonian. Rounded bowlders up to 2 feet in diameter were seen. They are very unlike normal sedimentary conglomerates. Should the bowlders in the Devonian prove glacial, a somewhat different origin would probably be postulated for the conglomerates themselves. These are thin, ranging in thickness up to 25 feet or so, and would be more easily explained perhaps as consisting of berg-borne material, though glacial in origin. Bottoms of a similar nature are even now to be found in the channels of southeastern Alaska.

U. S. Geological Survey, Washington, D. C.

ART. XX.—*The Lopolith; an Igneous Form Exemplified by the Duluth Gabbro;* by FRANK F. GROUT.

CONTENTS.

Introduction.—The several students of the Duluth gabbro as a formation have had several opinions as to its form and relations. Recent descriptions refer to it as a laccolith, though it differs from the typical laccoliths in some details. Several other large intrusions are of similar form, and it is here suggested that the form deserves a special name. The size and relations of the Duluth mass are summarized.

Possible forms of the Duluth gabbro, and early suggestions.[1]—In 1883, R. D. Irving referred to the gabbro as probably the reservoir from which the Keweenawan flows came. N. H. Winchell, in several papers from 1880 to 1910, refers to the "great basal flow" and later to bosses and intrusive masses. Bayley, as late as 1893, quotes Irving that it is "not intrusive in the ordinary sense," but says it might be a succession of thick flows or the reservoir from which the flows came. Grant, in 1900, and others more recently have described it as a laccolith.

The intrusive character of the gabbro is clearly shown at Duluth.[2] It has as definite a roof and floor as a laccolith or sill, and was intruded along a surface approximately corresponding to a previous structure,—the unconformity at the base of the Keweenawan. On the basis of its banded structure one may estimate the position of its floor. This eliminates the probability of anything funnel like or particularly irregular,—it is not like the "ethmolith" or "chonolith." Thus it comes about that by a process of elimination the gabbro is placed with

[1] Irving, R. D., Copper bearing rocks of Lake Superior: U. S. Geol. Surv., Mon, 5, pp. 144, etc.
Winchell, N. H., Minn. Geol. and Nat. Hist. Survey, Ann. Rept. **10**, p. 114, 1881; Final Rept., vol. 4, and vol. 5.
Grant, U. S., Minn. Geol. and Nat. Hist. Survey Final Rept., vol. 4, p. 326; and Bull. Geol. Soc. America, vol. **11**, p. 505, 1900.

[2] Grout, F. F., Paper at the December (1917) meeting of the Geological Society of America.

the laccoliths. It is best, however, to review the definitions and usage of the term laccolith.

The laccolith.—The laccolith as originally defined by Gilbert[3] is insinuated between strata (or along the plane of some previous structure) with a flat floor and an up-domed roof; its thickness ranges around one-seventh its width, and its ground plan is nearly circular. Several geologists, after wide experience with intrusive masses elsewhere, have found it convenient to slightly modify the definition to include clearly related masses.[4] Thus, the concordance with previous structure is not always perfect, but a general tendency is characteristic; the form also may be somewhat unsymmetrical. Laccoliths grade into sheets on one hand, and into "bysmaliths" with faulted uplifted roof, on the other. It seems to have been agreed that the magma was aggressive in uplifting its roof, stretching the overlying beds and separating its roof and floor; Harker even coined the name "Phacolith" for similar forms which might be attributed to other forces.[5]

Several large intrusions are known which differ from laccoliths in having a sunken rather than a domed roof; in fact, some are so thick that a roof could not have been held up, isostatically. The masses are now in the form of great saucers or basins. The process of intrusion was probably very different from that of a laccolith. In spite of the fact that each of the several examples has in recent years been described as a laccolith, it is difficult to formulate a definition to include both types. For example, Daly gives an excellent summary of current usage, and defines a laccolith as plano-convex or doubly convex.[6] Later he calls the larger concavo-convex masses laccoliths, frankly admitting that they are departures from the type.

This being the case, Professor Joseph Barrell has suggested that as igneous forms they deserve a distinct

[3] Gilbert, G. K., Report on the geology of the Henry Mountains, U. S. Geol. and Geog. Survey of the Rocky Mountain region, pp. 19, 53 and 55.

[4] Geikie, A., Structural and field Geology, p. 190.

Iddings, J. P., Igneous rocks, vol. 1, p. 314.

Harker, Alfred, Natural history of Igneous Rocks, p. 65.

Pirsson, L. V., and Schuchert, Charles, Text book of Geology, pt. 1, p. 297.

[5] C. R. Keyes, however, now argues for a different mechanism for the true laccolith, December (1917) meeting of the Geol. Soc. of America.

[6] Daly, R. A., Igneous Rocks and their Origin, p. 70.

name. Such a name is better based on the known facts of form or relations than on any theory of origin, and the name proposed by the writer is "lopolith" (from λοπάς, a basin, a flat earthen dish, and λίθος, a stone).*

The lopolith.—A lopolith may be defined as a large, lenticular, centrally sunken, generally concordant, intrusive mass, with its thickness approximately one-tenth to one-twentieth of its width or diameter. Most of the known lopoliths are in part of basic rocks, and probably because of their large size and slow cooling have differentiated notably. They may show the varying degrees of complexity described as "multiple," "composite," "divided," "interformational," as distinguished from "simple." The type departs from a laccolith, not only in form but in the probable mechanics of its intrusion.

The Duluth gabbro with its differentiates is one of the best illustrations of a lopolith. At Duluth the roof and floor dip east. The crescentic outcrop, concave toward Lake Superior (see fig. 1), dips in all parts toward the lake. The assumed eastern border of the lopolith is concealed under other rocks and under the lake, but the sheet of gabbro on the Gogebic range dips north even more steeply than the Minnesota mass dips south. It is thus somewhat unsymmetrical, but clearly sunken in the center. Its cross-section is also clearly lenticular. The overlying rocks are mostly Keweenawan flows, and though the horizon of the roof may vary some hundreds of feet, the discordance is unimportant when compared to a lateral extent of about 150 miles. The base of the gabbro rests on such a series of formations from Archean to Keweenawan, that the first impression is one of complete discordance with earlier structure. However, if the intrusion transgressed the earlier structure, it is a remarkable coincidence that the two ends, now outcropping 140 miles apart, and the southern outcrops almost as far to the south, all transgressed up to exactly the same horizon. This coincidence is not the only difficulty in the assumption of a transgressing intrusion. After the borders had transgressed to the Keweenawan, the central parts of the intrusion which must have been in the Archean, must have stoped their way up to exactly the horizon to which the border was first intruded; we now

* Pronunciation, *lō'polith.*

FIG. 1.

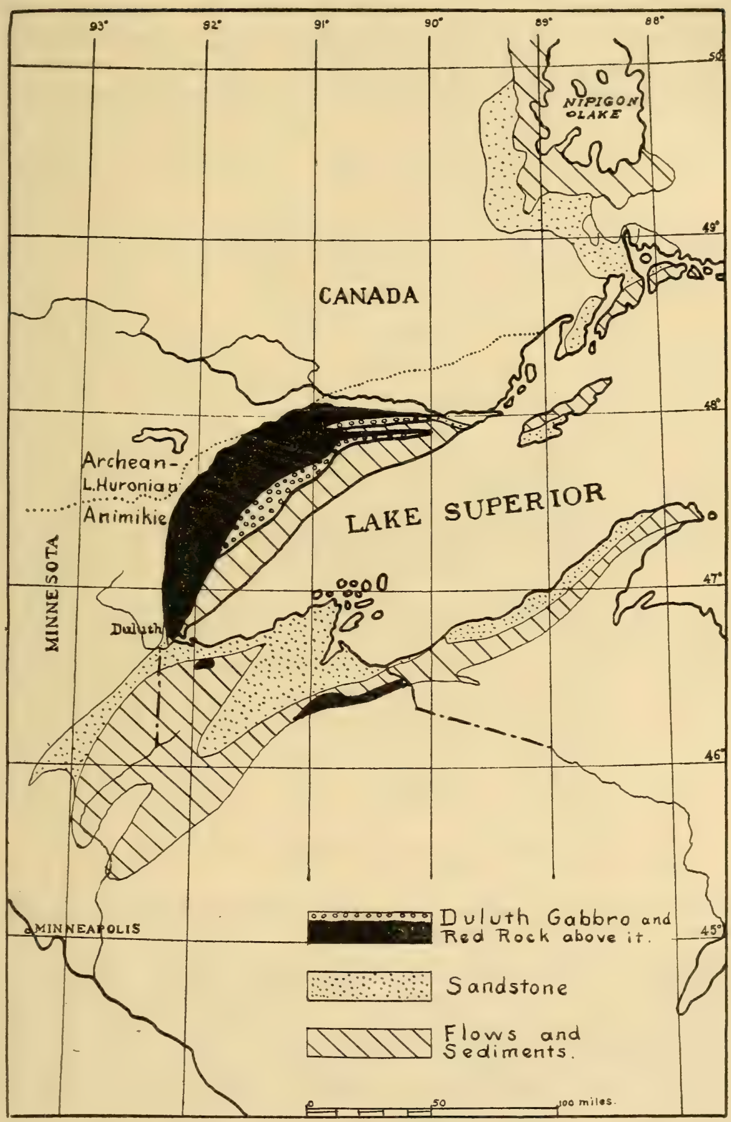


FIG. 1. Map of the west end of Lake Superior showing Keweenawan areas.

find the roof at a fairly constant horizon. The magma must have spread along an unconformity, or we are forced to the absurd conclusion that the magma knew when to cease its stoping. Another fatal objection to the idea of transgression and much stoping, is the volume of material missing. The Rove slate, where it dips under

FIG. 2.

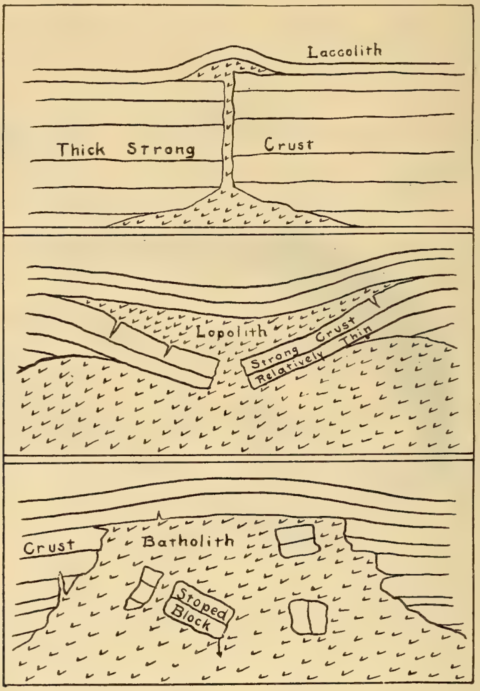


FIG. 2. Sketches to suggest the possible relation of a lopolith to the other forms of occurrence of igneous rocks.

the gabbro, is estimated to be 2600 feet thick,[7] and this is only one of several missing formations. Hall has estimated that the slates west of the gabbro are 20,000 feet thick, 5000 feet in sight.[8] The estimates are not based on accurate data, but are probably of the right order of magnitude. These formations could easily have been

[7] Van Hise, C. R., and Leith, C. K., Geology of the Lake Superior region; U. S. Geol. Survey, Mon. 52, p. 201.

[8] Hall, C. W., The Kewatin of eastern Minnesota: Bull. Geol. Soc. America, vol. 12, p. 374, 1901.

eroded in the long pre-Keweenawan interval,[9] but could hardly have been stoped into the gabbro, no matter what the horizon of intrusion. It seems certain, therefore, that the gabbro was intruded and spread approximately along the base of the Keweenawan.

Besides the Duluth mass as a type, one might classify as lopoliths the Sudbury and Bushveldt masses; and possibly the basin-like mass on the Isle of Skye and the banded rock of Julianahaab, Greenland.

As a piece of speculation it may be of interest to suggest a relation between laccoliths and the larger lopoliths; and note what would result from a continued increase in size. Figure 2 is self-explanatory.

General remarks on the Duluth gabbro.—If the form of the Duluth gabbro is as assumed, certain consequences may be stated. The form being roughly lenticular, it seems probable that the extent down the dip is nearly as great as the length of an eroded outcropping edge. Even if it is only half that extent, a glance at the map indicates that it is very probable, as Van Hise and Leith mention,[10] that the gabbro of the Gogebic range in Wisconsin is part of the same original lopolith.

If a roughly circular outline is drawn around all the known outcrops, it encloses over fifteen thousand square miles, the area once occupied by the lopolith; besides which it is evident that a part has been eroded, and probable that the subsidence which tilted the gabbro in Wisconsin to an angle of more than 75°, was accompanied by a good deal of crustal shortening. The present area of gabbro outcrops may be much less than the original.

Estimates of the thickness may be made on the assumption that the floor of the gabbro dips approximately with the adjacent internal structure.[11] The estimates are only approximate because of a scarcity of outcrops where the gabbro is widest, and because in the same region there are some thick sills which are distinguished with difficulty from the gabbro. The maximum thickness indicated in Minnesota is about 50,000 feet; at Duluth about 12,000 feet are exposed; at the northeastern outcrops in Minnesota the lopolith is less than 3000 feet thick. These estimates are conservative in the matter of dip,—former

[9] Van Hise, C. R., and Leith, C. K., op. cit., p. 208.
[10] Op. cit., p. 378.
[11] Grout, F. F., op. cit.

records of structure would indicate nearly twice as steep a dip as that here used.[12] In Wisconsin the thickness of the gabbro is probably less than 4,000 feet.[13] If the lopolith is thickest in the center like a lens, the real maximum thickness is concealed below the lake.

The volume of the lopolith may be estimated at over 50,000 cubic miles. It is evidently one of the largest known intrusive masses. Considered with some related intrusions,—the Logan sills, the sills at Beaver Bay, and other intrusions of the same age in more distant parts of the Lake Superior region—it indicates an immensity of intrusive action at this time, that has rarely been equalled.

Summary.—Certain large, centrally sunken intrusions are given a distinct name, *lopolith.* Lopoliths differ from laccoliths not only in these points of size and form, but probably also in the mechanics of their intrusion. The Duluth gabbro is a multiple, composite, divided lopolith which is furthermore interformational over most of its length. Conservative estimates of its size indicate an area of over 15,000 square miles, and a volume of over 50,000 cubic miles—one of the largest known floored intrusions. Other illustrations of lopoliths are suggested.

Acknowledgments are here gratefully given to the members of the geologic staff of the graduate faculty at Yale University, for very helpful suggestions.

[12] Irving, R. D., op. cit., p. 269.
[13] Van Hise, and Leith, op. cit., p. 377.

ART. XXI.—*Geologic Section of Blair and Huntingdon Counties, Central Pennsylvania;** by CHARLES BUTTS.

The geologic section in Blair and Huntingdon counties, Pa., was worked out by the writer in 1908 in a survey of the Hollidaysburg quadrangle and in 1913 in a survey of the Huntingdon quadrangle, which adjoins the Hollidaysburg quadrangle on the east. These two quadrangles include a large part of the two counties and lie across two great folds, the Nittany anticline and Broad Top Mountain syncline. The strata exposed have a maximum thickness of over 27,000 feet and an average thickness, as shown in the accompanying section, of nearly 25,000 feet. This is probably as thick as any if not the thickest section exposed in the Appalachian region in so small an area.

Geologists familiar with the region will see that the writer's contributions to the stratigraphy consist partly of detail, such as the delimitation of the Middle and Upper Devonian formations recognized by the geologists of the Second Geological Survey of Pennsylvania but the boundaries of which were not defined by them. Much that is new has, however, been added, particularly concerning the lower part of the section, where the valley limestone, No. 2 of the older geologists, has been split up into twelve formations and several members.

Brief notes, mainly on the new formations and their names, follow. In the Chemung the name Saxton conglomerate member is introduced to replace White's name Lackawaxen conglomerate, as it seems very uncertain whether this conglomerate is the same as the Lackawaxen. The conglomerate is well exhibited in and about Saxton, Huntingdon County, whence the name.

The Portage group has been divided into two formations, the Brallier shale and the Harrell shale which includes, in the bottom, the Burket black shale member. The Brallier shale is named from a station on the Huntingdon & Broad Top Mountain Railroad a few miles northeast of Everett, in Bedford County. This shale is the same as the Woodmont shale member of the Jen-

* Published by permission of the Director of the United States Geological Survey, with the statement that parts of the classification and nomenclature have not yet been officially adopted. All the names of formations and members shown in the stratigraphic column have, however, been adopted by the Survey.

nings formation of Maryland, except that the Woodmont extends down to the Burket black shale member, regarded by the Maryland Survey as Genesee. The Brallier is well exposed and can be most conveniently seen along the Pennsylvania Railroad west of Altoona and just east of Huntingdon. The Harrell shale is perfectly distinct lithologically from the Brallier, as shown by the descriptions of the section. In the Broad Top Mountain syncline in Huntingdon County the Harrell is about 250 feet thick and consists of soft, dove-colored fissile shale and interbedded layers of black fissile shale. In Blair County, to the west, however, the black shale is all in the bottom and is about 75 feet thick, the soft, dove-colored, highly fissile (paper) shale, about 200 feet thick, being free of black shale and forming the upper part of the Harrell. The name is taken from Harrell, a station on the Petersburg branch of the Pennsylvania Railroad, about midway between Hollidaysburg and Williamsburg where the dove-colored shale is well displayed. This shale is also well shown in a cut of the Pennsylvania Railroad in the western outskirts of Altoona and in the brick yard at Eldorado, a few miles south of Altoona.

The black shale member of the Harrell is named from Burket, a suburb of Altoona. The Burket member is well exposed in and about Altoona, at several places southwest of Altoona for 20 miles, and along the Pennsylvania Railroad between Altoona and Bellwood. As already stated, this shale has been regarded as Genesee, but it carries no distinctively Genesee fossils; on the other hand, it and the overlying part of the Harrell generally contain a good representation of the Naples fauna, found at the base of the Portage in western New York. The Burket is, therefore, believed to be basal Portage rather than Genesee.

Just below the Harrell shale there is, in places at least, a limestone about a foot thick, from which were obtained *Chonetes aurora* and a *Martinia* like one of those of the McKenzie River region of Canada, which are there also associated with the same *Chonetes*. As *Chonetes aurora* is a characteristic fossil of the Tully limestone of New York, to which it appears to be confined, the thin limestone here is probably the feather edge of the Tully extending in an embayment into this part of Pennsylvania. If so the limestone really belongs in the Upper

Devonian instead of in the top of the Hamilton, as placed in the section.

The name Reedsville was introduced by Ulrich (Revision). The formation corresponds about to the upper half of the Martinsburg shale. The top sandstone member, with *Orthorhyncula,* etc., is 30 to 56 feet thick, and extends without change from central Pennsylvania to New River, Va. *Orthorhyncula* was found also at Gate City, Va., near the Tennessee line. It is an extremely valuable horizon marker.

The Trenton limestone here is said to agree well in character with the Trenton nearer its type locality.

The Rodman limestone is new and is named from Rodman, a station on the Pennsylvania Railroad near Roaring Spring, several miles south of Hollidaysburg, Blair County. This formation is only about 30 feet thick but is persistent throughout Nittany Valley and is identical in character and thickness in Center County and in Blair County. It can be seen in any of the quarries of the region, where it immediately overlies the quarry rock from which it can easily be distinguished by its lithologic character and by the fact that it outcrops at the top margin of the quarries on the side toward the dip. The Rodman carries a considerable and an interesting assemblage of fossils which may be listed in a future paper. Echinosphærites occurs in a zone of beds at Bellefonte, Pa., between the Lowville and Trenton, of identical character and in part at least contemporaneous with the Rodman. Ulrich regards the beds in this zone as upper Black River and as falling within the scope of the Chambersburg limestone as defined in the Mercersburg-Chambersburg folio. It is not yet decided whether this Echinosphærites zone is to be identified with the upper or the lower of the two Echinosphærites zones of that region but Ulrich is at present inclined to identify it with the lower. The fauna of the Rodman is not the same as that of the Sinuites bed in the base of which is the upper occurrence of Echinosphærites, while it contains forms that are so far known only in the lower Echinosphærites zone. In the complete section these two zones are separated by almost 400 feet of limestone.

Ulrich thinks the Rodman may be the same as the Niskey limestone of Wherry, in the Lehigh Valley, but in view of the uncertainty regarding their equivalence the local name is here used.

The Lowville limestone is regarded as good typical Lowville. Fossils are comparatively scarce but so far as known the fauna is thoroughly in harmony with the lithologic criteria on which the correlation was originally based.

The Carlim limestone is new, named from a quarry town on the Petersburg Branch of the Pennsylvania Railroad a few miles northeast of Williamsburg, Blair County.

The Lemont member of the Carlim is named from Lemont, near State College, Center County.

Both the Carlim and the Lemont member are well displayed in all the quarries of the region, the part of the Carlim below the Lemont member, with the Lowville overlying the Lemont member, being the main quarry beds of the region, which supplies a large part of the flux rock for the Pittsburgh blast furnaces. The Lemont is not utilized except for road metal or concrete, and considerable bodies of it remain in quarries where the flux rock has been taken out.

The main body of the Carlim is very sparingly fossiliferous, but the Lemont member is locally richly so. A few of the species are listed in the description of the section. *Maclurites magna* has not been found in Blair County but is common at Lemont. The Carlim is of middle Chazyan or middle Stones River age and corresponds about to the Lenoir limestone of east Tennessee, the Ridley of central Tennessee, and the Crown Point limestone of the Champlain Valley, in northeastern New York.

The names of the Canadian formations Bellefonte, Axeman, and Nittany, were introduced by Ulrich in his "Revisions of the Paleozoic Systems" in 1911. They were taken from Bellefonte, Center County, and vicinity. The formations in Blair County agree in all respects with the same formations in Center County, except that the Bellefonte and Nittany are each only about half as thick in Blair County as in Center County. There is an exposure of nearly the full thickness of the Bellefonte and Nittany along the river a mile northeast of Williamsburg.

The divisions of the Ozarkian and their names are all new, although the presence of the Ozarkian in this region was recognized by Ulrich in 1909 or 1910.

The Larke dolomite is named from Larke postoffice, which is several miles south of Williamsburg, in Blair County, where thick beds of the dolomite are exposed. A good specimen of *Helicotoma uniangulata* was found in the Larke near Ore Hill, farther west in the county, and shows that it contains beds, perhaps in its upper part, of the age of Ulrich's Chepultepec dolomite of Alabama, of the Gasconade limestone of Missouri, and of the upper cherty, fossiliferous zone of the Little Falls dolomite of the Mohawk valley of New York. Good exposures of the Larke occur just east of Williamsburg.

The Mines dolomite is named from the old mining town of Mines, which is several miles southwest of Williamsburg, where brown iron ore was once extensively mined by the Cambria Steel Co. This formation seems to occupy the position of the Copper Ridge dolomite of Ulrich, which in Tennessee is the main body of the Knox dolomite, lying between the Canadian (Beekmantown) part of the Knox and the Nolichucky shale. The Mines dolomite is best exhibited in the north end of the long ridge just southeast of Williamsburg, Pa.

The Gatesburg formation is named from Gatesburg Ridge, in Center County, Pa., the name having been proposed by Prof. E. S. Moore, of State College.

The Ore Hill and Stacy members were named by the writer. The Ore Hill is named from a mining town south of Roaring Spring, Blair County. This member has yielded several species of trilobites, mostly undescribed forms, the nearest relatives of which, according to Ulrich, occur in the Hoyt limestone of New York. The Ore Hill is well exposed in a quarry a mile southwest of Ore Hill and at a point just north of the road a half mile northwest of Drab in the Huntingdon quadrangle, 6½ miles southwest of Williamsburg. Most of the fossils were collected at these localities. The Stacy member is named for Stacy Hill, an isolated knob 4 miles slightly west of south of Williamsburg.

The Gatesburg is nowhere well exposed but can best be seen on the north bluff of the river, a mile northeast of Williamsburg and along the north bluff a short distance west of Williamsburg. It is also well exposed along the main line of the Pennsylvania Railroad between Birmingham and Shoenberger.

The Gatesburg is correlated by Ulrich with a group of dolomite formations in central Alabama, lying between Ulrich's Copper Ridge dolomite and the top of the Conasauga limestone, the upper part of the Conasauga being regarded as the equivalent of the Nolichucky shale. These formations are the Briarfield dolomite of Ulrich, the Ketona dolomite, and some overlying beds of dolomite called Potosi by Ulrich in his Revision. The Larke, Mines, and Gatesburg should probably be correlated in general with the Conococheagne limestone of the Chambersburg and Mercersburg regions of Pennsylvania.

The Warrior limestone is named from Warrior Creek, in the northern part of Huntingdon County, east of Warrior's Mark. This limestone has been called the Buffalo Run limestone by Walcott (Smithsonian Miscellaneous Collection, vol. 64, p. 165), who adopted, without definition, the field name used provisionally by Prof. Moore. The best exposures of the Warrior limestone are at the type locality on Warrior Run, along the river bluff a mile west of Williamsburg, and in the western half of Bloomfield township, Bedford county, several miles south of Roaring Spring and on the Everett quadrangle.

The Pleasant Hill limestone is named from Pleasant Hill church a mile northwest of Henrietta, in the southeast corner of Blair County, where the upper part, the limestone, is excellently exposed. Ulrich regards both the Warrior and the Pleasant Hill as Upper Cambrian and Walcott regards the Warrior as Upper Cambrian. Probably the Warrior and Pleasant Hill are in part represented by local beds of relatively pure limestone that have been somewhat doubtfully included in the upper part of the Elbrook limestone of Maryland and Pennsylvania.

The mapping of these limestone units has resulted in the detection of a number of hitherto unknown faults, some of considerable magnitude in both displacement and linear extent. For example, there is a great fault or narrow belt of overlapping faults of several thousand feet displacement extending from the northwestern part of Hopewell township, Bedford County, northward to Birmingham, on the main line of the Pennsylvania Railroad,

Fig. 1. Photograph of a cut on the main line of the Pennsylvania Railroad just east of Birmingham, Pa., showing an overthrust fault at the top of the white limestone. The overthrust rocks are Warrior limestone, of Upper Cambrian age, dipping eastward about 15° parallel with the fault plane. The bedding can be seen at the left. The white limestone overridden is Carlim, middle Chazyan or middle Stones River age, overturned with an east dip of about 40°. The bedding is obscured by jointing and fracturing but by careful examination can be seen at the bottom in the middle. The stratigraphic throw is 5000 to 6000 feet.—Looking south.

where a fault is plainly exposed in a cut immediately east of the station. The fault plane here dips east at about 15°, the beds of the overthrust mass being parallel to the fault plane and those below the fault being overturned with an east dip of 40°. The overthrust mass is Warrior limestone and the overridden beds are Carlim limestone. This fault is shown in fig. 1. The position of this fault or faulted zone is plainly indicated by the sharp bend or offset in Canoe Mountain, about 8 miles a little southwest of Birmingham and by the fault offsetting Bald Eagle Mountain 5 miles northeast of Tyrone. A number of other strike faults were discovered showing that this region has been faulted in a manner similar to the southern Appalachian region.

The classification followed in this paper differs from the usual classification in the following particulars: The Loyalhanna limestone is placed in the Mauch Chunk instead of in the Pocono, because the author believes that the Loyalhanna is probably the same as the Trough Creek limestone of I. C. White at the base of the Mauch Chunk in the Broad Top Mountain syncline, in Huntingdon County. The Burgoon sandstone, which forms the upper part of the Pocono, is believed to be of Keokuk or upper Fort Payne age, whereas the Loyalhanna is believed to be of Warsaw age, a belief founded on the existence of a similar cross-bedded limestone of probable Warsaw age, in a similar stratigraphic position just above the Fort Payne chert at the head of Sequatchie Valley, in eastern Tennessee. If the Loyalhanna is thus of Warsaw age it should, in the author's opinion, be classed with the beds overlying the Pocono.

The Pennsylvanian and Mississippian are recognized as systems, instead of series in the Carboniferous.

The Ordovician-Silurian boundary is placed at the base of the Oswego sandstone, in which the practice of the New York State Survey is followed. It seems reasonable to assume that the deposition of this sandstone was the result of crustal movements such as are regarded as initiating new periods of geologic time.

The only other important deviation from prevailing usage is the recognition of the Canadian and Ozarkian systems, in which, of course, the writer follows Ulrich. The writer is satisfied that there are sufficient grounds for this classification but cannot go into the discussion of the question now.

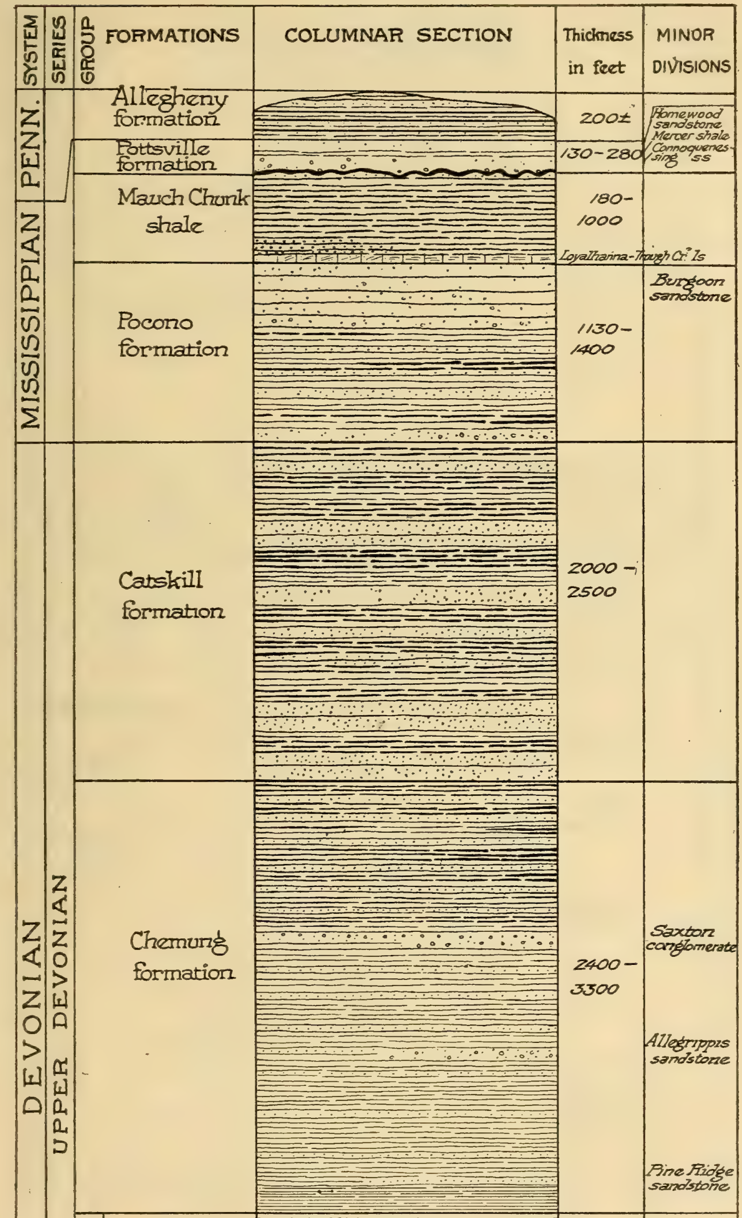
Formation.	*Description.*
	I.
Allegheny formation	Shale and sandstone, with workable coal beds.
Pottsville formation	Mainly sandstone, clay, and shale, with coal locally in middle.
Mauch Chunk shale	Mainly lumpy, red shale or mudrock, with 80 feet of thick-bedded sandstone at bottom to west. A little thin sandstone and limestone to east. Mostly of Chester age. Siliceous crossbedded limestone to west (Loyalhanna limestone); gray and red, partly argillaceous limestone to east (Trough Creek limestone of I. G. White) Warsaw age?.
Pocono formation	Thick-bedded, gray sandstone; Burgoon member, at top; shale, red shale, and sandstone below. Conglomerate at bottom to east. Thickest to east, in Broad Top Mountain. Most red shale to west, on Allegheny front. Osage age.
Catskill formation	Lumpy, red shale or mudrock, thick-bedded, micaceous red sandstone. 80 per cent red. Gray and greenish shale and gray sandstone with marine fossils, 20 per cent. *Spirifer disjunctus, Camarotoechia contracta, Grammysia elliptica, Pteronites rostratus,* and others.
Chemung formation	Mostly shale with thin sandstone layers. Some thicker sandstone and conglomerate members. Upper 1,000 feet largely purplish or chocolate colored to west on Allegheny front, and the same with red shale layers in the upper 500 feet on Raystown Branch of Juniata River on the east. Lower 2,000 feet gray and greenish. Chemung fossils common to abundant from bottom to top. *Spirifer disjunctus* at very bottom on Allegheny front.
	II.
Brallier shale	Fine-grained, siliceous shale in thick, even layers revealing their fissility on weathering. Largely wavy or dimpled laminae, some even and slaty. A few thin fine-grained sandstone layers. Fossils small and very scarce. *Buchiola retrostriata, Probeloceras lutheri, Bactrites aciculus, Phragmostoma natator.* Upper Portage.

Harrell shale	Dove and black fissile (paper) shale. Black at bottom to west (Burket member). Black and dove interbedded to east. *Buchiola retrostriata, Paracardium doris, Pterochaenia fragilis, Styliola fissurella, Probeloceras lutheri.* Lower Portage.
Hamilton formation	Hackly shale at top, weathers green; impure limestone layers in top 10 to 20 feet. Dark shale with thin even sandstone layers in middle to west, three thick sandstone members to east. Lower one-third dark olive shale grading into Marcellus shale below. *Chonetes aurora* in 1 foot limestone at very top (Tully?, Upper Devonian). Common Hamilton fossils abundant in hackly shale in upper one-third. Fossils scarce below.
Marcellus shale	Black fissile shale with *Leiorhynchus limitaris* and *Styliola fissurella.*
Onondaga formation	Dark shale with limestone layers. *Odontopleura aegeria, Anoplotheca acutiplicata* and other fossils.
Ridgely sandstone	Coarse thick-bedded sandstone. Common Oriskany fossils plenty. Upper Oriskany.
Shriver limestone	Thin-bedded siliceous limestone. *Dalmanites stemmatus ?, Craterellina robusta, Actinopteria textilis, Chonetes hudsonica,* and many other Oriskany fossils. Lower Oriskany.
Helderberg limestone	Thick-bedded gray limestones (Keyser, Coeymans, New Scotland). *Gypidula prognostica, Gypidula coeymanensis, Spirifer macropleura.*
Tonoloway limestone	Thin-bedded limestone. Fossils few, *Leperditia alta ?.*
Wills Creek shale	Dove, calcareous, fissile shale, a little limestone. Fossils very scarce. *Leperditia alta ?.* Bloomsburg red member, shale, red and green, impure limestone and red sandstone—bottom 50 to 150 feet.
McKenzie limestone	Limestone and shale; fairly fossiliferous. *Kloedenella* abundant.
Clinton formation	Mainly greenish shale weathering purplish. Some sandstone. Thin but workable iron ore beds. Rather fossiliferous. *Anoplotheca hemispherica, Beyrichia* and many other ostracods.

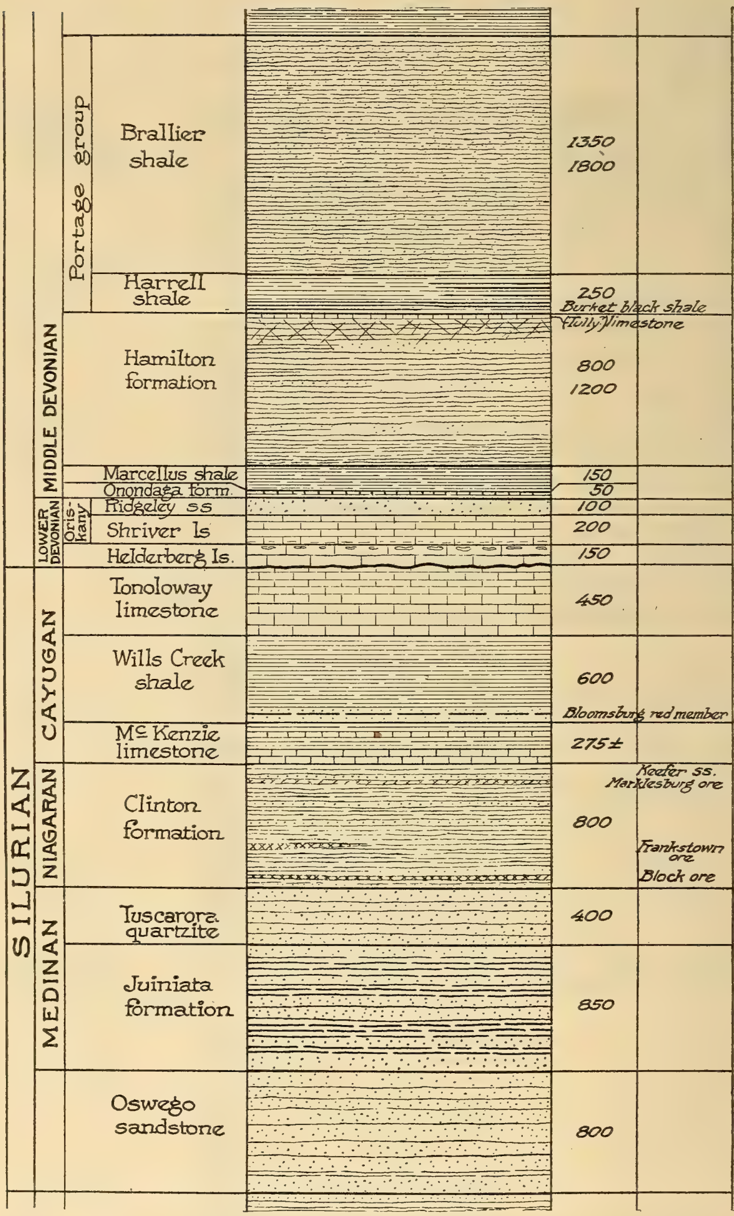
Tuscarora quartzite	Thick-bedded white quartzite. *Arthrophycus alleghenyensis, (harlani)*, in upper part. Extensively used for silica brick. Called ganister.
Juniata formation	Red lumpy shale or mudrock, red and greenish gray sandstone. Some finely cross laminated. No fossils.
Oswego sandstone	Medium thick-bedded gray sandstone. Some finely cross laminated. No fossils. Bald Eagle sandstone of Grabau. Oneida conglomerate of Pennsylvania Second Geological Survey.
	III.
Reedsville shale	Thick, dark, rusty weathering, sandstone at top with *Orthorhyncula linneyi, Byssonichia radiata* and others. Maysville age. Persistent to Tennessee. Shale with thin limestone layers in upper half. Fissile (shoe peg) shale in lower half. *Calymene senaria, Dalmanella multisecta, Rafinesquina.* Black shale at bottom with graptolites. Eden age.
Trenton limestone	Thin-bedded black limestone weathering with a gray film on surface. Sparsely fossiliferous. *Cryptolithus tessellatus = Trinucleus concentricus, Plectambonites sericea.*
Rodman limestone	Dark crystalline limestone weathering with a rough granulated surface; very characteristic and persistent. Fossiliferous. *Echinosphaerites* zone at top. Upper Black River.
Lowville limestone	Dark, thick-bedded, pure limestone, glassy to fine-grained. Extensively quarried for flux. *Streptelasma profundum, Tetradium cellulosum, Beatrecia gracilis, Lichenaria typa ?.* Lower Black River.
Carlim limestone	Dark, fine-grained limestone, extensively quarried for flux. Fossils scarce except in Lemont argillaceous limestone member. *Leperditia fabulites, Isochilina amiana, Leptaena incrassata* in bottom. *Tetradium syringoporoides* throughout; Lemont member impure, not quarried. *Hebertella vulgaris, Rafinesquina champlainensis, Protorhynca ridleyana ?, Maclurites magna.*
Bellefonte dolomite	Thick-bedded dolomite yielding much dense chert. Fossils scarce.

Axeman limestone	Thin-bedded blue limestone with dolomite layers. Fossils. *Liospira strigata, Hormotoma artemesia, Hormotoma linearis, Dalmanella wemplei ?, Bolbocephalus seeleyi.*
Nittany dolomite	Thick-bedded, cherty dolomite. Fossils, but not abundant. *Lecanospira* (*Ophiletta*) *compacta, Eccyliopterus planibasalis, Eccyliopterus planidorsalis, Syntrophia lateralis, Cryptozoon steeli.*
Larke dolomite	Thick-bedded, coarse, steely blue dolomite. *Helicotoma uniangulata, Lingulella?.*
Mines dolomite	Cherty dolomite, oolitic, yields much oolitic and platy scoriaceous chert. *Cryptozoon,* 2 species, common.
Gatesburg formation	Thick-bedded, steely blue, coarsely crystalline, dolomite with many interbedded quartzite layers up to 10 feet thick. Surface deeply covered with sand and strewn with quartzite bowlders. Considerable silicified oolite. Ore Hill limestone member, thin-bedded, blue limestone; several species of trilobites nearest relatives of which are in the Hoyt limestone of New York. Stacy dolomite member coarse, thick-bedded, steely blue, but without quartzite.
Warrior limestone	Thick and thin-bedded, blue limestone with thin siliceous shaly layers or partings. A few thin quartzite layers and an occasional bed of limestone full of large well-rounded quartz grains. Some oolite. *Cryptozoon* common. Several species of trilobites. *Millardia avitas.*
Pleasant Hill limestone	Thick-bedded limestone at top, fossils. *Acrocephalites aoris.* Argillaceous thin-bedded limestone at bottom weathering to shale.
Waynesboro formation	Sandstone, conglomerate, and red and greenish shale.

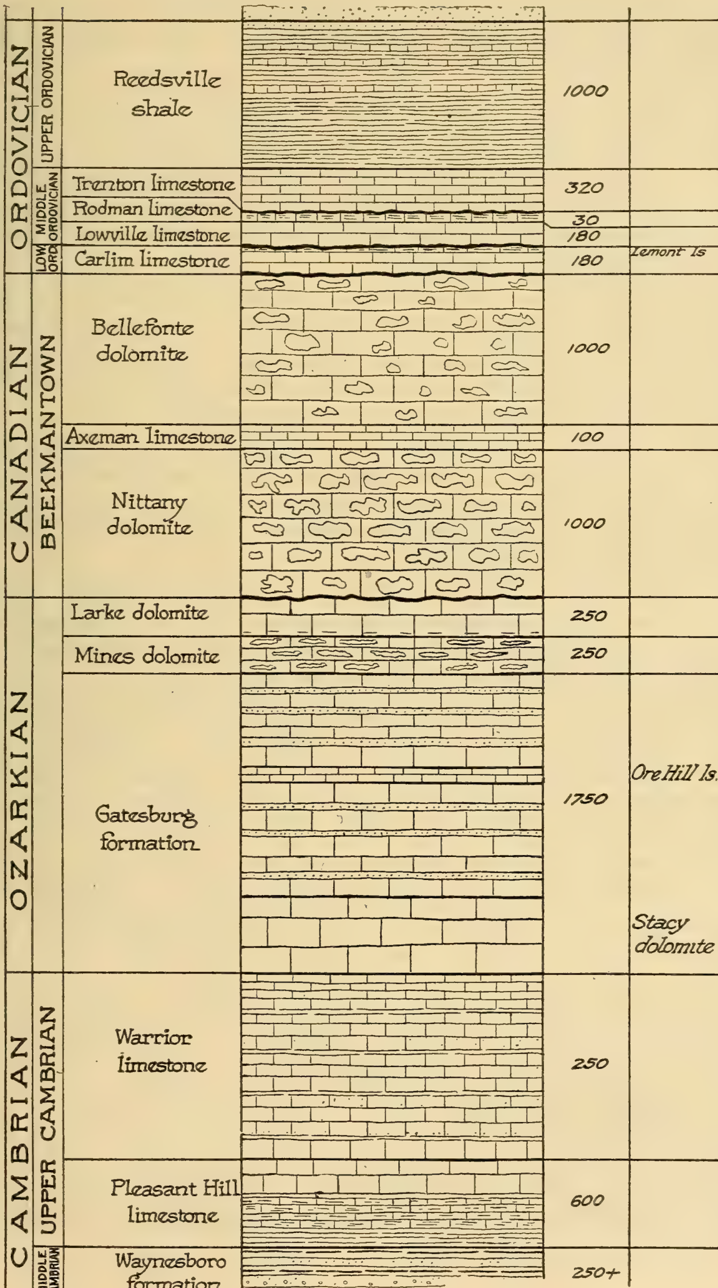
I.


SYSTEM
SERIES
GROUP
FORMATIONS
COLUMNAR SECTION
Thickness in feet
MINOR DIVISIONS
PENN.
MISSISSIPPIAN
DEVONIAN
UPPER DEVONIAN
Allegheny formation
200±
Homewood sandstone
Mercer shale
Pottsville formation
130-280
Connoquenessing ss
Mauch Chunk shale
180-1000
Loyalhanna-Trough Cr. ls
Pocono formation
1130-1400
Burgoon sandstone
Catskill formation
2000-2500
Chemung formation
2400-3300
Saxton conglomerate
Allegrippis sandstone
Pine Ridge sandstone

II.


SILURIAN
MIDDLE DEVONIAN
LOWER DEVONIAN
CAYUGAN
NIAGARAN
MEDINAN
Portage group
Oriskany
Brallier shale
1350
1800
Harrell shale
250
Burket black shale
Tully limestone
Hamilton formation
800
1200
Marcellus shale
150
Onondaga form.
50
Ridgeley ss
100
Shriver ls
200
Helderberg ls.
150
Tonoloway limestone
450
Wills Creek shale
600
Bloomsburg red member
McKenzie limestone
275±
Keefer ss.
Marklesburg ore
Clinton formation
800
Frankstown ore
Block ore
Tuscarora quartzite
400
Juiniata formation
850
Oswego sandstone
800

III.


ORDOVICIAN
UPPER ORDOVICIAN
MIDDLE ORDOVICIAN
LOW ORD
Reedsville shale
1000
Trenton limestone
320
Rodman limestone
30
Lowville limestone
180
Carlim limestone
180
Lemont ls
CANADIAN
BEEKMANTOWN
Bellefonte dolomite
1000
Axeman limestone
100
Nittany dolomite
1000
OZARKIAN
Larke dolomite
250
Mines dolomite
250
Gatesburg formation
1750
Ore Hill ls.
Stacy dolomite
CAMBRIAN
UPPER CAMBRIAN
MIDDLE CAMBRIAN
Warrior limestone
250
Pleasant Hill limestone
600
Waynesboro formation
250+

ART. XXII.—*A Method for the Separation and Determination of Barium Associated with Strontium;* by F. A. GOOCH and M. A. SODERMAN.

(Contributions from the Kent Chemical Laboratory of Yale Univ.—cccii.)

It has been shown by Mar, in a former article from this laboratory,[1] that barium may be separated quantitatively from calcium and magnesium by dissolving the mixed chlorides in the least possible amount of water and throwing the barium out of solution as the hydrous chloride by the addition of a 4:1 mixture of concentrated aqueous hydrochloric acid and ether, the calcium and magnesium remaining in solution. The following account gives the outcome of an attempt to adapt this procedure to the similar separation of barium from strontium.

The results of preliminary experiments showed plainly that the procedure found by Mar to be satisfactory for the separation of barium from calcium and magnesium yields high indications for barium when strontium is present even in moderate amounts.

It has been found, however, that excellent results may be attained by a modified procedure. The success of the operation depends upon so adjusting the amounts of the water and of the aqueous hydrochloric acid and ether mixture that the barium chloride shall be as insoluble as possible while strontium chloride, in reasonable amount, shall be completely dissolved. Without describing in detail many experiments with varying amounts of the water, acid, and ether used in the process, as well as experiments in which alcohol was also introduced (without beneficial effect), it will be sufficient to indicate the procedure by which good analytical separations of barium and strontium may be accomplished surely and easily.

It has been found that the proportion of water in the mixture may be regulated properly by dissolving the mixed chlorides in the least possible amount of water and adding a suitable amount of a 4:1 mixture of 33% hydrochloric acid and ether. Under such conditions the barium chloride is precipitated and strontium chloride dissolves. It has been found that the solubility of barium chloride after solution in the least possible amount of

[1] This Jour., (3) 43, 521, 1892.

water and treatment with 50 cm^3–75 cm^3 of such a mixture is practically negligible, while strontium chloride equivalent to 0·3 grm. of the anhydrous salt, dissolved in the least possible amount of water and treated with the mixture, first yields a characteristic precipitate of crystalline needles and then dissolves completely when the volume of the precipitating mixture has been sufficiently increased and before this has reached the 75 cm^3 limit. The precipitate of barium chloride formed when only barium chloride is similarly treated is coarsely granular and fails to dissolve upon further addition of the precipitant up to the limit named.

When a solution of barium chloride and strontium chloride in the least possible amount of water is similarly treated with a considerable volume of the acid-ether mixture the former salt is completely precipitated and the latter may be partially precipitated at first and, excepting any inclusion in the barium chloride, go into solution later as the volume of liquid is increased; but if the precipitating mixture is added slowly to the solution of the mixed chlorides, drop by drop for the first few cubic centimeters, the liability of the strontium chloride to precipitation and inclusion is minimized.

In the practical application of the method elaborated upon these lines, the solution of the mixed chlorides in the least possible amount of water may be accomplished most easily by adding to the dry salts, contained in a beaker, a very little water (beginning with about 0·2 cm^3 and, if necessary, adding more later), and warming gently, with agitation, and then cooling. If crystals separate on cooling, the operation is cautiously repeated until a cold saturated solution is obtained.

The precipitation is begun by adding the acid-ether mixture to the cold saturated water solution of the mixed salts, drop by drop and with constant agitation during the addition of the first two or three cubic centimeters of the precipitant. Thereafter the precipitant is added in amounts necessary to complete the precipitation of the barium chloride and dissolve the strontium chloride—50 cm^3 to 75 cm^3 for amounts not exceeding 0·5 grm. of the mixed salts nor 0·3 grm. of anhydrous strontium chloride. The liquid is decanted upon asbestos in the perforated crucible. The residue, washed and transferred to the filter with a 4:1 mixture of concentrated hydrochloric acid (38%) and ether (applied in a fine jet from a small wash bottle), is dried at 150° and weighed as anhydrous barium chloride.

The results of experiments made in the manner described upon weighed amounts of hydrous barium chloride and anhydrous strontium chloride are given in the following table:

Precipitation by 4:1 Mixture of Hydrochloric Acid (33%) and Ether.

$BaCl_2.2H_2O$ taken grm.	$SrCl_2$ taken grm.	Theory $BaCl_2$ grm.	$BaCl_2$ found grm.	Error grm.	Volume of Precipitant cm^3
		A			
0·5002	......	0·4264	0·4260	—0·0004	50
0·5002	......	0·4264	0·4260	—0·0004	50
0·1006	......	0·0857	0·0855	—0·0002	50
0·0100	......	0·0082	0·0083	+0·0001	50
0·0010	......	0·0008	0·0008	0·0000	50
0·0100	......	0·0082	0·0082	0·0000	75
		B			
0·4003	0·0620	0·3412	0·3408	—0·0004	50
0·3005	0·1200	0·2562	0·2560	—0·0002	50
0·2001	0·1820	0·1706	0·1705	—0·0001	50
0·1006	0·2480	0·0858	0·0855	—0·0003	50
0·0503	0·2480	0·0426	0·0428	+0·0002	50
0·0010	0·1000	0·0008	0·0008	0·0000	50
0·1006	0·2480	0·0857	0·0856	—0·0001	75
0·0100	0·3100	0·0082	0·0084	+0·0002	75
0·0010	0·3000	0·0008	0·0008	0·0000	75

These results show that barium and strontium may be satisfactorily separated by treating the saturated solution of the chlorides with a 4:1 mixture of hydrochloric acid of 33% strength and ether, and washing the precipitate with a 4:1 mixture of concentrated hydrochloric acid (38%) and ether, according to the procedure described.

SCIENTIFIC INTELLIGENCE.

I. Chemistry and Physics.

1. *Modern Inorganic Chemistry;* by J. W. Mellor. New Edition. 8vo, pp. 910. London, 1917 (Longmans, Green and Co.).—This is an extensive and unusually excellent text-book. It is written in a remarkably clear and interesting manner giving many appropriate quotations and allusions. It gives a very satisfactory account of the facts of inorganic chemistry as well as of the generalizations that are derived from the facts, and it takes up the most recent theories of physical chemistry in a very suitable way. The book indicates remarkably thorough knowledge on the part of the author as well as high ability in the presentation of the subject.

While the book is too extensive and elaborate in its treatment of the subject to be put into the hands of beginners as their sole text-book, it appears certain that it is a very suitable work for the use of all sorts of students of chemistry for reference and extra reading, as it should greatly stimulate the interest, and extend the knowledge beyond that usually obtained from the usual, frequently dry, and often almost childishly brief, text-books that are frequently used.

The book appears to be particularly well adapted for the use of teachers of chemistry who wish to put themselves in touch with the present developments of the science. The large number of examination questions, many of which are taken from actual college papers, are also useful, not only for students, but as suggestions for teachers. H. L. W.

2. *James Woodhouse: A pioneer in chemistry, 1770–1809;* by Edgar F. Smith. Pp. 296, with portrait, 12mo. Philadelphia, 1918 (The John C. Winston Company).—This is an interesting biography of one of the most prominent pioneers of American chemistry. Dr. Woodhouse became Professor of Chemistry at the University of Pennsylvania in 1795, just after the chair had been offered to and declined by the celebrated Joseph Priestley, the discoverer of oxygen, who had recently emigrated to the United States. Woodhouse did important work in advocating and establishing the modern ideas of oxidation which had recently been founded by Lavoisier. He had frequent intercourse with Priestley and finally entered into a controversy with him in connection with the phlogiston theory to which Priestley adhered to the end of his days in spite of the great service he had rendered in bringing about its overthrow.

Woodhouse was an ardent laboratory worker, and although his scientific results appear to be somewhat trivial from our present point of view, his philosophy was sound and his teaching was important. One of his pupils was Benjamin Silliman, the founder of this Journal, who spent two periods of study with him in 1802 to 1804. Another was Robert Hare, the inventor of the compound blowpipe.

Dr. Smith has rendered a valuable service to American chemical history by publishing this attractive book. H. L. W.

3. *Laboratory Manual;* by ARTHUR A. BLANCHARD and FRANK B. WADE. Loose-leaf notebook, 95 sheets. New York, 1917 (American Book Company).—This manual has been devised to accompany "Foundations of Chemistry" by the same authors. Each of the sheets is devoted to a single experiment or to a series of closely connected ones. In each case the equipment required and the purpose of the experiment are mentioned, then full directions for the work are given, pertinent questions in regard to the results are asked, and space is provided for the students' notes. The course of work appears to be very well selected and presented for the purposes of beginners in elementary laboratory work in chemistry. H. L. W.

4. *Lessons in Astronomy, Revised Edition;* by CHARLES A. YOUNG. Pp. ix, 420; 118 figures. Boston, 1918 (Ginn & Co.).—This excellent text first appeared in 1891 and it was thoroughly revised by its author twelve years later. Accordingly it does not seem necessary to give, at the present time, a detailed account of the scope and salient features of this deservedly popular book. The preface to the issue of 1918, which is signed by Anne Sewell Young, consists of the following single, explanatory sentence: "While the greater part of the text remains as it was written by its author, such changes have been made in this issue as are necessary to bring it down to date." H. S. U.

5. *The Origin of our Planetary System;* by EUGENE MILLER. Pp. 90. Topeka, 1918 (Crane & Co.).—This little book contains a non-mathematical and supposedly new explanation of the genesis and development of the solar system. The author first sets forth twelve requirements which must be fulfilled by any rational account of the early history of this system and then proceeds with the solution of each problem. A few typical examples of the facts to be accounted for are: the planets revolve around the sun in approximately the same plane, all the known planets revolve in the same direction, the planets between Jupiter and the sun are relatively small whereas those beyond are very large, the planets interior to Jupiter have high specific gravities while the outside planets have low specific gravities, etc.

The fundamental hypothesis is that the sun and Jupiter originally constituted a double star. Gravitational, centrifugal, cohesional, and other forces caused Jupiter to assume an ovoid shape with the blunt end turned away from the sun. Tidal oscillations and reactional vibrations subsequently forced

Jupiter, when in a fluid state, to throw off pairs of planets; the smaller twin being born from the region of greatest curvature nearest to the sun, and the larger twin being dropped from the most remote region of least curvature.

"Jupiter's aphelion distance was decreasing and his perihelion distance was increasing, while his entire orbit was becoming more and more circular. The first interior planet was dropped at a time when Jupiter's perihelion was very near the sun and when his orbit reached the limit of its elongation, and he dropped the outermost planet at the same time, but from his opposite side. So the first small planet and the first, or outermost, big planet are of the same age." "Saturn and the asteroids are the youngest set of planetary children; Mars and Uranus are the next youngest in our system; then come Earth and Neptune. This arrangement leaves Venus and Mercury unpaired." "So not only do I assert that the two undiscovered planets are there, but I assert without the suggestion of a doubt that they MUST BE THERE."

The author's style is generally clear and attractive, and he presents his case in a very plausible manner. Nevertheless, since the deductions are not based on mathematical calculations it remains to be seen whether the "theory" will stand the test of rigorous, quantitative analysis. H. S. U.

6. *Ozone, and the Ultra-violet Transparency of the Lower Atmosphere.*—The absorption of ultra-violet light by the atmosphere near the surface of the earth has been recently studied experimentally by R. J. STRUTT. For distances up to 1200 yards a spark between cadmium electrodes was used as source. For the greatest distance available, namely 4 miles, a quartz mercury vapor lamp was employed. The spectrograms were taken with a small prismatic camera containing a single 60° quartz prism and a quartz lens of 1 inch aperture and 5 inches focal length. The source of light was placed behind a quartz lens of 3·5 inches diameter in order to focus the radiations on the distant station. Under these circumstances, the monochromatic images were round dots instead of the usual spectral lines. Lack of an assistant necessitated adjusting the apparatus in the daytime and taking the exposures at night.

"The spectrum of the cadmium spark taken at 3600 feet showed no definite indication of ozone, the whole spectrum being transmitted to λ 2313, right through the region, near λ 2536, where ozone absorption is a maximum." An exposure of two hours, taken on a clear night with the mercury lamp at a distance of four miles, recorded the spectrum as far as λ 2536. This result may be compared with the limit, λ 2922, of the solar spectrum, as obtained by Simony on the Peak of Teneriffe. When reduced to standard conditions, the thickness of air traversed by the solar light was not greater than 17,900 feet whereas the layer of air was not less than 20,100 feet in the case of the mercury lamp spectrum. It is thus evident that the air near the surface of the earth is far more transparent than the upper atmosphere to ultra-violet rays, when equal masses are considered. Since the more refrangible limit of the solar spectrum is known to be due to ozone, it follows that there must be much more ozone in the upper air than in the lower.

By timing the exposures, for long and short distances, so as to give about the same photographic density in the green and yellow regions of the spectrum, it was found that the ultra-violet impressions fell off very rapidly in intensity as the thickness of air increased. Strutt gives numerical data and computations to show that this rapid decrease in intensity cannot be due to the absorption of pure air, but that it may be caused by the scattering of light by suspended particles having diameters large compared to those of molecules but small with respect to the wave-lengths concerned. An alternative cause would be a small amount of ozone in the lower atmosphere. Spectrograms were accordingly taken by passing the light through a tube, 18 mm. long, containing calculable percentages of pure ozone. "We may conclude then that even if the low intensity of λ 2536 in the long distance spectrum were wholly due to ozone absorption, it would be accounted for by less than 0·27 mm. of ozone in 4 miles of air. We have already seen that it is quite probable that an effect equivalent to 0·26 mm. ozone is really due to atmospheric scattering. The close agreement of the two figures is, no doubt, largely accidental, but still, allowing for the somewhat uncertain deduction to be made for scattering, it cannot be said that any undoubted effect remains to be attributed to ozone absorption. In any case it is certain that the ozone cannot exceed 0·27 mm."—*Proc. Roy. Soc.*, **94** A, 260, 1918. H. S. U.

7. *Molecular Frequency and Molecular Number.*—The idea of "atomic number" has been generalized by H. STANLEY ALLEN to apply to chemical compounds. He has introduced the term "molecular number" to signify the sum of the positive charges carried by the atomic nuclei contained in the molecule. Thus when a molecule contains a atoms of an element A, b atoms of B, c atoms of C, so that its chemical formula is $A_aB_bC_c$, the molecular number $N = aN_a + bN_b + cN_c$, where N_a, N_b, N_c are the atomic numbers of the component elements. For example, the molecular number of water (H_2O) is 10, for the nuclear charge of hydrogen is 1, and of oxygen is 8. The molecular number generally, but not invariably, comes out *even* due to the circumstance that when the valency is odd the atomic number is usually odd also.

The importance of the new definition lies in the fact that certain simple empirical formulae which Allen has shown to hold for the atomic numbers and other characteristic constants of the chemical elements are equally valid for molecular numbers and compounds. These formulae are $N\nu = n\nu_A$ and $N\nu = (n + \frac{1}{2})\nu_A$, where N = molecular number, n = small positive integer, ν = characteristic frequency, and ν_A = "frequency number" $\doteqdot 21 \times 10^{12}$ sec^{-1}.

Three papers on this subject, by the same author, are devoted to testing these relations. The data for a large number of organic and inorganic compounds have been used and the equations have stood the test in such a great majority of cases as to leave little room for the suspicion that the agreement arises from an accidental play of numbers. Then, too, the physical constants have been derived from many sources and the calculations based on data of different kinds. For a small number of compounds the results of low-temperature measurements were available and the characteristic frequency was deduced from the specific heat. In many cases ν was calculated from Lindemann's formula, which is $\nu = kT_s^{\frac{1}{2}} M^{-\frac{1}{2}} V^{\frac{1}{3}}$, where T_s = absolute temperature of the melting-point, M = molecular weight, V = molecular volume, and $k = 3{\cdot}08 \times 10^{12}$ (Nernst's value). In still other cases the required frequencies were obtained directly from the wave-lengths of the "residual rays" isolated by repeated reflections from the surfaces of crystalline solids. Allen's formulae are doubtless expressions of a fundamental property of the solid state of matter, and their form suggests a probable connection with the quantum theory.—*Phil. Mag.*, **35**, 338, 404, 445; 1918. H. S. U.

II. Geology.

1. *Thirteenth Report of the Director of the State Museum and Science Department, State of New York;* by John M. Clarke. Pp. 307, many plates. Albany, 1917.—In this volume the present conditions and aspirations of the most extensive of the state museums are set forth, and also the present status of the various scientific reservations in New York. Among the scientific papers are the following: The Philosophy of Geology and the Order of the State, by John M. Clarke; Geology and public Service, by G. O. Smith; Plastic Deformation of Grenville Limestone, by D. H. Newland; Geological Features at the Champlain Assembly, Cliff Haven, by G. H. Hudson; Some structural Features of a fossil embryo Crinoid, by G. H. Hudson; Devonian glass Sponges, by John M. Clarke; Primary and secondary Stresses, by John M. Clarke; The Mining and Quarry Industry of New York State, by D. H. Newland.

Still another paper entitled "Strand and Undertow Markings of Upper Devonian Time as Indications of the prevailing Climate,'' by John M. Clarke, is especially interesting, because in these markings the author has further confirmation of his conclusion that ''the late Devonian was a period of cold which brought the land ice down to what is now the edge of the sea at the northeast [Gaspé], and may well have created conditions, regardless of the alternation of the seasons, which would give plenty of means for channeling the Devonian strands of New York, by the movement of land ice toward the sea, or by the landward thrust of the sea ice back from the water.''

R. Ruedemann also has a very important paper, Paleontology of arrested Evolution. This is a study of the persistent or conservative genera and chiefly of invertebrates. Of these there are 506 genera out of a possible total of about 4000, or over 12 per cent. It is among the lower classes of organisms, and again among the lower forms within the subclasses, that are found the more primitive genera with the greater percentage of persistent forms. Restriction and specialization for narrow conditions of life lead ''to extinction when these conditions change.'' On the other hand, the animals that live in the open ocean and in the abyss, or under subterranean conditions, have more stable environments and tend to show a remarkable persistence and immortality. Sessile forms also tend toward persistence, and in the marine waters persistent types are more common than in fresh waters and on the land. Originally the persistent types were the most vigorous stocks. ''The evidence here gleaned from the persistent types and equally supported by both groups of persistent types, the persistent radicals and persistent terminals, leads necessarily to the general conclusion that there is no inherent propelling force of variation or of development, and that all evolution in the last analysis is largely dependent on the exterior agencies supplied by the ever changing physical conditions.'' C. S.

2. *Geology of the Oregon Cascades;* by Warren Du Pre Smith. Univ. of Oregon Bulletin, n.s., **14,** No. 16, 54 pp., 1 pl., 1917.—The author points out that we know little ''with certainty about the formations and events prior to the Tertiary,'' and that the West Coast geological events are similar to those on the other side of the Pacific. ''The three most striking instances of this [similarity] are the period of Tertiary gold deposition, practically contemporaneous around the entire Pacific arc, the Eocene coal formations, and the tremendous eruptions of basaltic and andesitic lavas, which continue to this day, though not on so extensive a scale as in the past.

''The general conclusion is that the geology of the various countries bordering on the Pacific must be deciphered and interpreted by duly considering the data from all these regions.''

C. S.

3. *The Evolution of Vertebræ,* and *The Osteology of some American Permian Vertebrates. III;* by Samuel W. Willis-

TON. Contrib. from Walker Museum, **2**, No. 4, pp. 75-112, pls. 3, 4, text figs. 1-19, 1918.—The first paper, as the title indicates, treats of the evolution of the vertebræ, and upholds the conception first worked out by Cope. The Stegocephalia in the Temnospondyli have divided vertebræ, inherited from the fishes. Out of this stock with embolomerous vertebræ arose the reptiles in the late Paleozoic. The succeeding changes are then traced through the various orders of reptiles.

In the second paper, the author discusses the skulls and other parts of the skeleton of *Eryops, Chenoprosopus, Naosaurus, Sphenacodon,* and the new genus *Platyops.* Both papers are fully illustrated by excellent drawings made by the author.

C. S.

4. *Onaping Map-area;* by W. H. COLLINS. Geol. Survey Canada, Mem. **95**, 157 pp., 11 pls., 8 text figs., 2 maps, 1917.—In this memoir are clearly described the pre-Cambrian rocks of the Onaping area lying to the north of Georgian Bay and Sudbury, and their economic content. The geologic succession is as follows: Pleistocene thin glacial deposits; great unconformity; Huronian division, separated into the upper basic intrusives (= ?Keweenawan) and the lower Cobalt series; great unconformity; pre-Huronian highly metamorphosed division, which includes the younger granite-gneiss bathyliths, and below, the great schist complex. Collins prefers for the present to use the term pre-Huronian rather than Keewatin, Laurentian, or Algoman. This because "no reliable classification of the pre-Huronian can be made until a correlation datum plane has been established within the pre-Huronian" area. C. S.

5. *Timiskaming County, Quebec;* by M. E. WILSON. Geol. Survey Canada, Mem. **103**, 197 pp., 16 pls., 6 text figs., 1 map, 1918.—This is an interesting report describing the pre-Paleozoic formations or the basal complex, the physiography, and the economic geology of the area, along with a presentation of its special problems. The interesting Huronian tillites are also described, and the small area of Paleozoic strata is believed to be a down-faulted mass into the basal complex, or more specifically, into the Abitibi group. The Keweenawan, or Nipissing diabase, is referred with doubt to the pre-Cambrian, and the Huronian (Cobalt series) and the Basal Complex definitely. The latter includes the pre-Huronian bathyliths, the Abitibi group and the Grenville series. C. S.

6. *The Pliocene History of northern and central Mississippi;* by EUGENE W. SHAW. U. S. Geol. Survey, Prof. Paper **108**-H, pp. 125-163, pls. 45-60, text figs. 21-25, 1918.—This good work is of especial interest in pointing out that the long misinterpreted Lafayette formation is not a depositional unit, and that most of it is weathered material belonging to various underlying formations. In the opinion of Mr. Shaw, "the material called 'Lafayette

formation' in Mississippi is the product neither of Pleistocene icy floods from the north nor of a marine invasion; it is not a Pliocene blanket of waste from the Appalachians gradually spread over the State by streams; and it does not consist altogether of parts of pre-Pliocene formations, with their surface residuum. It is believed to be made up of unrelated or distantly related materials that have been erroneously grouped together and to consist in the main of more or less modified parts of the underlying formations, including some residuum and colluvium, and of terrace deposits of Pliocene and Quaternary age.'' C. S.

III. Miscellaneous Scientific Intelligence.

1. *Chemistry of Food and Nutrition;* by Henry C. Sherman, Ph.D. Second Edition. Pp. xiv, 454. New York, 1918 (The Macmillan Co.).—With the science of nutrition bringing new and epoch-making contributions at exceedingly short intervals in the past few years it is difficult, if not impossible, to find any dependable account of the newer results at a time when we begin to realize that ''food will win the war.'' Doubly difficult is the task set for anyone who ventures to present the story of food and metabolism in its newest and changing aspects. The comparison of the two editions of Professor Sherman's book shows how much has needed to be expressed anew within a few years. The changes are, perhaps, less conspicuous in the interpretation of intermediary metabolism and the energy problems than in the discussion of the protein factor, the novel features of the little understood vitamines and the so-called ''balancing'' of the diet. The revision is both timely and well done. There is an historical perspective, a balancing of evidence and a sane judgment on many debated topics. The new edition will be quite as helpful as was the earlier one. L. B. M.

2. *The Physical Chemistry of the Proteins;* by T. Brailsford Robertson. Pp. xv, 483. New York, 1918 (Longmans, Green & Co.).—In the early periods of the modern popularity of colloid chemistry the tendency was to treat all of the representative substances that belong in this domain in a uniform fashion and to attempt to make their phenomena conform to relations observed to hold for some special group. Robertson quite properly insists that the colloids represent an exceedingly heterogeneous group—hence the justification for independent consideration of the illustrative type seen in the proteins. This volume is a new edition of the author's ''Die physikalische Chemie der Proteine,'' published in 1912. It deals extensively with the descriptive chemistry of the proteins, in so far as this

knowledge is indispensable for a fundamental conception of the physico-chemical phenomena. The content of the subject-matter is indicated by the major subdivisions of the text, viz.: Chemical Statics in Protein Systems; The Electrochemistry of the Proteins; The Physical Properties of Protein Systems; Chemical Dynamics in Protein Systems. L. B. M.

3. *Lecithin and Allied Substances;* The Lipins; by HUGH MACLEAN. Pp. vii, 206. London, 1918 (Longmans, Green and Co.).—The "lipins" are defined by the author as substances of a fat-like nature yielding on hydrolysis fatty acids or derivatives of fatty acids and containing in their molecule either nitrogen, or nitrogen and phosphorus. This is not the sense in which the term has been employed by some American writers; but at any rate the author's intent is clear. Any attempt to bring order out of chaos, such as the literature of lecithin and allied subjects represents, is a desideratum; and when it is undertaken by one, like Maclean, who is experienced in this field, the effort is doubly welcomed. The volume is representative of the now well-known Monographs on Biochemistry. That it does not overlook "ancient history" is attested by the long chapter on that much debated subject, protagon, for which it might serve as a funeral oration. L. B. M.

4. *Directions for a Practical Course in Chemical Physiology.* Third edition; by W. CRAMER. Pp. viii, 119. London, 1917 (Longmans, Green and Co.).—The author states that "the arrangement of the work differs from that generally followed, in that the student is at the outset provided with substances familiar to him, such as a potato, an egg, lard, butter, etc. . . . In this way he is introduced to the subject without interposing complex chemical conceptions, which the usual arrangement of dividing the subject into the study of carbohydrates, fats, and proteins necessarily involves." Many teachers of the subject will probably debate the alleged superiority of this scheme. There is nothing essentially novel in the little manual, though it has the advantage of inexpensive form. Numerous omissions may doubtless be accounted for on the basis of the comparatively elementary character of the course intended to be served.

L. B. M.

5. *An Outline of the History of Phytopathology;* by HERBERT HICE WHETZEL. Pp. 130. Philadelphia 1918 (W. B. Saunders Co.).—Professor Whetzel has made a valuable contribution to the literature of historical biology. From the earliest mention of plant diseases, he traces the development of our knowledge and control of them down to recent progress in this country. Stress is laid on the most significant discoveries and the more important individuals that have contributed to the advancement of the science. In the opinion of the author, Anton de Bary should not be considered the father of modern plant pathology; this title is

conferred upon Julius Kuhn. The characterizations of prominent men are terse but well done and there are many very good portraits. The value of the book, which is strictly an outline, is further enhanced by a classified bibliography and an index.

H. D. H. JR.

OBITUARY.

PROFESSOR HENRY SHALER WILLIAMS of Ithaca, N. Y., well known for his valuable work in geology and paleontology, died in Havana, Cuba, on July 31 at the age of seventy-one years. He was born at Ithaca on March 6, 1847, was graduated at Yale university with the degree of Ph.B. in 1868, and remained as assistant in paleontology from 1868 to 1870; in 1871 he received the degree of Ph.D. His first position as a teacher was as professor of natural science at Kentucky University in 1871-72; from there he went to Cornell University as professor of geology, remaining at Ithaca until in 1892 he became Silliman professor of geology at Yale. In 1904 he returned to Cornell as head of the department of geology, which position he held until he became emeritus in 1912. Much of his time has been spent during recent years in Cuba, in part in the investigation of oil fields. His contributions to science, and particularly to paleontology on its broader side, were numerous and important; this subject will be presented more fully in a later number. As an associate editor of this Journal his work was of great value, especially for the years following his appointment until he left New Haven in 1904; for a year, beginning 1893, he performed the duties of editor-in-chief with the unselfish devotion characteristic of the man. He was a member of several prominent geological societies and through the kindliness of his nature won for himself a wide circle of friends.

PROFESSOR JOHN DUER IRVING, who had since 1907 held the chair of economic geology in the Sheffield Scientific School of Yale University, died of pneumonia in July while serving his country as instructor in an engineering camp in France. He was in his forty-fourth year and had already made a wide reputation in his own department, particularly with reference to the subject of ore deposits. For a number of years he had been editor of the journal "Economic Geology." His loss is a serious one to the science of the country, as to the university with which he was connected.

CHARLES CHRISTOPHER TROWBRIDGE, assistant professor of physics in Columbia University, died suddenly on June 2 in his forty-ninth year. He had been connected with the teaching staff of Columbia since 1892 and was especially known for his work in ornithology. An important paper by him on "The Interlocking of Emarginate Primary Feathers in Flight" was published in this Journal for February, 1906 (vol. **21**, pp. 145-169).

THE

AMERICAN JOURNAL OF SCIENCE

[FOURTH SERIES.]

Art. XXIII.—*The Green River Desert Section, Utah;**
by Wilson B. Emery.

General Statement.

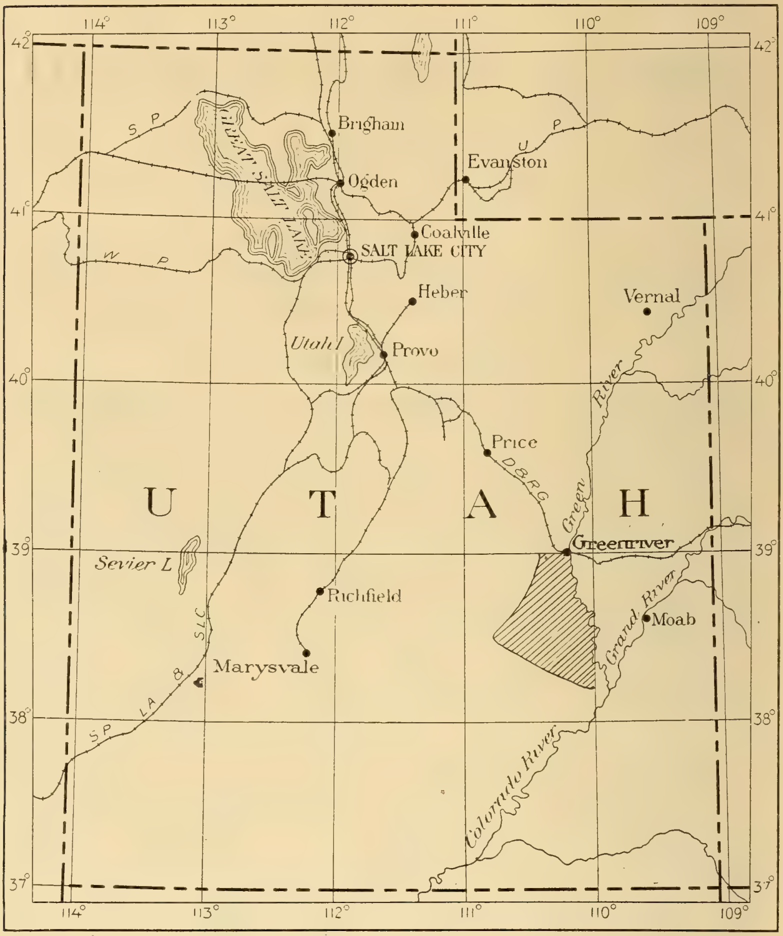
The charm of the Southwest and of its geology ever lingers with me, and so it was with considerable pleasure that in 1917 I again undertook work in this region for the U. S. Geological Survey, after several seasons spent elsewhere. The examination in hand, which was a reconnaissance to determine the oil possibilities of the Green River Desert, Utah, necessitated a more or less detailed study of the stratigraphy of the area, and it is the results of this phase of the investigation that I shall present in the following pages. These results constitute further evidence of the remarkable similarity in lithologic character and stratigraphic sequence of the thick series of sedimentary beds exposed broadly over the vast area of the Colorado Plateaus. Very frequent comparison will be made with the rocks of the Navajo Country in the southern Colorado Plateaus, for it is with the stratigraphy of this region, embracing many hundred square miles in southern Utah, northern Arizona, and northwestern New Mexico, that I have first-hand knowledge, acquired during a long field season in 1913, while assistant to Professor Herbert E. Gregory, in his studies there for the United States Geological Survey.

Green River Desert is situated in east-central Utah and embraces that portion of the Colorado Plateaus which is in Emery and Wayne counties, between the Den-

* Published by permission of the Director, U. S. Geol. Survey.

ver and Rio Grande Railroad, Dirty Devil River, San Rafael Reef, and the canyon of Green River (fig. 1). The rocks exposed in the Desert range in age from Penn-

Fig. 1.



INDEX MAP

sylvanian (?) to Upper Cretaceous and embrace a thick series of sandstones with some shale and a very little limestone. The oldest bed examined was a white sandstone of Pennsylvanian (?) age which is extremely cross-bedded and is saturated with petroleum. Above it lies, probably unconformably, the Moenkopi formation (here assigned to the Lower Triassic), constituted principally of red-brown sandstone and shale, but containing at its base a prominent zone of buff shale and sandstone. The Moenkopi is unconformably overlain by the Shinarump conglomerate (Triassic), which is a very valuable key formation for correlation purposes, because of its peculiar lithologic character and widespread distribution. The variegated shales of the Chinle formation (Triassic) which lie perhaps unconformably above the Shinarump, are succeeded, also perhaps unconformably, by the massive, much cross-bedded sandstones of the Wingate (Jurassic). There is some evidence to indicate that the overlying beds, here tentatively correlated with the Todilto formation (Jurassic), rest unconformably on the Wingate. The Todilto (?) in addition to a rather heterogeneous mass of reddish shale and dirty gypsum, contains near its base a dense limestone which is fossiliferous and is therefore an invaluable key bed, as it occurs in the midst of a considerable thickness of unfossiliferous strata. The Navajo sandstone (Jurassic) succeeds the Todilto (?) and is composed of massive red sandstone at the base, with thinner-bedded red sandstone and sandy shale above and a prominent thick belt of gypsum at the top. The Wingate, Todilto (?), and Navajo together form what has been called the La Plata groups of rocks. The McElmo formation (Cretaceous?) comes next above the Navajo and consists of coarse white sandstone and conglomerate at the base (the Salt Wash sandstone member), variegated shales containing dinosaur bones and well polished pebbles resembling gastroliths in the middle portion, and at the top, coarse sandstones and conglomerates with minor quantities of variegated shale. The McElmo is believed to rest unconformably on the Navajo. An unconformity occurs also at the top of the McElmo, for it is in places overlain by a thin bed of Dakota sandstone (Upper Cretaceous) but is elsewhere in contact with the Mancos shale (Upper Cretaceous). This shale, which is several thousand feet thick, is blue-gray to drab in color and fossiliferous at numerous horizons. It is an important stratigraphic marker because of its lithologic character and fossil content.

The areal distribution of these formations in the Green River Desert is shown in the geologic sketch map

FIG. 2.

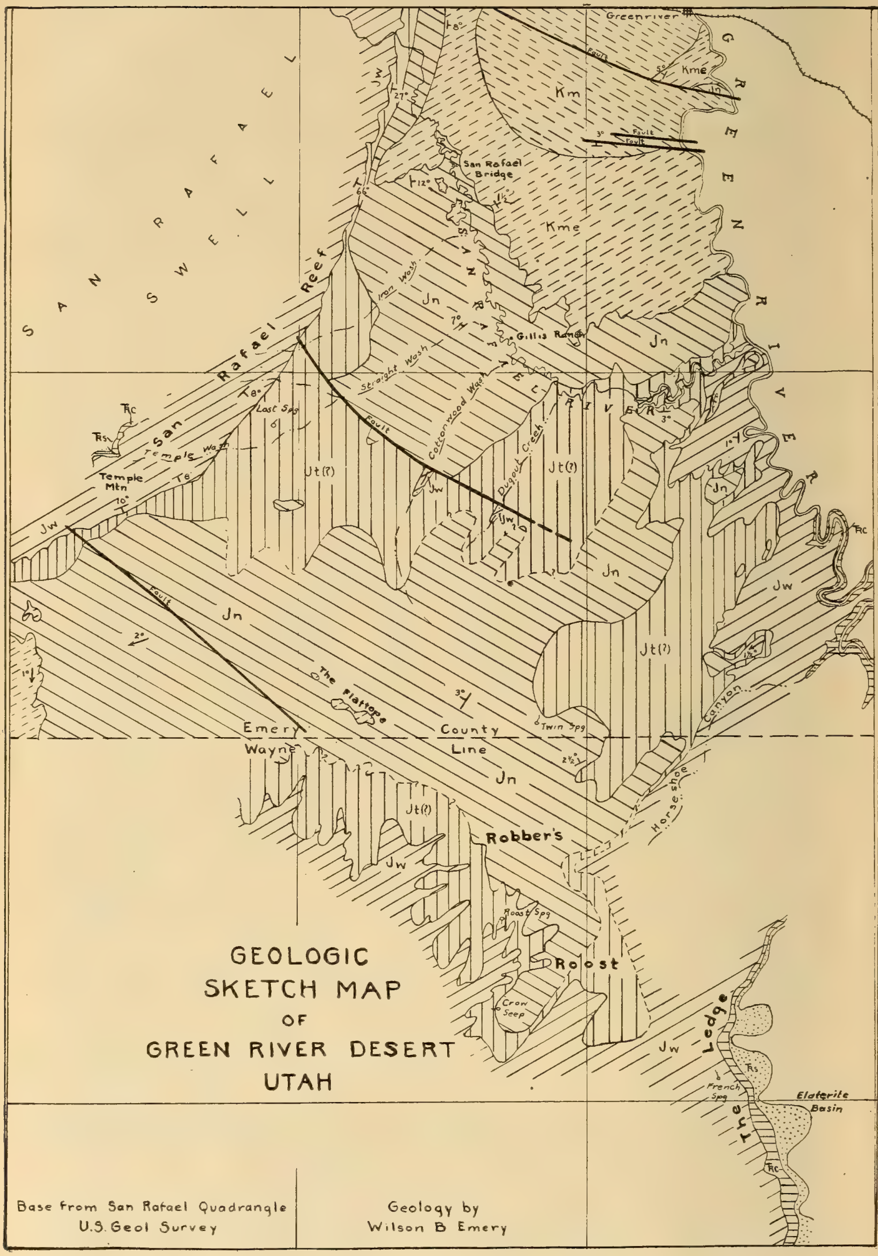


FIG. 2. Scale 1 inch = about 9¼ miles.

(fig. 2), and their correlation with beds in adjacent areas is shown in the table on page 556.

PENNSYLVANIAN(?) SANDSTONE.

A sandstone of Pennsylvanian(?) age which is exposed in Elaterite Basin and also outcrops rather broadly in San Rafael Swell behind "The Reef," is the lowest formation I had the opportunity of seeing in the Green River Desert. It is heavily impregnated with oil on the outcrop and is probably oil-bearing throughout its areal extent in this region.

This sandstone, which is composed mostly of translucent quartz grains held together by calcareous cement, is coarse-grained, massive, very cross-bedded, and rather soft. Where not impregnated with petroleum it is white both on the fresh face and on weathered surfaces, but where filled with oil is a steel gray at the surface but dark brown to black on fresh fracture. It commonly weathers into deep pockets, constituting excellent rain water reservoirs, and is further characterized in San Rafael Swell by scarlet spots and blotches on the weathered surfaces.

Near Temple Mountain, San Rafael Swell, fully 100 feet, and in Elaterite Basin about 50 feet of the Pennsylvanian (?) sandstone are exposed. In both localities the sand is heavily saturated with oil from top to bottom, but the oil is definitely confined to certain, probably more porous layers, for I saw no sign of oil in clean white laminae in direct contact with dark petroliferous laminae.

At the top of the Pennsylvanian (?) near Temple Mountain is a very distinctive bed containing quartzite pebbles and irregular areas of calcite and having the appearance of a coarse, irregular conglomerate. It attains a maximum thickness of 7 feet, but is locally absent, which with its conglomeratic character is indicative of an unconformity at this horizon. The presence of an unconformity at the top of the Pennsylvanian (?) is

---

LEGEND (FIG. 2).

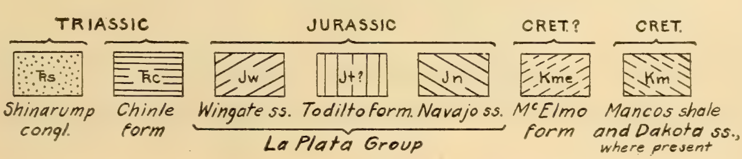


Table of Correlations.

Age	Navajo Country a/	Henry Mountains b/	Green River Desert	Green River oil field c/
Cretaceous (Upper)	Mancos shale		Mancos shale	Mancos shale
	Dakota sandstone		Dakota sandstone	Dakota sandstone
	Unconformity	? — ?	Unconformity	Unconformity
Cretaceous ?	McElmo formation		McElmo formation Salt Wash sandstone member	McElmo formation: Salt Wash sandstone member
	Unconformity?	Flaming Gorge group	Unconformity	
Jurassic	La Plata group: Navajo sandstone		La Plata group: Navajo sandstone	
			Unconformity?	
	La Plata group: Todilto formation	Gray Cliff group	Todilto (?) formation	
			Unconformity?	
	La Plata group: Wingate sandstone	Vermilion Cliff group	Wingate sandstone	La Plata sandstone
	Unconformity?		Unconformity?	
Triassic	Chinle formation	Shinarump group: "a" division	Chinle formation	
	Unconformity?		Unconformity?	
	Shinarump conglomerate	Shinarump group: Shinarump conglomerate	Shinarump conglomerate	
	Unconformity		Unconformity	
	DeChelly sandstone	Shinarump group: "c" division	Absent	
	Moenkopi formation		Moenkopi formation	
	Unconformity		Unconformity?	
Pennsylvanian	Undifferentiated Pennsylvanian		Pennsylvanian (?)	

a (= 1) Gregory, H. E., Geology of the Navajo country, U. S. Geol. Survey, Prof. Paper 93, pp. 15-16, 1917.

b (= 2) Gilbert, G. K., Report on the geology of the Henry Mountains, U. S. Geog. and Geol. Survey of the Rocky Mountain region, p. 6, 1877.

c (= 3) Lupton, C. T., Oil and gas near Green River, Grand County, Utah, U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 541, p. 124, 1914.

also suggested by the apparent absence of the white, petroliferous sandstone described above in a number of places toward the junction of the Grand and Green rivers, for though I did not have the opportunity of examining this area in detail, from a distance it appears that this oil sand is locally absent.

The sandstone just described underlies the beds referred by Gilbert to the lower member of what he termed the Shinarump group in the Henry Mountains region[4] and which is now known as the Moenkopi formation in the Navajo Country to the south.[5] In the northern part of that area the beds directly below the Moenkopi are known as the Goodridge formation, and from the physical character and sequence it appears likely that this white Pennsylvanian (?) sandstone is equivalent to the top of the Goodridge. The fact that the Pennsylvanian (?) sandstone is oil-bearing in Green River Desert as is the Goodridge near Bluff on the San Juan River in southern Utah, affords further evidence of the validity of such a correlation. The Goodridge formation in the San Juan field was definitely determined to be Pennsylvanian in age on the basis of fossils collected there by Woodruff.[6] A brief examination in the Green River Desert revealed no fossils in the white sandstone, but because of its stratigraphic position it is here provisionally referred to the Pennsylvanian.

Moenkopi Formation (Triassic).

The Moenkopi formation here includes the series of reddish shales and sandstones between the white Pennsylvanian (?) sandstone below and the Shinarump conglomerate above, the intervening De Chelly sandstone not being present in this area. The Moenkopi is exposed in the heart of San Rafael Swell and under The Ledge between the Dirty Devil and Green rivers, where it forms the "riser" to the "step" made by the overlying Shinarump conglomerate.

The Moenkopi formation is arenaceous throughout. At

[4] Gilbert, G. K., Geology of the Henry Mountains, U. S. Geog. and Geol. Survey of the Terr., p. 6, 1877.

[5] Gregory, H. E., Geology of the Navajo country, U. S. Geol. Survey, Prof. Paper 93, P. III, 1917.

[6] Woodruff, E. G., Geology of the San Juan oil field, Utah, U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 471, p. 85, 1912.

the base are 60 to 75 feet of white to brownish buff sandy shale with numerous interbedded thin sandstones of the same color. This part of the formation makes a rather conspicuous feature of the landscape, for it is in sharp contrast to the nearly dead white color of the underlying Pennsylvanian (?) sandstone and to the alternating red sandstones and shales of the upper Moenkopi. The sandstone in the Moenkopi consists of fairly well-rounded small quartz grains, held together by a calcareous cement. The finer, more thinly bedded sandstones are beautifully ripple-marked.

About 140 feet above the base of the section near Temple Mountain is a thin layer of very calcareous buff sandstone, with a coquina-like appearance, containing many fossil fragments. A hurried examination revealed no identifiable specimens, but Mr. Walt M. Small, consulting geologist, of Tulsa, Oklahoma, who was with me when I visited this section, informs me that he later obtained collections from this horizon on the west side of the Swell.

The character of the Moenkopi is shown in the following detailed sections:

Section of Moenkopi formation, North Temple Wash, 1 mile ± north of Temple Mountain, San Rafael Swell, Utah.

(Measured with the assistance of Milton Anderson and Walt M. Small of Tulsa, Okla.)

Unconformity	
1. Sandstone, reddish brown, medium grained with some purple shale at top	128′
2. Sandstone and shale, buff to ecru. Contains a lensing oil sand 4′ thick from 30′ to 40′ above base	117′
3. Sandstone, red-brown, medium grained, thin to massive bedded, cross-bedded, ripple-marked, contains some shale	193′
4. Sandstone, weathers steel gray, darker gray-brown on fresh fracture, lenticular, saturated with petroleum	5-8′
5. Sandstone, buff to ecru, very limy; contains broken fossils; weathered surface resembles coquina	4′
6. Sandstone and shale, buff, thin-bedded	61′
7. Shale, very sandy, white	75′
Unconformity	
	583-586′

Section of Moenkopi formation near Elaterite Spring, Elaterite Basin, Utah.

1.	Conglomerate and coarse light sandstone. Shinarump conglomerate.	
Unconformity		
2.	Sandstone with shale becoming more prominent toward top; red-brown, upper two-thirds almost all shale. One foot of leached greenish shale and sandstone at top	102′
3.	Sandstone, buff, weathers red-brown, fine-grained, massive—a single bed, prominent ledge maker ..	17′
4.	Shale, sandy, red-brown, chocolate, and cream-colored toward top with considerable red-brown sandstone in thin layers, ripple-marked	62′
5.	Sandstone, red-brown, weathering to flakes; thicker bedded than that below	3′
6.	Sandstone, red-brown, ripple-marked, fine-grained, with interbedded red-brown shale	24′
7.	Sandstone, red-brown, fine-grained, honey-comb weathering in places. Ledge maker. Lower 4′ a single bedded. Thinner bedded above	9′
8.	Shale, red-brown, sandy, with some minor cream-colored, sandy shale and with numerous interbedded, thin-bedded sandstone—red-brown, medium to fine-grained, much ripple-marked. Weathers to flakes	78′
9.	Sandstone, thin-bedded to beds 3′ thick, brown, weathering light brown to buff, with interbedded shale like (10). Ledge maker	16′
10.	Shale, sandy, with some thin sandstone; cream colored	45′
11.	Sandstone, white, coarse-grained, impregnated with petroleum. Pennsylvanian(?) sandstone.	
		356′

The beds just described are limited both above and below by unconformities. They constitute the (c) division or lowest member of Gilbert's Shinarump group in the Henry Mountains region, which together with a thick series of overlying beds were referred provisionally to the Jura-Trias by him. Though these beds have not been actually traced into the Moenkopi formation of the Navajo Reservation, I think the correlation is amply warranted on the ground of position in the sequence, for they underlie the Shinarump conglomerate, which is an excellent distinctive horizon that Gregory[7] has shown is equivalent in northeastern Arizona with the similar bed in the Henry Mountains, and overlie beds of probable Pennsylvanian age. The equivalence is further emphasized by likeness in lithology, every lithologic feature of the series in the Green River Desert being, I believe, susceptible of duplication on the Navajo Reservation. The De Chelly sandstone, present in places between the Moenkopi and Shinarump on the Reservation, is absent in Green River Resert.

The brief examination of the Moenkopi formation on the borders of Green River Desert did not result in the collection of identifiable fossil forms, though a limy bed containing shell fragments was noted in the lower part of the formation near Temple Mountain. Butler has, however, collected fossils on Miners Mountain near Fruita, about 45 miles southwest of Temple Mountain, from a limestone about 300 feet below the Shinarump conglomerate, which Girty has determined to be Triassic (probably to be correlated with the Lower Triassic, Thaynes and Woodside formations of the Wasatch range).[8] This fossiliferous limestone is interbedded in a series of reddish sandstones and shale, which, because of lithology and stratigraphic position, I believe correlative with the Moenkopi of the Green River Desert. The Moenkopi is accordingly here referred to the Triassic, though the Moenkopi of the Navajo Reservation was referred by Gregory to the Permian (?), because in that area the various bits of fossil evidence obtained were contradictory.[9]

Shinarump Conglomerate (Triassic).

The Shinarump conglomerate, which unconformably overlies the Moenkopi formation, is more resistant to erosion than are the beds above and below, and where inclined at low angles as it is under The Ledge, makes a prominent bench in the topography. In San Rafael Swell it is sharply upturned and forms a small "hogback."

The Shinarump, from 80 to 100 feet thick, is generally

[7] Gregory, H. E., op. cit.

[8] Butler, B. S., Ore deposits of Utah, U. S. Geol. Survey, Prof. Paper 111, in press.

[9] Gregory, H. E., op. cit., pp. 30-31.

light-colored, having a somewhat Nile-greenish tinge on exposed faces, though locally it weathers almost black. It is composed of very coarse-textured, cross-bedded and massive sandstone and conglomerate. The conglomerate is of two types, the one consisting of water-worn black and brown quartz pebbles one-eighth to one-fourth of an inch or more in diameter, the other of angular yellow and drab limestone and shale pebbles. Limestone pebbles appear to be absent under The Ledge, but are distributed from top to bottom of the formation near Temple Mountain and are especially prominent at the top. A diagnostic feature is the abundance of fossil wood, some of it of large size, as for example, a single trunk on Black Mesa near West Pass, Elaterite Basin, which measures 15 feet in length by 1 foot in diameter. The Shinarump is in places saturated with petroleum. In the Temple Mountain region, it is the source of the radium-bearing ores which occur in pockets associated with fossil wood. The Temple Mountain mine is the type locality of uvanite, a new vanadium-bearing mineral described by Hess and Schaller.[10]

The beds just described unconformably overlie the Moenkopi and constitute the ''b'' division or middle conglomerate member of Gilbert's Shinarump group in the Henry Mountain region and the Shinarump conglomerate of other authors in the Colorado Plateaus. The Shinarump is a most valuable marker, for its very distinct characteristics with their remarkable similarity over a wide area render it an unmistakable key-bed for correlation purposes. No fossils were observed in the Shinarump in Green River Desert, and their exceeding rarity in other places makes determination of the age of the formation difficult. It has, however, been tentatively regarded by Gregory[11] as probably of Upper Triassic age on the basis of stratigraphic position and on such meager fossil collections as have been made, and this determination is accepted here.

Chinle Formation (Triassic).

The Chinle formation embraces the variegated shales and red sandstones between the Shinarump conglomerate

[10] Hess, F. L., and Schaller, W. S., Pintadoite and Uvanite, two new vanadium-bearing minerals from Utah, Jour. Wash. Acad. Sci., 4, p. 578, 1914.

[11] Gregory, H. E., op. cit.

and the massive Wingate sandstone. It is exposed in The Ledge and upstream in the canyon of Green River to within a few miles of the mouth of the San Rafael and comes to the surface again back of San Rafael Reef. Where the beds are inclined at low angles the Chinle weathers back to a steep slope underlying the vertical cliff of the massive lower portion of the La Plata group, but where not capped by La Plata weathers into badland forms.

Shale predominates in the lower part of the Chinle formation but gives way to sandstone above. The shale is very argillaceous, rather firmly cemented, hard, friable, and of variegated colors, including heliotrope, lavender, mauve, turquoise, dove, cream, and white, and with it are interbedded thin sandstones similar to those constituting the upper part of the formation. The shale rather gradually loses its "marl"-like character becoming more and more sandy until finally in the upper part of the formation the beds are sandstone rather than shale. This sandstone is fine-grained, massive, cross-bedded, and in the San Rafael Swell region its color is maroon with a terra-cotta cast, but under The Ledge the color partakes more of an orange-terra-cotta, the maroon tinge being absent.

In the section measured in Elaterite Basin a limestone conglomerate such as occurs in this formation in the Navajo country, where it is a diagnostic feature, is present in the Chinle about 35 feet above its base. Near Temple Mountain, however, the Chinle consists entirely of sandstone and shale, but limestone conglomerate like that which elsewhere occurs in the body of the formation is present at the base.

A detailed section of the Chinle was not measured in Temple Wash, near Temple Mountain, San Rafael Swell, but its thickness was determined as 210 feet. In this locality approximately the lower one-half of the section is composed of variegated, heliotrope, lavender, mauve, and red-brown argillaceous shale containing thin beds of sandstone, while the upper part is composed principally of sandstone which is medium-grained, much cross-bedded, lenticular and terra-cotta maroon in color. A detailed section of the Chinle rocks measured along the trail over The Ledge between French Spring and Elaterite Spring follows:

Section of Chinle formation in The Ledge along trail from French Spring to Elaterite Spring.

1.	Sandstone, red-brown, massive, cross-bedded—Wingate sandstone.	
2.	Shale, very sandy, becoming increasingly so toward top; red-brown in color; grades into overlying Wingate sandstone	150′
3.	Shale, hard, friable, variegated lavender, heliotrope, mauve, blue, white and cream	115′
4.	Shale, sandy, greenish, coarse, with dark limestone conglomerate at top	35′
5.	Conglomerate and coarse sandstone, Shinarump conglomerate.	
		300′

The Chinle is lithologically strongly in contrast with the underlying Shinarump conglomerate, which is significant, and which may indicate an unconformity though this does not necessarily follow. At the top of the Chinle along The Ledge there is no evidence of unconformity, for the Chinle seems to grade insensibly into the massive Wingate sandstone above. On the other hand, near Temple Mountain there is a marked lithologic difference in the Chinle and La Plata which may perhaps indicate a time break. In the Navajo country east of Carrizo Mountain in extreme northeastern Arizona I found evidence of such a break betwen the Chinle and overlying Wingate sandstone, and Gregory obtained evidence of unconformity at this horizon at several other places in the Navajo country.[12] Thus it appears likely that the Chinle may be unconformably limited at the top and bottom.

That the beds described above are to be correlated with the Chinle formation on the Navajo Reservation I think there is no reason to doubt. The peculiar lithologic characters of the Chinle in the Reservation, including the presence of limestone conglomerate, are duplicated in Green River Desert, and this together with its position between such prominent and unmistakable key-beds as the Shinarump below and the massive Wingate sandstone above, makes the correlation of the formations in the two localities imperative. The Chinle is identical with the beds referred by Gilbert to the (c) or upper division of his Shinarump group in the Henry Mountains region.[13] It is Triassic in age.

[12] Gregory, H. E., op. cit., p. 48.
[13] Gilbert, G. K., op. cit., p. 6, stratigraphic section.

La Plata Group (Jurassic).

The La Plata group, which consists of three formations, includes all the beds between the Chinle and McElmo and is probably limited both above and below by unconformities. The lowest formation of the group is the Wingate sandstone, about 900 feet thick and composed of massive cross-bedded, quartz-sandstone beds. Above it lie 100-300 feet of shale and gypsum, with a thin marine limestone containing fossil invertebrates of Jurassic age near the base, which are believed to represent the Todilto formation of the Navajo Reservation. Massive cross-bedded red sandstone and thinner bedded red sandstone and sandy shale aggregating about 700 feet in thickness constitute the Navajo sandstone, which lies above the Todilto (?) and is the highest formation of the La Plata group. The group as developed in Colorado, Arizona, and New Mexico has been referred to the Jurassic on account of stratigraphic position, and that reference is now confirmed by the distinctive marine Jurassic invertebrates in the Todilto (?) formation.

Wingate Sandstone (Jurassic).

The Wingate sandstone, the lowest formation in the La Plata group, embraces all the massive cross-bedded sandstone between the Chinle and the overlying Todilto (?) formation. It is widely exposed in Green River Desert, forming the canyon walls of Green River from the mouth of San Rafael River to Horseshoe Canyon and capping The Ledge from there to the Dirty Devil. The wonderfully impressive crags of San Rafael Reef are formed from the Wingate sandstone.

The Wingate is a remarkably uniform series of extremely massive, very cross-bedded, medium to fine-grained sandstones, averaging in this region about 900 feet in thickness. The name Orange Cliffs, which appears on the Land Office base (1915) along what is locally and more expressly known as The Ledge, is a descriptive term derived from the color of the lower part of the Wingate which forms these cliffs. The upper part of the formation near The Ledge is white. A similar color scheme is seen in the Wingate in San Rafael Reef in the vicinity of San Rafael River, but at other places along the Reef the formation is white throughout its entire thickness. Such inconstancy of color seems to preclude its use as a diagnostic character, although it was regarded as distinctive by Powell, Dutton, and Gilbert in their early reconnaissance work in Utah. The extreme massiveness and cross-bedding of these sandstones, which features were of course recognized and emphasized by these writers, seem indeed to be diagnostic and to afford much safer ground for correlation purposes than does color.

There is generally a weaker zone between the massive and resistant upper and lower portions of the Wingate in both The Ledge and San Rafael Reef, but this zone occurs at different stratigraphic positions in each section. In the section at The Ledge it is 250 feet thick and starts 375 feet above the base of the formation, whereas in the Temple Wash section it is only about 200 feet thick and starts 150 feet above the base of the formation. The beds in this zone are sandstones similar to those above and below in all respects except that they are less massive, and so less resistant to erosion. There is no shale or gypsum in this zone, but within a few feet of the top of it in the Temple Wash section are two beds of conglomerate each less than 4 feet thick containing angular limestone and shale pebbles. These conglomerates lie about 550 feet below the top of the formation in this area. In the section at The Ledge similar conglomerate was noted about 100 feet below the top of the Wingate in the midst of a thick series of very massive sandstones, but no such conglomerate is present here in the less massive middle portion of the formation. Near the "Bowknot" loop of the Green fragments of fossil wood are present in similar conglomerate in the upper part of the Wingate. The conglomerate is apparently only locally developed and is such as one would expect to form by the breaking up of limestone and shale deposits laid down in little fresh water lagoons. It marks no single definite horizon nor do the less massive sandstone beds in the middle portion of the Wingate represent a single period of widespread deposition of this type. Rather they indicate that at different times in different places conditions were right for the deposition of more thinly bedded sandstone than were laid down before or after.

The following sections illustrate the character of the Wingate sandstone:

Section of Wingate sandstone in The Ledge near French Spring.

1.	Sandstone, white, weathering light buff to white, medium grained, very massive, cliff maker; cross-bedded, contains bed of limestone conglomerate about 100 below top	285′+
2.	Sandstone, lighter in color than underlying sandstone, grading into white above, less massive than (1) and (4), cross-bedded	145′
3.	Sandstone like (4) but less massive	105′
4.	Sandstone, orange-terra-cotta in color, weathering red-brown, very massive, a single bed; cross-bedded, very prominent ledge maker	375′
5.	Sandstone and shale, red-brown, Chinle formation,	
		910′+

Section of Wingate sandstone, North Temple Wash.

(Measured with the aid of Milton Anderson and Walt M. Small of Tulsa, Okla.)

1.	Shale and fossiliferous limestone, Todilto (?) formation.	
2.	Sandstone, white, massive, cross-bedded, forms dip slope of San Rafael Reef	517′
3.	Sandstone, white, less massively bedded than member above, but having similar characters. Contains two thin beds of limestone conglomerate within 25′ of top	213′
4.	Sandstone, light buff, very massive, cross-bedded, cliff maker, supports San Rafael Reef; oil sand at base	150′
5.	Sandstone, red-brown, and variegated shale, Chinle formation.	
		880′

The beds described above were divided by Gilbert into two formations, the "Vermilion Cliff" and the "Gray Cliff," apparently largely because of color differences, but that such a division was attended with difficulties is evident from Gilbert's statements quoted below:[14]

"The Gray Cliff and Vermilion Cliff sandstones are often difficult to distinguish, but the latter is usually the firmer, standing in bold relief in topography, with level top, and at its edge a precipitous face. The former is apt to weather into a wilderness

[14] Gilbert, G. K., op. cit., p. 7.

of dome-like pinnacles so steep sided that they cannot often be scaled by the experienced mountaineer, and separated by narrow clefts which are equally impassible.''

And again:

''Standing upon one of the summits of the Henry Mountains and looking eastward I found myself unable to distinguish the Gray Cliff Sandstone by color either from the lower part of the Flaming Gorge Group or from the Vermilion Cliff Sandstone.''

The distinction of two formations in these massive sandstones is equally as difficult in the Green River Desert as in the Henry Mountain region. As already shown, color in these beds is not a sure ground for the drawing of formational boundaries, and in the absence of fossils I can see no basis for drawing such a boundary in the midst of a series lithologically similar from top to bottom. In my opinion the ''Vermilion Cliff'' and ''Gray Cliff'' sandstones constitute a single stratigraphic unit, which is equivalent to the Wingate sandstone of the Navajo Reservation. This correlation is based on the position of the unit between the Chinle formation below and a series of limestone, shale, sandstone, and gypsum beds above which is believed equivalent to the Todilto as mapped by Gregory in the western part of the Navajo Reservation, and further upon its lithologic character, especially its massiveness and cross-bedding, which duplicate that found in the Wingate in Arizona. This interpretation differs from that of Gregory,[15] who correlated the Wingate sandstone with only the lower part of the series, the ''Vermilion Cliff'' portion, and who regarded the Todilto as the equivalent of the less massive zone present in the ''Vermilion Cliff''—''White Cliff'' series of beds in the High Plateaus. It has been shown above that this less massive zone is not constant in stratigraphic position in Green River Desert, but does in fact occur at various horizons in the series, and is not a formation or definite member of a formation. The present interpretation differs also from that of Doctor Cross, who in eastern Utah correlated the upper (''White Cliff'') portion of the series with the La Plata,[16] and regarded the ''Vermilion Cliff'' sandstone as older than La Plata. The present interpretation differs also from

[15] Gregory, H. E., op. cit., plate III.

[16] Cross, Whitman, Stratigraphic results of a reconnaissance in Western Colorado and Eastern Utah, Bull. Geol. Soc. America, 15, p. 642, 1907.

that of Lupton, who in the course of a study of the Cretaceous beds in Castle Valley and again in Grand County near Greenriver, also briefly examined the underlying rocks and reached the conclusion that the massive Jurassic sandstones ("Vermilion Cliff" and "Gray Cliff") represented the entire La Plata group.[17]

TODILTO (?) FORMATION (JURASSIC).

The rocks here called Todilto (?) formation constitute the middle portion of the La Plata group and comprise a heterogeneous and extremely variable series of shale, sandstone, limestone, and gypsum, but is a perfectly definite unit between the Wingate sandstone below and the Navajo sandstone above. It is broadly exposed in Green River Desert just east of San Rafael Reef, and again back from the canyon of Green River and The Ledge.

The Todilto (?) formation, characterized by its extreme variability, which is in fact diagnostic, in places appears as an unbedded jumbled mass of reddish shales associated with dirty gypsum and irregular bunches of massive sandstone, as in the Dugout Creek area about 8 miles above the mouth of San Rafael River, but elsewhere comprises a series of regularly bedded shales, sandstones, limestone, and gypsum, as for example, along Green River south of San Rafael River and in places along San Rafael Reef. The formation varies from 100 to about 300 feet in thickness.

Near San Rafael Reef where the Todilto (?) is rather regularly bedded a persistent blue-gray, compact limestone 2 to 4 feet thick lies from 12 to 15 feet above the base of the formation. This limestone is very fossiliferous and in a collection made with the assistance of Dr. Harvey Bassler along the Greenriver-Hanksville road 2 miles south of Straight Wash the following species have been identified by Dr. T. W. Stanton, who states they are marine invertebrates of Jurassic age:

Ostrea strigilecula White
Camptonectes sp.
Camptonectes stygius White
Plicatula sp.
Gervillia (?) sp.
Trigonia quadrangularis Hall and Whitfield
Cyprina (?) sp.

[17] Lupton, C. T., Oil and Gas near Green River, Grand County, Utah, U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 541, p. 125, 1914.

In driving from Castledale to Greenriver, Mr. H. S. Palmer and I noted fossils at this horizon at the north end of the Swell and Lupton reports this limestone to be fossiliferous in Castle Valley on the west side of the Swell, where in addition to the species listed above he found *Modiola subrimicata* Meek.[18]

Along Green River south of San Rafael River the limestone of the Todilto (?) directly overlies the massive Wingate sandstone. The limestone is here barren of fossils and is 4 feet thick, blue-gray, and dense in texture though it is possible to see flashes from crystal faces when a hand specimen is turned in the sun. With the limestone is interbedded chert, and in places there are irregular patches of calcite. This limestone strongly reminds me of the Todilto limestone in the type locality at Todilto Park, north of Fort Defiance, Ariz.

The sharp lithologic contrast of the Todilto (?) and Wingate and especially the much disturbed character of the lower beds of Todilto (?) in some places suggests that these formations are separated by an unconformity. The pronounced irregular surface of the top of the Todilto (?) into which the overlying Navajo fits, suggests that the Todilto (?) is also limited above by an unconformity.

The following detailed section furnishes an idea of the character of the Todilto (?) formation in the Green River Desert:

Section of Todilto (?) formation in sec. 28 T. 24 S., R. 16 E., Salt Lake Meridian, Utah.

1.	Sandstone, red, massive, cross-bedded Navajo sandstone. Erosional unconformity?	
2.	Sandstone, like (4), contact with massive red sandstone is irregular	16′
3.	Sandstone, light-colored, weathering light green; coarse-grained, irregularly bedded	11′
4.	Sandstone, dark red, coarse-grained, rather irregularly bedded, with ripple-marked layers 4″-15″ thick	68′
5.	Sandstone, pinkish gray, massive, cross-bedded Wingate sandstone.	
		95′

[18] Lupton, C. T., Geology and coal resources of Castle Valley, in Carbon, Emery, and Sevier counties, Utah, U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 628, p. 24, 1916.

Of the Jurassic age of the rocks just described there can be no doubt, for it is amply shown by the fossil content. They are lithologically similar to beds referred by Gregory to the Todilto in Piute Canyon and near Navajo Mountain, and like those beds lie between massive Wingate sandstone, below, which is an excellent key formation, and the Navajo sandstone above. Gregory, however, states that the expression of the beds in the northwest part of the Navajo Reservation is so unlike the Todilto of the type locality that the correlation can only be considered a working field hypothesis.[19] So while it is recognized that the beds between the Wingate and Navajo in Green River Desert are the equivalent of similar beds near Navajo Mountain they are referred to the Todilto with a question mark because later work may show that the Navajo Mountain Todilto is not indeed the equivalent of the type Todilto.

The Todilto (?) constitutes the lower part of what Gilbert termed the "Flaming Gorge group" in the vicinity of Henry Mountains and has been included by Lupton in the McElmo in Grand County and in Castle Valley. Lupton, however, was aware that the inclusion of these beds in the McElmo might not stand the test of more detailed work than the time at his command and the exigences of his examination permitted, for in this connection, quoting a list of fossils found in the limestone mentioned above, he said:

> "As the McElmo formation in its type area is not known to include any marine strata, it is possible that the bed containing this fauna is older than the basal beds of the typical McElmo."[20]

Navajo Sandstone (Jurassic).

The Navajo sandstone includes the beds between the Todilto (?) formation and the variegated shale and coarse sandstone and conglomerate of the Salt Wash member of the McElmo. It is broadly exposed in Green River Desert outcropping along San Rafael River and also in the region of the Flat Tops.

In the field two members of the Navajo sandstone were mapped on lithologic grounds. The lower of these is about 300 feet thick and consists of medium-grained sand-

[19] Gregory, H. E., op. cit., p. 56.

[20] Lupton, C. T., Geology and coal resources of Castle Valley, in Carbon, Emery, and Sevier counties, Utah, U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 628, p. 24, 1916.

stone, massive in character, and much cross-bedded and held together by calcareous cement. True bedding is so irregular as to make it next to impossible to obtain a valuable dip reading with the clinometer and the irregularity is especially marked near the contact with the Todilto (?) into the irregularities of which the lower Navajo beds fit. The irregularity along this contact suggests an unconformity at this horizon. In general the color of the lower massive Navajo is brick-red but in places near the "Reef" the rocks vary in color from café-au-lait to straw. This part of the formation weathers into prominent cliffs with rounded, impassable faces, or into deep pockets which catch and retain rain water. A rather local and striking feature of weathering is that near Gillis's ranch on San Rafael River where the formation is veined with calcite—probably associated with minor faulting, and weathers into low walls which "fence" in circular areas.

The thin-bedded upper part of the Navajo contrasts strongly with the massive lower part just described. The beds are sandstone and sandy shale and are for the most part brick-red in color, but near the middle of the series is a conspicuous zone of light-colored beds which though of similar lithology to the associated beds, differ in that they are light greenish in color. With them are associated irregular bunches of quartz which weather into small rounded red balls or lozenges resembling in appearance red rubber bath sponges. These "sponges" may be seen in profusion along the Hanksville road two miles or so south of San Rafael bridge. The very top of the upper Navajo sandstone is characterized by a 90-foot cliff of sandy shale interbedded with dirty gypsum. There is about 15 feet of almost solid gypsum just below the McElmo, which is thought to uncomformably overlie the Navajo.

The character of the Navajo sandstone is shown by the following section:

Section of the Navajo sandstone near Gillis's ranch, San Rafael River, Utah.

1.	Shale and thin sandstone with much interbedded gypsum, 15′ of gypsum at top makes a vertical cliff	90′
2.	Shale, sandy, brownish, with interbedded gypsum, forms steep slope to cliffs above	63′

3.	Sandstone and sandy shale, light brown below, greenish above, thin-bedded, some beds 1/16″ thick, with veins and interbedded layers of gypsum 6″ to 18″ thick in middle portion	144′
4.	Sandstone, fine-grained, reddish brown on weathered surface, somewhat lighter on fresh fracture, lower part massive, upper part more thinly bedded ...	127′
5.	Sandstone, massive, cross-bedded, red-brown to yellow. Estimated	300′
		724′

The beds described above were included by Gilbert[21] in the "Flaming Gorge group" and have been referred by Lupton[22] to the McElmo formation. Their lithologic character and stratigraphic position are suggestive of the Navajo sandstone of northeastern Arizona, and accordingly all the beds in Green River Desert between the Todilto (?) and the Salt Wash member of the McElmo have been referred to that formation. The limits of the Navajo as thus drawn are very definite in Green River Desert, but it is realized that the upper limit here may differ somewhat from that on the Reservation where Gregory states that the boundary between the Navajo and McElmo can not be too finely drawn.[23] That the contact in the two areas is not identical seems likely for Gregory has included the beds of Theater Rock in the McElmo while what appear to be similar beds in Green River Desert are here referred to the Navajo. Realizing that in northeastern Arizona there is apparently no counterpart of the Salt Wash member of the McElmo, which I believe indicates an unconformity, and realizing that the contact of the Navajo and McElmo is therefore uncertain in some degree, I have drawn the boundary as sharply as possible in Green River Desert. As so drawn, the Navajo contains all the red cross-bedded sandstone and red sandy shale above the Todilto (?); the McElmo includes light-colored coarse sandstone and variegated shales entirely different in character from the beds in the Navajo.

McElmo Formation. (Cretaceous?)

The McElmo formation overlies the Navajo sandstone and includes all the beds between it and the Dakota sand-

[21] Gilbert, G. K., op. cit., p. 6.
[22] Lupton, C. T., op. cit.
[23] Gregory, H. E., op. cit.

stone, or Mancos shale where the Dakota is absent. The formation embraces a series of coarse sandstones, conglomerates and variegated marl-like shale, and may be divided into three parts on the basis of lithology. Of these the lowest consists of coarse sandstone and conglomerate with minor amounts of light shale and has been called the Salt Wash member, by Lupton.[24] The middle portion embraces a series of variegated shales with local thin sandstones, and the upper portion consists of hard sandstone which weathers dark and has associated with it small amounts of variegated shale.

At the base of the Salt Wash member of the McElmo formation is 15 to 20 feet of light variegated shale which contrasts strongly in lithology and color with the underlying Navajo sandstone. The Salt Wash member is 200 feet thick, and with the exception of the basal shale, consists of coarse sandstone composed of loosely cemented, rather well rounded quartz grains mostly translucent with a small per cent of weathered feldspar. It also includes considerable poorly cemented conglomerate. These rocks are light-colored on fresh fracture and in many places weather nearly white, though elsewhere they weather a light brownish color. Fragments of light-colored petrified wood are present in this series and with them are associated in a number of places yellow streaks in irregular blotches of carnotite, and other uranium and vanadium ores. Many uranium claims have been located on the outcrop of this part of the formation in the vicinity of San Rafael River and numerous prospect holes have been opened. The Salt Wash member also includes numerous fragments of *dinosaur bones* which differ from the dinosaur bones in the overlying beds in that they are smaller.

The presence of shale very different in character from the underlying Navajo beds, and the further presence of a considerable thickness of conglomerate and coarse sandstone indicates that deposition in Salt Wash time took place under conditions entirely different than those prevailing before that time. The evidence indicates that Salt Wash deposition was separated from the Navajo by a time break, and that the contact of the Navajo and McElmo is unconformable.

[24] Lupton, C. T., Oil and gas near Green River, Grand County, Utah, U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 541-D, p. 15, 1914.

A detailed section showing the character of the Salt Wash member of the McElmo is given below.

Section of the Salt Wash sandstone member of the McElmo formation.

On north side of San Rafael River two miles below San Rafael bridge.

1.	Sandstone, coarse-grained, loosely cemented; contains fragments of fossil wood	20′
2.	Shale, green to gray in color and streaked with brown; irregularly bedded; streaked with yellow at top and bottom indicating presence of carnotite	5′
3.	Sandstone, light-colored on fresh fracture, weathering dark brown medium to coarse-grained, loosely cemented, soft, cross-bedded, massive	55′
4.	Shale, variegated light and maroon	17′
5.	Sandstone, light-colored, fine-grained, ledge-making but not as hard as sandstones lower in section	6′
6.	Shale, mostly light-colored but with some maroon, and with one sandstone bed one-half way up which is here 1½ feet thick, but elsewhere 5′ thick	30′
7.	Sandstone, like 9, ledge-making in places	8′
8.	Shale, like that lower in section, mostly maroon	15′
9.	Sandstone, like 11 and 13, somewhat irregularly bedded and streaked with maroon shale	9′
10.	Shale, mostly maroon but with some light colors, and with local sandstone	11′
11.	Sandstone, like 13	3′
12.	Shale, like 14 but with more maroon	9′
13.	Sandstone, nearly white on fresh fracture, weathers light brown, hard, compact, very fine-grained, a single bed with thin laminae	5′
14.	Shale, variegated light green with some maroon and contains some thin sandstone, Base of Salt Wash sandstone member	5′
		198′

Above the Salt Wash member of the McElmo lies a series of variegated clay shales 170 to 200 feet thick, which weather into steep cliffs and are very conspicuous because of their gray, purple, and maroon colors. The shales contain numerous well-polished pebbles ¼ to 2 inches in diameter, resembling gastroliths, which are found in profusion strewing weathered surfaces, and also contain toward the top bones of large dinosaurs. The variegated shales are capped by a bed of coarse sandstone or conglomerate which forms a prominent bench, and above which is a series of coarse sandstones and conglomerates with small amounts of gray or pale-tinted variegated shale. This part of the section is extremely variable in lithology and color but is in general characterized by a predominance of sandstone which, though light on fresh surface, is somber gray or black in color on the weathered face due to desert varnish. The accompanying stratigraphic section gives details of the beds in the McElmo formation above the Salt Wash member.

Section of upper part of the McElmo formation three-fourths mile west of Jesse's Twist in the Greenriver-Hanksville road.

(Measured by Milton Anderson.)

1.	Conglomerate, light-colored, massive, cross-bedded	15′
2.	Shale, light-colored, sandy, containing beds of grayish sandstone	75′
3.	Conglomerate, grayish in general color, but containing well worn, red, blue, black quartz pebbles, loosely cemented, makes a ledge	25′
4.	Shale, grayish purple, containing four thin beds of sandstone and capped by layer of white shale two feet thick	38′
5.	Sandstone, brownish gray in color, in beds 18″ thick alternating with purple and gray shales	15′
6.	Sandstone, brownish gray, coarse-grained, irregularly bedded, ledge maker	20′
7.	Shale, variegated purple, gray, red, containing well-polished pebbles resembling gastroliths, with local thin sandstone beds	170′
	Total	358′

The beds just described and included by Gilbert[25] in the "Flaming Gorge group," were referred to the McElmo by Lupton,[26] who also placed in this formation the underlying Navajo and Todilto. In the present paper these two formations have been referred to the La Plata group of rocks (Jurassic) for reasons already presented. The lower limit of the McElmo (Cretaceous?)

[25] Gilbert, G. K., op. cit.
[26] Lupton, C. T., op. cit.

is placed at the base of the Salt Wash member of this formation because there is at this horizon a distinct lithologic and color break, which with the presence of a thick series of coarse sandstone is indicative of a time break and unconformity. The upper limit of the McElmo is the Dakota sandstone, or Mancos shale where the Dakota is absent. As so defined the McElmo appears to be in accord with the description of the McElmo at the type locality along the creek of that name in southwestern Colorado where it consists principally of marl-like variegated shales.

Dakota Sandstone (Cretaceous).

The Dakota sandstone is exposed near the Greenriver-Hanksville road in the vicinity of Greenriver where it reaches a maximum thickness of about 40 feet but is absent elsewhere in the northern part of Green River Desert. It consists of loosely cemented and friable, coarse sandstone layers and lenticular beds of coarse conglomerate containing rather well rounded translucent, gray, black, and red quartz pebbles. On fresh fracture the color is buff but the rock commonly weathers to a rusty dark brown. No coal was observed in the Dakota in the Greenriver region nor were any fossils collected in the rather cursory examination of the formation, but Richardson[27] who studied the Dakota in this vicinity as well as over a large area to the east and west found characteristic Dakota plants (Cretaceous) in it near Elgin, and therefore has correlated it with the Dakota of the Rocky Mountain region. It is unconformable on the underlying variegated shales and sandstone of the McElmo.

Mancos Shale (Cretaceous).

The Mancos shale overlies the Dakota sandstone and is broadly exposed in the vicinity of Greenriver and along the base of the Book Cliffs for many miles east and west of that town. It comprises a series of rather uniform drab to dark gray clay shales, which are calcareous throughout, in places to such an extent as to be almost limestones. About 200 feet above the base of the formation and forming a prominent escarpment is 15 to 20 feet

[27] Richardson, G. B., Reconnaissance of the Book Cliffs Coal field, U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 371, p. 14, 1909.

of shale more resistant than the rest of the formation and which erodes into small lozenges, steel gray on the weathered face. This together with the tendency of the shale to ring when trod upon leads one to suspect that it may represent the Mowry shale of Wyoming which lies in a somewhat stratigraphically similar position. With this resistant shale are associated, near Tidwell, minor sandstones containing sparsely distributed, small black quartz pebbles with which were found fragments of *Inoceramus* sp. and sharks' teeth belonging to *Lamna* and possibly other genera. The black quartz pebbles suggest that these beds may represent in this region the sandstones of the Frontier formation of Wyoming.

The following species identified by Doctor Stanton as Benton in age were collected from calcareous sandstone nodules in the shale about 50 feet above the base of the formation 3 miles northwest of the Greenriver-Hanksville road:

Gryphaea newberryi Stanton
Plicatula? sp.
Cardium pauperculum Meek
Exogyra suborbiculata Lamarck?
Veniella martoni M. and H.

Gryphaea newberryi Stanton occurs profusely at the very base of the formation and fragments of *Inoceramus* sp. are widely distributed through the lower part of the series.

Richardson, Lupton and others who have studied this shale near Greenriver have correlated it with the Mancos, and fossil evidence amply confirms the correlation. The more resistant band of shale described as lying about 200 feet above the base of the formation is to be correlated I think with the Ferron sandstone member of the Mancos,[28] for although this part of the shale cannot be actually traced into the Ferron east of Greenriver yet the distance between the two outcrops is so small and their stratigraphic position is such that there can be no doubt of the correlation.

[28] Lupton, C. T., op. cit.

Art. XXIV.—*The Law of Dissipation of Motion;* by Ernst Jonson.

In order to explain the physical aspect of the universe it is assumed that matter consists of separate particles tied together by forces in such a manner that when the particles move motion is transmitted from one particle to another. Transmission of motion is mechanically conceivable only if we assume that a force acts on the two particles between which transmission of motion takes place, *i. e.,* when the two particles are the points of application of a force.

When two stars revolve about their common center of gravity there occurs a continuous transmission of motion from each one to the other. Such transmission of motion involves permanent action of force. When a water molecule collides with an iron molecule in the wall of a steam cylinder the resulting transmission of motion is momentary because the force acts only for an instant. The revolution of masses of matter about each other is a comparatively stable condition. Most natural changes evidently are due to transmission of motion through collision. In the mechanics of collision then must be found the final explanation of all those natural phenomena which result from the transmission of molecular energy.

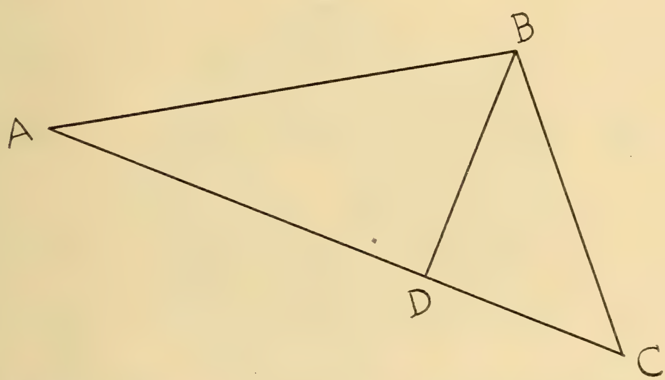
The following derivation of the Law of Dissipation of Motion is a contribution to this branch of mechanics. The chief immediate interest in this law arises from the fact that it explains the Law of Dissipation of Energy by rendering its mode of operation mechanically presentable.

When a collision occurs between two particles and the motions of the colliding particles are not parallel, each motion may be resolved into two perpendicular components in such a way that each component of one motion is parallel with one of the components of the other motion, and so that the two components which have the same direction also have the same size. The momentum AB in figure 1 is resolved into the momenta AD and DB, and the momentum CB into the momenta CD and DB. The two coinciding components of the original motions represent the common motion of the two particles and have therefore nothing to do with the collision. The collision of the two particles results, of course, entirely from their relative motion. This relative motion is represented by the two components AD and CD which are of opposite direction.

The probability that the paths of initial motion of two colliding particles will exactly coincide is zero, because there is an infinity of possible degrees of eccentricity of collision. The actual relative motion of two colliding particles, therefore, must be regarded as eccentric.

When two moving particles collide and thus become the points of application of a force each particle receives from the other an additional momentum of the same numerical magnitude but of opposite direction. If the paths of initial motion of the two particles do not coin-

FIG. 1.

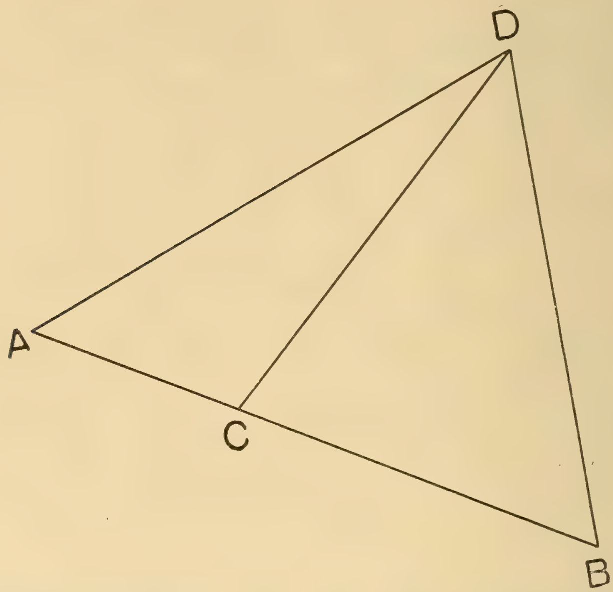


cide these added motions are not parallel with the initial motions, but the added motion is a deflecting motion as indicated in figure 2.

Take two particles with the respective initial momenta AB and BC, each receiving an additional momentum, the momentum BD being added to AB and the momentum DB to BC. If one of the initial momenta, say AB, is greater than the other initial momentum, BC, the difference AC between the two initial momenta is greater than the difference between the two resultant momenta AD and DC. To demonstrate this proposition it is necessary only to consider that since the sum of the lengths of two sides of a triangle is greater than the length of the third side AC plus DC is greater than AD. If DC be deducted from both quantities it is seen that AC is greater than AD minus DC. In other words, the difference between the initial momenta is greater than the difference between the resultant momenta.

The possible relations of magnitude which may exist between AB and BC are infinite. Hence, the probability that these two momenta are equal is one divided by infinity, *i. e.,* zero. In every actual transmission of momentum the initial momenta must be regarded as dif-

FIG. 2.



fering in magnitude, and, as has been previously shown, as not coincident in their paths. Hence, it must be concluded that in every actual transmission of momentum the difference in momentum is decreased, which means that momentum or motion is dissipated. The Law of Dissipation of Motion accordingly may be formulated as follows—every transmission of motion through collision is attended with a dissipation of motion.

Energy has two phases, energy of motion and energy of position. In a collision motion only is transmitted. However it is highly probable that all transmission of molecular energy occurs through a transmission of motion through collision. If this assumption be granted the Law of Dissipation of Energy has been explained mechanically. The foregoing study of the problem of collision makes it clear how energy dissipates itself, and why energy is never concentrated as a result of physical process.

1101 Aeolian Hall, New York City.

Art. XXV.—*An American Occurrence of Periclase and its Bearing on the Origin and History of Calcite-Brucite Rocks;* by Austin F. Rogers.

1. *The Occurrence of Periclase at Riverside, California.*

The rare magnesium-oxide mineral, periclase, not previously known from this country, has recently been recognized in a specimen of crystalline limestone kindly sent to me by Mr. Lazard Cahn of Colorado Springs. This specimen was found by Mr. Cahn at the City quarry in Riverside, California. The limestone is a medium-

Fig. 1.

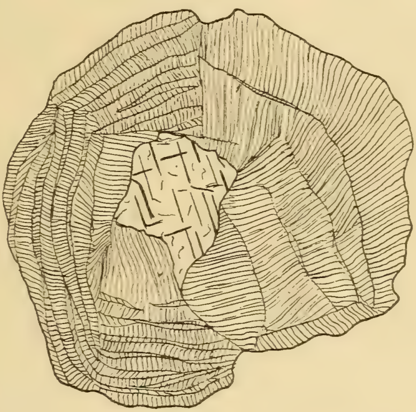


Fig. 1. Thin section (× 18) showing core of periclase within brucite. Riverside, California.

grained rock consisting largely of calcite and dark gray to brown spots of brucite from 1 to 3 mm. in diameter. The periclase occurs as cores of 1 mm. maximum size within some of the brucite spots as shown in fig. 1. The periclase is a colorless mineral with perfect cubic cleavage. Crushed fragments are square or rectangular in shape, dark between crossed nicols and have an index of refraction greater than 1·740. It is soluble in aqua regia and the solution gives a good test for magnesium and a slight test for iron.

Under the microscope the brucite proves to be an aggregate made up of concentric layers with a fibrous structure, the fibers having an elongation parallel to the faster ray. An attempt is made to illustrate this structure in fig. 1. The brucite shows anomalous interference colors, a peculiar reddish-brown hue taking the place of the orange and red of the first order.[1] The indices of refraction determined by imbedding fragments in index liquids were found to be $n_\gamma = 1{\cdot}583 \pm {\cdot}003$, and $n_\alpha = 1{\cdot}567 \pm {\cdot}003$. The brucite is clearly an alteration product of the periclase.

Besides calcite, periclase, and brucite, the other minerals present in the limestone are pyrrhotite, olive-green spinel ($n > 1{\cdot}740$), magnetite, antigorite, and a colorless mineral occurring in rounded grains and subhedral crystals which is identified as a member of the chondrodite group by the indices of refraction $n_\gamma = 1{\cdot}637 \pm {\cdot}003$; $n_\alpha = 1{\cdot}607 \pm {\cdot}003$. These maximum and minimum values of the indices of refraction were determined by the immersion method. A few of the chondrodite crystals show polysynthetic twin lamellæ with a maximum extinction angle of about 30° and this distinguishes it from humite and clinohumite.

This occurrence is interesting not only on account of the presence of periclase but also because of its bearing on the origin and history of calcite-brucite rocks.

2. *The Origin of Calcite-Brucite Rocks.*

Calcite-brucite rocks were first described from Predazzo in Austrian Tyrol under the supposition that they represented a distinct mineral with the composition $CaCO_3.Mg(OH)_2$ which was called predazzite. Damour showed that the predazzite was a mixture of calcite and brucite. His conclusion was accepted until Lenećek[2] in 1891 decided that the mineral associated with the calcite is hydromagnesite instead of brucite and since that time there has been some doubt as to the nature of predazzite.[3]

Besides the Riverside occurrence the writer has studied two other American occurrences of dedolomitized limestones which contain but small amount of silicates and finds brucite to be present in abundance. In one of these occurrences hydromagnesite occurs and the relation of

[1] Weinschenk (Petrographic Methods, translation by Clark, p. 244) speaks of "tombac brown, anomalous interference colors, which indicate a very low double refraction that approximates that of chlorite." The last part of this statement is incorrect, for brucite has fair maximum double refraction, about 0·021. The interference color in a section about 0·032 mm. thick (determined by taking the highest interference color of the chondrodite) reaches as high as blue of the second order.

[2] Min. petr. Mitt., 12, 429-442, 447-456, 1891.

[3] Kemp, for example, in the glossary of his *Handbook of Rocks* says, "It is partly calcite and partly brucite or hydromagnesite."

the brucite to the hydromagnesite could be determined. Fig. 2 shows the general character of the calcite-brucite rocks in thin sections.

3. *Calcite-Brucite Rock from Crestmore, California.*

A white crystalline limestone occurring in contact with granodiorite at the Chino Hill quarry of the Riverside Portland Cement Company at Crestmore, about eight miles from Riverside, California, contains a pale pinkish gray mineral which has been identified as brucite by Eakle.[4] The brucite occurs in crystalline aggregates like those in the Riverside rock just described. The indices of refraction were found to be: $n_\gamma = 1{\cdot}583 \pm {\cdot}003$; $n_\alpha = 1{\cdot}563 \pm {\cdot}003$. The brucite is evidently an alteration product of periclase though no trace of the latter mineral was found. The form of the original periclase has been preserved as rough equant crystals, which are oscillatory combinations of the dodecahedron and octahedron, in habit much like a diamond crystal illustrated by Fersmann and Goldschmidt.[5]

The limestone also contains small amounts of minute colorless, rounded subhedral crystals of chondrodite.[6] They were isolated by dissolving the rock in dilute hydrochloric acid and were identified by the following indices of refraction: $n_\gamma = 1{\cdot}643 \pm {\cdot}003$; $n_\alpha = 1{\cdot}613 \pm {\cdot}003$.

The residue from the hydrochloric acid solution also contains a colorless, optically isotropic mineral in the form of rounded equant subhedral crystals which is probably spinel ($n = 1{\cdot}715 \pm {\cdot}005$)[7] and a few subhedral prismatic crystals of apatite as a nitric acid solution of the rock gives a faint test for the phosphate radical. This mineral is not wilkeite,[8] which is found in the adjoining quarry for no sulphate test was obtained.

On the exterior of some of the limestone specimens the pinkish gray brucite gives place to an opaque white mineral which is identified as hydromagnesite. It is

[4] Eakle, University of California Publications, Bull. Dept. Geol., vol. 10, pp. 327-360, 1917. The analysis gives MgO 67·48, Fe_2O_3 0·55, H_2O 31·73 = 99·76.

[5] Der Diamant, Atlas, Taf. 14, fig. 98, Heidelberg, 1911.

[6] Eakle (loc. cit. p. 333) includes chondrodite in his list of minerals from this locality, but says that there is no well authenticated proof of its existence in the quarries.

[7] Rankin and Merwin (Jour Am. Chem. Soc., 38, 512, 1916) find the index of refraction of pure spinel ($MgAl_2O_4$) to be $1{\cdot}718 \pm {\cdot}002$.

[8] Eakle and Rogers, this Journal, 37, 262-267, 1914.

undoubtedly an alteration product of brucite, for in thin sections it has the same structure as the brucite but can be distinguished from the latter mineral by the fact that the upper first-order interference colors are normal. Its double refraction is about the same as that of brucite but the indices of refraction are less than 1·55.

One specimen showed the result of a still further alteration, that of the hydromagnesite to a weak doubly refracting, though probably amorphous,[9] hydrous magnesium silicate which seems to be deweylite. It is a colorless to pale green, compact mineral with an index of refraction of 1·530 ± ·003.

The portions of limestone containing the deweylite have evidently had a very complicated history. The following are the probable stages through which it has passed:

1. Sedimentary limestone.
2. Dolomitic limestone.
3. Dedolomitized limestone with periclase.
4. Calcite-brucite rock.
5. Calcite-hydromagnesite rock.
6. Calcite-deweylite rock.

This furnishes another illustration of the fact that the minerals of a given rock or mineral deposit are formed in stages one after another. Notwithstanding statements to the contrary the contact-metamorphic deposits form no exception to this general rule. The dedolomitization and the consequent formation of periclase, chondrodite, spinel, and pyrrhotite are the result of high-temperature ascending solutions, presumably emanating from the magma. The minerals just mentioned were probably formed in stages also, but no evidence on this point was obtained.

The Crestmore occurrence is especially interesting because of the later after-effects of contact metamorphism.

The formation of brucite at the expense of periclase is clearly later than the contact metamorphism and is probably due to a hypogene[10] process, for in the Riverside

[9] See paper by the writer on amorphous minerals, Jour. Geol., 25, pp. 515-541, 1917.

[10] This useful term was introduced by Ransome (U. S. Geol. Surv., Bull. 540, pp. 152-3, 1914) for minerals or ores formed by ascending solutions. It and the corresponding term, supergene, used for minerals and ores formed by descending solutions, avoid the ambiguity in the use of the terms primary and secondary.

occurrence secondary magnetite occurs in the brucite aggregates and seems to have been formed in part at least from the iron of the original periclase. Magnetite is a typical hypogene mineral usually formed at comparatively high temperatures and in no known occurrence does it appear to have been formed from descending meteoric waters.

The formation of a mineral containing such a large

Fig. 2.

Fig. 2. Thin section (× 30) of calcite-brucite rock (*b* = brucite, *c* = calcite). Mountain Lake mine, Utah.

percentage of water as brucite (H_2O = 30·8 per cent) by ascending solutions is unusual but not improbable.

Whether the hydromagnesite is a hypogene or supergene mineral is difficult to say. The problem of determining the end of the hypogene stages and the beginning of the supergene is an important one, but very difficult in the present state of our knowledge. All possible data bearing on this problem should be recorded in every description of any kind of a mineral occurrence whether ore-minerals are present or not. It seems reasonable to regard the deweylite as a supergene mineral.

4. *Calcite-Brucite Rock from the Mountain Lake Mine, near Salt Lake City, Utah.*

Another brucite-bearing crystalline limestone from a contact zone at the Mountain Lake mine, near the head of Big Cottonwood Canyon, twenty-five miles southeast of Salt Lake City, Utah, has been studied by the writer. Calcite and brucite are practically the only minerals present. The brucite occurs in subhedral, more or less rounded, equant aggregates which have exactly the same structure as the Riverside and Crestmore specimens and are doubtless pseudomorphous after original periclase. Fig. 2 shows the general character of the rock in thin sections which is almost identical with a predazzite from Fassathal, Tyrol.

5. *Other Occurrences of Calcite-Brucite Rocks in the United States.*

Emmons and Calkins[11] report a crystalline limestone from the Phillipsburg quadrangle, Montana, which contains brucite and which they say is pseudomorphous after some unidentified mineral. The original mineral was probably periclase as they speak of brucite occurring in "aggregates of microscopic fibrous or scaly individuals" and dedolomitized rocks are prominent in the region.

Summary and Conclusions.

1. The first recorded American occurrence of periclase is at Riverside, California, in a crystalline limestone.
2. Calcite-brucite rocks (the so-called predazzite) are formed from periclase-bearing limestones by the alteration of periclase to brucite.
3. The hydration of periclase to form brucite is probably brought about by hydrothermal ascending solutions in spite of the fact that brucite contains about thirty-one per cent of water.
4. At a later stage the brucite may be converted into hydromagnesite, a mineral similar to brucite in general characters and one that may easily be mistaken for brucite.
5. In crystalline limestones as in other rocks and mineral deposits in general the minerals are formed in stages one after another.

Stanford University, California.

[11] U. S. Geol. Surv., Prof. Paper 78, p. 157, 1913.

ART. XXVI.—*On the Preparation of Hypophosphates;* by R. G. VANNAME and WILBERT J. HUFF.

(Contributions from the Kent Chemical Laboratory of Yale Univ.—ccciii.)

Hypophosphoric acid and its salts are usually prepared by the oxidation of yellow phosphorus. This may be accomplished either by the slow action of the air upon sticks of phosphorus partly submerged in water (the original method, due to Salzer[1]), or by the gradual addition of the phosphorus to a warm acid solution of copper nitrate (Corne[2]), or of silver nitrate (Philipp[3]). It may also be prepared by the electrolytic oxidation of copper phosphide used as anode in dilute sulphuric acid (Rosenheim[4]). In all these cases phosphoric and phosphorous acids are formed at the same time, but on converting the three acids into their sodium salts the difficultly soluble, acid sodium hypophosphate, $Na_2H_2P_2O_6.6H_2O$, separates first from the solution, and can be purified by recrystallization. This salt is consequently the usual starting point for the preparation of hypophosphoric acid and its compounds.

The first of the above reactions is the one which has received the most attention, and is the basis of several of the methods described in the literature.[5] Methods of this class are necessarily slow, but have compensating advantages in economy and simplicity of operation, including the advantage that the sodium salt just mentioned, which is generally desired, can be obtained directly, without the need of special treatment to remove copper or silver. This reaction is the one employed in the improved apparatus and procedure which we describe below.

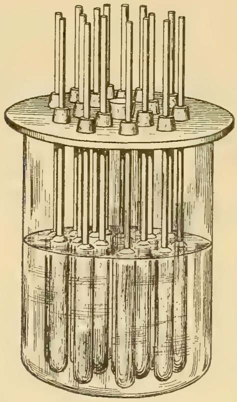
In Salzer's original method the phosphorus was immersed in water or a dilute solution of sodium chloride. In either case the liquid soon becomes strongly acid, and unless the process is interrupted rather frequently for renewal of the liquid and recovery of the hypophosphoric acid already formed, some of the acid is likely to be lost

[1] Ann. Chem., 211, 1, 1882.
[2] Jour. Phar. et Chim., (5) 6, 123, 1882.
[3] Ber. chem. Ges., 16, 749, 1883.
[4] Ber. chem. Ges., 43, 2003, 1910.
[5] Salzer, loc. cit.; Bansa, Zs. anorg. chem., 6, 128, 1894; Cavalier and Cornec, Bull. Soc. Chim., (4) 5, 1058, 1909.

by hydrolytic decomposition.[6] Drawe[7] introduced an important improvement by substituting for the water a 25 per cent solution of sodium acetate. This expedient, by keeping the concentration of hydrogen ion low, greatly diminishes the rate of decomposition, so that frequent removal of the liquid is unnecessary, and the care of the apparatus is materially simplified. Still better results, as our own experiments have demonstrated, can be obtained by the use of a solution of sodium carbonate.

Our apparatus, which is a modification of that of Bansa,[8] is shown in the accompanying figure. It consists

Fig. 1.



of a cylindrical glass jar, conveniently about 5 inches in diameter by 7 inches in height, provided with a flanged cover of plaster of Paris, cast to shape. The phosphorus, in the form of cylindrical sticks, twenty or more in number, is suspended in the liquid by glass rods, which pass through holes drilled at regular intervals in the cover and are held at the proper height by corks on the projecting ends. The fit of the rods in the holes is close enough to prevent swinging. Each rod has a small knob or enlargement at the lower end, and extends through the whole length of the stick of phosphorus which it supports. It is imbedded in the phosphorus by melting the latter in

[6] For measurements of the rate of this hydrolysis see Van Name and Huff, this Journal, **45**, 103, 1918.

[7] Ber. chem. Ges., **21**, 3401, 1888.

[8] Zs. anorg. chem., **6**, 128, 1894.

a test tube submerged in warm water, inserting the rod until its knob rests on the bottom of the tube, and finally transferring the whole to a jar of cold water, taking care to hold the rod in the center of the phosphorus until the latter has hardened. When completely cooled the stick of phosphorus is drawn out of the tube by a pull on the imbedded glass rod. In our work the sticks of phosphorus were about 3·5 inches long by 0·65 inch in diameter.

The jar is charged with about a liter of water and any convenient amount of sodium carbonate, usually about 250 grams. It is immaterial whether the salt is in solution or not. The cover and suspended sticks of phosphorus are then put in place, and the corks adjusted so that less than one centimeter of each stick projects from the liquid. As the exposed area of the phosphorus gradually becomes reduced by oxidation and solution this adjustment has to be repeated, ordinarily at intervals of two or three days. Control over the rate of the reaction is maintained by regulating the access of air to the interior of the jar. Several extra holes in the cover are provided for this purpose and these are partly closed with stoppers to the extent necessary to give a satisfactory rate. Too high a rate is apt to result in spontaneous ignition and consequent melting of the exposed portion of some of the sticks. The apparatus should be set up in some cool place, such as a cellar, and shielded from drafts, which have a tendency to accelerate the reaction. A convenient way of protecting the apparatus against drafts and accidents is to cover it with a large bell jar, taking care to leave a small opening for the entrance of air.

As the oxidation proceeds any sodium carbonate which was still undissolved at the start passes gradually into solution and the alkalinity steadily decreases. From time to time samples of the liquid are withdrawn with a pipette (inserted through a special hole, usually kept stoppered, in the center of the cover) and tested with Congo Red.[9] When the turning point of this indicator is reached, the cover and suspended sticks of phosphorus are simply transferred to another jar of the same size,

[9] Methyl Orange may be used instead of Congo Red. The hydrogen-ion concentration of a pure solution of acid sodium hypophosphate is slightly nearer to the turning point of Congo Red than to that of Methyl Orange, but it is doubtful whether this difference is of any importance here.

previously charged with water and sodium carbonate, thus making the process continuous. The product, acid sodium hypophosphate, is found in part as a crystalline precipitate in the first jar; the rest is recovered by concentrating the mother liquor. It is purified from accompanying phosphates and phosphites by simple recrystallization from hot water.

This form of apparatus requires the minimum of attention, and all the manipulations and adjustments are very easily made. Moreover, the sodium carbonate solution has distinct advantages over the sodium acetate which has been generally used in methods of this class hitherto. The alkalinity of the carbonate solution prevents hydrolysis, and the proper point for renewing the solution can be determined by a simple and easy test. The carbonate is also more economical, not only on account of its cheapness, but also because it eliminates waste. No more of the salt is used than is actually required to react with the phosphorus oxy-acids, while with sodium acetate, which liberates acetic acid, the lack of any convenient method for determining the end point makes it easy to err, either by deferring the renewal of the solution too long, thus permitting excessive acidity to develop, with consequent loss of hypophosphate, or by interrupting the action too soon, which results in the loss of the unused excess of the sodium acetate.

In our experiments the room temperature ranged between 10° and 15° C. and the yields between 10 and 16 per cent of the theory. No marked relation between the average temperature and the magnitude of the yield was observed. A charge of 250 grams of anhydrous sodium carbonate lasted, as a rule, for a period of seven to ten days; the complete oxidation of the sticks of phosphorus required, on an average, eight or nine weeks.

ART. XXVII.—*Origin of the Western Phosphates of the United States;* by GEORGE R. MANSFIELD.[1]

The Western phosphate field occupies extensive areas in northeastern Utah, southeastern Idaho, southwestern Montana, and western Wyoming. Adams and Dick[2] have reported the discovery in Alberta of phosphate deposits similar to those in the states named. The phosphate rock occurs in mountainous districts where the stratified rocks are folded and faulted on both a large and a small scale and are greatly eroded. The phosphate beds may be regarded as having been formerly more or less continuous throughout the territory mentioned but the agencies of mountain building and erosion have separated the region into large and small phosphate-bearing areas of generally synclinal structure, between which the phosphate has either been removed or carried so far below the surface that it cannot be considered workable.

Detailed studies by members of the U. S. Geological Survey, Department of the Interior, in parts of the Western field have led to the establishment of great phosphate reserves aggregating more than 2,600,000 acres of public land which are estimated to contain more than 5,290,000,000 long tons of relatively high-grade phosphate rock. When these studies, which are only partial, have been completed it is probable that both acreage and tonnage figures will be considerably increased.

Phosphate deposits have been identified at two geological horizons, of upper Mississippian and Permian age respectively, but the upper Mississippian deposits, so far as known, are inferior in quality to the Permian deposits and far less extensive. The remarks which follow on the origin of the deposits have been prepared with special reference to the Permian deposits but it is thought that with some modifications they will apply also to the upper Mississippian deposits.

The origin of the Western phosphate deposits has an important commercial bearing, for if they were residual like those of the brown rock of Tennessee, or of second-

[1] Published by permission of the Director of the U. S. Geological Survey.

[2] Adams, F. D., and Dick, W. J., Discovery of phosphate of lime in the Rocky Mountains, Commission of Conservation, Canada, Ottawa, 1915.

ary origin, they might be expected to pass at comparatively shallow depths into unleached low grade phosphate or even into phosphatic limestones. Thus the valuable deposits would be limited to a comparatively short distance from the outcrop and the great body of rock under cover in the synclines would be valueless. Probably absolute certainty on this point cannot be reached without deep drilling. On the other hand the phosphate beds have been observed in many parts of the region and under many conditions by a number of geologists and everywhere they appear to be true bedded deposits analogous to coal or limestone, retaining their thickness and quality over wide areas. For these reasons they are regarded as original sedimentary deposits and it is considered probable that they maintain at depth the characteristics displayed at the surface. Upon this assumption rest the estimates given for the Western field.

The sources of the phosphoric acid and the methods of accumulation are to a considerable degree subjects of speculation, but it will perhaps be helpful to summarize opinions thus far advanced and to indicate the probable direction of solution of the problems involved.

The first detailed accounts of the Western phosphates are contained in papers of Gale and Richards[3] and Blackwelder.[4] These authors regard the phosphates as original marine sedimentary deposits and the first two give a very brief summary of the hitherto recognized sources of phosphorus and the means of its accumulation as phosphates[5] through the agency of organic and physico-chemical processes. Because of the relative scarcity of organic remains in the actual phosphate beds, Richards and Mansfield[6] were inclined to place greater emphasis on physico-chemical than on organic sources and agencies.

Blackwelder has contributed two important later papers. In the first[7] he gives an interesting and sugges-

[3] Gale, H. S., and Richards, R. W., Preliminary report on the phosphate deposits in southeastern Idaho and adjacent parts of Wyoming and Utah, U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 430, pp. 457-535, 1910.

[4] Blackwelder, Eliot, Phosphate deposits east of Ogden, Utah, U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 430, pp. 536-551, 1910.

[5] Gale, H. S., and Richards, R. W., op. cit., pp. 461-462.

[6] Richards, R. W., and Mansfield, G. R., Preliminary report on a portion of the Idaho phosphate reserve, U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 470, pp. 376-377, 1911.

——— ——— Geology of the phosphate deposits northeast of Georgetown, Idaho, U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 577, p. 74, 1914.

[7] Blackwelder, Eliot, The geologic role of phosphorus, this Journal, vol. 42, pp. 285-298, 1916.

tive account of the cycle of changes undergone by phosphorus from apatites through solution, assimilation by plants or animals, deposition on sea bottom or on land, accumulation into deposits, burial, deformation, and metamorphism back to apatites again. Many subcycles are included and individual atoms of phosphorus may have had widely different histories. In the second[8] he gives in abbreviated form, as derived from available literature, a view of organic accumulation, which is substantially repeated here for reference. In the ocean special conditions of currents, temperature, etc., not yet understood, may have induced wholesale killing of animals over large areas and accumulation of putrefying matter on the sea floor in moderate and shallow depths. Decomposition through the agency of bacteria produced ammoniacal solutions which dissolved the solid calcium phosphate in bones, teeth, brachiopod shells, and tissues. Putrefactive conditions also prevented the existence of organisms attached to the bottom and most calcareous shells descending from the surface were probably dissolved by the abundant carbonic acid arising from decay. For physico-chemical reasons, already partly understood, the phosphatic material was quickly redeposited in the form of hydrous calcium carbo-phosphates, locally filling, incrusting, and replacing shells, teeth, bones, etc., but especially forming small rounded granules of colophanite and finally a phosphatic cement among all particles. The granular texture is ascribed chiefly to physico-chemical conditions, such as result in oolitic greenalite, limonite, aragonite, etc. After having been formed in quiet water some of the granules were reached by bottom-scouring currents and incorporated in clastic deposits and in some instances were strewn over eroded rock surfaces and so became constituents of basal conglomerates.

The latest contributor to the origin of the Western phosphates is Pardee,[9] who is inclined to look with disfavor upon the view that unusual or abundant sources supplied phosphates rapidly to the sea. He points to the existence of glacial conditions elsewhere in Permian times, and suggests that cool temperatures may have prevailed during the deposition of the Western phosphates.

[8] Blackwelder, Eliot, Origin of the Rocky Mountain phosphate deposits, Bull. Geol. Soc. America, vol. 26, pp. 100-101, 1915. (Abstract.)

[9] Pardee, J. T., The Garrison and Philipsburg phosphate fields, Montana, U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 640, pp. 225-228, 1917.

Carbon dioxide (CO_2) is retained most abundantly by waters of low temperature and this gas is supplied not only from atmospheric sources but also from organic subtances that decompose in sea water or on the sea floor. Conditions would thus be unfavorable for the growth of coralline limestone or for the chemical precipitation of lime. Moreover, in such waters calcareous objects would tend to be dissolved and the formation of limestones composed of shells and skeletons of marine organisms would be hindered. But if the precipitation of phosphate was not checked that material would accumulate in relatively pure form. The great volume of the deposit (see tonnage estimates) needs no further explanation than the continued or extensive application of the process that initiated the formation of the phosphate.

The Western phosphates are agreed by all who have seen them in the field to be original marine deposits, analogous to those of Tunis, Algeria, England,[10] and to the blue phosphates of Tennessee. The physiographic conditions of their deposition are little known but there are at least six lines of evidence which throw light upon the problem, and from which it may be possible to deduce a working hypothesis.

(1) The Fauna, according to Girty,[11] is quite different from Carboniferous faunas of the Mississippi Valley and even among western faunas has an extremely individual and novel facies. Thus the area of deposition, though of great extent, must have been separated from the main ocean or was more or less restricted.

(2) Analyses of higher grade phosphate rock such as constitutes the main bed show generally less than 12 per cent SiO_2, Al_2O_3, Fe_2O_3, and MgO, all added together.[12] Silica constitutes the greater part of this percentage and some of this may be of organic origin. It thus appears that detrital material from the land is largely absent from the deposit. This condition may be explained in several ways: (*a*) the deposit may have been laid in relatively deep water, like some of the modern oozes; or (*b*) the water of deposition, though shallow, may have been too far from land to receive much detritus from that

[10] Blackwelder, Eliot, op. cit., p. 294.

[11] Girty, G. H., The fauna of the phosphate beds of the Park City formation in Idaho, Wyoming, and Utah, U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 436, p. 8, 1910.

[12] Gale, H. S., and Richards, R. W., op. cit., p. 465.

source; or (*c*) the lands adjacent to the waters of deposition were so low, through base leveling or otherwise, that they furnished little clastic material to the sea; or (*d*) following an earlier suggestion of Hayes.[13] strong marine currents may have swept away the fine terrigenous material, leaving only the phosphatic oolites. The physiographic conditions changed from time to time during the deposition of the phosphatic shales, for beds of shale, sandstone, and limestone, some of which are more or less phosphatic, are interbedded with the more nearly pure phosphate.

(3) The period of deposition may have been long. The time required for the deposition of the phosphate beds and the accompanying Permian strata is not known but some data permit suggestive comparisons. It has been stated that there is at least local unconformity at the base of the Phosphoria formation. This is not, however, regarded as indicating any great time interval. The top of the formation may also mark a disconformity and the faunal change above is very pronounced. The time interval here may be large but on the other hand the faunal change may have been produced by the geographic changes of the late Permian or early Mesozoic without greater lapse of time here than elsewhere. The phosphatic shales, with which are grouped some non-phosphatic or lean shales, sandstones and limestones, are about 150 feet thick, and of this thickness the actual beds of phosphate rock form only a small proportion. The Phosphoria formation as a whole, representing all the known Permian of the region, is about 500 feet thick. The Permian section in Kansas, according to Prosser,[14] is about 2,000 feet thick; in Texas the Permian formations are reported as 5,000 feet thick[15] and in Oklahoma as 2,600 feet thick.[16] If these various deposits may be regarded as occupying time intervals at all similar, it is obvious that the deposition of the Phosphoria formation of Idaho was at a much slower rate than the accumulation

[13] Hayes, C. W., Tennessee phosphates, U. S. Geol. Survey, Seventeenth Ann. Rept., pt. 2, p. 534, 1896.

[14] Prosser, C. S., Revised classification of the upper Paleozoic formations of Kansas, Jour. Geology, vol. 10, pp. 703-737, 1902.

[15] Cummins, W. F., Report on the geology of northwestern Texas, Geol. Survey Texas, Second Ann. Rept., pp. 359-552 (p. 398), 1891.

[16] Beede, J. W., Invertebrate paleontology of the upper Permian red beds of Oklahoma and the Panhandle of Texas, Kansas Univ. Sci. Bull., vol. 4, No. 3, pp. 113-171 (p. 136), 1907.

of Permian strata in the regions named farther east. It seems at least reasonable, therefore, to attribute the thickness and richness of the phosphatic strata to long-continued, slow deposition under conditions which excluded for considerable intervals of time the accumulation of terrigenous material and of carbonate of lime.

(4) The ordinary processes of bacterial decay give rise to ammonium phosphate which, according to Clarke,[17] has been experimentally shown to react upon mineral substances in such manner as to produce phosphates resembling those actually found. Blackwelder[18] states that such experiments have been carried out by several investigators and that the conditions are such as may readily occur on the sea bottom where organic decomposition is in progress. Thus calcareous shells become phosphatized and even such organic material as excretory pellets and bits of wood are known to have been altered in the same way. Bones which initially contained about 58 per cent of tricalcium phosphate have their organic matter replaced by phosphatic minerals, thus raising the ratio to 85 per cent or more.

(5) The oolitic texture so characteristic of much of the Western phosphate is doubtless closely connected with the origin of the rock. In a well presented discussion of the origin of oolites Brown[19] concludes that the older oolitic beds of Pennsylvania were probably all originally laid down as beds of calcareous oolites composed of the mineral aragonite. This mineral being unstable under ordinary rock-forming conditions soon began to change. Where solutions carrying other substances such as silica or iron were present the oolites were more or less completely replaced, as in the case of the siliceous oolites or of the Clinton iron ore.

(6) Calcareous oolites are now forming at a number of places, notably in the region of the Florida keys and the Bahamas, where they have been studied by Drew[20] and

[17] Clarke, F. W., The data of geochemistry, 3d ed., U. S. Geol. Survey, Bull. 616, p. 523, 1916.

[18] Blackwelder, Eliot, this Jour., vol. 42 (see above), p. 294.

[19] Brown, T. C., Origin of oolites and the oolitic texture in rocks, Geol. Soc. America Bull., vol. 25, pp. 745-780, pls. 26-28, 1914.

[20] Drew, G. H., On the precipitation of calcium carbonate in the sea by marine bacteria, and on the action of denitrifying bacteria in tropical and temperate seas, Carnegie Inst., Washington, Pub. 182. Papers from the Tortugas laboratory, vol. 5, pp. 9-53, 1914.

Vaughan.[21] Drew has shown that in these regions denitrifying bacteria are very active and are precipitating enormous quantities of calcium carbonate largely in the form of aragonite. Vaughan shows that this chemically precipitated calcium carbonate forms spherulites or small balls, which, by accretion, may become oolitic grains of the usual size, or it may accumulate around a variety of nuclei to build such grains. He reaches the deduction that all marine oolites originally composed of calcium carbonate, of whatever geologic age, may confidently be attributed to this process. Drew's studies of the distribution of denitrifying bacteria have shown them to be most prevalent in the shoal waters of the tropics. Combining the results of Drew and Murray, Vaughan considers that great limestone formations, whether composed of organic or chemically precipitated calcium carbonate, were laid down in waters of which at least the surface temperatures were warm if not actually tropical.

Among the deductions from the above data which may serve as a tentative working hypothesis for the origin of the Western phosphates may be mentioned the following:

1. The phosphatic oolites and their matrix were probably deposited originally as carbonate of lime in the form of aragonite.

2. The waters were probably shoal and of warm or moderate rather than of cold temperature.

3. The lands bordering the depositional area were low and furnished little sediment to the sea. Thus far the supposed depositional conditions agree with known modern conditions in the Florida region.

4. The phosphatization of the oolitic deposit was probably subsequent to its deposition rather than coincident with it, for Drew shows that the activities of denitrifying bacteria reduce the nitrate content of the sea water and hence the growth of marine plants and of animals dependent upon them. Such conditions are favorable for the deposition of the carbonate but not of the phosphate of lime.

5. Cooler temperature in the waters of deposition, perhaps induced by changes in the character or direction

[21] Vaughan, T. W., Preliminary remarks on the geology of the Bahamas, with special reference to the origin of the Bahaman and Floridian oolites, Carnegie Inst. Washington, Pub. 182. Papers from the Tortugas laboratory, vol. 5, pp. 47-54, 1914.

of marine currents, checked the activities of the denitrifying bacteria and hence the conditions favorable for the formation of oolitic limestone. At the same time plant and animal life increased in the waters and furnished the decaying matter necessary for the phosphatization of the oolitic limestone in the general manner set forth in Blackwelder's account given above. Perhaps Pardee's idea of glacial climate may have a bearing in this connection.

6. The temperature change may have been sufficiently abrupt to cause the wholesale killing of certain marine animals, as suggested in Blackwelder's account. This would supply material for a fairly rapid phosphatization of the oolitic limestone. Such an assumption, however, is not compulsory because the phosphatic shales as a whole were doubtless formed slowly and there was time for sufficient accumulation and trituration of organic remains to produce the observed phosphatization before the moderate crustal changes that permitted the introduction of the clastic material that buried the phosphate bed.

7. The conditions set forth above, which were outlined particularly with reference to the main phosphate bed, probably were repeated on a less extensive scale for the lesser beds. Shaly partings or minor shale beds in the phosphate might be explained as the result of occasional seaward drift of land-derived silts after some unusual or protracted storm.

8. The sea in which the phosphate was deposited was closed off on the east, south and west, but may have had connections with the ocean northward and northwestward, for Girty[22] notes faunal resemblances traceable into Alaska, Asia, and eastern Europe, and Adams and Dick[23] report the discovery of phosphate at apparently the same horizon in Alberta.

[22] Girty, G. H., op. cit., p. 9.

[23] Adams, F. D., and Dick, W. J., Discovery of phosphate of lime in the Rocky Mountains, Commission of Conservation, Canada, Ottawa, 1915.

ART. XXVIII.—*The Dustfall of March 9, 1918;* by A. N. WINCHELL and E. R. MILLER.

Some of the snow which fell at Madison, Wisconsin, on March 9, 1918, contained sufficient foreign material to change its color from white to a light brown or yellow. It was observed under conditions which permitted a close study and the collection of some evidence and data regarding the material. It is the object of this note to put these data on record, and to discuss the quantity, nature, and probable source of the coloring matter.

The colored snow came down at Madison in the form of moist snow mixed with sleet, during the passage of an unusually intense and fast moving cyclonic disturbance. It fell from 11:30 A. M. to 2:30 P. M., 90th meridian time, but the proportion of coloring matter is believed to have been greater toward the end than at the beginning. The moist snow and sleet were preceded by rain, from 9:30 A. M. to 11:30 A. M., which froze as it fell, and remained as a sheet of ice about 5/8 inch thick on trees, wires, etc. The moist snow and sleet were followed by dry snow from 2:30 P. M. to 9:30 P. M. Neither the ice nor the dry snow contained an appreciable amount of coloring matter.

At the time of the storm the snow and sleet were observed to have a light reddish brown color, not only by the Weather Bureau observers, but also by others, some of whom called upon the Weather Bureau office for an explanation of the "dirty snow" while it was yet falling. The discoloration was still more easily seen after the pure white dry snow had begun falling and drifting into the depressions in the darker layer. On the second day following, when the snow began melting the dust was left on top of the snow.

Area of fall.—The evidence obtained as to the area covered by the dusty snow fall is admittedly incomplete and inconclusive. Inquiries were sent immediately after the fall to a number of Weather Bureau officials in cities. The replies from most of these indicated that the contamination of the snow by city smoke, dust, and ashes had precluded any possibility of recognizing the colored snow. Only Mr. J. H. Spencer at Dubuque, Iowa, and

Mr. W. J. Schnurbusch at Grand Haven, Mich., had noticed the peculiar character of the snow.

Inquiries were then sent to coöperative observers of the Weather Bureau in places remote from cities, from Wisconsin, eastward to Maine. The snow unfortunately had disappeared at many of these places by the time of the receipt of the inquiry, and only one-third of those to whom the inquiry was sent had noticed the phenomenon.

Fig. 1.

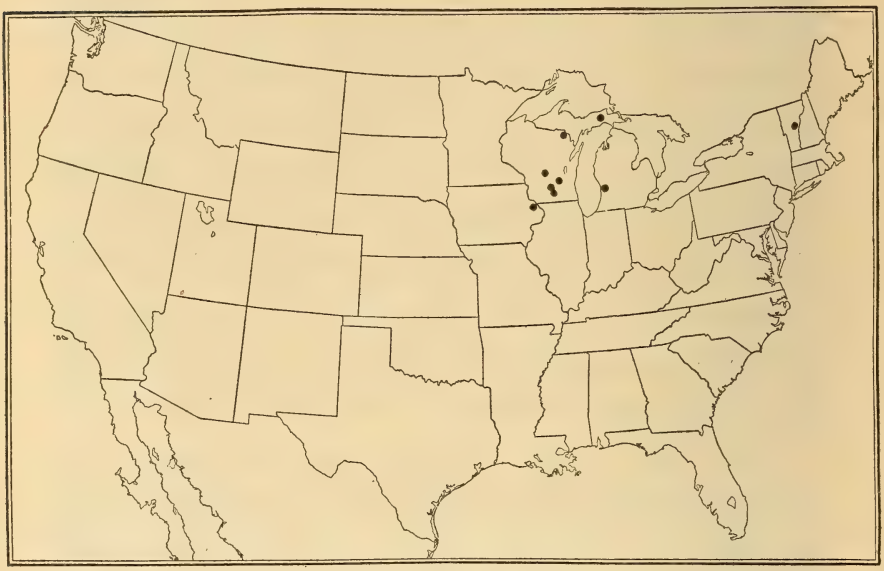


Fig. 1. Localities where dustfalls were observed, storm of March 7-10, 1918.

These observers were J. H. Martin, Portage, Wis., F. B. Hamilton, Hancock, Wis., J. Parkinson, Montello, Wis., Lewis Evans, Florence, Wis., John Brown, Newberry, in upper Michigan, and W. F. Dewey, Chelsea, Vt. The location of these points, where dust was observed, is indicated by dots on the outline map (fig. 1).

Nature of the coloring matter.—A microscopic study of the coloring matter separated from the melted snow shows that it consists chiefly of inorganic substances, but contains also some plant tissue. All of the material is in the form of very fine particles, so that it forms a dust when dry. The following minerals have been recognized: feldspar, quartz, opal, limonite, hematite, hornblende calcite, mica, magnetite, apatite, tourmaline, zircon. There is also some cloud-like material which may

Fig. 2.

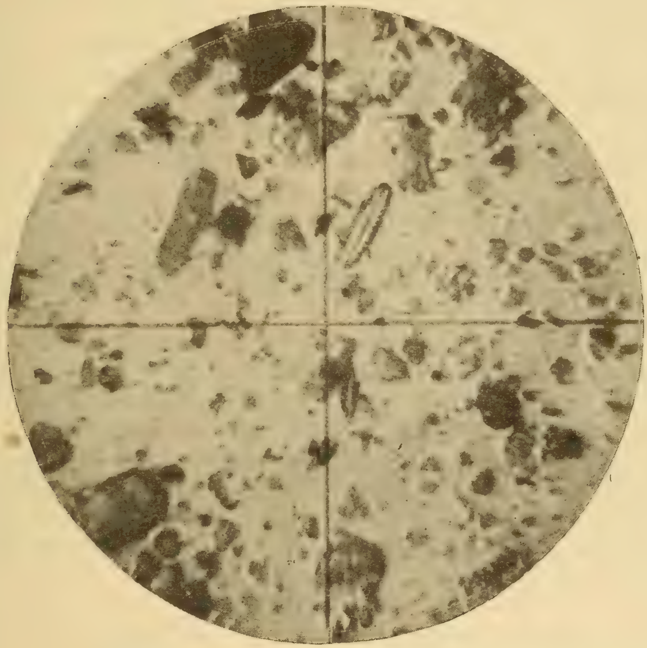


Fig. 2. Photomicrograph of dust from the dustfall at Madison, 9 March, 1918, showing one of the diatoms. Magnified 360 diameters.

be kaolin. From Rosiwal measurements[1] the proportion of the chief constituents has been estimated to be:

Feldspar and quartz 65 to 75%.
Amorphous material, including limonite, hematite, kaolin, opal, etc. 20 to 30%.
All other constituents $\pm$ 5%.

The feldspar fragments are remarkable on account of the fact that they show no alteration whatever; they are as glassy clear as is the quartz. Both the quartz and feldspar are stained by limonite and hematite, and this condition seems to pervade the fragments so thoroughly

[1] A. Rosiwal, Ueber geometrische Gesteinsanalyzen, Verh. k. k. Reichsanstalt, Vienna, 1898, p. 143.

as to indicate that it is a condition of long standing. The feldspar shows no twinning and much of it is probably orthoclase, but other feldspars are not excluded. Calcite, hornblende, mica, etc., are present in very small amount. Magnetite particles were discovered by using a magnet.

In addition to the minerals and organic material, this snow dust contains a considerable number of diatoms, one of which is shown in the photomicrograph (fig. 2). There seems to be more than one kind of diatom present, and the sizes vary, but the usual size in this dust is 0·006 to 0·01 mm. in width and 0·02 to 0·035 mm. in length. They are roughly cigar-shaped and so small that it would require 750 laid end to end to measure one inch, and more than three billions to fill one cubic inch. The portion of the diatom found in the dust is the test, which is composed of hydrous silica, or opal, and has various very regular markings over its surface.

Microscopic measurements of the size of the dust particles show that they range from about 0·003 mm. to about 0·1 mm., but a surprisingly large percentage falls within much narrower limits, namely 0·008 to 0·025 mm.

At our request, a mechanical analysis of the material was made by Professor H. W. Stewart of the Soils Department of the University of Wisconsin. He reports that the water-free weight of the sample used was 1·8268 grams, and that it yielded the following:

Separates.	Size.	Weight Grams.	Per cent.
Clay	Less than ·005 mm.	0·2046	11·145
Fine silt	·005 to ·010	0·4020	22·005
Medium silt	·010 to ·025	1·0261	56·169
Coarse silt	·025 to ·050	0·1094	5·988
Very fine sand	·05 to ·10	0·0222	1·215
Fine sand	·10 to ·25	0·0189	1·035
Medium sand	·25 to ·50	0·0106	0·580
Coarse sand	·50 to 1·00	0·0053	0·290
Fine gravel	1·00 to 2·00	0·0197	1·078
	Total	1·8188	99·504

Professor Stewart reports also that the organic constituents were allowed to distribute themselves wherever they would among the separates, with the result that much, if not all of the four largest sizes consist of organic material, and the very fine sand includes both organic and inorganic matter.

The organic constituents were so obviously plant tissue that they were submitted to Professor R. H. Denniston of the Department of Botany, who reports that they include fragments of blades of grass, of leaves of clover or some similar legume, fibers of cotton, and fragments of coniferous wood, all more or less decayed, as shown by the presence of saprophytic fungi and their spores. The only inorganic material in the so-called "gravel" consists of white particles which effervesce with acetic acid; it is therefore a carbonate.

An attempt was made to separate the constituents of the dust by means of a heavy solution of potassium mercuric iodide. Most of the material sank in a liquid of specific gravity of 2·3, but the material still floating contained the same materials as the part which sank. A portion of the dust separated by mechanical analysis to the size 0·010 to 0·025 mm. was tested in the same way. Practically all of it floated at 2·7, less than one quarter of it sank at 2·6; again the two parts contained the same materials; the heavier seemed to contain less limonite stain than the other. It seems probable that submicroscopic porosity modifies considerably the apparent specific gravity of much of the dust.

It will be useful to compare the results of the mechanical analysis of this dust with similar analyses of soils, volcanic dust, atmospheric dust, as shown in the following table (p. 604).

This comparison shows that the Madison dust has two peculiarities, namely, it is finer than the other dusts and it contains a large percentage within a small range of sizes. Some soils contain much larger amounts of clayey material (smaller than ·005 mm.) than the Madison material, but a hasty search of the literature makes it clear that few, if any, soils contain as much silt; on the other hand shower and volcanic dust contains much less clay than the Madison dust. This may be explained as due to the fact that shower and volcanic dusts fall wholly through the action of gravity, while the Madison dust was brought down not by its own weight, but by the weight of the snow or rain condensed upon it.

Size	1	2	3	Size	4	5
·005 mm.	11·15	17·8	11·3	·004– ·008	1·5	
·005– ·010	22·01			·008– ·016	14·1	·7
.010– ·025	56·17	65·8	74·1	·016– ·032	36·2	5·2
·025– ·050	5·99			·032– ·125	31·5	42·0
·05 – ·10	1·22	14·0	13·2	·063– ·125	7·8	42·0
·10 – ·25	1·04	1·5	·8	·125– ·250	5·5	10·0
·25 – ·50	·58	0·2	·3	·25 – ·50	3·0	tr
·5 –1·0	·29	1·0	·2	·5 –1·0	·2	....
1·0 –2·0	1·08	0·0	·0	1·0 –2·0	....	....
	99·53	100·3	99·9		100·0	99·9

1. Dust from snow fall at Madison, Wis., March 9, 1918.
2. Soil, Hays, Kansas, which is subject to blowing. E. E. Free. ''The Movement of Soil Material by the Wind, U. S. Bur. Soils, Bulletin **68**, page 168, 1911.
3. Silt loam soil (''Waukesha'') from valley loess, Douglas Co., Neb., A. H. Meyer, et al., U. S. Bur. Soils, 15th Rept., p. 1994, 1913.
4. Dust from dust shower, Chicago, Ill., Feb., 1896. J. A. Udden, The Mechanical Composition of Wind Deposits, Augustana Libr. Pub. **1**, p. 55, 1898.
5. Volcanic dust which fell on snow in Norway after a recent eruption in Iceland. J. A. Udden, *l. c.*, p. 36.

No explanation is offered here for the small range of sizes within which such a large part of the Madison dust is included, other than the remarkable sorting power of the wind; perhaps this is a sufficient explanation even as compared with the shower and volcanic dust, if the smaller size of the Madison dust is remembered.

Quantity of the dust.—Several samples of the dust were obtained at Madison. Professor W. H. Twenhofel collected the yellow snow from one measured square yard of surface; A. N. Winchell obtained another sample amounting to 5½ liters of snow water, while smaller amounts were gathered by E. R. Miller and W. J. Mead. The residue left after evaporating the colored snow obtained from one square yard of surface weighed four grams, while the sample of 5½ liters of snow water yielded 5·2 grams of residue which settled to the bottom, as well as ·15 grams of black material, which floated at the surface or in the liquid. These two determinations are mutually corroborative since the second sample was obtained from somewhat more than one square yard of surface. They indicate that the residue amounted to 4·8 grams per square meter, or 4800 kilograms per square kilometer; in more familiar units, this amounts to more than 13·5 tons per square mile. Observers of the U. S. Weather Bureau, quoted above, report that this colored snow fell at least from Dubuque, Iowa, to Chelsea, Vermont, in an east-west direction, and from Madison, Wisconsin, to Newberry, Michigan, in a north-south direction. This is about 900 miles east and west, and 300 miles north and south as shown by the map, fig. 1, on which the localities are indicated at which the discolored snow was observed. It covered an area of at least one hundred thousand square miles and probably much more. Therefore, the total quantity of dust may be estimated as at least a million tons, and probably considerably more. In fact, it seems likely that the material was brought down throughout the area covered by this snow storm, and in that case, the quantity deposited would run into the tens or hundreds of millions of tons.

Origin of the dust.—While the meteorological data do not afford evidence as to the exact locality from which the dust came that was deposited at Madison, yet the possible field may be limited very materially by appealing to them.

The winds near the ground can be eliminated at once, first, because the dust was brought down by sleet, which is known to be frozen rain, that is to say, rain formed in an upper, warmer, stratum, falls through a cold lower stratum and is frozen in it; and second, because the lower wind, traced back along its course, is found to have come from the northeast, blowing only over snow-covered ground, and the waters of Lake Michigan, during the time that it was under the influence of the storm, so that it could not have blown up soil or sand.

In dealing with upper air currents, say from 500 to 2000 meters above the ground, it is usually assumed by meteorologists, that the velocity is determined by the distribution of pressure as observed with barometers at the surface, and that the direction is along the momentary direction of the isobar. The velocity of the wind has been shown by Shaw[2] to be a resultant of the gradient velocity and the storm movement in only certain types of storms, but for the sake of simplicity in obtaining a first approximation, these conditions have been assumed in this case.

[2] Revolving fluid in the atmosphere, Proc. Roy. Soc., Lond., ser. A, 94, p. 34-52.

Various formulas, and tables for obtaining the gradient velocity have been given by Shaw, Gold, Patterson, and Humphreys. The revised nomogram of Humphreys[3] has been used in obtaining the trajectories marked A and B in fig. 3, for the dust-bearing upper currents that arrived at Madison at the beginning and end of the observed time of the dustfall.

FIG. 3.

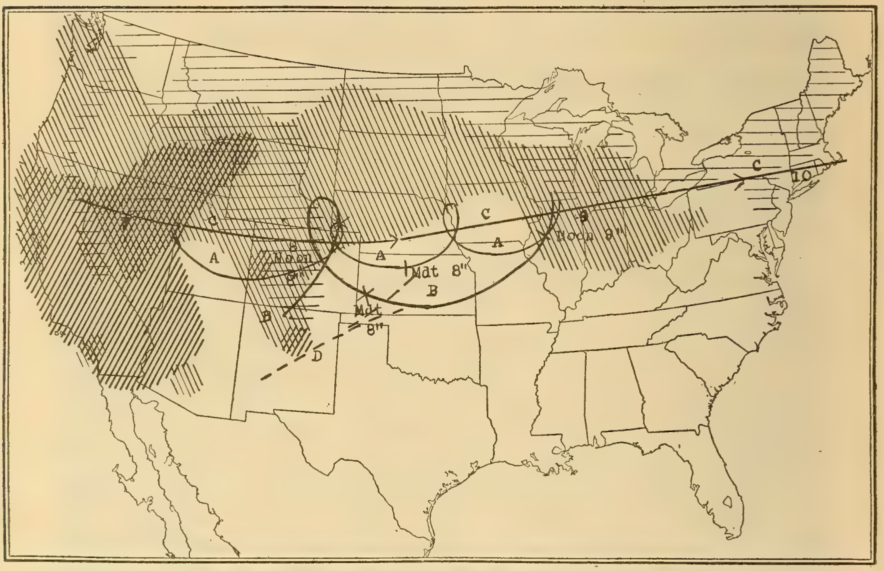


FIG. 3. Curve C. shows path of center of storm of March 7-10, 1918.

Curve B. shows trajectory of upper air current that arrived at Madison, Wis., at 11:30 A. M., March 9, when the dustfall began.

Curve A. shows trajectory of upper air current that arrived at Madison, Wis., at 3:00 P. M., at end of dustfall.

Curve D. shows conjectured trajectory of dust-bearing lower current ascending to upper stratum.

Horizontal hatchures show snow-cover 7 P. M., March 4, 1918.

NE-SW hatchures show area of rainfall during 24 hours preceding 7 A. M., March 8, 1918.

NE-SE hatchures show area of rainfall during 24 hours preceding 7 A. M., March 9, 1918.

The storm of March 7-10, 1918, was characterized by strong winds at the surface throughout its passage from Utah eastward, so that the mechanism for eroding the surface and carrying the dust up into the atmosphere was

[3] Journal Franklin Inst., November, 1917, page 673, revised.

available over a wide area. The telegraphic report of the Weather Bureau at 7 A. M. of March 9, 1918, showed high winds prevailing throughout the southwest from the Mississippi valley to the Rocky Mountains. Among the higher velocities reached during the preceding night were 48 miles per hour at Oklahoma City, 44 at Denver, 44 at Wichita. On the preceding day the storm center was advancing through Utah and Colorado, and a region of steep barometric gradients and strong winds passed over the arid regions of Nevada, Utah, Arizona, Colorado, and New Mexico, a maximum velocity of 48 miles an hour being attained at Modena, in southwestern Utah.

The velocities are sufficient to blow up into the air not only clouds of dust, but to whirl up from the ground gravel of considerable size. The limit of snow cover, from the Snow and Ice Bulletin of the Weather Bureau of March 5, 1918, and the areas covered by rainfall during the advance of the storm are shown in fig. 3. Except in Colorado, and northern New Mexico, the territory subjected to high winds was not protected in any way, aside from the natural vegetal covering, against eroding winds. The reports from observers and from military camps in the region indicate that extraordinary duststorms prevailed and caused much discomfort.

The microscopic study of the dust reveals several facts having an important bearing on its origin. First, it is well sorted and very fine. Both of these facts indicate that it has been carried a long distance in the air (according to the estimates of Udden a distance which may be a thousand miles or more). Next, the dust is charged with abundant limonite and hematite, although kaolin is not abundant and the feldspar is entirely unaltered. These facts indicate that the dust is a product of physical disintegration, and not of chemical decomposition, that is, it is derived from a region of very arid climate and not from any part of the Mississippi valley. Finally, the dust is dominantly composed of feldspar and quartz with very small amounts of other constituents. Therefore, it is derived from a region of siliceous feldspathic rocks, either granite or arkose, or a gneiss of similar composition. It is not derived from a region of limestone, sandstone, mica schist, or basic igneous rocks. It contains far too little kaolin and its feldspar is too fresh to be derived from any ordinary shale or argillite.

From all these lines of evidence it is believed that the dust came from an arid region of the southwestern part of this country, where siliceous feldspathic rocks are abundant. Such areas are common in New Mexico and Arizona. It is conjectured that the material was whirled up from the surface on March 8 in the afternoon when the convectional currents are most effective both in causing rapid vertical movements, and in increasing the velocity of the surface air by mixture with the faster moving upper air. During vertical ascent the horizontal component of velocity gradually increased, and the direction gradually veered, as shown by the dotted curve D in fig. 3, until it coincided with the line of gradient velocity indicated by the continuous lines A and B in fig. 3. The dust-bearing current then whirled around the storm center, in contra-clockwise direction until it arrived at the flank of the colder current flowing in from the east over the Great Lakes and the St. Lawrence valley. The warmer and lighter air from the southwest then rose over the colder and denser air from the east, and the precipitation of the moisture upon the dust particles as nuclei came about through the mechanical cooling of the ascending air. The precipitated moisture was in the form of rain at first, but froze to sleet as it fell through the cold lower stratum. Higher ascent cooled the rising air below the freezing point, and then the snow formed that fell with the sleet formed lower down. The pure white snow fell in the northwest winds, following the storm, and these probably came from the snow-covered land to the north or east.

Conclusion.—The evidence here presented that a single storm may transport a million tons of rock material a thousand miles or more, emphasizes the importance of the wind as a geological agent. Water transports larger rock fragments, and its work is readily seen on every hand; air transports much finer material and its work is only rarely noticed at all; yet the air is constantly at work over a much larger surface than that covered by running water, and it is an open question whether the total work done by the air in transporting rock material is not of the same order of magnitude as the work of the same kind accomplished by water.

It is clear that arid regions will constantly lose rock material by wind action and that the dust will be held by moist areas which are covered by vegetation. This is a type of erosion which may carry material ''up hill'' from a dry region of little elevation to a moist region of greater elevation. In the case here presented however, the material probably came from a mountainous arid region to an area of lower elevation.

The soil of any region is probably derived in considerable part from material transported by the wind.

Diatoms and all sorts of plant and animal life of microscopic size as well as fragments of larger organisms may be transported long distances by the wind.

Dr. Albert Mann, Plant Morphologist of the U. S. Department of Agriculture, has examined these diatoms and reports that they belong for the most part to the species *Nitzschia amphioxys* (Ehr) W. S. and *Navicula borealis* Ehr, the former being a little more abundant than the latter, and being represented exclusively by a particularly minute variety. Diatoms are algæ and grow only in water, but these two species are doubtless peculiar to localities where there is only the thin film of water which is brought up by surface tension in sphagnum bogs and present in damp moss on the trunks of trees, since their extreme minuteness enables them to live and multiply in such thin films of water.

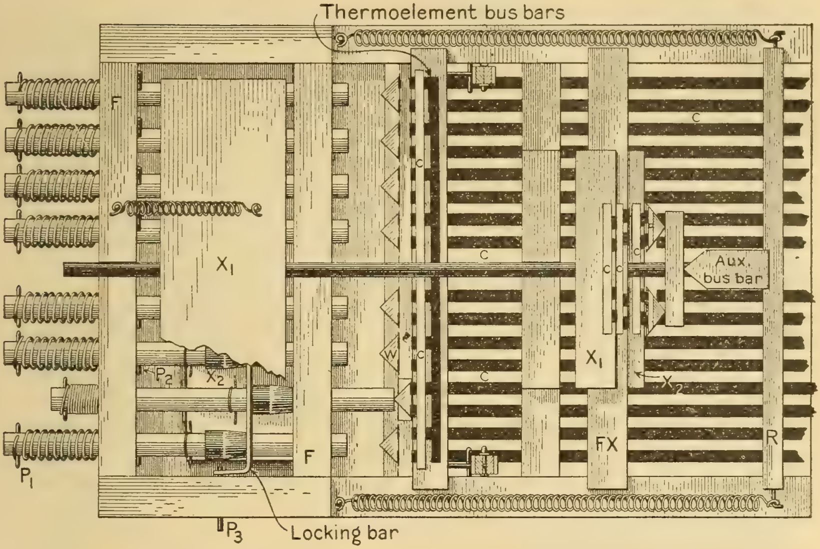
Madison, Wisconsin.

ART. XXIX.—*Note on a Universal Switch for Delicate Potential Measurements;* by WALTER P. WHITE.

Two years ago a description was published in this Journal[1] of a universal switch for thermoelectric and other delicate work. The instrument was then a combination of two features which had only been tried separately. One was the contact between thin leaves of copper with sheet celluloid insulation; the other, the mechanical arrangement for making the contacts simply and for changing the combination quickly. The actual instrument has now had over a year of trial; the celluloid insulation has again proved completely satisfactory; the mechanical arrangement has been as convenient and reliable as was expected; but two modifications have been found advantageous, which deserve publication. To aid in describing them two diagrams are reproduced from the original article, which contains a detailed account of the construction. One modification concerns the contacts between the "auxiliary-connecting frames" and their bus bars. In the earlier apparatus the only contacts were like the contacts between the thermoelement leads and their bus bar in the present one, and the making of these contacts evidently involves a slight amount of rubbing. The satisfactory performance of the earlier apparatus must have been promoted by this rubbing. The similar contacts in the present one are equally satisfactory. But the auxiliary-connecting contacts, which occurred between two bodies moving in the same straight line, required frequent cleaning. It therefore seemed best to introduce a little rubbing here. This at once made these contacts as satisfactory as the others, and is by all means to be recommended. It was done by making the farther end of the auxiliary-connecting bus bar travel on an inclined plane (laid under each end of the rod, R), while the sliding frames still move horizontally. Friction against the *"fixed auxiliary-connecting frame,"* against which the bus bar returns, could be provided by giving this frame a little horizontal travel, with a spring to press it toward the bus bar. The total travel of the operating rod is increased by the same amount.

[1] This Journal, 41, 307, 1916.

FIG. 1.



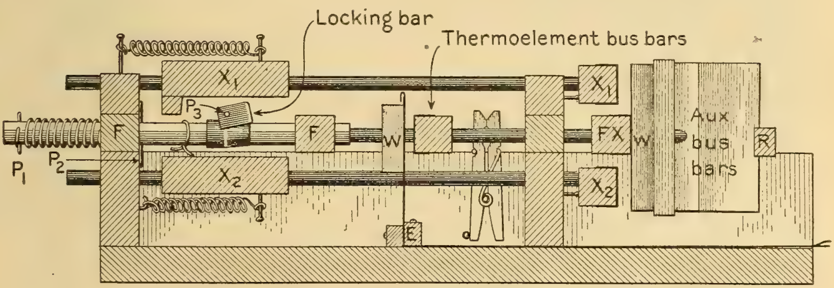


FIG. 1. Top view and section of the universal switch, ¼ full size. Full black shows copper; clear white, C, celluloid insulation; shaded, wood or metal. Each of the 8 rods, when pushed forward like the second one above, presses one of the wooden wedges, *w,* and with it two flexible flat copper thermoelement leads (or leads from some other unknown E.M.F.), against the *thermoelement bus bars,* which are copper strips connected to the measuring apparatus. At the same time the pin, P_2, in the rod, may push one of the *movable auxiliary-connecting frames* X_1, X_2 against the *auxiliary bus bars,* thus connecting in the set of potentiometer dials, or other auxiliary, which it is desired to use with that particular thermoelement. When P_2 is horizontal the *fixed frame,* FX, makes the connection. Change of combination is instantly made by rotating the rod.

The method adopted involved less change in an instrument already constructed, and is perhaps as good in any case. The bus bar, raised by the inclined plane in its backward travel, remains up as it returns to the fixed frame (to secure this the spring was shifted so as to exert a lifting action), and is then pulled down by a bell crank, operated by the further return of the sliding frame. This pulling down gives the rubbing. Motion is transmitted to the crank by a whiffletree attached to the two sliding frames, so that the return of either pulls down the bus bar. The arrangement was constructed in about 2 hours, mainly from strips of sheet brass.

Rather thin bakelite of good insulating quality can now be bought ready cut into strips, so that instead of fastening copper strips on the wooden bars by means of sheet celluloid, it may perhaps be more advantageous to pin them to bakelite which is fastened to the wood, provided, of course, that there is no machining of the edges of the strips. This construction is somewhat more robust, at any rate.

Geophysical Laboratory,
Carnegie Institution of Washington,
Washington, D. C.

SCIENTIFIC INTELLIGENCE.

I. Chemistry and Physics.

1. *An Apparatus for Determining Molecular Weights and Hydrogen Equivalents.*—W. H. Chapin of Oberlin College has devised an interesting method for the determination of the molecular weights of organic liquids whose boiling-points are below 90°C, and for determining the hydrogen equivalents of such metals as zinc, aluminium, sodium and calcium. The method depends upon measuring the pressure produced by the volatilization of the liquid or by the formation of the gas, and since the apparatus is very simple and can be made from the materials usually at hand in chemical laboratories, the process should be very useful for lecture demonstrations and for students' laboratory work.

The apparatus consists of an ordinary distilling-flask of 600 cc. capacity, of which the side tube is cut off and replaced by a glass manometer tube with a bore of about 7 mm. and a vertical height of about 20 cm. The manometer is charged with mercury and hangs perpendicularly at a little distance from the bulb of the flask, so that its position is outside of a beaker used in molecular weight determinations as a steam-bath. The steam is supplied by boiling some distilled water in the bottom of the beaker, and the latter is supplied with a cover of sheet-zinc made in two parts so that it fits the lower part of the neck of the flask. The capacity of the flask including its neck is found by weighing it full of water. The average temperature of the interior of the flask when heated by steam is found by means of a thermometer placed at different levels in the bulb and the neck, with due allowance for their capacities. The mouth of the flask is provided with a stopper containing a tube with a sliding rod extending into it from a side branch above the stopper for dropping in the weighed substance according to the arrangement commonly used in the Victor Meyer apparatus. The author has used as containers for the organic liquids experimented upon small gelatine capsules previously dried at 100° C. The change in level of the mercury is read by means of a celluloid millimeter-scale clamped to the manometer.

For the determination of hydrogen equivalents of metals, weighed quantities of the latter are dropped into dilute acids, or in the case of sodium into absolute alcohol, at ordinary temperatures while the beaker is kept full of water for maintaining a constant, known temperature. It is advisable to wind copper wire around the pieces of zinc employed in order to facilitate their solution.

The calculations are simple, since the weights of substances, the volumes, and temperatures are known, while the pressures are determined.—*Jour. Phys. Chem.*, **22**, 337. H. L. W.

2. *The Detection of Iodides in the Presence of Cyanides.*—It is a well known fact that cyanides interfere with the qualitative test for iodides where the iodine is set free by means of an oxidizing agent and an acid, and L. J. Curtman and C. Kaufman have recently studied the extent of this interference and have found that it varies with different oxidizing agents. It is very marked with potassium nitrite, much less so with the permanganate, while it is intermediate in the cases of hydrogen peroxide and chlorine water. Even under the best conditions it appears that the test may fail in the presence of more than about 10 parts of cyanogen to one of iodine. Several methods have been used for removing cyanogen before testing for iodine, such as the ignition of the silver salts, which destroys the cyanide, or the boiling of a solution of soluble salts with an excess of acetic acid, which volatilizes the hydrocyanic acid, but the present authors advise precipitating the cyanide of cobalt, together with the ferrocyanide and ferricyanide, by the addition of cobalt nitrate solution, adding asbestos fiber, boiling for half a minute, filtering, and testing the filtrate for iodides after sufficient concentration.—*Jour. Amer. Chem. Soc.*, **40**, 914. H. L. W.

3. *The Determination of Zinc as Zinc Mercury Thiocyanate.*—A gravimetric method based upon the precipitation of the compound $ZnHg(SCN)_4$ by adding a reagent containing KSCN and $HgCl_2$ to weakly acid solutions of zinc salts, filtering the precipitate on a Gooch crucible and weighing it after drying at 108° C., was described several years ago by Lundell and Bee. The precipitate was washed with water containing a minute quantity of the reagent on account of its solubility in pure water.

George S. Jamieson has now made a study of the method and obtained results that indicate that it is very accurate, but he has found that the dried precipitate is anhydrous instead of containing a molecule of water of crystallization as supposed by the originators of the process. Jamieson observes that cadmium cobalt, copper, bismuth and manganese compounds also give insoluble double thiocyanates, while nickel in small amounts and arsenic in large proportions do not interfere with the method. He has employed ammonium thiocyanate in the place of the potassium salt in the reagent with equally satisfactory results, and also he has applied titration with potassium iodate to the precipitate, in the place of weighing it, with excellent results.—*Jour. Amer. Chem. Soc.*, **40**, 1036. H. L. W.

4. *Principles of Chemistry;* by Joel H. Hildebrand. 12mo, pp. 313. New York, 1818 (The Macmillan Company).—This text-book has been prepared for the purpose of teaching chemical theories in connection with any other books dealing with the facts of the science. This separation of the two features of

instruction is intended to facilitate the teacher's individual preferences in regard to the order of presentation. The topics are clearly and simply presented, practically without the employment of mathematical formulæ. The book appears to be an excellent one for its intended purpose. H. L. W.

5. *Organic Compounds of Arsenic and Antimony;* by GILBERT T. MORGAN. 8vo, pp. 376. London, 1918 (Longmans, Green and Co.).—We have here an excellent account of these very numerous compounds, some of which, such as cacodyl and its derivatives, have been of great importance in the development of chemical theory, while others, including salvarsan, neosalvarsan, etc., have acquired extensive use in recent times in connection with the treatment of diseases due to pathogenic protozoa. The subject is presented chiefly from the point of view of pure chemistry, but the historical aspects are clearly brought out, the principles as well as many details of the methods of preparation are included, and many references are made to the toxic and medicinal properties of the substances. An extensive bibliography arranged in chronological order is appended. H. L. W.

6. *Edible Oils and Fats;* by C. AINSWORTH MITCHELL. 8vo, pp. 159. London, 1918 (Longmans, Green and Co.).—This is one of a series of Monographs on Industrial Chemistry edited by Sir Edward Thorpe. It gives a concise outline of the chemical composition and properties of the more important oils and fats, together with a description of the methods of extracting them from the crude materials and of purifying them. The physical and chemical methods of examining edible oils are also presented, the recent processes for hardening or hydrogenating oils are discussed, the manufacture of artificial butter is described, and an extensive and excellent bibliography of the subject is given. The subject is very well treated from a rather scientific point of view, so that the book is very well adapted for furnishing information in regard to the application of science to this very important field of industry. H. L. W.

7. *Scattering of Light by Dust-free Air, with Artificial Reproduction of the Blue Sky.*—A very clear account of some recent qualitative experiments on the scattering of light by gas molecules has just been published by their author, the HON. R. J. STRUTT. The vessel which contained the gas consisted of two brass tubes, each of diameter 1·5 inches, the axes of which intersected at right angles. To avoid circumlocutions we shall refer to the parts of this compound tube as if its axes formed a diagram of ordinary rectangular coördinate axes. The light from the source (usually a hand-regulated carbon arc of 12 amperes) passed toward the origin of coördinates (or intersection of the brass tubes) along the negative portion of the axis of x. It was first condensed by a quartz lens, then the heat rays were absorbed by the water in a cell having plane parallel quartz win-

dows normal to the x-axis, next the light entered the x-tube through a quartz window, after this it passed through the rectangular opening in a diaphragm inside the negative section of the tube, and finally it was absorbed and scattered by the opaque positive end of the tube. The negative portion of the y-tube was designed for making visual and photographic observations along its axis and hence it too was closed at the outer end by a quartz window. The positive segment of the y-tube constituted a dark cave across the mouth of which the beam under investigation passed. The x-tube was furnished with smaller lateral tubes to enable air and other gases to be pumped into, or out of, the tubular cross.

The field of view always consisted of a bright ring (due to light scattered from the entrance to the cave-tube) which was usually crossed by a narrow bright band arising from light scattered by the gas molecules or by fine dust particles. With ordinary untreated air in the apparatus, a very bright track due to scattering by dust particles was observed. This track had the same color as the arc. When air, which had been dried by phosphorus pentoxide and filtered by cotton wool, was pumped into the apparatus and allowed to stand until the few remaining dust particles had settled to the walls of the vessel, the beam appeared fainter than in the preceding case and its color was definitely blue. The ring of light, of course, did not vary in tint. A photograph taken with an ordinary plate using only ultra-violet light (filter of cobalt glass and paranitrosodimethyl-aniline) shows the diametral band across the ring very distinctly. This is in striking contrast to a photograph taken with a yellow screen and an isochromatic plate. In the latter negative the transverse band is extremely faint. When the vessel was exhausted, the blue track disappeared, nothing remaining except the ring of diffused light. Before finishing this part of the investigation Strutt took the most elaborate precautions to prove that the blue band was not due to extremely minute dust particles.

To test if the phenomena observed were caused by hypothetical fluorescence of the air, the troublesome arc lamp and the ordinary camera were replaced respectively by a Westinghouse-Cooper-Hewitt quartz-mercury lamp and a convenient spectrograph. Two spectrograms are reproduced in the paper juxtaposed in register one above the other. The upper half was obtained with a three days' exposure to the radiations from the faint blue beam, the lower, with such a length of exposure to the mercury lamp as gave about the same intensity as the preceding for "the middle of the spectrum" (about $\lambda 4000$). The upper spectrum shows no signs of any constituent except the known mercury lines. "Thus the lateral emission is scattered light, not fluorescent light." The maximum of intensity is shifted markedly toward the extreme ultra-violet in the case of the scattered light. The visual lines of the lamp do not appear in the upper photograph at all, and the far ultra-violet lines are absent in the lower one. This effect is of the same type as the blue color of the sky, and it is fully accounted for by the accepted theory.

Similar results were obtained with other gases. Hydrogen gives much less scattering than air, oxygen about the same, and carbon dioxide decidedly more. The scattered light was blue for all of these gases. Finally it was found both visually and photographically that the light scattered by the gas molecules was polarized, the vibrations being transverse to the direction of propagation, just as theory predicts for scattering by particles small compared with the wave-length.—*Proc. Roy. Soc.*, **94** A, 453, 1918. H. S. U.

8. *The Occurrence in the Solar Spectrum of the Ultra-violet Bands of Ammonia and of Water-vapor.*—A question of interest and importance in connection with the solar spectrum is that of the origin of the thousands of unidentified faint lines which were photographed and catalogued by Rowland and Jewell. In a recent paper by A. Fowler and C. C. L. Gregory are given the results of an investigation which was undertaken primarily in order to determine whether group P in the ultra-violet region of the solar spectrum might not be mainly due to the presence of ammonia in the absorbing atmosphere of the sun. It was already known that ammonia exhibits a remarkable band in this region, having its maximum intensity at about λ3360, but the earlier records of the component lines were found inadequate for comparison with the solar tables. Accordingly spectrograms were taken with instruments of various dispersions, ranging up to that of the third order of a grating of 10 feet radius of curvature, an arc between copper electrodes in an atmosphere of ammonia being employed as source in the latter case.

With regard to the spectrum of ammonia the investigators record the following facts. The chief ammonia band consists of a bright central maximum about λ3360, a secondary maximum about λ3371, and a number of lines, which occur in groups of three, extending to a considerable distance in both directions. The lines composing the two maxima are very closely crowded together and have been found to be arranged in series of the ordinary type. The components of the triplets are widely separated near the central maxima, but the intervals diminish rapidly until there is final coalescence at λ3450 toward the less refrangible side, and at λ3287 toward the more refrangible side, where the lines fade out. The triplets, however, are not symmetrical with respect to the central maxima, and they show marked peculiarities, so that they are very poorly represented by the formulæ usually employed for band spectra.

A comparison of the lines produced by the laboratory source with the corresponding region of the solar spectrum shows that many of the fine Fraunhofer lines are undoubtedly due to ammonia. The maxima in the two spectra not only agree in wave-length and in relative intensity but they show identical patches of continuous background. There is also a consistent representation of the groups of three, and of the lines composing the secondary maximum of the ammonia group. Of the 260 band-lines of ammonia in the region $\lambda3450$ to $\lambda3286$, there are 140 which correspond with previously unidentified faint lines of the solar spectrum. About 100 of the remaining lines are obscured by lines for which metallic origins have been found, or coincide with lines which are too strong in the solar spectrum to be assigned solely to ammonia, and the few which fail to appear in the sun are all of low intensity.

In a second paper by Fowler alone it is conclusively shown that at least 150 lines in the region of the $\lambda3064$ band may confidently be assigned exclusively to water vapor. "Besides accounting for a large number of previously unidentified solar lines, the identification of the water-vapour band in the solar spectrum is of interest as furnishing further evidence of the existence of oxygen in the sun." In this connection, it may be remarked that the author does not discuss the lines of telluric origin.—*Proc. Roy. Soc.*, **94** A, 470, 472, 1918. H. S. U.

9. *A Calendar of Leading Experiments;* by Wm. S. Franklin and Barry Mac Nutt. Pp. vii, 210; with 107 figures. South Bethlehem, 1918 (Franklin, Mac Nutt and Charles).—The objects of this volume are stated in the authors' preface in the following words: "Primarily this book has to do with class-room experiments in physics. The best experiments are those that are homely and simple, and suggestive rather than informing." "Secondarily this book is intended to set forth the possibilities of an extended course in elementary dynamics, including the dynamics of wave motion." The text is divided into six Parts entitled respectively: Mechanics, Heat, Electricity and Magnetism, Light, Sound, and A simple treatise on wave motion. The appendix contains a list of 155 experiments which, in the opinion of the authors, should be kept on exhibition at all times for the enlightenment and entertainment of visitors. In addition to purely physical topics the book contains seven "disconnected essays" with the following titles: "On the Study of Science; Operative and inoperative definitions; The side-stepping of mathematics; Bacon's New Engine; The philosophy of steam shovels and the philosophy of living; Science and technology versus the humanities in education; and The Traditive Lamp, or the proper method of handing down the sciences to posterity." In writing a brief notice of a new book it is appropriate, customary, and usually possible for the reviewer to conclude with a few remarks which are intended to help the reader form a preliminary estimate of the probable value to him of the text in

question. In so doing it is the reviewer's duty to endeavor to avoid snap-shot conclusions, pet opinions, etc., and to be as fair and generous as possible. In the present instance, however, the authors have incorporated *throughout* the text so much "fun," "biting humor," and adverse criticism of other writers, have made so many references to, and laudatory comments concerning, their book entitled *General Physics,* and have introduced new, unnecessary terms to supplant old, universally accepted ones, as to make it almost impossible to form an unbiased opinion of the pedagogical merits of the case. In short, the reader's attention is continually distracted from the clear, sound explanations by remarks which should have been given as foot-notes or collected in additional "essays." Under these circumstances, two sentences that occur in the volume should be quoted; they are: (p. iv) *"The authors are teachers, and they consider teaching to be the greatest of fun, but they never yet have been helped in their work by anything they have ever read concerning their profession."* (p. 98) "Any discussion which places emphasis on the fact that the 'electromagnetic' unit of charge divided by the 'electrostatic' unit of charge is equal to the square of the velocity of light, but which stops short of a complete elementary discussion of electromagnetic wave motion, is, in our opinion, misleading and fantastic." H. S. U.

II. Miscellaneous Scientific Intelligence.

1. *Journal of the Ceramic Society*—This new journal, devoted to the arts and sciences related to the silicate industries, has been recently begun (Jan. 1918) under the editorship of Professor George H. Brown of Rutgers College. It is published monthly as the organ of the American Ceramic Society which was founded in 1899; it takes the place of the annual volume of Transactions previously published by the Society. The prospectus of the journal states that "In the American Ceramic Society, the term ceramic is synonymous with 'silicate industries' and the interests and activities of the Society include all branches of the clayware, glass and cement industries as well as enameled wares of all kinds and in addition other closely allied products are included, chief among which are abrasives, gypsum and lime. The products of the three major divisions alone (clayware, glass and cement) aggregate over $400,000,000 per annum."

Membership in the Society is open to anyone interested in any branch of the ceramic industries and application should be made to the Society. All members receive the Journal gratis; to non-members the subscription price is $6.00 per year (12 issues), payable to the Secretary in advance; single numbers cost sixty cents. L. E. Barringer (Schenectady, N. Y.) is chairman of the Committee on publication and the Society may be addressed at the publication office, 211 Church St., Easton, Pa.

2. *A Century of Science in America, with especial reference to the American Journal of Science, 1818-1918;* edited by EDWARD SALISBURY DANA. Pp. 420, with photogravure frontispiece of Benjamin Silliman, 19 half-tone portraits and facsimile of cover page of the first number. New Haven, Conn. (The Yale University Press; price $4.00.)—This volume, which reproduces with important additions the July number of this Journal and is based in part upon the Silliman Memorial Lectures delivered at Yale University in May last, is now in press and will be issued in the near future.

OBITUARY.

DR. RICHARD RATHBUN, assistant Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution, died in Washington on July 16 at the age of sixty-six years. He was born in Buffalo on January 25, 1852, and studied at Cornell University with the Class of 1875. He was early interested in natural history and through his acquaintance with Professor Charles F. Hartt was led to accept the position of geologist to the Geological Commission of Brazil, which he occupied from 1875 to 1878. He had earlier served as assistant in zoology in the Boston Society of Natural History (1874-75) and in the summer months acted under Dr. Spencer F. Baird in connection with the work of the U. S. Fish Commission on the New England coast. This led to his becoming scientific assistant to the Commission in 1878, a position which he held until 1896. His work was carried on at first in the Peabody Museum of Yale University under Professor Verrill, but in 1880 he moved to Washington, which remained his home through the rest of his life. In 1897 he was appointed assistant Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution, and the following year he was given charge of the National Museum. He had a genius for executive work and the development of the new building of the National Museum as well as the essential activities of the Smithsonian Institution owe much to his quiet, untiring labors. An estimate of his scientific acquirements and contributions must be deferred to a later number.

DR. STEPHEN FARNUM PECKHAM, the able technical chemist, died in Brooklyn on July 1 in his eightieth year after a protracted illness extending over some nine years. He was educated at Brown University and served in the hospital department during the Civil War. His interest was given particularly to the subjects of petroleum and bitumen and to these he made important contributions. His investigations in California, Texas, Oklahoma and also in Trinidad yielded valuable results. A number of papers on these subjects have been published in the pages of this Journal. The mineral peckhamite from the Estherville, Iowa, meteorite was named after him by Dr. J. Lawrence Smith.

SAMUEL WENDELL WILLISTON, professor of paleontology in the University of Chicago, died recently at the age of sixty-six years. A notice is deferred until a later number.

THE

AMERICAN JOURNAL OF SCIENCE

[FOURTH SERIES.]

Art. XXX.—*The Radioactive Properties of the Mineral Springs of Colorado;* by O. C. Lester.

An investigation of the radioactivity of the numerous mineral springs found chiefly in the mountainous region of Colorado was begun in the summer of 1914. The work was under the auspices of the Colorado State Geological Survey, which had undertaken some time previously a study of these springs in relation to the geology of their surroundings and the chemical constituents of their waters. This previous study had provided a list of some 200 springs, giving locations, chemical analyses, and considerable information of a general nature. Most of these springs are highly mineralized, many of them are very hot, and many give off large quantities of gas. The present study was confined chiefly to the springs on this list although not all of them are included. On the other hand some springs not on the list have been included when they appeared to promise results of interest. It was impossible for several reasons to examine all the known springs and there are doubtless many unknown to us that might well be worthy of investigation. A few springs are located in regions where travel was practically impossible except on foot or on horseback. Others, owing to an unusually rainy summer for Colorado, were rendered temporarily inaccessible by damage to roads and bridges or were covered with water or the debris of washouts.

Since most of the springs are situated at distances varying from a mile to more than fifty miles from the nearest railroad it was decided to do all traveling by automobile. A large box divided into convenient trays and compartments was built firmly into the back part of the machine. This held all the necessary apparatus and supplies for a well-equipped field laboratory and made it possible to use the more accurate boiling-out method described by Boltwood[1] instead of the Fontaktometer. Mr. J. H. V. Finney, an instructor in the department of Physics of the University of Colorado and a skilled automobile driver and mechanic, acted as general assistant not only in the field work but also in the tests made later in the laboratory. Without his efficient services the work would not have gone so smoothly nor could so much have been accomplished in the comparatively brief time of one summer.

The general plan of the work was to visit each spring and to make tests on the spot for the immediate activity of both water and gas. By immediate activity is meant the activity of freshly collected samples. Wherever it was possible the gases were also tested for thorium emanation. Samples of water and mud or sinter (if any) were collected chiefly from springs showing fair to high activity and shipped to the laboratory at the University to be tested later for dissolved or deposited radioactive substances.

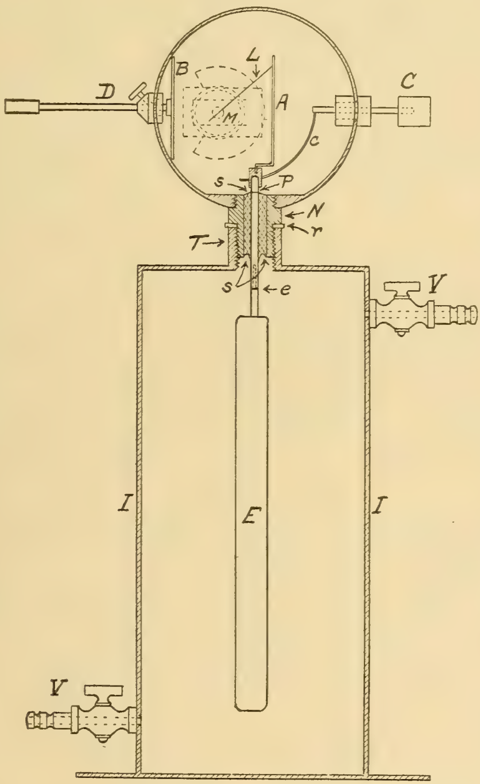
The field tests occupied the whole of the summer of 1914. A few short trips were made in the fall of 1914 and in the summer of 1915. Tests for activity due to salts dissolved in the waters or deposited in muds and sinters continued at various times during the winter of 1914, most of the summer of 1915, and for some time in 1916. During this time tests were made also on the immediate activity of waters shipped in from a number of springs not examined during the work in the field for reasons given above.

To avoid loss of time in waiting for an electroscope contaminated by active deposit to become usable again, several instruments or their equivalent were necessary. On the other hand our carrying capacity though large was not unlimited nor did we wish to have the care of packing, repacking and of keeping in order a number of pieces of apparatus as delicate as the leaf system of an electro-

[1] This Journal, 18, 378, 1904.

scope. The problem was solved by constructing a number of ionization chambers to which could be attached in turn the same electroscope head and leaf. The dimensions, constants, and characteristics of these electroscopes have been fully discussed in a previous paper.[2]

FIG. 1.



The essential features are shown in fig. 1. I is an air-tight cylindrical brass ionization chamber having stop cocks V near the top and bottom. Altogether four such chambers were used, all taking the same electroscope head but each having its own electrode E.

The head screws on at T and is made air-tight by the rubber gasket *r*. S is an insulation made of banker's specie sealing wax. Through this passes a brass rod

[2] This Journal, 44, 225, 1917.

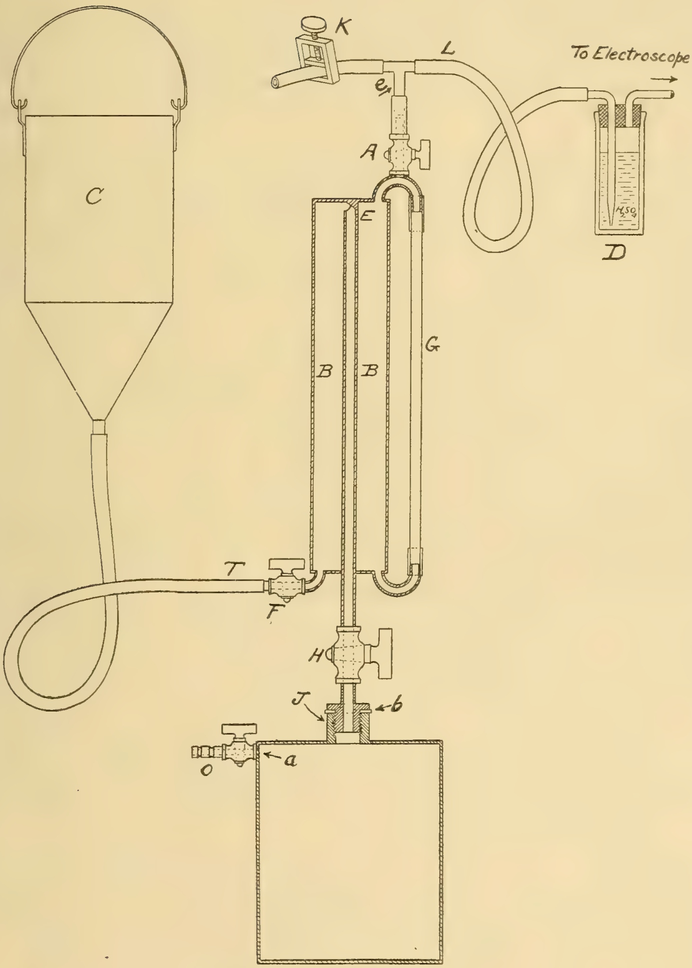
P, threaded at *e* for the attachment of the electrode and carrying on its upper end the leaf support A, which is firmly attached to the rod by means of a four-jawed friction clamp. The heavy front and back plates of the head, which carry small windows, are not shown in the figure. They are easily removed by taking out a few screws when it is necessary to get at the leaf system. A Pye telemicroscope serves to read the deflections of the leaf. The microscope is rigidly attached to the head in such a way that it can not change its focusing position on the leaf. C is a charging device and DB is merely an arrangement for protecting the leaf when traveling.

The electroscope head inclosing the insulated leaf system was so carefully made that it formed an almost air-tight chamber. This enabled the instrument to be used in the open with little or no disturbance to the leaf even when a considerable breeze was blowing. To cut down the natural leak due to ionization produced by sunlight a strong corrugated pasteboard box with suitable openings was fitted over and around the electroscope when in use in the open. This box also served as a protection in bad weather. In the field the leaf system was charged negatively by means of a metal tipped celluloid "charging rod."

The behavior of the electroscope, often under very trying field conditions, was practically perfect. Even in rainy weather the only trouble experienced was in keeping the charging rod dry. After standing charged for about half an hour the natural leak was usually between 0·05 and 0·15 division per minute although there were a few occasions when it amounted to nearly 0·4 division per minute.

The boiling-out apparatus for the field tests of water samples is shown in fig. 2. The water to be tested was carefully introduced into a vessel I containing caustic soda when necessary. This vessel has a stop cock O and communicates through the cock H and a three-eighths inch brass tube with the collecting chamber BB made of brass tubing two inches in diameter and ten inches long. The neck J is made air-tight by the rubber gasket B. G is a glass tube serving as a water gauge. The vessel I was made in three sizes with capacities of 0·5 liter, 1 liter, and 2 liters respectively. The two-liter vessel was used in most cases although there were some springs for which

FIG. 2.



the one-liter was convenient and a few for which the half-liter had to be used. The entire apparatus except the drying tube D was supported on a tall, heavy, ring stand with suitable clamps. Two gasoline torches served as sources of heat.

The method of operation is the same as that for any boiling-out apparatus. Boiling hot water is poured into the vessel C which is then raised until BB is filled to the top. Next the cock A is closed, H opened and the torches applied to I. The water in I will boil ten minutes or more before enough live steam begins to collect in BB to force the water toward the bottom of the gauge. The steam passing up through the central tube serves to keep the water in BB hot. After the temperature of the whole apparatus has risen nearly to the boiling point a touch of the flame on I causes the water in the gauge to descend quickly. With care, however, boiling can be continued as long as it is desirable. After the boiling is completed F is closed, the tube T is connected to O, and the gases in BB are transferred to the electroscope in the usual manner.

The results on the activity of both waters and gases are given in Table I.[3] The individual springs are designated by numbers. Those marked with an asterisk (*) were tested by means of samples shipped to the laboratory and although allowance has been made for the decay of the emanation from the time of collection our experience shows that such results are always too low. The gases were collected over water in glass vessels graduated in cubic centimeters. The apparent volumes of the gas samples were corrected for the pressure due to water vapor and reduced to standard conditions of temperature and barometric pressure.

Columns 3-6 inclusive give the activity per liter of freshly collected samples. Column 7 gives the results of a number of tests on the permanent activity of spring waters. These were made at the laboratory after the

[3] For the locations, chemical analyses and general descriptions of these springs see Bulletin No. 11, Colorado State Geological Survey, in press.

All the measurements in this table are on springs located in Colorado. Tests were also made on samples sent from Bajada Hot Springs, New Mexico, from Saratoga Springs, Wyoming, and from a spring in the Cañon of the Colorado River near Hite, Utah. The sample from the latter spring had the color of a strong solution of copper sulphate and showed the remarkably high radium content of $12{\cdot}12 \times 10^{-10}$ gram per liter.

samples had been acidified and sealed for over a month. Several of the samples were lost during shipment and some were accidentally destroyed where they were stored but it is scarcely to be expected that a greater number of tests would change the general character of the results.

In the column headed "Remarks" the letter S indicates results due to Schlundt.[4] The letter *a* means that the sample has been taken from a pipe or other outlet removed from the source, while *b* indicates thorium emanation.

Tests for thorium emanation were made in a great many places where there was a sufficient flow of gas. No indication of thorium was found anywhere except in spring No. 186 in Gunnison Co. near Powderhorn post-office. A roughly quantitative determination, made from the activity curve of the combined radium and thorium emanation and from the activity curve of the radium emanation alone, gave practically the same amount of activity for each. This scarcity of thorium emanation was somewhat unexpected as monazite is found in the sand of most of the creek and river beds so far examined along the whole eastern slope of the Continental Divide. Similar information for the western slope is lacking but the probabilities are that monazite exists there also. Thorium-bearing ores in place are unknown anywhere in the region in which the springs are located.

For testing the activity of spring deposits in the solid form a sensitive electroscope of the usual type was constructed. The ionization chamber is a cubical brass box having a volume of one liter. The narrow leaf is 4 cm. long and with its support, insulated by a piece of amber, projects downward into the ionization chamber at the bottom of which is a closely fitting drawer for the introduction of the active material.

The instrument has a measured electrical capacity of 1·06 cm. and was standardized by means of thin films of U_3O_8 made up according to the method of McCoy[5] but following the specifications of Boltwood.[6] Ten standard films were made from some very pure uranium oxide kindly furnished by Professor Boltwood. In no case did

[4] Jour. Phys. Chem., 18, 662, 1914.
[5] Phil. Mag., 11, 176, 1906; Jour. Amer. Chem. Soc., 27, 391, 1905.
[6] This Journal, 21, 418, 1906.

TABLE I.

No.	Temp.	Curies Ra Em. per liter × 10^{-10}		Mache units per liter		Permanent activity of water	Remarks[a]
	°C	Water	Gas	Water	Gas	Gram Ra per liter × 10^{-10}	
1	11·0	2·15	......	0·58			
3	15·5	1·53	......	0·41			
5	44·5	6·70	......	1·81			
7	48·0	.....	27·84	.....	7·52		
11	20·5	trace	......	trace			
12	13·5	26·75	......	7·22			
13	12·0	41·44	......	11·19	......	none	
14	10·0	4·33	......	1·17			
15	15·0	6·08	......	1·64			
15	12·3	14·7	......	2·49	......	.....	S
16	....	12·61	......	3·40			
17	10·0	0·92	......	0·25			
17	12·5	2·7	......	0·43	......	.....	S
18	42·5	10·35	......	2·80			
21	34·6	3·58	......	0·97	......	.....	*a*
22	19·5	.....	none	.....	none	.....	*a*
23	15·6	2·05	......	0·55			
*25	14·0	1·04	......	0·28			
26	8·5	5·85	......	1·58			
27	18·5	16·80	78·0	4·54	21·05	0·074	
28	14·5	21·02	......	5·68			
*31	6·7	2·38	......	0·64			
*32	6·7	0·91	......	0·25			
34	8·0	23·63	......	6·38			
35	14·3	10·73	......	2·90			
35	14·5	22·4	......	3·74	......	.....	S
36	29·4	.....	23·2	.....	6·26		
38	26·8	none	......	none			
39	12·8	trace	......	trace			
*42	9·4	1·87	......	0·51			
43	13·0	6·41	......	1·73			
45	28·3	15·04	129·5	4·06	34·98		
*47	....	0·73	......	0·20			
*48	....	0·27	......	0·07			
*49	....	10·10	......	2·73			
52	26·0	8·35	101·6	2·25	27·42	none	
52	21·0	19·6	......	3·25	......	.....	S
53	25·0	4·73	......	1·28			
54	51·5	.....	13·74	.....	3·71		
55	51·0	.....	19·68	.....	5·32		
58	51·5	0·87	......	0·24			
63	50·0	.....	27·30	.....	7·37	0·197	
64	....	.....	0·44	.....	0·12		
67	9·5	none	......	none			
69	....	none	......	none			
71	56·5	15·14	414·0	4·09	111·8	0·180	
72	8·5	11·30	......	3·05			
73	16·0	18·40	......	4·97			

a Letters given in this column are explained in the text.

TABLE I (continued).

No.	Temp.	Curies Ra Em. per liter × 10^{-10}		Mache units per liter		Permanent activity of water	Remarks[a]
	°C	Water	Gas	Water	Gas	Gram Ra per liter × 10^{-10}	
76	16·1	.....	229·0	.....	61·85	none	
77	20·5	24·55	......	6·63	......	none	
78	35·0	5·99	......	1·62			
80	44·5	.....	60·32	.....	16·29	none	
81	....	.....	......	.....	......	trace	
82	45·0	3·60	......	0·97	......	none	
83	43·0	3·27	......	0·88			
84	17·0	4·92	......	1·33			
85	....	.....	......	.....	......	none	
86	13·7	4·54	......	1·23	......	none	
87	13·0	6·58	......	1·78	......	none	
88–1	43·0	7·53	117·0	2·03	31·6		
88–2	43·0	11·49	......	3·10			
89	40·0	15·51	......	4·19			
90	41·6	2·20	......	0·69			
91	35·5	2·78	146·10	0·75	39·45		
92	32·5	9·24	......	2·50			
93–1	40·0	6·81	180·15	1·84	48·63		
93–2	....	6·58	......	1·78			
94	....	.....	100·10	.....	27·02		
95	38·7	9·42	......	2·54			
102	18·5	1·87	......	0·51			
107	10·0	47·23	164·0	12·75	44·3	none	
108	10·0	50·20	......	13·56	......	none	
109	9·3	11·09	......	2·99			
111	8·5	42·38	......	11·44			
112	9·5	28·37	......	7·66	......	none	
113	8·5	38·07	131·6	10·28	35·52	trace	
*114	....	0·95	......	0·26			
115	16·3	4·57	......	1·23			
117	10·5	16·42	......	4·44	......	.....	*a*
117	10·2	20·0	......	3·25	......	.....	S
118	10·0	3·24	......	0·88	......	.....	*a*
118	15·1	8·45	......	1·41	......	.....	S
119	16·0	3·56	......	0·96			
120	13·5	none	trace	none	trace		
120	13·7	8·2	......	1·35	......	.....	S
121	14·2	.....	11·94	.....	3·23		
124	14·0	2·35	11·49	0·63	3·10		
124	14·7	22·4	15·4	3·74	2·6	.....	S
125	12·0	7·30	......	1·97	......	none	
125	12·8	11·5	......	1·98	......	.....	S
126	18·0	15·35	77·6	4·14	20·95	none	
126	13·0	26·7	47·0	4·49	8·0	.....	S
127	22·3	12·07	73·15	3·26	19·75	none	*a*
127	....	20·1	48·1	3·36	8·03	.....	S
128	15·5	8·89	......	2·40	......	none	
128	12·7	13·1	......	2·32	......	.....	S
129	14·5	2·68	16·22	0·72	4·38	none	*a*

TABLE I (continued).

No.	Temp.	Curies Ra Em. per liter × 10^{-10}		Mache units per liter		Permanent activity of water	Remarks[a]
	°C	Water	Gas	Water	Gas	Gram Ra per liter × 10^{-10}	
129	14·5	17·6	......	3·04	......	.....	S
130	15·5	16·60	155·2	4·48	41·92	none	
130	14·9	47·3	205·0	8·25	31·2	.....	S
131	11·0	4·62	21·93	1·25	5·92		
131	11·2	14·0	28·8	2·34	4·77	.....	S
132	....	.....	19·65	.....	5·31		
133	9·5	16·84	......	4·55	......	0·08	
133	17·2	19·5	......	3·16	......	.....	S
136	47·0	4·93	262·0	1·33	70·75	trace	
139	51·0	.....	391·5	.....	105·7		
141	22·0	trace	......	trace	......	.....	*a*
142	83·8	.....	656·0	.....	177·15	none	
144	46·0	9·41	......	2·54			
145	....	.....	202·2	.....	54·6	none	
146	9·5	13·35	......	3·61	......	none	
147	12·0	69·40	......	18·74	......	trace	
148	13·5	2·47	......	0·67			
150	10·0	273·0	......	73·7			
151	11·5	.....	334·5	......	90·34		
152	34·7	10·38	......	2·80	......	none	
153	36·1	.....	152·35	.....	41·14		
155	18·5	27·2	......	7·34	......	none	
156	34·0	36·9	......	9·99	......	none	
157	51·5	6·38	......	1·72			
158	47·5	11·53	......	3·11	......	0·096	
*159	....	none	......	none			
160	50·0	.....	6·63	.....	1·79		
161	12·5	2·30	......	0·62			
162	65·0	.....	12·36	.....	3·34		
164	15·0	none	......	none			
*165	....	0·83	......	0·22	......	trace	
167	15·5	1·42	......	0·38			
170	14·5	none	......	none			
175	71·5	18·62	760·0	5·03	205·2	0·091	
*176	....	13·58	......	3·67	......	0·121	
177	64·5	263·9	......	71·25	......	0·063	
178	....	.....	......	.....	......	0·186	
179	33·5	8·31	......	2·24			
182	40·5	.....	128·5	.....	34·7		
183	26·4	.....	229·7	.....	62·0	trace	
184	9·9	41·10	112·5	11·10	30·38	none	
186	10·3	79·25	375·6	21·4	101·41	none	*b*
189	24·0	2·05	......	0·55			
190	26·5	trace	......	trace			*a*
191	27·5	2·54	......	0·69			
192	11·3	.....	4·97	.....	1·34		
194	13·0	.....	1·90	.....	0·51		
196	53·5	8·75	36·2	2·36	9·78		
199	22·5	.....	5·66	.....	1·53		

TABLE I (continued).

No.	Temp.	Curies Ra Em. per liter × 10^{-10}		Mache units per liter		Permanent activity of water	Remarks[a]
	°C	Water	Gas	Water	Gas	Gram Ra per liter × 10^{-10}	
*200	14·0	1·03	......	0·29	......	trace	
203	20·5	11·86	......	3·20	......	none	
206	20·0	2·64	......	0·71			
207	14·5	305·5	2725·0	82·5	735·8	trace	
208	12·5	108·3	......	29·25	......	0·28	
209	14·0	138·4	......	37·37	......	0·283	
210	15·5	97·03	614·8	26·2	166·0	0·233	
211	24·0	trace	trace	trace	trace		
211	....	......	10·9	.....	1·79	.....	S
212	39·5	.....	13·35	.....	3·61		
212	39·5	1·2	7·9	0·21	1·31	.....	S
213	24·0	9·05	35·0	2·44	9·45	none	
213	23·8	14·3	51·5	2·39	9·05	.....	S
214	23·5	.....	63·25	.....	17·08		
216	....	.....	2·39	.....	0·65		
218	15·0	13·58	60·30	3·67	16·28	none	
218	14·8	2·55	20·5	0·43	3·46	.....	S
222	24·5	.....	3·29	.....	0·89		
223	13·5	1·64	......	0·44			
223	13·0	1·9	......	0·32	......	.....	S
224	....	.....	25·58	.....	6·91		
225	21·0	2·62	......	0·71			
229	30·5	3·75	......	1·01			
230	49·5	5·14	10·11	1·39	2·73		
231	49·5	.....	12·03	.....	3·25		
*232	6·7	0·78	......	0·21			
*233	10·0	0·68	......	0·18			
234	52·0	.....	15·76	.....	4·26		
235	42·5	2·28	136·6	0·62	36·88		
236	39·5	.....	19·97	.....	5·39		
237	52·0	.....	111·8	.....	30·20		
238	64·0	10·69	562·0	2·89	151·7	none	
239	70·0	19·80	956·8	5·35	258·35	trace	
240	68·5	19·54	1155·0	5·29	311·8		
241	70·0	21·51	1280·0	5·81	345·6	trace	
242	71·0	27·94	1147·0	7·54	309·7		
243	59·5	12·66	690·9	3·42	186·5		
244	43·0	16·56	......	4·47			
245	64·0	28·57	687·5	7·71	185·6	0·083	
246	68·0	18·66	1243·5	5·04	335·5		
247	66·3	12·62	555·0	3·41	149·85		
248	5·5	13·85	......	3·74	......	0·085	
249	72·0	1·18	......	0·32			
250	....	.....	36·2	.....	9·77		
251	55·5	.....	58·3	.....	15·74		
252	35·5	4·40	......	1·19			
*253	....	5·84	......	1·58	......	none	
*254	....	13·63	......	3·68	......	none	

TABLE II.

No.	Material	Equiv. Act. grams U per gram × 10^{-10}	Grams Ra × 10^{-10} Fusion	Per gram Solution
12	Quartz sand and orthoclase	0·474		
12	Sand	0·423		
13	Mud and organic matter	1·865		
27	Limonite and calcareous sinter	0·299		
27	Limonite and calcareous clay	0.141		
27	Calcareous clay	0·588		
27	Calcareous clay	0·907	none	
28	Mud and limonite	1·328		
71	Mud and muscovite	0·251		
73–1[b]	Clay	16·88	8·67	
73–2[b]	Clay	15·11	3·62	
76[b]	Sulphur[a]	8·74	1·88	
77[b]	Clay	0·732		
77[b]	Clay	0·265		
108	Sand	0·349		
142	Clay	0·444		
147	Carbonaceous clay	1·245		
147	Carbonaceous clay	1·54	0·291	
150	Limonite and calcareous sinter	20·73	.....	3·21
150	Limonite and calcareous sinter	9·36	.....	2·07
152	Calcareous clay	0·007		
153	Calcareous clay	0·263		
153–1	Calcareous tufa	0·527		
154	Limonite and clay	0·321		
158	Calcareous sinter	1·72	.....	1·14
175	Calcareous sinter and clay	1·14	trace	
175	Calcareous sinter and clay	0·485		
177	Tufa	1·345		
182	Limonite and clay	0·639		
182	Limonite and clay	0·855		
183	Limey clay	0·724		
183	Calcareous clay	0·449		
184	Calcareous clay	0·603		
200	Porous sinter and sulphur	0·161		
203	Yellow sinter	0·233		
203–1	Tufa	0·604	0·085	
207	Limonite and sand	0·073	trace	
207	Limonite and sand	0·273	0·125	
235		0·216		
238	Calcareous clay	0·123		
238	Calcareous clay	0·397		
238	Mud	0·057		
165	Cave incrustation, sulphur[a]	trace		
165	Rusty clay	none		

[a] Sulphur pure enough to burn.

[b] The springs 73–77 are peculiar. In addition to practically pure sulphur, Schlundt (*l. c.*) finds that part of the sinter deposited by them is about 87 per cent barium sulphate. He also finds a sample of tufa from one of these springs showing 14·8 × 10^{-10} gram Ra per gram.

these films weigh as much as 5 mgs. and the material was spread uniformly on thin sheet aluminium over a surface of 64 sq. cm. The ten films gave an average activity per milligram of three divisions per minute. One division per minute corresponds to $2{\cdot}82 \times 10^{-4}$ gram uranium.

Dry samples of the materials to be examined, weighing roughly from 0·5 lb. to 3 lbs., were first pulverized so as to pass through a 100-mesh screen. Small portions of these were further ground with freshly distilled chloroform in an agate mortar and this material was thinly painted with a camel's hair brush over sheet aluminium of the same area as the standard films. These films were made much thicker, however, than the standards so that considerable absorption undoubtedly occurred for which no correction has been made.

The activities of the deposits, muds or sediments from a number of the springs listed in Table I are given in Table II. It was not possible to collect such samples from all the springs. The samples taken were usually from springs which showed at least some activity in the water or gas. From some springs more than one sample was taken when the deposits appeared to differ in nature, color, or age. These are indicated in the table by a repetition of the spring number.

In the column headed "material" will be found a classification made by the Colorado State Geological Survey but no formal analysis has been attempted. Column 3 expresses the activity as equivalent to that of so many grams of uranium per gram. Up to the present it has not been possible to do the work necessary to determine the exact substances to which this activity is due. Small portions only, even of what appeared to be calcareous deposits, were soluble in acids. The deposits contain large amounts of clay and silica and the radioactive salts occur generally in the form of sulphates.

The values given in column 4 were obtained by the method of fusion with mixed carbonates. The samples were sealed for over a month in combustion tubing and care was taken to avoid loss of emanation during fusion. Column 5 contains a few results obtained by the boiling-out method from complete solutions of a few grams of material. This of course is the ideal method for reliable results. However, aside from the fact that lack of time has prevented the use of this method in all cases, it is very unlikely that results would be obtained commensurate in interest with the labor involved.

Some work has been done on a few of the springs listed in Table I by other observers. Wolcott[7] examined one spring at Glenwood Springs but his method gave qualitative results only. The work of Headden[8] on the Doughty Springs (Nos. 73-77) near Hotchkiss, Colorado, was done by the photographic method and the results given are also qualitative. A few of the springs at Manitou, Colorado, were examined by Shedd[9] and his results show a fair agreement with later observations considering the lack of precision in his apparatus and the fact that he did not use an emanation standard.

The most extensive previous investigation is that of Schlundt[10] who tested a number of springs near Boulder, at Manitou, at Steamboat Springs, and at least one spring at Glenwood Springs. He used a fontactometer having a volume of about 15 liters. His results which can be identified with springs listed in this work are also given in Table I and are indicated by the letter S. The two sets of measurements sometimes agree but often one of them differs by amounts ranging from about one-fourth to five times the other. These differences are due partly to the methods used, to the corrections applied, and partly perhaps to variations in the activity of the sources. An examination of the two sets of temperature readings indicates that changes have occurred in the condition of some of the springs. Likewise the testimony of local observers seems to show that springs in a rather closely associated group sometimes change their character due apparently to connection by means of underground channels. The differences in the measurement of activity, however, appear to have no relation to these indicated changes.

Considered as a whole the results given in Tables I and II indicate a high average activity although there are a few springs which are inactive. The most active waters show the highest radioactivity yet found in the United States and are surpassed by but few foreign springs. The greatest activity found in the spring gases is exceeded in the United States by a few springs in the

[7] Biennial Report Colo. School of Mines, Appendix p. 27, 1904.
[8] This Journal, 19, 297, 1905.
[9] Proc. Colo. Sci. Soc., 10, 233, 1912.
[10] Loc. cit.

Yellowstone National Park and is approached by but two or three European springs.

A careful comparison of the radioactivity measurements with the data obtained from the chemical analyses shows that there is no connection between radioactivity and any chemical property. Neither is there any connection between activity and temperature, nor between the activity in water or gas and that in the deposits. Some springs situated near each other have shown activities of very different magnitude and again the individual springs of a closely associated group have shown quite similar activities. In the first case the waters of the separate springs usually had the appearance of being different in character but not always.

Results similar to the foregoing have been recorded by many previous observers both in this country and in Europe. There is a general agreement that springs from igneous rocks are more active than those from sedimentary rocks.[11] If we take the ninety-five springs of Table I which show an emanation content equal to or greater than 10×10^{-10} curie per liter we find that 58 or 61 per cent are in pre-Cambrian formations or near a pre-Cambrian contact; 14 or 14·7 per cent are in igneous rock or near igneous and sedimentary contacts; 23 or 24·2 per cent are in sedimentaries of various formations. Approximately 75 per cent of the more active springs are thus in or near metamorphic and igneous formations. Some of the most active springs, however, are found in sedimentaries. Nos. 73-77 in the Cretaceous and Nos. 136-139 in the Miocene are examples.

At the beginning of this investigation it was anticipated that some springs of extraordinarily high radioactivity would be found since Colorado contains quite extensive deposits of radioactive ores. This expectation, however, was not fulfilled. No large mineral springs were found in regions where radioactive ores are most abundant. A number of springs, often highly gaseous, situated not far outside such regions showed in general the least activity of any examined. On the other hand, some quite active springs such as Nos. 107-109 near

[11] Since this article was written there has appeared an extensive investigation on the Radio-activity of Archean Rocks from the Mysore State by Smeeth and Watson (Phil. Mag., 35, 206, 1918). All these rocks, considered to be of igneous origin, contain remarkably little radium. The various igneous magmas not only appear to contain different amounts of radium but the radioactive material seems to be subject to magmatic segregation.

La Veta and No. 71 near Hartsel in South Park are in regions where radioactive ores occur to some extent. Autunite is found in the La Veta region and some Carnotite in South Park. Generally speaking, however, the most active springs are found on both slopes of the Continental Divide and not far from it. So far as is known there are no bodies of radioactive ores near them.

In the course of this work there were found many groups of springs situated just at the foot or within a mile or two of a high mountain range the individual peaks of which reach elevations as high as 12,000 to 14,000 feet. These groups are sometimes arranged in a more or less definite line a mile or more in length as if along an old fault and again are gathered together in an irregular area the opposite sides of which are only a few hundred feet apart. In such areas springs as widely different as a cold soda spring and a hot sulphur spring may be found separated by only a few feet. These areas seem to be merely the common outlets for underground waters draining often from many square miles of high mountainous country which frequently includes formations of widely different age and character.

As to the origin of the radioactivity found in natural waters there seems to be a general agreement that it is picked up little by little during the underground flow from the minute amounts of radioactive matter known to be widely diffused through all rocks and soils. According to Dienert and Guillard[12] the activity arises *exclusively* from this source. They point out further that when water comes from great depths as in Plombières it is possible to find springs very near together, coming from the same geological beds and having very different activity. The work of Schmidt and Kurz[13] indicates that there is no dependency of emanation content on depth, strength of flow, chemical properties or temperature, but only that springs from eruptive rocks are in general much more active than those from sedimentaries.

The question as to whether an underground water or gas collects most of its radioactive material near the outlet or far removed from it, whether by gradual absorption from surrounding rock or by rapid absorption during a brief contact with more active material, does not seem to be answerable without more information than is usually known about the underground course. Mining opera-

[12] Le Radium, 7, 60, 1910.
[13] 1 Phys. Zeitschr., 7, 209, 1906.

tions show that quite extensive open underground water channels are not uncommon and it is quite evident that many of the hot springs flow for long distances in such courses. In a water course which permits free and rapid flow, radium emanation could be absorbed at a great distance and brought to the surface without losing greatly through disintegration. Likewise a rapid flow through a long underground channel could give at the outlet a very active water or gas which need not have encountered any particularly active material. In the case of slow seepage flows which may collect in an open channel extending only a short distance from the outlet or which may empty into the pool which forms the spring itself, most of the emanation is undoubtedly collected not far away. Even though such a spring should show high activity it does not mean necessarily that there is highly active material near by. The slow flow and shorter distance of travel are compensated by the greater area of the underground stream and by its intimate contact with a greater amount of weakly emanating material.

The foregoing argument of course does not exclude the possibility of the underground flow touching very active substances but the presence of such material can not be inferred from the existence of a highly radioactive water or gas without other evidence. If a spring happened to be so situated that its waters came in contact with a material which could be classified as even a low grade radioactive ore, and further if it had the large and rapid flow characteristic of most of the springs examined in this work, it seems fairly certain that it would show an activity of a different order of magnitude from those recorded in the tables above.

My thanks are due to Professor R. D. George, Director of the Colorado State Geological Survey, and to his assistants for help in meeting many unexpected difficulties. The Survey has also furnished important information regarding geological formations.

During the work in the field courtesies were extended by Dr. R. B. Moore and Dr. S. C. Lind of the United States Bureau of Mines, and by Professor L. F. Miller formerly of the Colorado School of Mines.

For the drawings accompanying this paper the author is indebted to Mr. J. H. V. Finney.

Hale Physical Laboratory, University of Colorado, Boulder, Colorado.

ART. XXXI.—*Spotted Lakes of Epsomite in Washington and British Columbia;* by OLAF P. JENKINS.[1]

Since April, 1916, large quantities of natural epsom salts have been mined and shipped from the so-called "Spotted Lakes"—two briny lakes, one in Washington and one in British Columbia. These lakes are both on Kruger Mountain, near the international boundary, and

FIG. 1.

FIG. 1.—Large spotted epsomite lake in British Columbia, on Kruger Mountain. Photograph taken during the dry season in July, 1917.

within a few miles of each other, north of Oroville, Washington. The lakes have no outlets and the material occurs as a precipitation from the evaporation of waters saturated with magnesium sulphate. The mineral formed is *epsomite,* $MgSO_4.7H_2O$.

The accompanying figures show why these lakes are ordinarily described as being spotted. The dark spots represent shallow pools of brine, immediately beneath which are solid rock-like masses of epsomite. The areas between the dark spots are white because they are dry,

[1] This examination was made by the writer while engaged in work for the Washington State Geological Survey during the summer of 1917.

and a thin film of an efflorescence of these salts which covers them produces this appearance. Beneath this white film is mud, black, foul, and treacherous, which has been the cause of the miring of cattle in the past. During the rainy season the whole lake is covered with water, and then only a faint appearance of the circles is visible beneath the surface of the fresh water.

The smaller of these lakes, but the one more nearly devoid of any other mineral matter except magnesium

Fig. 2.

Fig. 2.—Small spotted epsomite lake north of Oroville, Washington. See explanatory cross-section, fig. 4.

sulphate, is in the state of Washington. It has an area of only four acres and a depth (determined by drilling) of 30 feet. It has gone by the names of Salts Lake, Poison Lake, Spotted Lake, and Bitter Lake. It is high up in the hills (1000 feet above Oroville, or 2000 feet above sea-level), in a little depression scooped out by former glacial action. It has no outlet whatever, and lies close to bed rock, which consists of metamorphic rocks, dolomites, and shales. Near by, but at a slightly higher elevation, are other smaller lakes or ponds of comparatively fresh water. In one of these is a deposit of marl, which contains many little fresh water shells.

The drainage of this basin region is less than half of a square mile, but in this area are numerous metalliferous mineral claims on deposits supposed to prove their value in copper content. The mineral deposits consist largely of pyrite and pyrrhotite bodies, and the presence of these, occurring in metamorphic magnesian rocks, suggests very pointedly the source and origin of the magnesium sulphate in the lake.

FIG. 3.

FIG. 3.—View of Oroville with Osoyoos Lake at the right, Okanogen River in the foreground, and Kruger Mountain in the background, with arrow pointing to situation of the small epsomite lake shown in fig. 2.

Not a vestige of visible organic life is left in this lake, but the black mud contains considerable decayed organic matter.

In mining the epsomite, first the solid salts were dug out of the spots or pools and hauled away. Later, water was obtained from a neighboring fresh-water lake, when not enough was to be had in the salts lake itself, and this was used to dissolve out the salts from beneath the mud, or from the pools where it was impracticable to get all the salts out by digging. The water was allowed to run down through holes in the mud, and was taken out by means of little gasoline pumps, sent back again through other holes and pumped out again, until finally, when saturated it was piped to the salts plant on the railroad, over two miles away.

It was discovered, however, that the spots represented the base of inverted cone-shaped or cylindrical masses of salts, the tip of the cone being attached to a lower horizontal bed of solid epsomite beneath, in places as much as fifteen feet in thickness. This fact was important to those working the deposit, for it was found that

FIG. 4.

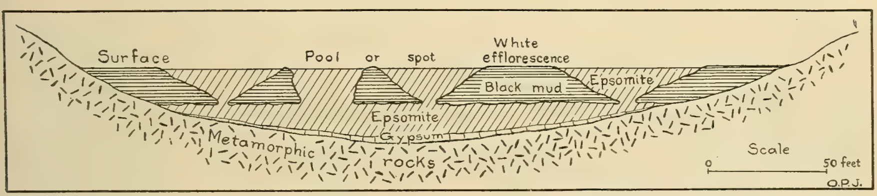


FIG. 4.—Hypothetical vertical cross-section to show structure of small epsomite lake north of Oroville, Washington.

this bed could be tunneled into and timbered, for the overlying black mud was quite impervious to water. The epsomite in this lower bed is in the form of large clear colorless crystals, some of which might be measured in feet. Upon exposure of this material to the air, a white frosted surface coating is formed, and it loses part of the water of crystallization, probably becoming the mineral *kieserite,* $MgSO_4.H_2O$. In time the whole mineral changes into this new substance. Sodium sulphate and other allied salts are practically absent.

In drilling to the bottom of the lake, when first prospecting, it was found that beneath the epsomite was a thin layer of gypsum, and between the gypsum and the bed rock was a thin layer of clayey material. The drilling was done because it was erroneously thought that the lake was in the crater of a volcano, and that it would have great depth.

In handling the salts at the plant, the operating company had to separate, when necessary, the included mud particles from the epsomite. This was done by dissolving, settling, and reprecipitation from a supersaturated solution caused by heating, evaporating, and then cooling the clear solution. Much of the material, however, needed no further attention save pulverizing and packing. All of it was graded and packed in such a way that it would not deteriorate through loss of its water of crystallization. The reprecipitated crystals were dried first with a great deal of care.

The large lake, which lies in Canada, is about seventy acres in extent. Its depth and structure were not yet determined when the writer visited the place, but its surface appearance was much like that of the smaller lake.

Fig. 5.

Fig. 5.—Same spotted lake as that in fig. 1. This photograph was taken after the rainy season.

At that time the first work was being done—that of removal of the salts from the shallow pools. The brine itself in the pools was so strong that it was very heavy and very slimy like the white of an egg, and had an offensive odor. The work was accomplished by shoveling the salts into wheelbarrows, wheeling them along planks laid down on the mud, and dumping their contents upon platforms on the shore.

The writer was told that seasonal changes, and even the daily changes of temperature, noticeably affect this lake. After the rainy season the spots are nearly hidden beneath the surface of the water covering. In the later part of the summer the brine of the lake is quite concentrated and during cool nights the salts crystallize out of the warmer daytime solution.

A peculiar form of algæ grows in this larger lake near the surface. A film of sodium sulphate is also present near the surface, which is absent in the other lake. Other briny lakes in this country were visited, and it was found that in most of these sodium sulphate predominated and also that extensive growth of algæ was noticeable. There is one such sodium sulphate lake within a short distance, just over the hill from this large epsomite lake. In some of these lakes faint traces of the spotted appearance could be detected in the arrangement of the mud beneath the surface of the water.

Discussion in regard to structure of the mineral deposit and to origin[2] and source of the material will necessarily have to be confined to the smaller lake in Washington, where the writer spent more time studying conditions. In this regard, let us go back to the description of this lake, and its surrounding territory. In addition to what was said, the pyrite and pyrrhotite deposits were oxidized to a depth of several feet from the surface to a mixture of iron oxides, quartz, clay, and tiny crystals of gypsum. Leading from these deposits to the lake were drainage ways, on the surface of which, in places, showed whitish alkali streaks.

These facts suggest the possibility that the sulphates and sulphuric acid, known to form from the oxidation of pyrite and pyrrhotite through the action of meteoric water and air, acted upon the dolomite and other magnesian rocks, forming magnesium sulphate, which is soluble, and calcium sulphate, which is much less soluble. The result was that the magnesium sulphate was carried to the lake in solution. What little calcium sulphate came with it was precipitated first, being less soluble, as a thin layer of gypsum over the sediment already deposited on the bottom of the lake.

This explains the formation of the horizontal layer of epsomite above the gypsum. The layer of mud on top of the epsomite layer is accounted for by the washing of sediment into the lake. The fresher water allowed some organic life to thrive, but with the increasing salinity of the lake, due to increased aridity, the organisms

[2] F. M. Handy: An investigation of the mineral deposits of northern Okanogan County, State College of Washington, Bulletin No. 100, Pullman, Wash. (Suggestion is made regarding the origin of the salts in the smaller lake, which coincides with the theory in the present paper.)

must have perished, and their decaying carbonaceous remains were added to the general clayey mass already accumulated.

The cones appear to have been formed by the gradual penetration of rising solutions from the lower layer and by its recrystallization in this newly acquired position. Each crystallization of the material helped to open up, by its expansion on forming crystals, a larger space, until the surface was reached. The appearance on the surface is that of circular bodies, or of spots when viewed from a distance.

The expanding force of the crystallization of magnesium sulphate is well illustrated at the salts plant. The operators state that at times during winter, after a sudden drop of temperature, a saturated solution, passing from tank to tank in a three-inch pipe, has crystallized with such force of expansion as to split the pipe from end to end. It was also found that the crystallizing salts could not be kept in wooden tanks, for the percolating solutions would work into the cracks and, upon crystallizing, would open up the joints between the boards, causing them to leak so that they had to be lined with metal.

The principal uses of epsomite are in medicine, in the tanning industry, and in the manufacture of various compounds of magnesium. It is artificially prepared elsewhere from dolomite and magnesite, and before the European war it was shipped to this country as a by-product of the potash industry in Germany.

State College of Washington,
Pullman, Washington.

Art. XXXII.—*A Study of some American Fossil Cycads, Part VIII.*[1] *Notes on Young Floral Structures;* by G. R. Wieland.

The developing fruits of the silicified cycadeoids though variable in conservation, and in the smallest forms merely casts with indistinct traces of cell structure, seldom fail to show points of interest. In some instances the central cone fails of conservation, in others the outer disk. But usually in even the smallest casts the organs and tissue zones are delimited by color gradation with varying forms of granulation; or the tissues are traversed by sphenocrystic banding, often of much beauty. Especially the palisaded zone of interseminal scales and seed stems is from the early stages of growth on, a sharply outlined part of the flower bud. In fact young fertile organs but a fraction of a millimeter in length and barely visible to the unaided eye are not uncommon. An example is shown in American Fossil Cycads by the writer, Vol. II, plate 35, photograph 4 (Carnegie Publ., No. 34). In most young fruits the seeds early take on highly characteristic outlines, and display the principal testal regions. Such seeds may not show cell structure, but it is instructive to find the forms but a few millimeters in length far sharper ribbed than mature seeds. Disappearance of ancestral ribbing is thus in evidence.

The staminate organs, on the contrary, seldom appear in the earlier stages as more than a cupule-like disk. Even in larger forms the outlines of the individual stamens may be indistinct; but considering their parenchymatous, fugacious nature the staminate structures are often so well silicified, as to repay scanning with care. Although the ovulate outlines appear early, the initial synangial growth is late. Young disks are for a considerable time quite devoid of synangial traces.

With the character of conservation thus briefly recalled, it seems worth while to append a somewhat detailed description of a young bisporangiate bud found during the early part of the present year while studying a wedge

[1] Part VII of these studies appeared in this Journal for August 1914 (vol. 38, p. 117). References to the earlier parts and supplementary articles are there given.

of the U. S. National Museum type *Cycadeoidea painei.*[2] Thus far attention has been specially directed to this type specimen mainly because of remarkable preservation of the vegetative structures. The trunk exemplifies one of the most distinctive of all branching species with

FIG. 1.

FIG. 1 [55]. *Cycadeoidëa Painei.* Drawing on photograph of the longitudinal section of a very young bisporangiate bud emergent between leaf bases. Enlarged 5 times. The arrow (D) shows the thin disk enclosing the central cone. The elongate receptacular cushion supports the developing zone of seed stems and interseminal scales. [To the left there is slight displacement of leaf bases due to armor fracture.]

[2] See description in American Fossil Cycads, Vol. II, p. 85. To Professor R. S. Bassler of the United States National Museum we are indebted for having the wedge on which this study depends, cut with care and precision.

small leaf bases. There is very little suggestion of fruits in the outer armor, which is not deep, though well conserved above, as betokened by the even black color and rough outer surface. Below, the regularly thinner armor shows that excision was going on. It was accordingly an agreeable surprise to find on the radial surface of the trunk wedge only a few centimeters out from the apical bud, a small bract-enveloped fruit cut nearly in the longitudinal plane; and interest grew when it was seen that although the diameter of the ovulate cone was only 5 millimeters the seed zone was far more developed than in the numerous cones where minuteness of this zone indicates the monœcious condition known to occur in some species.

On cutting the longitudinal section, fig. 1 [or fig. 55 of these studies] it was found under the microscope that the young disk was also clearly outlined as a thin envelope evenly investing the central cone inside the ramentaceous bracts. Study, however, depends on this single section. As in the case of "coal ball" seeds like *Lagenostoma lomaxi* of nearly the same size as the present cone and its disk, so in such small isolated fruits it is oftenest the single section fortuitously cut which is all that can readily be secured—not the exactly median longitudinal, or the serial transverse sections one would so much wish. So, here, after the loss of saw cuts there was no further section of critical interest which could be cut from this bud. Nevertheless the section passes near enough to the median plane to show the general form of the ovulate cone and allow the inference that three or four small deeply stained areas between the outer disk and the apex of the cone are the short decurved tips of microsporophylls of the spurred Cycadeoidean type. It is also to be inferred that a small dome was already formed by the spurs; while the even thickness and smooth outlines of the disk indicate that neither pinnules nor synangia had as yet developed. Curiously enough the scalariform tracheids of the woody cylinder of the peduncle show remarkably distinct preservation at certain points, even extending well up into the strobilus itself. Such tissues have already been figured from much larger immature cones, being unmistakable evidence that the woody cylinder of the Cycadeoids was primitively scalariform.

(See American Fossil Cycads by the author, Vol. I, fig. 80 *b*.)

With these explanations the following measurements may be intelligibly read:

Greatest length of flower and peduncle..	30±	Millimeters
Diameter of cone, disk, and bract husk	10	"
Diameter of woody cylinder of peduncle	2	"
Diameter of peduncle	4·5	"
Cone and disk length	10	"
Diameter of ovulate cone	5	"
Greatest length of young seed stems	2	"
Diameter of seed stems	·2	"
Disk thickness	·3	"

What light, if any, does a flower like that before us throw on the nature of other ancient flowers, and on the nature of seed or cone protecting envelopes? In the first place it may be adduced that some evidence has been found for an irregular splitting of the *Cycadeoidea* disk as it divides to form the apical dome. The flowers were not always symmetrically divided into some given number of microsporophylls. Furthermore in the ovulate flower of monœcious forms the disk aborts. Therefore the first step backward to a pseudovarian envelope is already visible. As already emphasized,[3] cone reduction in some of the perfect Cycadeoid flowers ending in a single erect seed must have occurred just as readily as in Conifers. The *Torreya* type is here instructive; and the staminate disk enclosing an aborted ovule in *Tumboa* indicates that the ovule as well as the disk may abort. Furthermore the Permo-Carboniferous *Gnetopsis* with its somewhat imperfectly fused toothed cupule enclosing a small group of three or four seeds, presents ancient generalized features worth considering in connection with aplosporophyllous gymnosperms. The toothed form of the Cycadeoid dome suggests that the Gnetopsid pseudovarian covering may well have been derived from a fertile staminate disk, or from more or less symmetrically fused leaves originally staminate.[4] And still

[3] American Fossil Cycads, Vol. I, page 244.

[4] Heer in the Flora Fossilis Arctica, Plate XV, figures as the "seed of a *Zamites* (?)" from Kome, ? a fruit closely associated with Cycadeous fronds, and exactly corresponding to the fruit of *Williamsoniella,* in both form and size. In such fruits the frond tips envelope the central cone like the hull of a small hickory nut, and are not decurved. They may be bipartite.

further significance attaches to *Gnetopsis* because one or more of the three or four seeds may abort, proving, if further proof were needed, how easily the monovarian condition is reached.

It is thus seen that the known facts indicate for the ancient plants, especially those of Carboniferous and even earlier time, wide cycles of change in both bi- and unisexual fructification, as well as in all types of floral or pseudovarian envelopes. That in the course of geologic time cupules often resulted from the fusion of sterile organs, is assumed. But that *reduction* of a staminate disk a little beyond the growth stage seen in fig. 1, coördinately with cone reduction to the monovarian condition, would result in features such as are presented by ancient seed types, is a fact of extraordinary interest. That the fusion of a *Lagenostoma*-like cupule with an inner ovarian envelope could result in the bundle supplied outer integument of amphivascular Cycadeous seeds is a reasonable suggestion; and that a disk become sterile could also assume such a secondary function is just as reasonable. Moreover the change could take place, as geologic time goes, almost instantaneously. The fact that some of the largest known gymnosperm seeds are also the earliest and most complex ought to have weight with botanists who regard with doubt the theory of secondary and complex origin of testal structures, and see no analogy between seed and flower.

In any study of the origin of seed coats one of the oldest and best known critically important types is *Pachytesta*, represented by the two species *incrassata* and *gigantea*, so superbly illustrated by Brongniart in the closing plates of his "Graines Fossiles Silicifiées." The Pachytestas are not only amongst the oldest of known seeds but striking because of their great size, symmetric radiospermy, and highly developed amphivascularity. The inner envelope is fully as complex as that of various endotestal seeds; while the outer envelope is entirely free and has a bundle system virtually as complex as that of a cycadeoid disk. It is even apparent that the inner envelope exhibited some apical division. The bundles of both envelopes have marked development of scalariform tracheids, uniformly present in ancient seed bundles and in the Cycadeoid peduncles and many ancient parent stems.

The structure of the *Pachytesta* vascular system is, in fact, much too highly developed, much too reminiscent of stem and leaf tracheidal organization, to permit the assumption of a uniformly direct evolution of spores and spore coats into seeds to go unchallenged. Were no transitions from staminate to "unessential" organs or envelopes anywhere in evidence, were fusions of fertile organs not such omnipresent features of flowers, and finally were the *amphivascular flowers* and the *amphivascular seeds* less in evidence in ancient, and more frequent in modern times, the fusion theory of seed and flower would be more difficult to defend.

But let the seed of *Gnetopsis* be further recalled. Solms, in commenting on the view that the loose apical tissues and the attached long feathery filaments were devices for both wind and water transportation, remarks that "we cannot grant more than this"! Similarly botanists apparently find difficulty in admitting that any explanation or theory of the origin of seed coats can also have a bearing on floral organization. But a fair attention to the facts here briefly outlined with due consideration of the structures cited, and especially their appearance in geologic time, emphasizes the larger truth that seed envelopes and floral structures are not of uniformly direct origin. It must be admitted that either fertile or sterile pseudovarian envelopes like that of *Gnetopsis* could also arise long antecedent to the development of seed coats comparable to those of *Gnetum,* or *Cycadeoidea,* or *Physostoma.* And this possibility suggests Paleozoic, not Mesozoic development of Angiospermous seeds and flowers. The manner in which essentially simple courses of change progressing more or less continuously in all the ancient lines, resulted in diverse seed and floral structures, thus comes within the scientific vision.

Art. XXXIII.—*Means of Solving Crystal Problems;* by John M. Blake. (Article 6.)

In several preceding articles published in this Journal the writer has drawn attention to methods by which the measuring and description of crystals can be much facilitated. It would appear that the early selection of methods of treating crystal problems, and subsequent too close adherence to the original plan, has seriously impeded the progress of crystal study, and at the same time the problems involved have been made needlessly complex.

The early adoption of the theory requiring the use of axes and parameters has led to the almost universal practice of treating the planes singly and in pairs. This practice has had the effect of diverting attention from the very important relation existing between the planes composing a zone as well as the equally important relation between the several zones enclosing a crystal form. If we make a complete change in our system of studying crystals, and have our work conform more especially to the zone point of view, we may then dispense with the use of axes, and can manage both rectangular and oblique crystals with equal facility.

It will be noted that in article 3 in this Journal, December 1916, and in articles 4 and 5 in March and May 1917, easy plotting-and-mechanical methods are employed almost entirely in place of tedious and complicated algebraic work. The gnomonic projection of the crystal planes opens up a promising means of crystal study. When the planes are once plotted on the sphere for the purpose of projection, their relative positions will be rigidly held, and the whole system of planes can be handled as a unit by simply moving the sphere into new positions. We can then study the plane system of the crystal by making various projections of the intersection points where the plane normals pierce a plane tangent to the sphere.

We find certain positions of this tangent plane where the rows of normal piercing points lie in parallel equally spaced lines. It is these particular positions that yield interesting results. It will be seen later in anorthite, that these positions occur at right angles to the axes of the several zones. One projection plot may have few or no intermediate fractional plane positions, and again another plot may have a general converging trend of the zone rows, and have many fractional plane positions, but notwithstanding this, we may easily trace the presence of equal spacings.

In the past, the axial system was applied to rectangular forms with apparent success, and such success probably led to the original adoption of the system of referring the planes to axes, but we find that when we have to deal with oblique crystals, the axial method of referring the planes leads to confusion, and this indicates that the axial plan of reckoning the planes is not of universal application. It is altogether probable that the symbols of the planes as at present understood may eventually be replaced by an entirely different form of notation. Farther on, some mention will be found relating to this matter.

Fig. 1.

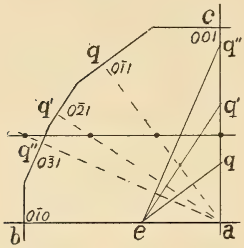
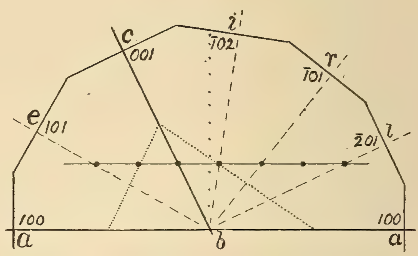


Fig. 2.



We will show by means of a diagram this want of general adaptability of the axial system. First, we give a rectangular zone occurring on potassium sulphate. Fig. 1 represents one quadrant of this zone. The angles and symbols for the planes are taken from Tutton's Crystallography, 1911. The cut shows the crystal planes of this zone edge-on as in a cross section, and it also gives the direction of the planes. Lines are drawn from point *e* on the axis *b* leading upward to the right. These lines are made parallel to the plane edges, and are drawn for the purpose of showing the relative lengths or parameters they cut off on the axes *b* and *c*, and these lengths are found to be in the ratio of 1, 2, and 3, which correspond correctly with the symbols 011, 021, and 031. A line which may be considered as a tangent line has been drawn on this diagram (fig. 1) parallel to *b e* for the purpose of showing its intersection with the normals, and the intersection points are marked by dots. It will be seen that the dots are equally spaced, and that the spaces measured from the dots to the axis *c* correspond to the above given ratios.

We cannot manage an oblique zone by the axial plan with equal success. Take, for example, the oblique zone of epidote shown in fig. 2. The angles are taken from Dana's Mineralogy 1906, and the same lettering is used for the planes as well as the same length is given the axes, which are marked off on the diagram by two finely dotted lines, which cut off portions of the two oblique axes *a,* and *c,* and should thus outline the unit oblique octahedron. We find, however, that neither one of these dotted lines comes parallel to the plane edge *e* or 101, or to the plane edge *r* or $\bar{1}01$, as it should, and no other selection of axial lengths will bring about, simultaneously, both of these parallel positions.

The application of the tangent equal space system is shown on this same diagram, fig. 2. The trial tangent line, drawn for the purpose of this comparison, is made parallel to the line *a b,* and its intersection with the plane normals is shown by equally spaced dots. Thus the equal spacing method of managing an oblique zone works successfully, although two of the intersection points happen to be lacking in this particular case.

We will now illustrate a part the plotting sphere can take in making a general study of the relations of the planes of the crystal. For this purpose three species of feldspar have been in part projected by the use of the sphere.

Orthoclase is a monoclinic potash feldspar. The angles given by Des Cloiseaux, together with his stereographic projection, were used as a basis for the six gnomonic projections shown in fig. 3. The first member of this series of six is based on the same prismatic zone that was adopted by Des Cloiseaux in his stereographic projection, see Min. 1862. We find on comparing the first and second members in this series of plots, that there is a most striking similarity of form to be seen in the figures developed by the normal intersections with the tangent planes, and to all appearance there are identical spacings in these two figures, except that the

FIG. 3.

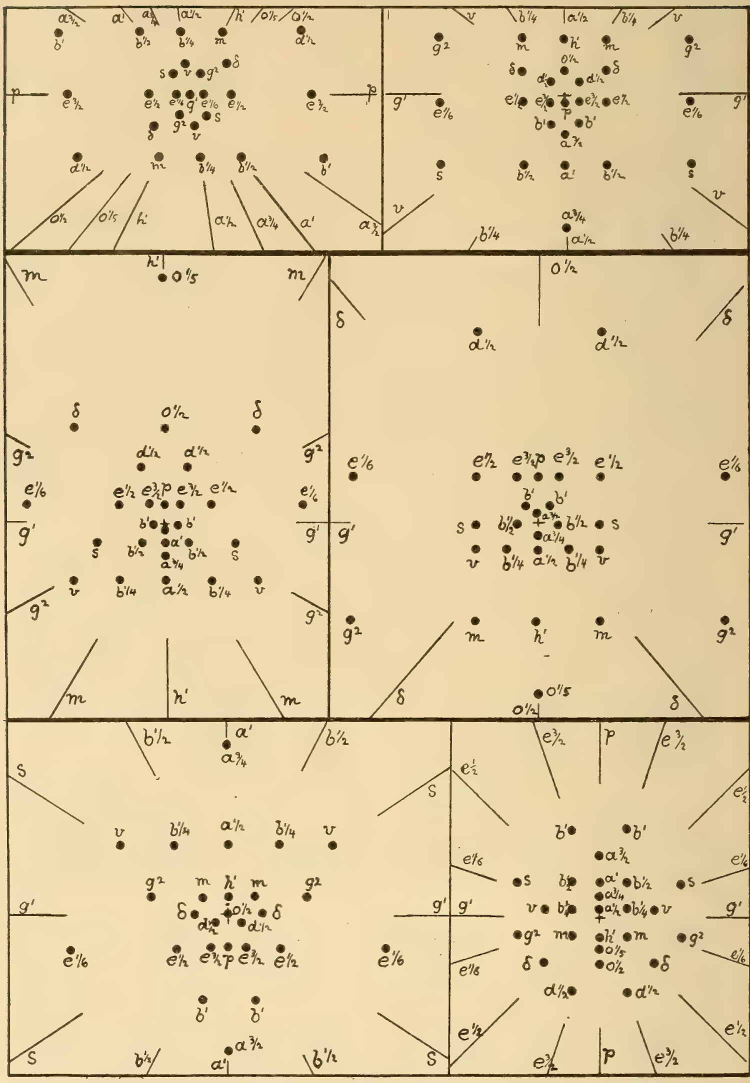


FIG. 3. Orthoclase.

second one has a more rectangular outline. This is a remarkable showing when we take into account that the two projections were made nearly ninety degrees apart, and that the two similar figures result from different sets of normal contacts made with the two widely separated projection planes. This development of like figures cannot be a coincidence simply, but must have a meaning. A further study of these orthoclase projections will show other minor resemblances or coincidences if we take into account a difference of scale. There is, therefore, much connected with the relations among the planes in this mineral species that deserves investigation.

ALBITE is a tricinic species of soda feldspar. It yields some features of interest when tested by the projection method. Six projections of albite have already been given in article 4, and to save space only two of those recently projected will be selected for our present purpose. The angles calculated by Des Cloiseaux and his stereographic projection were made the starting

FIG. 4.

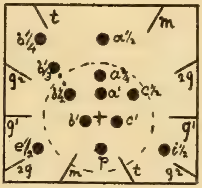


FIG. 4. Albite.

point for the present trial of the method. Seven projections were made in this recent trial, and they were found to give the characteristic equal spacings.

One of these projection trials is shown in fig. 4. It has the same basal zone as that used by Des Cloiseaux in his stereographic projection. It affords an insight into his system of assigning symbols, and a point of interest is that it gives a very compact assemblage of the planes. A model of albite had been cut with all of the planes tangent to a sphere, and therefore, this model gave an unbiased development to all the planes. When used as a test, the model showed a prism development in favor of the prism selected by Des Cloiseaux on which he based his stereographic projection and his indices for the planes. The figure 141 in his Mineralogy, however, showed a decided prism elongation in another direction, and this latter prism has been used as a base for the projection shown in fig 5. This last selection of prism gives the most symmetrical assemblage of the planes of any of the albite projections, and would have yielded a set of symbols nearly free from fractions by the axial system as used by Des Cloiseaux. It will be noticed that the projection fig. 5 covers the largest area. The contrast is shown in figures 4 and 5.

To obtain the projection shown in fig. 5 rotate the upper front of the crystal downwards 116 degrees. This brings the hidden plane *p* to the front side.

ANORTHITE is a lime feldspar, and is a typical triclinic species. It gives an interesting series of projections. Fig. 7 shows nine of these projections, all starting from the plane *g'* and fig 8 gives six of the cross zones, making in all fifteen. The possibilities of additional zones have not been exhausted, but they would

FIG. 5.

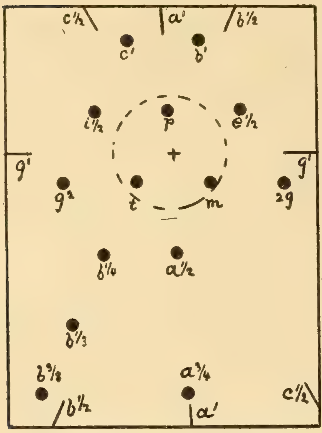


FIG. 6.

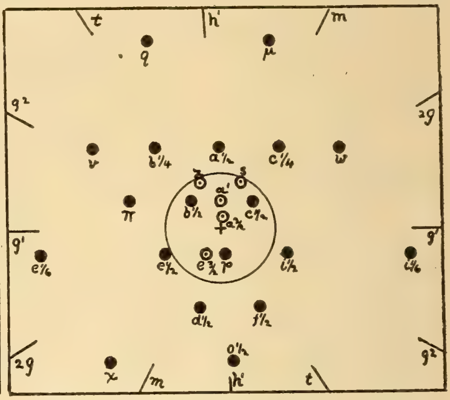


FIG. 5. Albite. FIG. 6. Anorthite.

take up more space, and those given will answer our present purpose. The members of this series of plots can be referred to by numbers leading from left to right, and thus following down each of the several columns. The zones are read off from left to right from the front side of the crystal.

The gnomonic projection fig. 6 is made from the same position of the crystal that Des Cloiseaux selected for his stereographic projection. It will assist in picking out the planes by their position in the zones in the further reduced plots. These several prism zones were brought in place for the corresponding projections by rotating the front of the crystal downwards, thus bringing them successively into position.

It will be noted that this series contains a number of quite symmetrical plots, and each one of these fifteen plots includes or should include all the planes, and could be used for a description of the crystal. Some of the plane positions have been inked to make them more prominent, and to aid in tracing out the more striking of the equal spaced zone rows. Planes that take a prominent position in one plot may take a subordinate position in another, and almost invariably these subordinate planes, themselves, will be found to fall into zones, and these zones although possibly not prominent in the projection plot, yet will be found to cross at the plane position selected, and these subordinate planes are consequently subject to the zone law, however complicated their symbols might become if assigned to them by the axial system of notation.

There are several of these anorthite plots that could be made the basis of a new and different set of symbols by the axial system. There has been no well-established guide to follow in these cases and one author admits that it is generally expedient to follow after the writer making the first description of a species.

If we examine the anorthite projections we find that the space ratio, that is, space divided by radius, varies with the direction taken by each projected zone, and it varies in the individual plots. One exception was noted in plots 4, 6, and 14, where the spaces measured horizontally appear to be equal. Besides the exceptions just mentioned, there are other points of interest to which attention has been drawn in this paper. In the previous papers, methods have been suggested by which the preliminary work on crystals can be more easily accomplished. By utilizing such means more ground can be worked over, and interesting and important features may be discovered. These points of interest, when given proper consideration, will tend to promote progress in crystal work.

While reviewing the results brought out in these several gnomonic projections, as they were being developed by the graphic methods from the plots of the

FIG. 7.

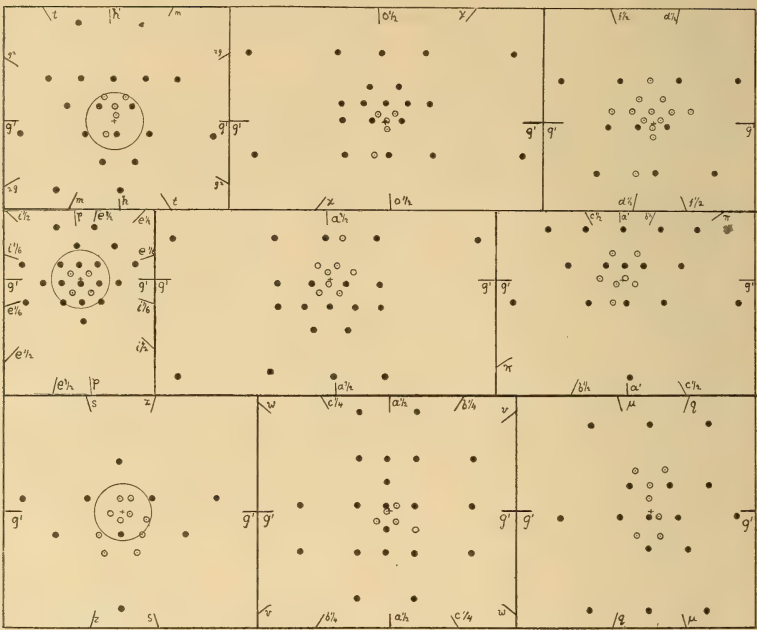


FIG. 7. Anorthite.

FIG. 8.

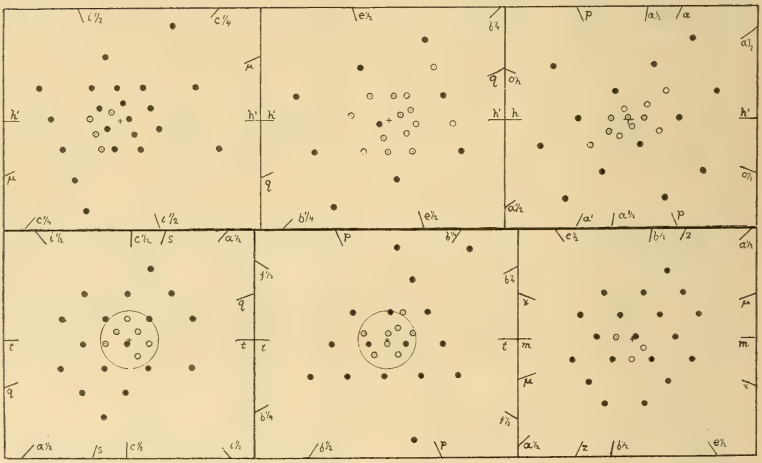


FIG. 8. Anorthite.

planes made on the sphere, the first impression was, that, since the planes were presented from a number of viewpoints, and as a rule all their normal intersections with certain tangent planes fell into equally spaced rows or zones, that from this fact, taken in connection with their several positions on the crystal, there could be gathered data from which it would be possible to make an exact determination of the angular distances between the planes. We would thus be on the verge of solving a most important crystal problem.

As the development of the projections progresses the conviction grows that there must be a law that could be expressed or made apparent by tangents, and that this law may be more fundamental even than the general laws relating to crystal development, and that the study of this basic tangent law by analytical methods should precede the study of the laws that relate more specifically to crystal growth.

It would appear that Naumann hoped to solve all crystal problems by analytical geometry, but it may be suggested that the want of success as it would now appear, was due to failure at the start to fully grasp the meaning of a fundamental natural law upon which to base the analytical treatment. The existence of zones of planes was of course understood, but their importance as relating to crystal development was not fully taken into account, and the axial theory was allowed to take the precedence.

Many attempts have been made since Naumann's time to coördinate the results of years of work on crystals, and various plans have been tried without effecting a complete and satisfactory solution. If we can once take such a comprehensive view of the situation as will lead to the discovery of a fundamental law which we have reason to believe does exist, we may then expect that a very complicated situation will be resolved and an entirely new point of view be reached. A basic law, like for example the law of gravitation, should admit of successful treatment by analytical methods. The approach of such a desirable result as the complete utilization of such a law, may seem far distant in view of the present complicated conditions and want of coördination of all the observed facts, and it is probable that many successive steps will have to be taken before reaching a rational explanation of all that relates to crystal growth.

A general examination and measurement of many crystals tends to show that each crystal form has allotted to it a limited number of planes. A gnomonic projection of a certain crystal might appear to suggest the need of additional planes in order to carry out the symmetry and balance. The experiment mentioned in this Journal, May 1915, in which crystal surfaces were regrown, was designed to favor the development of all possible planes, but this plan does not extend the limit to any great extent. There are various forms of hemihedrism in which certain planes are suppressed, and there is a probability that by means of a series of gnomonic projections, we may get an insight into some of the reasons why certain planes should have the precedence.

A potash alum sphere was polished and grown. Two additional planes not commonly noticed were thus developed, and when plotted, these planes harmonized and took their places in gnomonic projections of alum made on the cubic, the octahedral, and the dodecahedral planes. But there are planes that have been credited to the monometric system that would not have thus harmonized; but structural differences occur in different nonometric species, as shown for instance in the cubic and the octahedral cleavages, and in other ways.

The use of the plotting sphere for locating and studying the relations of the crystal planes was adopted by the writer in 1864. The appearance of an article which was probably in the Analen der Physic und Chemie, which gave the gnomonic projections of sulphate of copper and datholite, that showed the equal spacing feature, turned his attention to the importance of making such projections as a help in crystal study, and the experiment of using a plotting sphere to reduce the amount of preliminary work in making gnomonic projections proved so successful even with the imperfect apparatus at first used, that a carefully shaped sphere was constructed by the writer early in 1865. This sphere is described in article 4.

The first article of this series was published in 1866. It related to the importance of measuring complete crystal zones. This method of measuring was intended to facilitate plotting on the sphere, although not so mentioned in the article. At that time the new system of drawing which required the use of the plotting sphere had been brought into practical form and was employed in making the plan-drawing of gaylussite which was given in art. 5, and also the perspective drawing of the same species given in the same article. Some descriptions of other mineral species appeared in this Journal at about the same period. Then for many years it became necessary to discontinue the study of crystals. The work was resumed about a decade ago and the drawings and projections of albite were completed as given in art. 3, and later some of the earlier work has been reviewed and the present article, 6, includes some more recent observations.

As regards plotting spheres, hollow school globes are now so well made from paper pulp, that the exercise of a little more care in perfecting their shape will make them excellent plotting spheres. If found necessary, the spherical figure could be perfected by local abrasion. There may be a tendency to expand in damp weather, and to stick in a too-closely fitted metal equatorial ring, which difficulty could probably be avoided by making the ring of the same material as the sphere.

The writer is indebted to Prof. T. L. Walker's Crystallography 1914 for an account of an equal "pace" system by Dr. Victor Goldschmidt, but in that account there was no mention of the use of a plotting sphere upon which to make approximate calculations. The fact that the contribution from Dr. Goldschmidt is along lines parallel to that of the writer, is very fortunate, as it will help to further the cause of reform in crystallographic methods, and when a more general interest is awakened in crystal study, we may expect that coöperative efforts will bring about a generally acceptable solution of many unsolved crystal problems.

We have endeavored in this article to give some idea of the usefulness of the plotting sphere in bringing to light points of importance which might otherwise easily pass unnoticed. The field for this kind of exploration is very large, and it has remained almost untouched.

Observations relating to zones of planes and their investigation by the tangent method, lead us to anticipate that important developments may be expected to follow from the application of some form of mathematical analysis. For the present, the way is still open to use the means of investigation that have been described in these articles.

The unequal expansion of crystals in different directions by temperature changes will affect the crystal angles, and complicate plans for attaining mathematical exactness, and this fact leads us to consider the possibilities of critical temperatures for various compounds at which certain values will be reached.

The whole problem of crystal growth has not yet yielded to attempts at complete explanation, and if we may judge by the past, it is probable that there will be a constant supply of material for study that will keep up the interest in crystals for an indefinite period.

New Haven, Conn.,
Sept., 1918.

ART. XXXIV.—*On the Separation of Germanium from Arsenic by the Distillation of the Chloride in the Presence of a Chromate;* by PHILIP E. BROWNING and SEWELL E. SCOTT.

(Contribution from the Kent Chemical Laboratory of Yale Univ.—ccciv.)

In a recent paper from this laboratory[1] we described a modification of Buchanan's method[2] for the separation of germanium from arsenic in which the modifications consisted of a simplified form of apparatus for the distillation, and the substitution of potassium permanganate for the current of chlorine used by Buchanan. An excuse for the presentation of this modified method was to avoid the necessity of the use of chlorine gas which involved certain unpleasant features and a rather more elaborate form of apparatus than is convenient for quick qualitative tests.

The object of the use of oxidizing agents in this process is to convert any arsenic present into the arsenic condition and thus prevent the formation of volatile arsenious chloride which would distill over with the germanium chloride. The present paper is a description of another modification in which chromic acid is used to bring about the oxidation. Kessler[3] has used the reaction between chromic acid and arsenious acid as the basis of a method for the volumetric estimation of arsenious acid and one of us applied the same reaction in a paper published from this laboratory[4] for the estimation of chromic acid.

The apparatus used may be briefly described as follows: The distillation flask consisted of a Pyrex glass Erlenmeyer beaker of about 75 cm^3 capacity fitted with a two hole rubber stopper. Through one of these openings a bent glass tube was inserted, the other end of which was placed just below the surface of about 3 cm^3 of water in an ordinary test tube immersed in a beaker containing crushed ice or cold water to aid the condensation. Through the second opening in the stopper another tube was inserted so as to have its end about 1 cm below the surface of the liquid to be distilled. This tube was con-

[1] This Journal, (4) **46**, 313, 1917.
[2] J. Ind. and Eng. Chem., **8**, 585, 1916.
[3] Pogg. Anal., **95**, 204, 1855.
[4] This Journal, (4) **1**, 35, 1896.

nected through a wash bottle with a carbon dioxide generator, so that the gas could be used to facilitate the boiling of the liquid, the distillation of the volatile chloride and finally aid in the removal of any chlorine which might result from the action of the hydrochloric acid upon the excess of chromate present.

In this flask the material, consisting of a mixture of arsenious oxide and germanium oxide, was placed and in our experiments about 5 cm³ of a 10 per cent solution of potassium dichromate, together with a few drops of sulphuric acid. This mixture was then warmed for about a minute when the oxide dissolved and the arsenious acid was oxidized to arsenic acid. About 10 cm³ of strong hydrochloric acid was added and the distillation was made in a current of carbon dioxide until about one half of the liquid was distilled, and the current of carbon dioxide was continued until the liquid in the distillation flask was cool.

The distillate was then tested by hydrogen sulphide to detect the presence of the yellow As_2S_3, or the white GeS_2. The results follow in the Table.

TABLE I.

	As_2O_3 present grm.	GeO_2 present grm.	10 $K_2Cr_2O_7$ present cm³	Strong HCl present cm³	Water present cm³	Result on treating distillate with H_2O
(1)	0·0500	......	5	10	..	No ppt.
(2)	0·2000	......	5	10	..	No ppt.
(3)	0·5000	......	5	10	..	As_2S_3
(4)	0·3000	......	5	10	..	As_2S_3
(5)	0·3000	......	5	10	..	As_2S_3
(6)	0·2000	......	5	3	5	No ppt.
(7)	0·2500	......	5	6	5	No ppt.
(8)	......	......	5	5	5	No ppt.
(9)	......	0·0050	5	6	5	GeS_2
(10)	......	0·0005	5	10	5	GeS_2
(11)	0·1000	0·0010	5	10	5	GeS_2
(12)	0·1000	0·0005	5	10	5	GeS_2

Experiments 1-7 were carried out with varying amounts of arsenious oxide only, to determine the amount of arsenic which would be oxidized by about 0·5 grm. of potassium dichromate. It was found that 0·2500 grm. of arsenious oxide could be successfully oxidized by this amount of that reagent. In experiments (6) and (7) some water and less hydrochloric acid was used without interfering with the oxidation. In experiment (8) neither arsenic nor germanium were present, the object being to determine the possible interfering action of chlorine evolved upon the test with hydrogen sulphide. The result was satisfactory. In experiments (9) and (10) small amounts of germanium oxide were used and a very satisfactory result was obtained when only 0·0005 grms. was present. Finally in experiments (11) and (12) a mixture of the two oxides was treated according to the method and it was found that 0·0005 grm. of germanium oxide could be readily detected when present with 0·1 grm. arsenious oxide.

This reaction is also well adapted to the use of the simplified form of apparatus described in our previous paper.

New Haven, Conn., July, 1918.

ART. XXXV.—*On Mysticocrinus, a new genus of Silurian Crinoidea;* by FRANK SPRINGER. With Plate II.

Among recent collections from the Laurel formation of Niagaran age in southern Indiana, there has appeared a small crinoid of wholly novel type,—one of those aberrant forms which occur from time to time to perplex the systematist and delight the morphologist. It is an Inadunate, superficially resembling the Larviformia, but departing from their general facies in having a dicyclic base. It would seem to be intermediate between the Larviformia and the Fistulata, but without any close connection in either group; in the composition of the cup it resembles the Dendrocrinidae, although wholly unlike them in the primitive character of the arms. In the latter respect it is somewhat similar to *Haplocrinus,* which has extremely short, unbranched arms, as is shown by a specimen in my possession not yet illustrated. In calling this peculiar form the "mysterious crinoid" we have an appropriate designation which accords well with its strange characters.

MYSTICOCRINUS nov. gen.

(Μυστῖκὸς—mysterious; Κρίνον—lily)

Calyx rigid, globose, contracting at the arm bases, with no indication of loose suture or flexibility in cup or tegmen (thus excluding Flexibilia). Tegmen narrow, probably covered by a pyramid of orals as in *Pisocrinus* and *Symbathocrinus.* Lower brachials do not take part in the formation of the calyx wall, i. e., no interbrachials (excluding Camerata).

Base dicyclic; IBB 3, the small plate in right posterior position. Radianal in primitive position below r.post.-ray. Anal plate 1, large, angular distally, projecting above level of RR. RR 5: the right posterior one (and no other) compound; arm facets curved and excavated, not filling distal face of radials, some of them bounded by processes projecting between the arm bases. Arms uniserial, short, composed of only a few ossicles. Anal opening and tegmen unknown.

MYSTICOCRINUS WILSONI n. sp.

Calyx very small—the size of *Pisocrinus;* flattened below, strongly constricted at the arm bases. Plates tumid, stem circular.

Infrabasals forming a shallow saucer, externally concave; the two larger (compound) plates less than twice the size of the smaller right posterior plate, which is correspondingly enlarged; sutures meeting anterior, right anterior, and left anterior basals. Basals strongly convex, bent outwards and upwards, forming about one third the height of the cup; posterior basal hexagonal, wider than high, subangular below, truncate above; postero-laterals pentagonal, narrower than posterior, and antero-laterals still narrower.

Radianal pentagonal, truncate above and beveling the right lower corner of anal; about one half as high as the succeeding radial. Anal plate very large, sagittæform, higher than wide, beveled laterally by the radianal; apex acuminate, rising almost to height of first secundibrachs; offsets of arrow head resting upon and interlocking with distal margins of posterior radials.

Radials unequal and differing in shape; angular processes project nearly as high as the anal between the arm-bases from three of the radials, viz. at one (outer) side of each posterior, and at both sides of the anterior radial, while the antero-laterals have none; each process has an offset like those of the anal interlocking with adjacent radials. Radial facets deeply curved, occupying a median position except on the two posterior radials in which the single outer processes occupy about half the distal width of the plate, and the facets toward the posterior side the remaining half. Anterior radial the largest plate in the cup; it and the two posterior radials widen upwards, while the two lateral radials correspondingly diminish in width, and by reason of the absence of processes are shorter than the former; the right posterior radial is the smallest, although with the radianal added it is about equal to and slightly longer than the left posterior.

Arms unequal, uniserial, branching once, and apparently very short; the two posterior and probably the anterior arms have two primibrachs, while the antero-laterals have but one; the axillaries are followed by series of three or more subquadrangular brachials which taper gradually. Anus and tegmen unknown. Stem circular, axial canal unknown.

Horizon and locality. Silurian; top of chert in Laurel formation. Adams Quarry near St. Paul, Indiana.

Two specimens of this singular form have been discovered—one the nearly perfect type here figured, which is about 5 mm. in diameter, and a fragment of another one somewhat larger. The seven enlarged figures made from direct photographs furnish the evidence upon which the diagram of the detailed structures is constructed. Aside from the remarkable and unprecedented combination of general characters, the most striking feature is the distribution of the processes on the anal and radial plates in such a way that there is an arrowhead projection between the arm bases in every interradial area. The arms are preserved in three rays to what is probably almost if not quite their full length; from their taper, and the manner in which they infold closely over the tegmen, it is doubtful if they extended farther than is indicated in the diagram, where the brachials which have been lost are represented by parallel hatching. The pentamerism of the calyx is remarkable for a certain regular irregularity, yet if we leave out of consideration the radianal it is bilaterally symmetric. The large anal plate with its angular projection distalwards recalls that of *Lecanocrinus* among the Flexibilia.

The specific name is given in honor of Dr. Herrick E. Wilson, who found the type specimen among extensive collections made for me in the vicinity of St. Paul, Indiana, which have yielded a number of other extremely interesting new forms yet to be described.

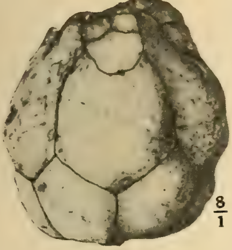
DESCRIPTION OF PLATE II

MYSTICOCRINUS WILSONI n. sp. (All figures x 8.)

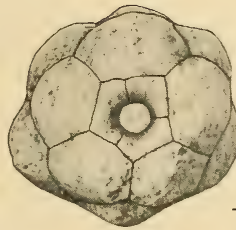
Fig. 1. Posterior view of crown, showing anal plate with its arrow-shaped projecting apex, and lower brachials of the two posterior arms.
2. From left posterior radial, showing interbrachial process on left half of plate.
3. Left anterior radial, without projecting processes.
4. Anterior radial view, showing projecting process on each side.
5. Right posterior view, showing the compound radial, with RA, followed by r.post.R., with projecting process on right half of plate.
6. Basal view, showing the concave infrabasals.
7. Distal view, showing the short, infolding arms.
8. Diagram of calyx, with arms so far as preserved; missing plates indicated by parallel hatching.

(Specimen here figured is in the author's collection.)

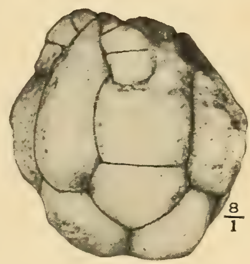

8/1
7

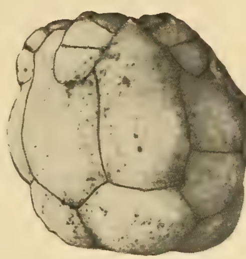

8/1
3

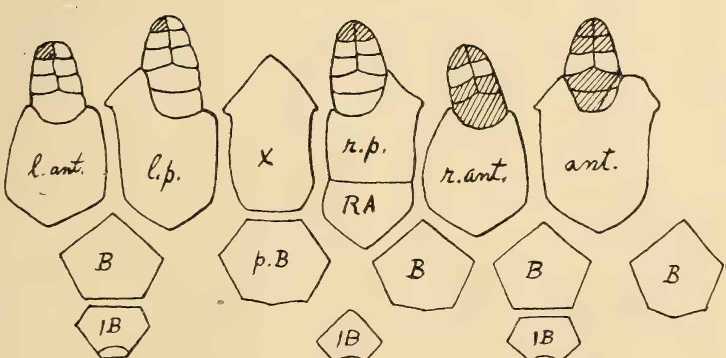

8/1
4


8/1
6


8/1
2


8/1
5


8/1
1



8

GROVE KARL GILBERT.

The history of geology, like that of other sciences, affords occasional instances of an undue assumption of authority on the part of its eminent men, grown old in service: their earlier work had received so general an adoption that in later years they strove to impose less acceptable opinions upon their juniors, and came to regard dissent from their views as at once an error and an impropriety.

Never has there lived a geologist who could with better right than Gilbert have assumed an authoritative attitude among his fellows, for it has been well said of his work: "It is doubtful whether the product of any other geologist of our day will escape revision at the hands of future research to a degree equal to the writings of Grove Karl Gilbert"; yet never was there a geologist to whom an assumption of authority would have been more unnatural, or the wish to occupy a dictatorial position more remote. It was from no personal claim or urgency that his opinions found acceptance, but from the convincing logic with which they were set forth. It was his habit in presenting a conclusion to expose it as a ball might be held on his hand—not clutched as if to prevent its fall, not grasped as if to hurl it against an objector, but poised on the open palm, free to roll off if any breath of disturbing evidence should displace it; yet there it would rest in satisfied stability. Not he but the facts that he marshalled clamored for the adoption of the explanation that he had found for them.

Fortunately for the rest of us, Gilbert gave a clear account of this way of studying a field problem in an address on "The Inculcation of Scientific Method by Example," which he delivered as president of the Society of American Naturalists in 1885.[1] The problem chosen for treatment was the deformation of the Bonneville shorelines, part of a larger problem upon which he had been engaged for some years. The deformation of the shorelines is briefly set forth, and several alternative hypotheses proposed for its explanation are discussed at some length. Thus it is shown how observation is followed by induction, or the empirical grouping of discovered facts in accord with their conspicuously common characters; how hypothetical explanations are invented one after the other; how each explanation must

[1] See this Journal, 22, 284-299, 1886.

be submitted to impartial tests, the tests being provided by comparing the "deduced consequents" of the hypotheses with the appropriate facts; and how the hypotheses which are found to be unsuccessful by the inability of their "consequents" to match the facts must be set aside as failures. There was truly nothing new in the mental processes of this analytical method, for its abstract equivalent is to be found in various treatises on logic; the merit of the address lay in the presentation of the logical processes as the successive steps of an actual and by no means elementary problem; and on this account it should still be studied by every young geologist, for in the thirty years since its publication no better illustration of scientific method has appeared.

But for our present purpose the address is of value as a revelation of its author's calm and unprejudiced way of thinking. The problems of the Great Basin and all other problems that Gilbert attacked were treated in the impartial manner that this address sets forth; and that fine quality of impartiality was not so generally to be found in geological discussions thirty or forty years ago as it is to-day. It may be well believed that Gilbert's influence, not only through this address but still more through his personal contact with the then rising generation of geologists, counted for much in bringing about the improving change.

It would be profitable, were it possible, to trace out the beginning and the development of the scientific habit of thought in Gilbert's mind. The beginning can hardly have been a paternal inheritance, nor can the development have been opened through paternal influence, for his father was an artist of moderate ability and limited means in Rochester, N. Y., where Gilbert was born on May 6, 1843. He finished his high school course there in 1858, and was graduated in 1862 from the University of Rochester, where he had taken the classical course. He is remembered by his companions, to whom he was known as "Karl," as a quiet and modest boy, with a gentle disposition, a lively sense of fun, pleasant manners, and a very even temper; he was a good student but indifferent to college honors.* The boy thus foreshadowed the man.

The thirty-five study units of his college course included eight of mathematics, six of Latin and seven of

* Prof. H. L. Fairchild of Rochester has kindly communicated these details regarding Gilbert's early years.

Greek; both the ancient languages were continued into his senior year. Rhetoric, logic and zoology each had two units; and nine other subjects, including French, German, and geology, but one each. The extended training in mathematics, for which young Gilbert had a natural capacity, served him well in certain geophysical researches of later years; perhaps his classical studies contributed to the clear style of his reports, as they seem also to have determined a tendency to the use of long words of Greek origin and occasionally to the invention of such words; but they did not prevent his later adoption of simplified spelling, which in his case as in so many others was evidently a matter of temperament, not of learning.

Gilbert's instructor in zoology and geology was Henry A. Ward, who came to be widely known for his extensive dealings in natural history specimens; the "Scientific Establishment" that he founded in Rochester was the source of many school and college collections: but unless by the rule of contraries it certainly cannot have been by the influence of this enthusiastic collector that Gilbert was led to say in the address, above quoted, that the important thing is to train scientists rather than to teach science, and that "the practical questions for the teacher are, whether it is possible by training to improve the guessing faculty, and if so, how is it to be done." It must have been Gilbert's own idea, not his professor's, that the content of a science is often presented so abundantly as to obstruct the communication of its essence, and that the teacher "will do better to contract the phenomenal and to enlarge the logical side of his subject, so as to dwell on the philosophy of the science rather than on its material."

The young graduate having no decided bent toward any profession or occupation, but having reached the pedagogically mature age of 19, taught school for a year at Jackson, Michigan, not as the beginning of a career, but, young-American like, as a means of paying off a debt which his college course had occasioned. Then returning to Rochester, he entered geology through being employed for five years as an assistant in Ward's Scientific Establishment above mentioned. His work there included the sorting and naming of countless specimens; many thousand labels in the Ward collection, afterwards acquired by the University of Rochester, are in Gilbert's writing. He had also to do with the installation of exhibits in museums; it may have been in the course of journeys then undertaken that he learned something of the Appalachians, to which he refers in a most appreciative manner in his first western report.

The philosophy of geology could have been learned no better during these five laborious years of clerkship than during the preceding eight years of school and college study; yet a liking for the science seems to have grown up, for Gilbert next became a volunteer assistant on the Ohio Geological Survey, where he worked under Newberry from 1868 to 1870, receiving pay only for his field expenses. His drawings of fossil fishes are praised by his chief, but the best known result of this period of apprenticeship is his report on the surface geology of the Maumee "valley," a district of very faint relief lying southwest of Lake Erie. It is interesting now to note that Gilbert here attributed the higher levels of the lake, as attested by abandoned shorelines on the adjoining plains, to a former upwarping of the land in the lower St. Lawrence valley, an idea which he mentioned again five years later in his report on the Henry mountains; it was Newberry who, in a footnote, explained the higher lake levels by a retreating glacial barrier. When Gilbert was fifteen years older and greatly matured by his studies in the West, he returned to the region of the Great Lakes and recognizing the correctness of Newberry's opinion eventually brought out a masterful essay on the history of Niagara Falls, as will be further told below.

Gilbert's larger career began on the Wheeler Survey, which took him to Utah, Nevada and Arizona between 1871 and 1874. His first season of western work led him into problems that engaged his lifelong interest. Would that we had a narrative of his personal experiences and his mental progress in those new surroundings! The several chapters in his reports cover a large range of subjects:—stratigraphy, volcanic phenomena, plateaus and canyons, glacial and lacustrine records, and the mountain ranges of the Great Basin. Powell's and Dutton's more extended descriptions of the plateau province have distracted attention from the large contributions that Gilbert made to its elucidation. On the other hand the Basin ranges and the Lake Bonneville came to be regarded as peculiarly Gilbert's problems.

The theoretical discussion of the Basin ranges, for the origin of which Gilbert proposed an altogether new interpretation, is regrettably brief; but it is fortunately recorded that the Great Basin was entered with the expectation of finding the hard rocks standing in relief, and the weak rocks worn down in valleys and lowlands, as he knew them to be in the Appalachians; and on discovering that the Basin ranges "occupy loci of upheaval and are not mere residua of denudation"—to quote his classico-mathematical phrase—he was greatly surprised. "The valleys of the system [*i. e.* the broad intermont depressions] are not valleys of erosion but mere intervals between lines of maximum uplift. Within the ranges there are indeed eroded valleys, and the details of relief show the inequalities of erosion due to unequal resistance; but there is not on a grand scale that close dependence of form on durability that must maintain where the great features of the country are carved by denuding agents." The ridges were found to be more persistent than the structures; one was instanced across which an anticline runs obliquely. The excavation of the broad intermediate depressions by erosion, while the ranges remained in bold relief, was seen to be impossible. The valleys were, therefore, explained as belts of relative depression, and the ranges as belts of uplift. Thus began a long discussion which is not yet closed to the satisfaction of all concerned. The geologists of the Fortieth Parallel Survey had, before Gilbert had entered the field, interpreted the Basin ranges as prevailingly of anticlinal structure between broad and deep synclinal valleys; but Gilbert's theory was afterward adopted to the extent of adding vertical displacements by faults to the earlier deformation by folding, yet without going so far as to give to the faults the dominant value in producing the existing relief that Gilbert had attributed to them.

Unfortunately the leading chapter in Gilbert's report concerning the Basin ranges occupied only twenty-two pages, and of these only a few at its end were devoted to theoretical discussion. This was by no means sufficient space for a clear exposition of his novel views; indeed it is not possible to ascertain from his text alone how fully he had worked out the "consequents" of the fault-block theory of mountain formation. The important physiographic principle that is involved in demonstrating the presence of a great fault by the truncation of diverse rock structures in simple alignment along the mountain base could not be easily apprehended from the few lines that Gilbert gave to it; indeed some of those geologists who, a quarter of a century later, opposed Gilbert's view do not seem even then to have appreciated this essential element of his discussion.

The regrettable brevity of the Basin-range chapter is perhaps to be explained by the dissatisfaction of its author with the military ordering of the Wheeler Survey. The young geologist had been permitted by Newberry to publish an abstract of his Maumee valley studies in the *American Journal of Science* two years before it came out in a volume of the Ohio Survey; but on asking a similar permission regarding some of his western work it was refused by General Humphreys, chief of engineers, under whose direction Lieutenant Wheeler's Survey was conducted. Whether this was also the cause of Gilbert's leaving the Wheeler and joining the Powell Survey does not appear; but on Nov. 27, 1874, after the transfer had been made, he wrote from his home in Rochester to Powell:—"I feel little ambition to write anything for publication with the uncertainty that would hang about the date of its appearance. . . . I am getting a little anxious to be at work—partly because it has come to be more natural than play, and partly because I ought to be earning something. So I am going to Washington in a few days, with the intention—if you have not changed your mind—to begin work with you at once." Thus he entered upon a period of the most loyal and substantial service under his new chief.

In the course of his continued western field work, Gilbert spent a week in the summer of 1875 in the Henry mountains of southern Utah, and found them so interesting that, probably on his own request, he was sent there for two months of 1876; as a result we have one of the most notable of all his reports. Its greater part treats the type of intrusive structures, previously recognized in a general way by earlier geological visitors, to which he gave the name of "laccolites." This text clearly illustrated his power to deal convincingly, if he took the time, with a new structural problem, involving many local details. The report described an area of about 1000 square miles of desert, mountainous country, as surveyed on his two visits. Gilbert recognized that the time was short for so great a task, for he wrote:—"A few comprehensive views from mountain tops gave the general distribution of the formations, and the remainder of the time was spent in the examination of the localities which best displayed the peculiar features of the structure. So thorough was the display and so satisfactory the examination, that in preparing my report I have felt less than ever before the desire to re-visit the field and prove my conclusions by more extended observations.'' The method of presentation, beginning with covered laccoliths and ending with denuded and partly undermined laccoliths, is so persuasive of the announced conclusions that the need of revising them has seldom been suggested.

The closing chapter of the Henry Mountains report, an essay on ''Land Sculpture,'' has in this country at least been of greater service though not of greater interest than the four which precede it. The contents of the famous essay cannot be analyzed here; but two peculiarities of its treatment may be mentioned. One is the lack of reference to similar work by foreign students, for though several Americans are named, Hopkins is the only European mentioned; and this was naturally enough unsatisfactory to geologists and geographers abroad; but the fact of the case seems to be that Gilbert, like most of his early colleagues, had never been trained in the time-consuming but dutiful labor of looking up the ''literature'' of a subject, and that he was so absorbed in his western problems and so overwhelmed with the abundance of new material to be described, that he had no time to look across the ocean in search of precedents for his opinions. Another peculiarity, harder to account for, is the complete absence of Powell's term, baselevel, which had been published in 1875; indeed even the fundamental principle embodied in the term is hardly touched upon, except in so far as it is tacitly implied in the discussion of ''declivity.''

The study of Lake Bonneville, which Gilbert began under Wheeler and continued under Powell, was carried farther in the field and published in more elaborate form than any other subject that he undertook. It became his own problem and is so still, although a new interpretation of the shoreline chronology has been proposed by recent observers. The Bonneville monograph established a high standard with respect to which the records of vanished lakes in all arid continental basins must be treated. Its first sequel was Russell's monograph on

Lake Lahontan, but as yet it has had no other. The chapter on the "Topographic features of lake shores," originally published as one of the brilliant essays with which Powell enriched his annual reports as director of the national Geological Survey, and reissued as the cornerstone of the final monograph, deserves special mention because it gave so great an impetus to rational physiography. It held good for sea shores as well as for lake shores, and every one of its uncounted readers must have discovered in it a fuller treatment of such shoreline features as he had somewhere seen than he had found in any text-book, and far better than he had prepared himself.

The establishment of the United States Geological Survey in 1879 caused a fateful turn in Gilbert's life. Its first effect was to give him unrivalled opportunity for the detailed study and—after delay owing to the intrusion of other duties—the handsome publication of the Bonneville problem, as above noted; but its longer lasting effect was to withdraw him from the western field, where his work had been so fruitful and where he would have so gladly gone on working; he was not only placed for some years (1884-1888) in charge of Appalachian geology, but was for a time (1889-1892) burdened with the executive duties of "chief geologist," a position for which he had neither especial fondness nor marked fitness. Yet when the director of the Survey called him to these duties, he put aside a cherished plan of continuing his work in the Great Basin—especially a research into the strength of the earth's crust as indicated by the deformation of the Bonneville shorelines—and, with self-denying devotion, took up the tasks assigned to him: but he said, in his address on the "Inculcation of Scientific Method":—"It is hardly necessary for me to assure you that my personal regret in abandoning this research at its present stage is very great."

Gilbert never reaped any significant public advantage from his supervision of the Appalachian division, for with characteristic generosity he gave such results as his limited opportunity for field work afforded to his assistants and his friends, as contributions to their more detailed investigations. As chief geologist he was in a manner embarrassed by his habit of deliberation, for Survey problems usually called for prompt decision. It was, therefore, fortunate that, when Powell withdrew from the Survey in 1894, it contained another man of conspicuous administrative capacity, well trained to carry on and to carry farther its great organization. The scientific world expected the new director to be Gilbert, but he himself had no such ambition and was well content to return in his later years to scientific research.

The ten years of Gilbert's mature life that were largely spent in the West won for him a deservedly high place in geological science. The following twelve years spent largely in Washington gave him high rank among scientific men. The chief lesson of his western work comes rather from the transparent reasonableness of his methods of investigation and—excepting the too-short chapter on the Basin ranges—from the delightful clearness of his style of presentation, than from the results that he reached, important as they were. The chief lesson of his life in Washington has not been fully recognized by his colleagues; it was a lesson not in science but in loyalty, the great lesson of self-sacrificing service. He gave up his own preference for investigation and turned largely to administrative duties, as they were seen by the chief under whom he had enlisted. Yet even thus, his effect on geological science, although for the most part anonymous, was very great. His advice was highly valued in the Survey and outside of it. His opinion usually carried his associates far toward a conclusion. On terminology, correlation of formations, map coloring, form of folios, and other technical matters he submitted serious, even elaborate discussions, some of which were published as a means of bringing Survey problems more clearly to the attention of American geologists.

Happily his administrative duties included close relations with many younger men, and this was as enjoyable to Gilbert as it was profitable to his juniors, for his nature was kindly, patient and sympathetic. Those who had to report their work to him carried away inspiration from every contact. The encouragement of his approval was a spur to new effort. To one of his subordinates with whom he was reviewing the proposed solution of a problem in the field, he said rather brusquely after a reflective pause at the end of the day:—"How did you find it out?" This brief remark was then taken and is still treasured as the highest reward of a long study; for if, after hearing the solution of a problem, that keen investigator cared to ask how it had been found out. . .!

Gilbert's helpful influence extended far beyond the Survey office in Washington. When articles and reviews appealed to him, he had the pleasant way of writing a note of appreciation to their authors; and these spontaneous expressions of approval from so competent a critic won for him the warm regard of many younger men who had little or no personal acquaintance with him. Indeed two generations of American geologists entertained toward this master of their science a sentiment that approached affection more closely than is common among men. It was about as much as an expression of personal regard as of scientific esteem that he was chosen president of nearly every learned society of which he was a member. His bearing in the chair had a simple dignity that was very acceptable to his constituencies. He was a welcome speaker at all scientific gatherings where his fine presence went well with his exceptional clearness of exposition.

In personal relations he was frank and outspoken, free from all formalities, a delightful companion indoors and out, with a lively sense of humor and a merry laugh. Indeed he was often by no means so serious as he looked. On meeting an over-assiduous correspondent he said:—"I received a long circular letter from you lately, and I've put it away in a safe place." His whispered comment on a speaker who had made an inconclusive reply in a discussion was in the western phrase:—"You can't prove it by him." A friend once inquired whether a visiting European geographer of distinction, whom Gilbert had guided on an excursion, was quick in responding to field evidence. "Hair trigger," was the concise reply. Not long afterwards when the inquirer repeated the characterization to its beneficiary—alas for the break of relations with him in these troubled years!—it brought forth the puzzled exclamation—"Vat is 'hair trigger'?"—but the phrase gave much satisfaction when explained.

After Gilbert's relief from the position of chief geologist of the National Survey, he continued for a time in charge of correlation problems, and was then (1893-96) assigned to study certain areas of the great plains, where he prepared two geologic folios. In later years he held various roving commissions. Among these were the study of the Great Lakes region, which he had already taken up in 1885 as if for vacation exercise in the field, and in which he had then at once made the fruitful discovery that the ancient shorelines, which he had earlier known in the Maumee valley, southwest of Lake Erie, ascended to the northeast. This compelled him to give up the idea he had originally entertained, that the lakes had been raised by an upheaval of the land in the St. Lawrence district, and to adopt Newberry's view that the high-level lakes were enclosed by a retreating glacial barrier. Intermittent attention to this problem resulted in 1896 in a "History of the Niagara River," a most luminous generalization, published in the Sixth Report of the Commissioners for the [N. Y.] State Reservation at Niagara. More formal study, when the Great Lakes came to be an official assignment (1896-97), produced a report on "Earth Movements in the Great Lakes Region," published in the 18th Annual Report of the Director of the Survey.

In 1899, Gilbert visited Alaska as a member of the Harriman expedition and there recognized the convincing evidence of intense glacial erosion that is given by the much greater depths of the main fiord troughs than of their lateral tributaries, for which it was he who suggested the name of "hanging valleys." His observations are reported in a fine volume on Alaskan Glaciers, where he brought forth the noteworthy idea that glaciers which invade the sea rest so heavily on their trough floor that no sea water can enter beneath to buoy them up; and that they therefore continue to press upon and to erode their floor with their whole weight, even if six-sevenths or more of their thickness is submerged. The San Francisco earthquake was later the subject of study, and following this came his last formal work, an examination of the conditions under which gravels have been spread forth from hydraulic gold washings in California; this resulted in Professional Paper No. 86 of the Survey, entitled "The Transportation of Débris by Streams." During the progress of these two studies, Gilbert was frequently at Berkeley, where he was a welcome guest of the hospitable Faculty Club of the University of California, as he was also of the enterprising "Sierra Club" of San Francisco during its summer excursions in the mountains.

The breadth of Gilbert's interests is shown by the many topics on which he wrote besides those already enumerated. They include, among others, barometric hypsometry, the percentage of success and error in weather prediction—but the misprints in this article in the American Meteorological Journal were so numerous that its author had no satisfaction in it—ripple marks, joints, the sufficiency of terrestrial rotation for the deflection of streams, the origin of the "craters" of the moon, which he suggested might be the result of meteoric impacts, an idea that he later applied also to Coon Butte in Arizona in an address on the "Origin of Hypotheses" (1896); the systematic asymmetry of mountain crests in the Sierra Nevada as a result of glacial erosion, and the convexity of hill tops as a result of soil creep—a small problem that he had left unsolved nearly forty years earlier in the chapter on Land Sculpture in the Henry Mountains report. He also collaborated in producing an elementary text-book on Physical Geography.

In all these studies, his keen insight tended, as has been well said, "to bring into declared form the basal principles that underlie the phenomena in hand." He was thus led to understand earlier than many of his colleagues that the Adirondacks were not, as had long been thought and taught, a rising but a sinking land mass when the Potsdam sandstones were laid unconformably on their flanks; and that the fresh-water Tertiaries of the Rocky mountain region had not been deposited in great lake basins, a long prevalent view that he had himself adopted in his early western work, but that they were largely deposited by aggrading streams. It was, therefore, in view of the breadth as well as the depth of his researches that he was awarded the Wollaston medal by the Geological Society of London in 1897, and the Walker Grand Prize—a thousand dollars—by the Boston Society of Natural History in 1908.

It remains to recur briefly to Gilbert's return to the Great Basin in 1901, with the object of revising the field of his early work on the origin of the Basin ranges; for a new discussion of the old problem had been awakened by a junior geologist who expressed strong dissent from the fault-block theory. A season of successful field work supplied the veteran observer with more detailed evidence than had been before available for the correctness of his theory—which, it may be noted, had received independent confirmation from Russell's work in Nevada and Oregon some years before, and was about to gain still further support from studies by Campbell in Death valley and by Louderback on the Humboldt ranges; but most unhappily the maps on which much of Gilbert's new observations had been recorded were destroyed by sad mischance in the following winter, and under this discouragement further field work was suspended. The main results of the study were, however, presented at a meeting of the Geological Society of America in Washington in the winter of 1903-04, in a manner that was convincing to many if not to all hearers; but the printed record in the Society's Bulletin was compressed into a few lines, which merely state that the evidence of great faulting lies in the occurrence of extensive shear zones, in triangular facets at ridge ends, and in the even linear bases of the ranges. Thus, in spite of the clear conception of the problem indicated by Gilbert's oral presentation, the printed record remains deficient.

The loss of the map was probably the larger cause of this brevity, but a contributing cause was failing health, as a result of which it had become increasingly difficult for this master of exposition to apply himself to writing. For the same reason he later had to forego attendance at scientific meetings and participation in discussions. Thus at the very time when all his associates would have most delighted to welcome and to honor him, they saw the least of him; yet those who were still favored to meet him found, if not the same strength, the same noble geniality that they had learned before to love admiringly. Indeed, these years of withdrawal were marked by a serenity of mind that made his face more than ever benign. All his fine qualities seemed to shine forth undimmed:—openness of mind, breadth of sympathy, calmness of judgment, mental honesty, sincere humility in the contemplation of mysteries unsolved. One of Gilbert's last projects, after the completion of his two California tasks, was to visit for the third time the scene of his early work and to take up yet again the origin of the Basin ranges, but health failed him. In the spring of the present year many of his friends, acting on a suggestion from the office of the Survey where he had so faithfully labored, wrote letters of congratulation that were to be presented to him on his seventy-fifth birthday; but these messages of affectionate regard failed to reach him by the narrow interval of five days. He died at Jackson, Michigan, on May 1.

William M. Davis.

HENRY SHALER WILLIAMS.

An Appreciation of his Work in Stratigraphy.

Henry Shaler Williams, professor of geology in Cornell University, was born at Ithaca, New York, on March 6, 1847, and died at the age of seventy-one years, in Havana, Cuba, on July 31, 1918.[1]

His first two publications relate to zoology, but all of the subsequent ones have to do with geology, paleontology, evolution, biography, and teaching. He was the author of upwards of ninety papers and books, comprising nearly three thousand pages, and of these about sixty-five titles relate to stratigraphy. Incidental to his studies, he has described sixteen new genera and more than one hundred and forty new species of fossils. He was also the originator of the Sigma Xi Society.

Professor Williams was one of the two authorities on the American Devonian faunas and formations, though he also did work on the Silurian and Mississippian systems. He seems to have been directed into geology, and more particularly into the study of the Devonian, by his environment at Ithaca, where he spent most of his life, and the geology of which he has made better known than that of any other part of New York State, the richest Devonian field in North America. A reading of his many publications, issued during nearly forty-five years, shows a progression from the detailed description of the faunal successions to an ever deeper philosophic penetration into the significance of stratigraphy and fossil faunas. He tells us again and again that it is only the fossil content of the formations that will yield a true chronogenesis of the earth, but he also points out not only that the organisms varied and evolved with time, but also that the faunas are continually altering their specific combinations, and further that they shifted about with the migrating facies of the sea bottoms. Therefore, the organic succession can not be learned from a single, or even for that matter from several sections; one must study a wide field to glean the actual history of organisms. These conclusions he began to see as early as 1884, and the further one that stratigraphers must abandon the then accepted canon that each geologic

[1] A brief notice of his life is given in the September number, p. 550.

formation has its own distinct set of organisms. To Professor Williams, more than to any other American stratigrapher, de we owe our present marked insight into the fact that the marine faunas of the past have shifted about so much that only the expert of many years' experience can discern in them their true correlation values.

The mind of Professor Williams was distinctly analytical, philosophical, and cautious—possibly over-cautious. He loved to pick out the parts of a problem and to define them. The components of a series of faunal assemblages were examined in the greatest detail, not only as to their minute changes in the acquisition or loss of characters, but as to their numerical presence as well. On the other hand, he must at times have been lost in the labyrinth of observed detail. All of these studies he thought necessary to find out, both how the assemblages change so that the same congeries indicate a given geologic time, and why these changes and shiftings occur.

The leading line of study with Professor Williams was that of the Devonian of America east of the Mississippi River, and chiefly of the New York, Maine, and the Appalachian areas. Here he sought to learn what were the successive faunas in a given section and how the species and their assemblages differed among themselves over a wide geographic area. He therefore studied the stratigraphy in detail, and collected the faunas bed by bed along ten or more parallel meridians near enough to one another, in the states of New York and Pennsylvania, to make it possible to compare the corresponding zones of the various formations studied. This is the Williams method of stratigraphic study, and one of which he appears to have been the inventor. In this way, he proved "that the composition of a fossil fauna changes in passing geographically from one place to another. Upon tracing single species across these sections, it was learned that the mutation of the species not only may be recognized on passing vertically upward through a continuous section, but that the more direct line of succession was often deflected laterally so that the immediate successor of a particular fauna of one section was found not directly above it in the same section, but at a higher horizon in a section ten or twenty miles distant. This *shifting of faunas* was taken as actual evidence of migration'' (The Scope of Paleontology and its Value to Geologists, 1892).

As the nature of the marine bottoms are shifted geographically, due to filling, scour or crustal movements, the faunas move with them, and if the environments are not otherwise changed, the species will go on living without marked evolution. In this way the bulk of the faunas in a given region may continue to live a very long time by shifting with their special habitats, but locally the assemblages are found to be restricted to their facies in a given formation. On the other hand, migration is a very different organic movement, in that new forms or migrants appear among native faunas, having had their ancestral history elsewhere than in the area into which they migrate. We are told that ''slight mutations of the species take place wherever the fauna as a whole shifts its place of habitation.'' Many new species ''are undoubtedly mutants of the species of the previous dominant fauna'' (Shifting of Faunas as a Problem of Stratigraphic Geology, 1903).

Professor Williams began to see in 1884 that at the Cayuga Lake meridian the Devonian section ''is Hamilton, terminating with Tully limestone and Genesee shale, then the Ithaca group, which has first a Portage fauna, then the Ithaca fauna, third, the Portage fauna again, and finally Chemung capped by Catskill and Carboniferous. A little further east in the Chenango valley, it is Hamilton; then a fauna intermediate between Hamilton and Ithaca (but no Tully or Genesee); then the Oneonta, a brackish and fresh water fauna; then the late Ithaca fauna, still with Hamilton types in it; no Portage fauna, but a Chemung fauna following the upper Ithaca fauna'' (Dual Nomenclature in Geological Classification, 1894). We therefore see that the actual sequence of faunas in a given section is not ''necessarily expressive of biologic sequence'' in the history of organisms (On the Classification of the Upper Devonian, 1886).

The Catskill formation, long thought to be younger than the Chemung, Williams demonstrated to be contemporaneous with it. Early in his studies he said that the Catskill deposits are ''due to the encroachment of the land and fresh water conditions upon the marine basin in which the Chemung fauna flourished. The Chemung faunas continued to live there so long as the marine conditions were sufficiently pure to maintain their life, and I take it that there is nothing inconsistent in the view that Catskill rocks were being deposited in the Appalachian region at the same time that Chemung rocks were being formed over western New York areas and during the reign of the Chemung faunas'' (On the Fossil Faunas of the Upper Devonian. The Genesee Section, 1887).

Recurrent faunules have been traced by Williams through a thickness of ''about 2000 feet of sediments.'' A ''half-dozen fossils of particular species occurring together'' can not determine the stratigraphic horizon; all they can do is to show that their time horizon is ''somewhere within one or two thousand feet of thickness of strata.'' We are then forced to the conclusion ''that not only lithologic but paleontologic facts are local.'' He states that the fossils undoubtedly are the means on which we chiefly rely for determining that kind of equivalence which is called contemporaneity and homotaxy; but it must not be overlooked that species and genera of fossils may be extremely long ranging (Bearing of some new Paleontologic Facts on Nomenclature and Classification of Sedimentary Formations, 1905).

At the southern end of Lake Canandaigua, J. M. Clarke discovered an Upper Devonian fauna, 550 feet above the Genesee formation, that has come to be known as the High Point fauna. On becoming aware of this fauna, Williams saw that it was closely related to the Rockford fauna of Iowa and widely different from that of the Upper Devonian of New York, ''in the midst of which it lay.'' Further analysis of the fauna led to the discovery ''that the species peculiar to it apparently had their ancestors in the Middle Devonian of Europe'' and not in that of America. This study then led him into that of the Tully limestone of New York, where he found much of the Cuboides fauna of Europe and Asia. This fauna begins abruptly above the Hamilton, ''and from it upward, all through the Upper Devonian, is a fauna closely related in its species with the Upper Devonian'' of Europe, Asia, British America, Iowa, and Nevada. We see here the pointing out of a world-wide faunal migration (Scope of Paleontology, 1892).

Williams also pointed out that the Hamilton fauna has its closest affinities in the Lower Devonian faunas of South America, a fact first demonstrated by Steinmann and Ulrich. These migrations ceased with the Hamilton, at the close of which time there was crustal elevation "sufficient to occasion erosion in the southern area of the Mississippian sea" (Scope of Paleontology, 1892).

As early as 1894 Williams began to point out the necessity of a dual nomenclature in geological classification. He then clearly showed that geologic formations have (1) a local and definite lithologic value in a sequence of strata, which in a wider distribution may become more and more indefinite lithologically; and (2) a variable time value in the general history of the earth and in the evolution of its organisms. Formations therefore have two values, and we should not confuse them in our geologic classification. In other words, there should be two sets of geologic terms, one expressive of sediments, and another of time.

In his Correlation Papers of the Devonian and Carboniferous (1891), Professor Williams found it impossible to give "a thorough paleontologic definition of the systems and series under consideration. The result has demonstrated that the facts are not yet accumulated to make this possible." Later on we find that he helped to delimit the upper boundary of the Devonian, drawing the line successfully between the Chemung and Catskill formations on the one side, and the Waverlian on the other.

In regard to the lower boundary of the Devonian, however, he was not so successful. At first he accepted the prevalent view that the Oriskany forms the base of the Devonian. This view was challenged in 1889 by J. M. Clarke, who referred all of the Lower Helderberg to the Devonian, and thus closed the Silurian with the Waterlime or Bertie formation. This conclusion finally brought forth Williams's paper The Silurian-Devonian Boundary in North America, The Chapman Sandstone Fauna (1900). Here he wrongly concludes that "The Chapman fauna must be regarded as the equivalent of the topmost fauna of the typical Welsh Silurian system (= Upper Ludlow, Tilestone, Downton and Ledbury formations) . . . and of the uppermost Arisaig fauna of Nova Scotia." "This places the Silurian-Devonian boundary for North America at the place where it was determined by De Verneuil in 1847." On the other hand, he is near the truth when he states that the Chapman fauna "is equivalent to the Lower Oriskany fauna" of New York. In a later paper, however, he correctly says that the Chapman fauna "seems to be strictly

Lower Devonian'' and that ''it is a later fauna than the Tilestone or Downtonian of Great Britain or the terminal marine fauna of Arisaig, Nova Scotia'' (1916).

In regard to evolution, Professor Williams always fully accepted the fact. To him, species are as mutable as are organisms. ''The principle of mutability must be recognized in the phenomena of development before we can rightly comprehend the laws of organic life.'' ''Variability is the expression of the fundamental energy of the organism, and is not an irregular accident. Heredity is the expression of the acquired adjustment of the organism to the conditions of its existence. Mutable heredity sounds like a contradiction; so did mutable species a century ago; but it is only as heredity is mutable that evolution is possible'' (On the Genetic Energy of Organisms, 1898).

''We must seek for the immediate determined causes of variation not in natural selection, nor in any of the environmental conditions, either direct or indirect, by which hereditary repetition is established, but in the phenomena of individual growth and development, and in the more fundamental processes of cell growth and metabolism'' (Variation versus Heredity, 1898).

''Whether the vital phenomena are latent in matter or not is a matter of speculation. Whenever vital phenomena appeared, they appeared in phenomena exhibited by matter. Whenever inorganic matter becomes vitalized, however that result may be accomplished, variation takes place and distinguishes it from matter in every other condition.'' ''Variation, as a process of becoming different, is a characteristic of living bodies'' (On the Theory of Organic Variation, 1897).

In retrospect we may say that Professor Williams worked long and faithfully, attaining good results, and that most of his work will be woven into the permanent record of Historical Geology. We see him far more effective and better understood in his writings than in his public speaking and teaching. His publications are the record of work well done, and to the succeeding generations of geologists they will be the living thoughts of Henry Shaler Williams.

Charles Schuchert.

SCIENTIFIC INTELLIGENCE.

I. Chemistry and Physics.

1. *A New Method for the Quantitative Estimation of Vapors in Gases.*—A process has been described for this purpose by Harold S. Davis and Mary Davidson Davis of the University of Manitoba. It is particularly interesting in its application of well-known principles in a new way. The apparatus consists of two flasks connected by a mercury manometer and provided with suitable outlets which can be closed, and a device for crushing small bulbs of liquid within the flasks without changing their gaseous contents. When the flasks contain air or other gas under the same pressure, as shown by the manometer, for instance at atmospheric pressure, and then bulbs containing an excess of a volatile liquid are broken in each flask, this vapor, if it is the same in each case, will exert the same pressure by evaporation, and the manometer will remain unchanged. However, if a gas or air in one of the flasks is already partly (or wholly) saturated with the vapor of a liquid while the other flask is free from this vapor, then upon performing the same operation of saturation in both flasks, the manometer will show a difference of pressure due to the original partial saturation, and this serves as a means for determining the amount of vapor that was present. In this way the authors have succeeded in determining satisfactorily the amounts of benzene vapor in samples of air. For details of the apparatus and for other applications of the method the original articles must be referred to.—*Jour. Indust. and Eng. Chem.*, **10**, 709, 712, 718. H. L. W.

2. *The Determination of Organic Matter in Soils.*—The determination of organic matter in soils by loss of weight upon the ignition of the substance gives highly erroneous results on account of the presence of hydrated minerals, carbonates, and unoxidized inorganic substances, while the determination of total and inorganic carbon in such materials gives uncertain results on account of the necessarily arbitrary factor that must be used in calculating the organic matter from the amount of organic carbon present. J. B. Rather has now devised a method for this determination which is based upon the treatment of the sample of soil successively with water and then repeatedly with a mixture of dilute hydrochloric and hydrofluoric acids. The residue is collected upon an asbestos filter, the solutions are evaporated to dryness, and a final ignition of the dried residues gives the amount of organic matter by loss. The details of the process will not be given here but it may be stated that the method appears to be the most satisfactory one yet devised for the purpose.—*Jour. Indust. and Eng. Chem.*, **10**, 439. H. L. W.

3. *A New Reaction for Osmium.*—M. L. TSCHUGAEFF has found that when a solution containing osmium in the condition of tetroxide, OsO_4, or of any chlorosmiate, for example, K_2OsCl_6, is heated for a few minutes with thiourea in excess and with a few drops of hydrochloric acid, the liquid becomes bright red or pink, according to the concentration of the osmium compound present. This reaction is very characteristic and permits the detection of osmium in a solution of 1 to 100,000. The red compound of osmium formed in this reaction, when crystallized, has a composition corresponding to the formula $Os(N_2H_4CS)_6Cl_3.H_2O$. Consequently it is a new base analogous to the luteo-salts of certain other metals, such as $Cr(NH_3)_6X_3$, $Co(NH_3)_6X_3$ $Rh(NH_3)_6X_3$, and $Ir(NH_3)_6X_3$.—*Comptes Rendus,* **167**, 235.

H. L. W.

4. *Chemical Combinations among Metals;* by DR. MICHELE GIUA and DR. CLARA GIUA-LOLLINI. Translated by GILBERT WOODING ROBINSON. 8vo, pp. 341. Philadelphia, 1918 (P. Blakiston's Son & Co.).—This work gives an excellent account of metallic combinations from a chemical point of view. Many equilibrium diagrams based upon thermal analysis are given, showing the melting-points of alloys and the compounds, eutectics and solid solutions produced in them, and this subject is very fully explained. The microscopic side of the study of alloys is not treated in this book, but it furnishes an excellent introduction to the practical study of metallography.

In its theoretical discussion of the subject the book emphasizes the importance of the phase rule of Willard Gibbs in connection with the study of alloys, and it may be noticed that several of the equilibrium diagrams are based upon the work of Professor Mathewson of Yale. H. L. W.

5. *The Zinc Industry;* by ERNEST A. SMITH. 8vo, pp. 223. London, 1918 (Longmans, Green & Co.).—This is one of the extremely important and useful monographs on industrial chemistry now being issued by the same publishers under the editorship of Sir Edward Thorpe. The work under consideration gives a general survey of the development and present condition of the zinc industry. Many interesting statistics are presented, most of which do not apply to the period of the present war, but the effect of the war upon the industry is extensively discussed, and the resulting great development of zinc production in the United States is mentioned. The sources of zinc ores, zinc smelting and other methods of production, the properties of the metal, its industrial applications, its alloys, etc., are discussed in a very satisfactory way. H. L. W.

6. *Stoichiometry;* by SYDNEY YOUNG. 8vo, pp. 363. London, 1918 (Longmans, Green & Co.).—This is one of an extensive series of text books on physical chemistry, edited by the late Sir William Ramsay. The first edition of the book appeared in 1907,

and the present second edition has received a considerable amount of modification on account of recent advances in the science. The subject is treated in a broad sense, as the book deals with the fundamental laws of chemical combination, the general properties of gases, the determination of atomic weights, the periodic law, the properties of liquids, the kinetic theory of gases, the properties of solids, mixtures, solubility and miscibility, properties of dilute solutions, dissolution and vaporization, and the determination of molecular weights. The topics are generally well presented from an advanced point of view, and the book appears to be an excellent and interesting one for the use of students of physical chemistry and teachers. H. L. W.

7. *Elements of General Science, Revised Edition;* by OTIS WILLIAM CALDWELL and WILLIAM LEWIS EIKENBERRY. Pp. xii, 404; with 181 figures. Boston, 1918 (Ginn and Co.).—"The course presented in this book is the result of ten years of experiment in secondary schools." The main object of the course is to develop a usable fund of knowledge about common things and helpful and trustworthy habits of considering common experiences in the field of science. "The unity of this introductory course in science is secured by use of the logical interrelations between the topics which compose the course. No attempt is made to maintain the unity of any one of the different sciences. Experience shows that after use of this course pupils do not feel that they "have had" any of the differentiated sciences, as physiography, physics, chemistry, or biology. They are, however, much interested in the later study of the differentiated sciences. The topics of the course are readily grouped under six major divisions." The titles of these six Parts are: The Air; Water and its Uses; The Earth in Relation to other Astronomical Bodies; The Earth's Crust; and Life upon the Earth. The new edition has been almost entirely rewritten, and a laboratory manual has been prepared to serve as a guide in the performance of experiments and demonstrations.

For lack of space it is not possible to enter into details concerning the discrete contents of the thirty-three chapters. Suffice it to say that the selection of material is excellent and that the manner of presentation leaves nothing to be desired. The diagrams and half-tone figures are clear cut and attractive, and the entire book is unusually interesting, instructive, and up to date. The volume deserves the careful attention of principals of high schools and other directors of education not only on account of its intrinsic merit but also because it contains a wealth of information concerning germ diseases, bacteria, flies, mosquitoes, alcohol, hygiene, sanitation, reproduction in plants and animals, etc., the thorough acquisition of which knowledge should have a most salutary influence upon the general welfare of society in the future. H. S. U.

8. *Airplane Characteristics;* by FREDERICK BEDELL. Pp. iv, 123. Ithaca, 1918 (Taylor & Co.).—In this book the principles of airplane sustentation and stability, and the characteristics of an airplane in flight, are presented in a manner that is simple, direct, and reasonably precise, special stress being laid on that which is vital. "The author has confined his attention to the principles of airplane flight and has given no discussion of materials of construction—very important, of course, in airplane building—nor of the gas engine, on which there are many specialized treatises." The sequence of subjects follows the logical order rather than the historical, and the use of higher mathematics so-called has been avoided. The present volume contains five chapters the titles of which are: Sustentation, Relations in Flight, Resistance, Lateral Stability, and Directional Stability. A supplementary volume, now in preparation, will contain such material as would logically follow immediately after the chapter on resistance. Accordingly it will deal with: Thrust, Power, Climbing, Gliding, Altitude, Single and Multiple Planes, Stability in General, and Longitudinal Stability. In addition to the five chapters mentioned above, the printed volume contains four appendixes, the first of which is a timely glossary, and the remaining three comprise a fairly large number of diagrams pertaining to thrust characteristics, power characteristics, control, etc.

The author's style is, in general, lucid and concise, the material selected is very interesting as well as important, and the text-figures are numerous, clear-cut, and instructive. On the other hand, the book seems to show some signs of hasty preparation. Although susceptible of obvious correction, the typographical errors occur with sufficient frequency to annoy a reader who is sensitive to such causes of distraction. The term "angle of incidence," although thoroughly established in physical and other scientific literature, is here defined as the complement of the accepted angle, hence it is the true "glancing angle," now so familiar in the subject of X-rays. Again, the employment of such popular terms as "negative pressure" and "suction" detracts from scientific accuracy more than it enhances the clearness of exposition. Nevertheless, in spite of these little shortcomings, the book is a valuable and much needed contribution to a very live subject. H. S. U.

II. MISCELLANEOUS SCIENTIFIC INTELLIGENCE.

1. *Medical Contributions to the Study of Evolution;* by J. G. ADAMI. Pp. xviii, 372. New York, 1918 (The Macmillan Co.).—In this volume the author has brought together in orderly sequence and with some revision many of his earlier essays dealing with problems of evolution, and has grouped them under

the general heading of Adaptation and Disease, Heredity and Adaptation, Growth and Overgrowth. Adami's freedom of thought is made clear by this quotation: "With abundant material presented to him and freedom of individual judgment, it is scarce possible that the student of today should accept unreservedly the teaching of either Lamarck or Darwin. He who is concerned at arriving at the truth is impatient of such labels." The viewpoint is summarized thus: "In so far as between Darwin and Lamarck the essence of the teaching of the latter is that variation is an active process, a reaction on the part of living matter to its environment, the conclusions reached in these pages undoubtedly favour the Lamarckian view. Nevertheless, to accept them does not mean that the principle of natural selection is thereby excluded, or that the two principles are mutually antagonistic, but only that the influence of external forces is the primary process in the production of variation, and that natural selection is secondary, culling out those grades and forms of variation which are least economical and represent the less perfect adaptation on the part of the individuals to the conditions in which the family or species finds itself for the time being. Seen thus, evolution, whether what we regard as progressive or as regressive, is the outcome of an active process of continuous adjustment between organisms and their environment." The chapters are singularly replete with details applicable to scientific generalizations of this sort; and there is no lack of frank criticisms of current views. It is a book disclosing many rather liberally conceived hypotheses, always presented in the guise of attractive diction. L. B. M.

OBITUARY.

DOCTOR CHARLES ROCHESTER EASTMAN, the well-known paleontologist, was drowned at Long Beach, New Jersey, during the night of September 27, 1918. He was born at Cedar Rapids, Iowa, June 5, 1868. A graduate of Harvard and of Munich, he was widely known and highly appreciated for his studies of fossil fishes, and as the editor of the English edition of Zittel's Grundzüge der Paläeontologie. His passing is a great loss to American science. Most of his work was done at Harvard, Carnegie Museum, U. S. National Museum, and the American Museum of Natural History.

DOCTOR WILLIAM BATTLE PHILLIPS, the mining engineer and geologist, died at his home, Houston, Texas, on June 7, 1918, at the age of sixty years. He has been connected with the universities of North Carolina, Alabama, and Texas, and with the periodicals, the Engineering and Mining Journal and the American Manufacturer and Iron World. He also organized the Bureau of Economic Geology and Technology in the University of Texas, and was "a man of great energy and of extensive learning."

THE

AMERICAN JOURNAL OF SCIENCE

[FOURTH SERIES.]

Art. XXXVI.—*The Origin of Serpentine, a Historical and Comparative Study;* by W. N. Benson.

I. Introduction.

Some years ago, the writer commenced work upon the Great Serpentine Belt of New South Wales, and was soon fascinated by the problem of the origin of the serpentine. A study of the modern literature showed a general agreement that such serpentine-masses were originally peridotites, and have been hydrated by deep-seated process, in contrast with earlier text-books which explicitly referred the alteration to atmospheric weathering. It was noted that few publications compared and discussed the observations upon which the new view was based, but that instead there was a definite invitation to take up this study. "One might urge," wrote Merrill (1899), "the necessity of closer observation regarding the formation of serpentine from olivine or other anhydrous magnesian silicates. That it is through a process of hydration is self-evident, but as to the conditions under which it goes on, literature is strangely silent." "And," added Bonney, "the subject would well repay any young geologist with sufficient leisure" (1899). Since it was necessary to investigate this matter for the fuller understanding of the field-work undertaken, there seemed here an opportunity to accept the invitation to enter this field of research. In this the writer had the great privilege of working in Cambridge under the guidance and with the generous help of Professor Bonney. He has also been able to study material from Great Britain, the Pyrenees, Switzerland, Germany, Austria, Australia, and New Zealand in the collections of Bonney, Becke, Lacroix, Preiswerk, Rosenbusch and Weinschenk, of the Geological Survey of Great Britain and of several Continental and Australian universities. The paper discusses chiefly the origin and alteration of the serpentines derived from plutonic masses; it does not deal in detail with the physical characters of the different serpentine minerals, which have been recently exhaustively reviewed by Bonney (1905, 1908),[1] and Lacroix (1903), or of the chemical features, which have been treated by Leitmeier (1913). For a complete treatment of the whole subject it would have been necessary to review fully the origin of nephrite in serpentine-masses, and of the alterations undergone by olivine in volcanic rocks, but to these points the writer's studies have been less directed, and they are, therefore, but briefly considered.

II. The Recognition of the Intrusive Character of Serpentine-masses.

The origin of serpentine has been discussed since the beginning of the scientific study of geology. The earliest work has been summarized at various times by Weigand (1875), Hunt (1883), Teall (1883), Weinschenk (1891), and Zirkel (1894), so that we may devote our attention to the last two decades. The close association of the serpentines with the crystalline schists, and often with the crystalline limestones on the one hand, and with the massive igneous rocks on the other, long proved a source of perplexity. So also did the extreme rarity of dikes of serpentine crossing the structural planes of the rocks in which they occur. Patrin, De Saussure, Humbolt, Bayreuth, and Jameson considered the serpentine to be regularly interbedded with the stratified series, while

[1] The dates given with the names of authors refer to articles noted in the bibliography at the end of this paper; in this list the full titles have of necessity been omitted in most cases.

Von Buch, De la Beche, Brongniart, De Beaumont and others claimed it was of igneous origin, being followed in this by Whitney and Rogers in America. Some authors, like Macculloch, considered it possible that serpentine might originate both from igneous or sedimentary processes (for literature see Hunt, 1883). De la Beche was particularly clear in his recognition of the intrusive origin of the serpentines, and stated with regard to those of Liguria, that they were "thrust into the Oolitic rocks, but not into the supra-Cretaceous. The intrusion is connected with earth-movements" (De la Beche 1831). He also claimed an igneous origin for the British serpentines. Haidinger (1823) held that the famous Snarum serpentine crystals were primary, but Breithaupt (1831) suggested that they were pseudomorphs after olivine, and intimated that augite and hornblende might be similarly changed. After twenty years of discussion this conclusion was accepted as the result of Rose's work (1851).

Meanwhile the views of Rose and Bischoff (1854), as to the possibility of the metasomatic replacement of rocks by material introduced by percolating solutions, led to wide speculation. Almost any rock, it was assumed, could be transmuted into serpentine; the apparently gradual passage of a differentiated massif from granite into serpentinized peridotite was considered evidence of such a replacement. The necessary check to hypotheses of this character was given by the work of Sandberger 1865-71) and Tschermak (1867), the way for which had been suddenly opened by the discovery of the lherzolites of the Pyrenees by Des Cloiseaux (1862) and Damour (1862), of the dunite of New Zealand by Hochstetter (1864), of the Scandinavian olivine-rocks by Kjerulf (1864), and of various Alpine peridotites. Sandberger showed that varying amounts of residual olivine and bronzite occurred in the serpentines of Saxony; Tschermak, the first to employ microscopical methods of investigation, corroborated this, tracing the alteration of the olivine into serpentine, and describing the typical mesh-structure produced. He showed that the apparent passage of serpentine into aluminous gabbros and eclogites was due to an original heterogeneity of the rock-mass; the gabbros and eclogites do not become serpentine, but only the peridotites with which they are intimately associated.

The discussion now passed to the question whether serpentines could be produced from any other rock than peridotite. Roth (1869) held that all non-aluminous ferromagnesian minerals could pass into serpentine, and that the process of change was the result of atmospheric weathering. Weigand (1875) claimed that the serpentines of the Rauenthal in the Vosges were derived from non-aluminous hornblende, and described the lattice-structure as evidence of this change. Professor Bonney (1887) expressed his doubts concerning this conclusion, and it was shown by Miss Raisin (1897) to be in part erroneous. Hussak (1882) described the knitted-structure of antigorite-serpentine as indicating its origin from augite, studying the rocks from Windisch Matrei in the Austrian Tyrol, formerly termed "serpentine-like rocks" by Drasche (1871). Becke (1894) and Weinschenk (1894), who studied the same occurrence, have shown that antigorite could be derived from purely olivinic rock, and that the lattice and knitted-structures of serpentine could not be applied indiscriminately to determine the origin of serpentinized rocks. The general unreliability of these structures in this connection has been further emphasized by Bonney (1905, 1908). That pyroxenes, both rhombic and monoclinic, and also amphibole, may be changed into serpentine is, however, recognized by him.

Bonney had shown in 1877 the intrusive character of the serpentine of the Lizard, confirming De la Beche's view (1839); later he proved the Ayrshire serpentines to be intrusive (Bonney 1878), though they had been held to typify the interbedding of serpentine with slates, and in the following year he confirmed the conclusions of De la Beche (1831) and Jervis (1860) concerning the intrusive character of the Ligurian serpentines (Bonney 1879). Nevertheless, the apparent interbedding of these rocks with the sediments caused them to be considered in some way different from normal igneous rocks. Taramelli (1884) and Dieulafait (1881) held that they were chemical precipitates formed by the passage of hot springs of alkaline silicates into a sea enriched in magnesian salts; Stopanni (1880), Stefani (1876) and Issel (1879) considered that they were submarine lavas, which had been poured out over the Eocene sediments. This view was supported by Pantanelli (1880), who described in detail the association with the serpentine of radiolarian rocks, first noted by Bonney (1879). Mazzuoli and Issel (1881), also Lotti (1883), following the suggestion of Daubrée (1879), held that the lava had been erupted in a very hydrous condition. The associated gabbros were not considered igneous, but altered sediments and volcanic muds.

Stapff (1880) noted in the case of the serpentine of the St. Gotthardt, that its boundaries sometimes follow the stratification of the neighboring rock, but sometimes go across them, but added that there is no proof of the penetration of the serpentine-mass into the rocks encasing it. "Although we would not consider the serpentine to be an intrusive rock, we must remark that it could not have had precisely the same sedimentary origin as that supposed for the micaceous gneiss which encloses it. We may regard it as originally a deposit of hydrated silicate of magnesia formed by springs, and enclosed between the sediments which gave rise to the mica-schists." The hydrated magnesian silicate is supposed to have been subsequently converted into anhydrous olivine, etc., which by a later hydration has generated serpentine. The apparently intrusive features are explained as the result of earth-folding acting upon structures with different powers of resistance. (Cited from Hunt, 1883.)

A fact often mentioned in this discussion was the frequency of the association of serpentine and limestone in such a manner as to suggest genetic relationship, that *e. g.* the serpentine had been produced by the action of silicifying solutions upon magnesian limestones, with the production of olivine and peridotite, which subsequently became hydrated. There is no doubt that such a process has often occurred, notably in the case of some ophicalcites, and the Eozoon rocks, but the serpentine produced is not of the normal character; it is less dense, has a pale honey-yellow color, is poor in iron and free from chromite and nickel. These distinctions were recognized by Hunt (1883), who, however, believed that all serpentines were originally precipitates formed in pre-Cambrian times on the floor of a primordial ocean, and that masses of apparently intrusive serpentine, *e. g.* those among the Cretaceous and Eocene rocks of Florence, were to be considered as inliers. The Italians recognized several ages for the development of serpentine, Upper Eocene, Upper Trias, and Paleozoic or pre-Paleozoic, and a general discussion was held on the problem, at the meeting of the International Geological Congress in Bologna in 1881. The proceedings are recorded by Hunt, who presided (1883, pars. 40-73), and in the first volume of the bulletins of the Italian Geological Society. Novarese's work (1895) marks the acceptance by the Italian Geological Survey of the modern ideas concerning the nature of serpentine and the associated basic rocks, which had thus been foreshadowed by English workers.

It was about this time that the Spanish serpentines were first recognized as being derived from peridotites (Macpherson 1875).

While this discussion was in progress in Europe, there were similar differences of opinion in America. The derivation of serpentine was referred to the alteration of olivine-sands (Raymond and King 1878, Julien 1882, Lesley 1883), of volcanic agglomerate or diabase (Selwyn 1883), of hydromica-schist (Fraser 1883) or the metasomatic replacement of sandstone (Becker 1888), though in each of the localities described, the intrusive character of the serpentine has since been ascertained, by Lawson, Fairbanks, Lindgren, Ransome, Turner, Branner, Bascom, Pratt, Lewis or others. Some authors (*e. g.* Emmons 1855) like Macculloch held that serpentine could be either interstratified or intrusive, but Whitney (1851) and Rogers (1858) recognized them as intrusive, and were followed by others who declared the serpentines to be altered intrusive peridotites. Among these were Kerr, Smith, Genth (1875), Low (1883), Wadsworth (1884), Williams, Diller (1886), and Chester (1887), whose views were the orthodox teaching of their day, and have been generally accepted ever since. The American literature has been summarized by Pratt and Lewis (1905) and a full bibliography will be found in their valuable work.

The commencement of the last decade of the nineteenth century saw firmly established the recognition of the derivation of serpentine from intrusive peridotite, and we may add that this perplexing rarity of dikes formed of serpentine or peridotite, and the apparent interbedding of these rocks with those among which they occur, is an instance of those peculiar features attending the intrusion of ultrabasic rocks, that have been summarized in Suess's statement that the "green rocks form sills in dislocated mountains, which sometimes follow the plane of bedding, and sometimes the plane of movement" (Suess, 1909). The association of normal serpentine with limestones is accidental except in so far as these comparatively weak structures may have determined the plane of intrusion (Trabucco 1896?).

III. The Process of Serpentinization.

The nature of the original rock from which the serpentine was derived having been thus ascertained, the discussion turned to those problems with which this paper is specially concerned, namely, actual process of serpentinization, the method, time and place in which the hydration occurred. Most writers prior to 1899, such as Teall (1888), McMahon (1890), and Roth (1869, 1893), but with the exception of Daubrée (1879), had referred the process to the action of percolating meteoric waters, *i. e.* to atmospheric weathering. In recent times Crosby (1914) also held this, and Julien (1914) has put forward in some detail his view concerning the development of serpentine by superficial action followed by a more deeply seated change. This interesting discussion may here be summarized. Julien divided into three stages the processes leading to the formation of antigorite, by which term he implied the mineral species, the composition of which is expressed by the formula $H_4Mg_3Si_2O_9$, as distinct from the serpentine-rock, which is a mixture. (Whether this usage of the term "antigorite" is permissible is another matter.) The three stages are:—"*decay,* the result of operations within the belt of weathering, disintegration and extreme hydration. Among the more important products are colloid magnesian silicates of the first type (colloid deweylite, sepiolite), magnesium oxide, hydrate and giobertite, besides various forms of ferrous and ferric hydrate, hydro-carbonates, etc.; *alteration* to express the interchange and consequent new formations, with great loss of water, which take their birth in a more deeply seated region, the common products of which are the magnesian hydrosilicates of the second type (talc, antigorite), hardened deweylite, forms of limonite, turgite, hematite, etc.; and *decomposition* to express molecular dissociation, still more complete interchanges, and still greater, to complete, dehydration, which have ensued within the zone of anamorphism. Examples of these products are periclase, spathic magnesite, dolomite, siderite, breunnerite, regenerated olivine, specular iron, magnetite, etc." "In regard to the term 'Hydrometamorphism,' whether in the sense of Lindgren, referring to the action of meteoric or vadose waters, or that of G. P. Merrill, to the action of waters from deep-seated sources or from magmas, I find no application for it below the belt of weathering. There only has the highest hydration, below it every change has been attended with a progressive loss of water." "Even the remarkable rocks of the Stubachthal (discussed below) are explained in this manner." "Antigorite and talc, crystalline and never colloid, have merely served as insoluble fixatives to harden and record the transformations of their mobile and protean predecessors. Chrysotile is but a pseudo-fibrous variety of antigorite, in fact a pseudomorph in antigorite, after a pseudomorph in deweylite, after nemalite, the fibrous form of brucite."

While the writer must record his dissent from some of these conclusions, it should be noted that Dr. Julien closed his paper by stating: "The evidence in confirmation of these views, from field observations, optical examinations, etc., together with a review of the literature of brucite, serpentine, antigorite and the hydrous magnesian minerals, have been gathered for presentation in a separate monograph." By Dr. Julien's lamented death in the *Titanic* disaster, this record of extensive and valuable observation has been lost to science.

In 1891, Weinschenk stated that in the case of the serpentine of the Stubachthal, primary antigorite occurred intergrown with olivine, and had been formed from a hydrous magma crystallizing under high pressure, and that further the water emitted from the magma on consolidation converted the remaining olivine into secondary antigorite. The distinction made between these is that the primary antigorite (which is admitted to be very rare) occurs in large well-formed plates regularly intergrown with the olivine, generally parallel to the dome-face, while the secondary antigorite forms more or less irregular fine scaly aggregates. Moreover, there occur sharply defined veins of coarsely granular olivine and antigorite, which were injected after the serpentinization of the main mass of the rock, so that this process cannot be the result of atmospheric weathering, but of magmatic solutions (Weinschenk 1891, 1894). This important work will be further discussed below. By this hypothesis of crystallization under high pressure, a definite form was given to the vague conception of a hydrous magma, previously suggested by Daubrée and the Italian workers. Becke, who studied an adjacent mass of antigorite-serpentine at the same time, also recognized that pressure was essential to its formation (Becke 1894). Somewhat similar phenomena have been described by Palache (1907), who found a narrow vein of olivine, two inches in width, traversing a serpentinized mass of peridotite made up of ''platy serpentine'' (antigorite?), and chiefly replacing olivine but also pyroxene. The olivine of the vein is vitreous in appearance, is in large crystals associated with chrysotile and sometimes brucite, and is sharply bounded from the massive rock.

Support was given to the hypothesis of the origin of antigorite under pressure by Bonney (1905, 1908), but though thus demanding the deep-seated origin of antigorite, he does not conclude that it must result from the action of magmatic waters. Lindgren (1895) also advocated the deep-seated origin of serpentine, and the absence of any atmospheric action, pointing out that no change in the character of the serpentine is to be seen at whatever depth it is encountered in mining operations. Mennell has recently given evidence from South Africa corroborating this (1913). The most striking evidence of this known to the writer has not apparently been cited in discussions on this subject. Five kilometers inward from the north portal of the St. Gotthardt tunnel, and at a depth of 950 meters from the surface, is a mass of ultrabasic rock, 450 meters in width. On either side there is a marginal band of talcose carbonate (magnesite) rock, and within this there is on either side of the mass and again near its center, a zone of completely serpentinized rock, while between the serpentine zones there is partially hydrated peridotite with 5·3% H_2O. This repetition of the central peridotite is believed to be due to faulting. The facts are displayed on fig. 1 (Stapff, 1878, 1880, Bodmer-Beder 1903.) Almost directly above this serpentine in the tunnel, there occurs on the surface a mass of peridotite, surrounded by serpentine and car-

FIG. 1.

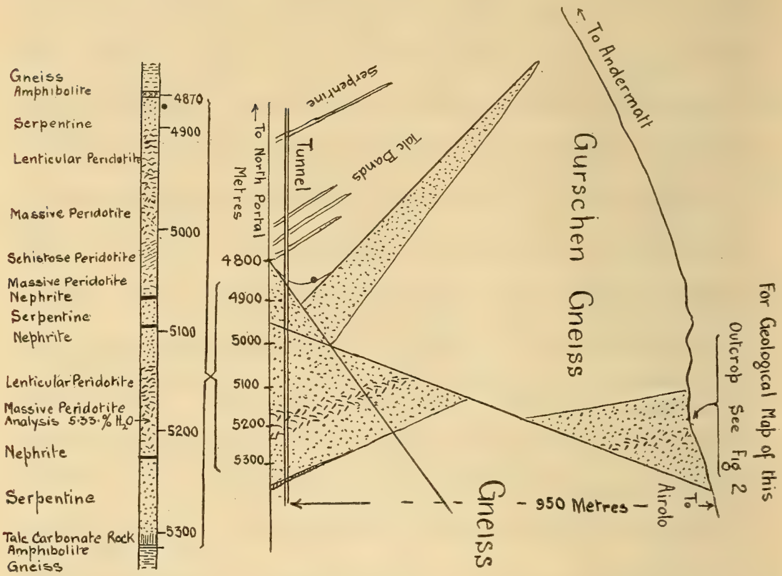


FIG. 1. Part of geological section along the axis of the St. Gotthardt Tunnel (after Stapff, 1878) with detailed enlargement of part of same after Schneider (1912), based upon Stapff's observations.

FIG. 2.

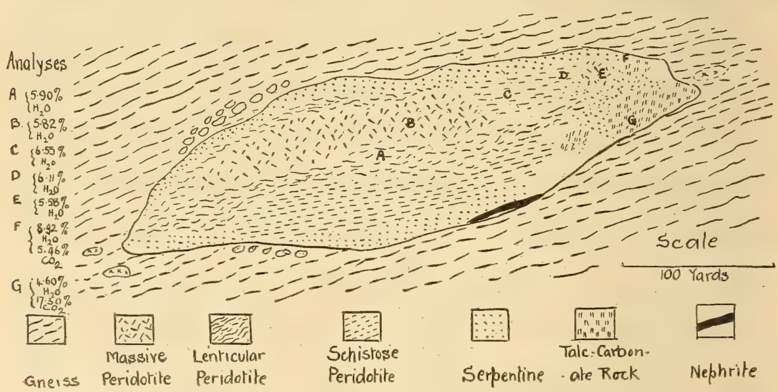


FIG. 2. Map of the serpentines, etc., of Gigestafel near Andermatt. (After Schneider, 1912.) For complete analyses, see original paper.

bonate rocks, which Stapff considers the extension of that encountered in the tunnel. It has recently been studied by Schneider (1912). So far as could be learned from the descriptions given and from a personal examination of some of the material in the Museum of the University of Zurich, the rocks that appear on the surface are exactly similar to those occurring in the tunnel three thousand feet below. The water-content (loss on ignition) of samples from the center of the surface exposure varies from 5·8% to 8·5%, *i. e.* is the same as that at depth, so that the evidence is clear that hydration does not depend on proximity to the surface. (See fig. 2.)

The truth of this is shown again in the case of the dunite of the Geisspfad Pass studied by Preiswerk

Fig. 3.

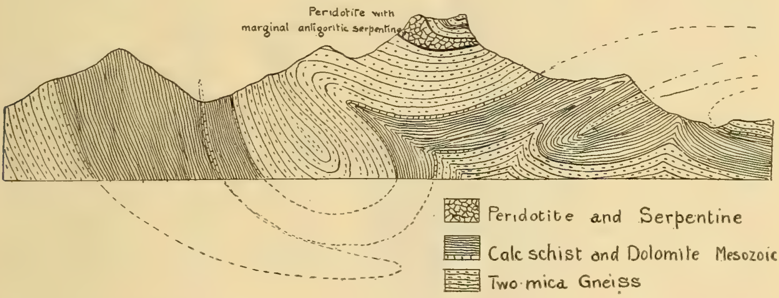


Fig. 3. Occurrence of the Geisspfad serpentine near the Simplon Tunnel. (After Schmidt and Preiswerk, 1908.)

(1901), (probably the source of the material from which Schweizer (1840) obtained the original antigorite described by him). In this the center is almost anhydrous, but is surrounded by a zone of antigorite-bearing peridotite, the relation of the antigorite to the olivine recalling that of plagioclase to ophitic augite, while around this there is a marginal zone of completely hydrated schistose serpentine. The mass of ultrabasic rock forms an almost horizontal sill in gneiss, and the upper hydrated layer is quite similar to the lower one from which it is separated by the anhydrous rock. (See fig. 3.)

Effects that can be definitely referred to atmospheric weathering are very limited in depth. They consist of the formation of a crust sometimes attaining a depth of twelve feet, but more usually only a few inches in thickness, made up of limonite, with quartz, chalcedony and carbonates of iron and magnesia, together with a little chlorite or vermiculite, talc, and kaolin. Not infrequently the carbonates are entirely absent. This covering forms from either peridotite or serpentine, and in the

Fig. 4.

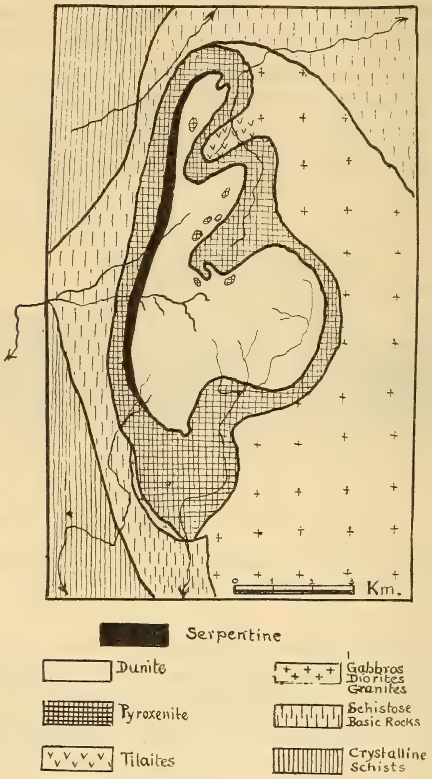


Fig. 4. The Dunite mass of Taguil surrounded by pyroxenite and gabbro, showing the distribution of the serpentine. (After Wyssotsky, simplified; Mem. Comm. Geol. Russie, No. 62, 1913.)

former case there is no evidence that serpentinization in its formation is a necessary antecedent or accompaniment. (See *e. g.* Pratt and Lewis 1905, pp. 112-119.) Even in the well-watered districts of southern India or of the southern end of the Appalachian Mountains, these changes do not proceed far from the surface, but on the other hand serpentines may occur in completely hydrated condition in the center of deserts (Merrill 1899, Holland 1899). For this reason Merrill emphasized the ineffectiveness of atmospheric weathering, stating his belief that serpentinization is a deep-seated process due to waters coming from a considerable depth, which may even have been present in the parent magmas at the time of their intrusion. To the first part of this, Bonney has given his partial adherence (1899). Holland, rejecting atmospheric weathering as a cause of serpentinization, gave quite another explanation which is considered below.

IV. The Source of the Water for Serpentinization.

With the exclusion of surface water acting at small depths, from among the possible agents of serpentinization, attention must be directed to the deeper sources of water which may have effected the hydration of the intrusive masses. Four sources may be considered.

a. Water diffused from the invaded rock in which it was originally contained into the intrusive peridotite.
b. Water forming portion of the underground circulation of at least partly epigene or meteoric origin.
c. Water issuing from the ultrabasic magma itself during the last stage of its consolidation.
d. Water issuing from magmas intrusive into or near the ultrabasic mass.

a. Local diffusion of interstitial water.

The hypothesis of the production of serpentine by the diffusion into peridotite of the water contained in the invaded rock might explain the marginal serpentinization of intrusive masses, if there were to be considered only such masses as are intrusive into comparatively unaltered sediments, with a high content of water. It is much more difficult to apply it in the case of large masses of serpentine that are intrusive into gneissic rocks such as that in the Geisspfad Pass, and in the St. Gotthardt Tunnel; and it is particularly difficult of application when the masses are almost completely serpentinized throughout, as in the case of that in the gneiss at Zöblitz in Saxony. In the last mentioned area, the serpentine, in such samples as have been seen by the writer in various collections or obtained by himself, exhibits the normal mesh-structure and are not schistose, so that their serpentinization must have followed the crushing to which the gneiss has been subjected, during which its water-content was probably greatly reduced. (See also Zirkel 1894.) It must be concluded that in general local diffusion is quite inadequate as a source of the water for serpentinization.[2]

b. Water of the underground circulation.

That the water of serpentinization may be derived from the general deep underground circulation (probably the ascending portion) through the upper parts of the crust, has much more in its support, and is the hypothesis adopted by many writers explicitly (Van Hise 1904) or by implication. Since the freest channels for the ascent of the water might well be at the margins of the intrusive masses, the inward decrease of the degree of serpentinization might thus be explained, as well as the occurrence of serpentinization along the fault and contraction-planes occurring within the mass, sometimes causing a banded structure in the serpentine. (Cf. *e. g.* Graham 1917.) Moreover, as Van Hise explained, the upward-moving waters would be enriched in carbonic acid as a result of the silicification of carbonates in the deeper zones of metamorphism, and in this we may see the explanation of the strong attack of the waters upon the olivine and the subsequent carbonation of the serpentine. He added, however, that the effectiveness of circulating waters as metamorphic agents must be greatly increased by the addition to the general circulation in the middle zone of metamorphism, of waters of magmatic origin, though these probably form only a small portion of the whole supply. It is to the reactions in this zone of the character indicated that he refers the processes of serpentinization and carbonation of the ultrabasic rocks (op. cit. pp. 608-612). Grubenmann's reference of the formation of antigorite-serpentine and of talc-carbonate-schists to the uppermost of his zones of the crystalline schists is perhaps in accord with this view, though he adds that the ordinary massive or fibrous types of serpentine are best considered the product of weathering

[2] That serpentine itself may be diffused in solution throughout a rock-mass is assumed by Liesegang (1913) in his very interesting hypothesis of the development by diffusion of Eozoonal structures in magnesian limestones.

(Grubenmann 1910). The extremely interesting discussions recorded in "The Genesis of Ore Deposits" (Posepny Memorial Volume) show, however, that, in the opinion of several authorities, Beck, Launay, Lindgren, Rickard, Vogt and others, Van Hise has under-estimated the contribution made by magmatic waters to the general underground circulation.

Holland (1899) has given a very special form to the hypothesis of the production of the great masses of serpentine by circulating epigene waters. While admitting the local action of magmatic carbonated siliceous waters, he points out that in the great geosynclinal regions of the world, the peridotites are almost always completely serpentinized, while in the continental massif of Peninsular India they are almost anhydrous, except for those parts that have been attacked by local magmatic waters (the evidence of this last is discussed below). From this he concludes that it is probable that advanced serpentinization results from an enhanced water-circulation brought about by the immersion of the land area beneath the sea; "for if serpentinization is due to water coming from considerable depths, it is difficult to see why these rocks, erupted at different times, and in widely separated localities in Peninsular India, should universally escape, whilst in other areas, other serpentines also widely separated by great distances, serpentinization is so constant. With the evidence of the action of deep-seated vapours in other ways in Peninsular India, the value of this point becomes accentuated." But he adds: "Although the evidence, both positive and negative from India, indicate that a submarine existence has at some stage formed part of the history of every serpentine-mass, it will require the testimony of other areas to show that such submarine conditions are essential for serpentinization on an extensive scale."

The hypothesis is one that it is almost impossible to test satisfactorily. Holland draws attention to the belt of ultrabasic rocks on the eastern side of the United States, which are serpentinized in the northern portion over which the sea has transgressed at various times, but are practically anhydrous in the southern portions, presumably crystallized under the same condition but which he believed were never covered by the sea. Schuchert's recent series of paleogeographical maps (1910) confirm this opinion. Other regions yield less definite evidence. Thus the great continental block of Western Australia is invaded near its center by the thoroughly serpentinized rocks of Kalgoorli (Thomson 1913), Meetkathara (Clarke 1916) and elsewhere, which were not very likely to have been covered by more than a temporary extension of later Paleozoic or Cretaceous seas, and there is no proof that even these extended so far. The ultrabasic rocks of New Caledonia (Card 1900, Glasser 1903, 1904), New Zealand, and the Pyrenees (Bonney 1877, Lacroix 1890) though in geosynclinal regions, where intruded during the late Mesozoic or early Tertiary orogenic movement and have not certainly been flooded over by the sea in subsequent periods. They are, as a rule, only partly serpentinized. The peridotites of the Red Sea Hills in S. E. Egypt are largely serpentinized, and it is possible, though by no means certain, that they may have been covered for a short time by the Cretaceous Sea (Ball 1912). The ultrabasic rocks in the great continental block of South Africa, namely those associated with the great norite dike of Rhodesia (Mennell 1910, Zeally 1915), or the Bushveld Complex (Henderson 1898) have never been under the sea so far as can be ascertained and are only partly hydrous. The peridotites of Skye, which have probably not been covered by sea-water, are almost anhydrous, though their intrusion has been followed by that of a series of magmas, gabbro, and granite, which however, do not elsewhere show much evidence of being greatly charged with magmatic water (Harker 1905).

Steinmann (1905) suggested that "The problematical process of serpentinization may be the result of the rapid cooling of an extremely peridotitic magma in the strongly cooled region below the sea, with the simultaneous introduction of sea-water under high pressure," an hypothesis suggested by the frequent association of serpentines with deep-sea marine sediments, but which can have no great bearing upon the development of serpentine that occurs among the gneisses.

If, however, we accept Holland's general statement of the mode of occurrence as sufficiently accurate, it seems possible that it has another significance from that which he has ascribed to it. It may, perhaps, be stated as follows: In those regions in which the intrusive masses of peridotite have extended into the upper parts of the crust, into regions of lesser pressure, and there consolidated, they are now found generally serpentinized, while those which consolidated in the deeper parts of the crust, and are associated with crystalline schists (like the olivinites of Norway), have formed under heavy pressure, and are in general nearly anhydrous. The inference from this would be that where there was available a supply of water to act upon the peridotite, hydration would occur down to such a depth that the chemical affinity of the olivine for water remained sufficient to overbalance the constraint exercised by the consequent expansion of the rock mass. In the deeper regions the Volume Law became paramount, and hydration with expansion could no longer occur. Anhydrous masses would remain at shallow depths, where for some reason there was no great supply of magmatic water, or where the water was enabled to escape, to higher levels, before it had thoroughly acted upon the ultrabasic rock. This possible source of water of serpentinization we now proceed to discuss.

c and *d*. *Magmatic waters.*

While it is obvious, as Holland points out, that the occurrence of anhydrous masses of peridotite raises difficulties in the way of the general reference of serpentinization to the action of magmatic waters, other difficulties appear if we must explain away the evidence in many localities pointing the action of such waters. This evidence is discussed below, but as very diverse features must be considered, a summary of the general argument will first be given, and the grounds which support the several statements contained therein will be detailed later. The following appear to be the salient points:—

i. Magmatic waters, highly charged with silica and carbonic acid, etc., have been emitted in connection with certain peridotitic intrusions.

ii. Experiment shows that carbonated waters have a particularly strong solvent action on serpentine, and are able to attack olivine also.

iii. Where magnesian rocks have been converted into talc and carbonates, this process occurred after they had been converted to serpentine, except in those cases where such change is demonstrably due to the action of atmospheric weathering.

iv. Though mesh-structure serpentine (chrysolite) is usually formed in regions of comparatively low pressure, and antigorite under high pressure, instances occur where antigorite has been formed by the recrystallization of mesh-structure serpentine. This is best explained by a recrystallization of the rock under an increased pressure in the one orogenic epoch of igneous activity, and it is unlikely that the solutions concerned in the process were of meteoric origin.

v. In some instances, after a rock had been more or less completely serpentinized, coarse-grained veins of antigorite and fresh glassy olivine have been formed in it, recalling in some measure the occurrence of pegmatite veins in granites. Such veins seem to be connected with others in the invaded rocks showing minerals usually indicating contact-metamorphism.

vi. Serpentinization and carbonation have often been complete at the close of the orogenic epoch during which the peridotite was erupted.

vii. But while serpentinization thus must have followed the intrusion of the peridotite after a comparatively short interval, there have often (probably generally) been several intervening intrusions of differentiates of the magma that gave rise to the peridotite. This is shown by (*a*) the spatial relationship of the post-peridotitic intrusive masses to the development of serpentine; and, (*b*) alteration of masses intrusive into the ultrabasic rocks, which is of such a character as to indicate that the alteration of these later masses occurred during the process of serpentinization.

viii. The process of serpentinization, if explicable as here indicated, is in some degree analogous to the process of greisenization of granitic masses. It is probable that the carbonic acid at first acted as a catalyser, but subsequently, under cooler conditions, remained in combination with the magnesia.

We now proceed to give the evidence for these several statements:—

i. Holland's investigations (1899*a*) of the magnesian rocks of the Salem District, Madras, show that they are locally altered to magnesite, and that "most, if not all the peridotites of Southern India are accompanied by masses and veins of pure white quartz, which always contain considerable quantities of liquid carbonic acid. The constancy of this association of peridotite with pure quartz, suggests a genetic relationship between the two." The discussion of (iii) will show that similar action of solutions of silica and carbonic acid upon ultrabasic rocks is of world-wide distribution.

ii. Clarke (1916) declares "that hydrous magnesian silicates are easily prepared by various wet reactions, but these syntheses have little or no significance in the interpretation of serpentine." Nevertheless, Müller (1877) by acting upon olivine with carbonated waters, found that silica and magnesia were extracted therefrom in the right proportions to make serpentine. He also stated that serpentine was soluble in similar waters even at ordinary temperatures. Leitmeier (1913) has confirmed this, showing that 3·7% of finely powdered serpentine was dissolved in six months by weakly carbonated waters at 15°-18° C., and that magnesian carbonate and gelatinous silica were deposited. This, he says, explains the formation of opal which is frequently associated with carbonated serpentines. What seems to be most desirable is that a series of experiments should be made upon the action of carbonated waters upon magnesian silicates at such pressures and temperatures that might more closely simulate the conditions under which magmatic waters would act. We shall note below that other dissolved substances than carbonic acid may be instrumental in serpentinization.

iii. The development of magnesian carbonate rocks with talc, silica, etc., was studied by Schrauf (1882) on material from Bohemia. He concluded that the change was a continuation of the process of serpentinization, which he referred to the action of epigene waters enriched in carbonic acid by passage through the humus. The serpentinization of the peridotites was followed by carbonation, with the production of chalcedony or opal; and finally by the leaching out of the carbonates, leaving a siliceous skeleton. Such were the final stages of the weathering of the peridotites described by Pratt and Lewis (1905), who, however, recognized that serpentinization is not an essential preliminary to such atmospheric carbonation. Weinschenk (1894, 1913) referred the formation of breunnerite, associated with lime and magnesian silicates in the Tyrol, to an extension of the process of serpentinization, but considered this to be due to the action of post-volcanic waters. Schneider (1912) has adopted a third view, an extension of that of Schrauf, namely that both processes are to be referred to "secular weathering," as defined by Cornu (1910), which, so far as the writer understands it, appears to be similar to Roth's conception (1869) of "complicated weathering," *i. e.*, the production of slow changes at depth by epigene waters, the chemical activity of which had been increased by the presence in solution of products of weathering obtained from the surface layers. Remarking that the width of the carbonate rock exposed in the St. Gotthardt Tunnel is less than that appearing on the surface three thousand feet above, Schneider concludes that there is a gradual decrease in width of the carbonate zone with increasing distance from the surface. His observation that the boundary between the serpentine and the carbonate rock is most irregular, weakens this conclusion, and, moreover, we have no knowledge of the width of the carbonate zone at intermediate, or lower, levels. (See figs. 1 and 2.) The rocks of this zone contain crystalline carbonates of magnesia, iron and a small amount of lime, together with talc and chlorite. Redlich (1909), investigating the magnesite deposits of Kraubat, which form on serpentine or peridotite alike, concluded, however, that, while the serpentinization may be the result of secular weathering (though antigorite has been formed) the carbonation is here the result of atmospheric weathering, since the magnesite is a gel, not a crystalloid, in this area (cf. Cornu 1910). In this condition the magnesite builds a thick earthy mass adhering to the tongue, and, microscopically examined, is seen to form isotropic flakes, which take a basic stain; but in the case described by Schneider the magnesite is a crystalloid in the usual rhombohedral form, and cannot be the result of atmospheric weathering according to Cornu's criteria, though it may perhaps be the result of "secular weathering." Schneider's rocks are typical of very many occurrences of carbonates on the margin of serpentine-masses and, more rarely, as in the Bingara District, N. S. W. (Benson 1917), in bands within a mass of serpentine. In most of these, there is also quartz or chalcedony, residual or secondary (cf. Rosenbusch 1907) grains of chromite, and fuchsite, as *e. g.* at Kalgoorli, W. A. (Thomson 1913); sometimes sulphides are present. In the last region mentioned the structure of the carbonate rock renders it perfectly clear that the carbonation had occurred after the original rock, a poikilitic harzbergite, had been completely serpentinized.

Knopf (1906) found that the magnesian carbonate rocks of California had replaced peridotites, which were either quite fresh or were more or less serpentinized, and concluded that the carbonation was a process distinct from hydration and subsequent thereto. Some lime and sulphide minerals were introduced during the change, but apparently no talc was formed. In other parts of California, the serpentine associated with the cinnabar deposits has been entirely removed by "solfataric agency," and only the siliceous skeleton remains (Becker 1888. See also Lindgren 1895, p. 153). Somewhat similar features have been observed by Lacroix (1897), as the result of the action on serpentine in Greece, of a fumarole, which exhaled carbonic and sulphuric acids and steam. Ferruginous honey-combed siliceous rocks, containing talc and breunnerite, are associated with serpentine in the northern part of the belt of magnesian rocks in Eastern U. S. A., and the several changes involved are considered to be the result of the action of the same agents as caused the serpentinization (Bascom 1902, 1905). In the neighborhood of Madras, there are magnesite rocks derived from peridotites, by the action of magmatic waters bearing carbonic acid but, though Holland (1899*a*) concluded that the small amount of serpentine present was formed after carbonation, Middlemiss (1896) held that serpentinization had preceded carbonation.

The writer's observations in New South Wales (Benson 1913) accord with this last. In several regions along the serpentine-belt, the rock is more or less completely replaced by crystalline carbonates, talc, and quartz, chalcedony or opal. Generally this occurs on one side only of the serpentine mass, "the footwall," occasionally in one or more bands within the serpentine, so that it would seem very probable that the carbonation is the effect of solutions moving in the thrust-planes that bound or traverse the serpentine. The location of the carbonated rocks is completely independent of the present topography, and there is clear evidence at Warialda, where the carbonated rocks are overlain by Jurassic sandstone, that the carbonation occurred before the sandstones were deposited (Benson 1917). The presence of auriferous pyrites among the carbonated rocks gives further support to the hypothesis of the deep-seated origin of the carbonating solutions. Wilkinson (1885) referred to "geyser-action" the formation of the sinter-like siliceous rocks occurring at Hanging Rock in the Nundle District, but the persistence of the occurrence of the partially leached and more or less sinter-like siliceous rocks here and there throughout the whole length of the serpentine belt (over two hundred miles), leads one to the belief that, while the production of the ferruginous sinter from the siliceous carbonate rocks may be merely the effect of surface-waters, the waters that formed the main mass both of the serpentine and of the carbonate rocks were either genetically directly connected with the great intrusive mass of peridotite itself, or were those which also formed the auriferous quartz veins, occasionally containing pyrites and calcite, that traverse the sedimentary and igneous rocks invaded by peridotite. These veins seem to have been formed at some rather indefinite time during the long period of plutonic igneous activity which followed the intrusion of the peridotites (middle Carboniferous) and ended with the intrusion of granitic rocks before the commencement of Mesozoic time, and it would be in accord with the views of perhaps the majority of modern geologists to consider that such vein-forming waters were derived in part at least from plutonic sources, and thus indirectly from the same magma which gave rise to the peridotite. The highly undulose extinction of the quartz formed in these siliceous carbonate rocks may indicate that they suffered considerable strain, presumably in the orogenic epoch in which these intrusions occurred; though it may perhaps have resulted merely from the strains that might be set up in quartz, forming from opal by dehydration. The point is, that if the carbonation was performed by the magmatic waters, it follows almost necessarily the preceding serpentinization was also.

Similar carbonate talc rocks occur in New Zealand, and are especially well developed near Hokitika, where they contain numerous cubes of pyrites. Bell's description (1906) indicates that they are closely similar to the greisen-like pyritic carbonate rocks of the Nundle District, N. S. W., and Dr. Bell adds: "the presence of so much pyrites indicates considerable solfataric action following or during the period of Poumanu (*i. e.* ultrabasic) intrusion."

In some regions there is evidence that the peridotitic intrusions were accompanied or followed by the emission of volatile substances such as are usually associated with granitic masses. Thus Bell (1907) found tourmaline in the serpentinous schist in the Parapara District, N. Z.; Duparc and Siggs (1913) found it in the serpentine of the Urals, and Lacroix (1894, 1901, 1914) found it in association with scapolite in calcareous rocks invaded by the peridotite of the Pyrenees. His first memoir (1894) describes and discusses a large amount of evidence of this action.

Occasionally there is also evidence of the expulsion of sodic solutions from the peridotitic magmas, which is perhaps connected with the development of albitic veins in these rocks, to the widespread occurrence of which, the writer has already drawn attention (Benson 1913). Thus Park (1908), citing analyses by Maclaurin, shows that of two otherwise closely analogous mica schists, the one adjacent to the margin of a mass of serpentine at Cromwell, N. Z., contained 8·07% Na_2O as compared with but 2·91% in that two yards from the contact. The well-known glaucophane-schists near the serpentine masses of California first described by Ransome (1893) are sometimes cited as an example of this, though doubt has been thrown on their development as a result of contact metamorphism (*e. g.* by Nutter and Barber 1902). The occurrence of scapolite in the neighborhood of the Lac du Lherz, as mentioned by Lacroix, recently redescribed by Longchambon (1910-1911),[3] may be a further example of the emission of soda. Thus we see that associated with the peridotitic intrusions, there are magmatic waters that are charged with carbonic acid and silica, and sometimes with hydrogen sulphide, boric acid, hydrochloric acid, and soda. Nevertheless the metamorphic action of these magmas is, as is well known, much less marked than that of the more acid rocks.

[3] This paper is interesting as an instance of the application of the special views of a school of French petrologists in regard to the relation of metamorphism, melting down, and mixture of sediments and the features of "the chemistry of the geosyncline" to the origin of ultrabasic rocks. Lherzolite according to this discussion is produced in a manner following "the general equation granitic magna plus dolomite = CO_2 plus basic magnesian silicates plus pegmatitic fumaroles." The last term includes *inter alia* the emission of sodic solutions from the basic magmas. A rather different hypothesis is expounded by Termier (1903).

iv. Grubenmann, voicing an opinion held by numerous petrologists, has stated that while antigorite is a product of hydration under pressure and formed in the upper zone of metamorphism, normal mesh-structure chrysotile serpentine is a product of weathering (Grubenmann 1910). One might infer from this that in any rock, containing the two forms of serpentine, antigorite would have been formed first at a great depth, and mesh-structure chrysotile would be developed from the residual olivine, when under lesser pressure and at a smaller depth, the rock came under the influence of meteoric waters. Weinschenk (1913), on the other hand, would divide the process into: (*a*) the formation of primary antigorite in the rare instances in which it occurs; (*b*) the formation of secondary antigorite by the action of magmatic waters upon the residual olivine; (*c*) the formation of veinlets of olivine and antigorite crystallizing from the magmatic water; and (*d*) finally the formation of mesh-structure serpentine from the residual olivine as last effect of the thermal waters.

In both hypotheses, antigorite is of earlier formation than mesh-structure serpentine. Nevertheless the writer has found that this is not always the case. It was seen that in certain serpentines from New South Wales that mesh-structure serpentine may recrystallize into antigorite serpentine, the long blades of which lie in positions quite without relation to the position of the secondary magnetite, which separated out from the olivine as it formed by its first change into chrysotile-serpentine, and still exhibits the characteristic mesh structure. The process was traced through a series of slides which exhibited all intermediate stages. In serpentines in which the antigorite comes directly from the olivine (or pyroxene) the magnetite is often in little triangular patches, interstitially placed among the laths of antigorite, and recalling the intersertal and occasionally the ophitic structure of dolerites (cf. Bonney 1905), but in the serpentines in which the antigorite has formed after the change to chrysotile, the magnetite remains in fine dusty particles. Dr. Flett, who kindly examined the series of slides in question, expressed his concurrence in the interpretation placed thereon.[4] Similar evidence of the replacement of mesh or chrysotile serpentine by antigorite was seen in a specimen from Visp, Switzerland, described by Preis-

[4] (Letter to writer, 2:5:1913.)

werk (1903) who has generously permitted this mention of a feature in his slide not previously noted, and also his concurrence in the interpretation here suggested. Several slices of the serpentines of the Gross Venediger Stock, Austrian Tyrol, described by Weinschenk (1894) seemed to the writer to be capable of a similar interpretation. They appeared to show the development of secondary magnetite in mesh-like bands of minute grains, between the residues of the olivine and pyroxene crystals, but these have been slashed across by blades of antigorite in the usual manner, while antigorite completely replaces the first formed chrysotile. Professor Weinschenk verbally informed the writer that analogous features are present in some of the serpentines of Wurlitz, near Hof, in the Fitchelgebirge, but while kindly permitting the publication of this suggestion, does not himself accept it. Hence these cannot be cited as indubitable examples of the change here suggested.

This structural change in serpentine has apparently been observed by Bonney (1908), for he remarks that, while few of the antigorite serpentines studied by him contain any residual olivine, in a few the matted antigorite is traversed by tiny strings of opacite resembling those in a serpentine formed from that mineral.

With regard to the general question of the origin of antigorite, a few words may be given. Weinschenk himself states that the formation of primary antigorite is very rare; and, though his hypothesis has been frequently tested since it was announced, few instances have been found which seemed to call for this explanation. Krotov (1910) and Granagg (1906) have accepted the hypothesis of the primary crystallization antigorite, as best explaining the features of serpentines in the Southern Urals and Carinthia, but reasons given in each case, the former certainly in abstract only, do not seem quite convincing. On the other hand, Bonney (1914) has decisively rejected the hypothesis. After a study of some of the original material from the Gross Venediger Stock, by kind permission of Professor Weinschenk (who has most clearly and fully described the features developed), the writer could not feel completely convinced of the necessarily primary origin of the antigorite in the very remarkable slides that he saw. He could not go beyond the cautious comment of Harker (1897) that, "though the reasons for regarding the antigorite as an original mineral do not seem to be perfectly convincing, the phenomena described are sufficiently remarkable to deserve careful consideration.''

v. One of the most remarkable features described by Weinschenk was clearly illustrated by the material shown to the writer in Munich. There seems no possibility for doubting that, in the case of the slides examined, the rock had been completely changed to serpentine before the formation of numerous cracks, which were filled by very coarse-grained antigorite intergrown with glassy clear olivine, and sometimes with magnesite. The very coarseness of the grain size compared with that of the main mass of the rock suggests a comparison with pegmatite, forming from the residual mother liquor of the magma; and according to Weinschenk, where these veins extend beyond the ultra-basic rock into the surrounding calc-schists, they are associated with vesuvianite, garnet and other minerals of contact metamorphism, which seems to give further indication of their magmatic origin.[5] We may, therefore, concur in the view that the antigorite is here of hydrothermal origin, forming at or before the close of the period of igneous activity, which produced the peridotites. It must surely follow that the prior serpentinization of this peridotite-mass took place at such a depth as almost to exclude the action of meteoric waters, and while large amounts of magmatic water were present.

These interesting veinlets containing olivine traversing serpentine are not without analogy, for similar features have been noted by Palache (1907), who found a narrow sharply-defined vein of glassy clear olivine two inches in width in the ''platey serpentine'' of Chester, Mass., U. S. A., which had replaced olivine and pyroxene. It is here also clear that the serpentine formed before the intrusion of the olivine vein.

A possible objection to the hypothesis of the production of olivine by crystallization from a hydrous magmatic solution is that as yet it has been formed artificially by methods of dry-fusion only. Nevertheless, the production of olivine in magnesian limestone at granite contacts is well known, and here the action will be probably a pneumato-hydrothermal one. In any case, the possibilities of experimentation with carbonated solutions under conditions of high temperature and pressure

[5] But see Rosenbusch's alternative suggestion, p. 722.

have been scarcely investigated, much less exhausted. It is interesting to note again in the Tyrolese instance the presence of carbonates in the olivine-antigorite veins that traverse the serpentine.

vi. Where geological evidence is available of the period of hydration, the serpentine seems to have been formed at a comparatively short time after the intrusion of the ultrabasic rock. It is true that Crosby (1914) considers that serpentinization of ancient peridotites may be even now in progress at some depth in the earth, and suggests that the high frequent relief of such serpentine masses may be due to the steady upthrusting of the rock, as it expands during combination with circulating waters in the crust; but this explanation of the relief of serpentine areas seems unnecessary. It has long been recognized that the chemical stability of the serpentine molecule gives it great power of resisting weathering, though the rock yields readily to erosion. (See *e. g.* Hunt 1883.) If we study the conglomerates that were formed shortly after the intrusion of ultrabasic rocks, we find that sometimes they contain pebbles of normal serpentine, so similar to that occurring in the great rock-masses from which they were derived, that it is scarcely possible that they could have been formed under different conditions, the one as a large deep-seated plutonic mass of peridotite, the other as a pebble of peridotite included in a conglomerate, where it would encounter strongly oxidizing waters. It is therefore most probable that the plutonic mass had been hydrated to serpentine before the pebble was torn from it. As instances the following may be cited: Serpentine-pebbles appear in the Silurian rocks near Ballantrae in Scotland, derived from ultrabasic rocks intrusive into the Ordovician rocks (Peach and Horne 1897). A pebble of serpentine, probably derived from the peridotite that was intruded in Middle Carboniferous times, occurs in the lower Permo-Carboniferous beds of New South Wales (David 1907). It is quite clear that the carbonation of the Carboniferous serpentine in the Warialda District of New South Wales occurred before the deposition of the overlying Jurassic sandstone (Benson 1916). The ultrabasic rocks of Upper Jurassic age have furnished the bowlders of serpentine which form a great part of the Middle Cretaceous series of Bosnia. [Such at least is Katzer's view

(1903), but there is a divergence of opinion on this point. See alternatives suggested by Mojsisivics, Tietze, Bittner and Kispatic, summarized by the last named (1900).] Otis Smith (1904) has also drawn attention to this feature pointing out its bearing on the hydrothermal origin of serpentine. He noted that the basal Eocene conglomerates, lying on the serpentines of the Mount Stuart Complex in Washington, U. S. A., contain pebbles of serpentine exactly similar to that of the serpentines of the complex itself. Though the age of these serpentines is indefinite, it is probable that they belong to the general series of ultrabasic rocks that were formed during the late Mesozoic orogenic movements in western U. S. A.

All of these observations confirm Weinschenk's statement (1894) that the serpentinization has been completed by the end of the orogenic epoch in which the peridotite was formed.

vii. But although cumulative evidence thus points to the serpentinization by magmatic waters during the same orogenic epoch of vulcanicity as produced the peridotite, it does not appear that this followed directly after the ultrabasic intrusion, and without further magmatic-differentiation. Indeed, in many cases it seems that the peridotite remained anhydrous while several later intrusions of magma occurred, before expulsion of the residual magmatic water. In the case of the serpentine of the Lizard, Flett and Hill have concluded (1912) that the hydration of the peridotites occurred at a "comparatively late period in their history," at least after the intrusion of the veins of gabbro; Bonney (1914) concurs in this. The serpentines in the Ivrea Zone, northern Italy, are by Novaresse (cited by Rosenbusch 1907) referred to the after-action of the diorites upon peridotites, while in numerous cases serpentinization is considered to be the effect of magmatic waters accompanying the intrusion of granite as the latest differentiate from the same magma as gave rise to the peridotites. Thus Low (1906), Barlow (1910), Diller (1910), and Dresser (1913), conclude that the hydration of the peridotite in the regions studied by them (eastern Canada and Arizona), was brought about in a large measure by magmatic solutions derived from intrusions of granite in or near the serpentine masses, stating that hydration is most complete in the vicinity of the granite. This view is also adopted by Graham (1917), who argues that the solutions were not carbonated but merely silicic, since there is a noteworthy absence of any carbonates, and it seems improbable that an amount of carbonate in bulk from a quarter to a twelfth of the volume of serpentine could have been removed in solution. Dr. Bell thinks that the hydration of the dunite in the Parapara District, N. Z., may be the result of thermal waters accompanying the acid intrusive rocks which are associated with the ultrabasic rocks (Bell 1907), but there is no suggestion of the presence of such rocks in the quite similar serpentines of the Hokitika District (Bell 1906). Otis Smith (1904) has suggested that the serpentinization of the peridotites in the Mt. Stuart district, Washington, U. S. A., was effected by magmatic waters emitted from the mass of granodiorite by which they have been invaded, but again the presence of such invading masses is by no means a constant feature in the occurrences of serpentine along the Pacific slopes of the United States. The continuous zone of serpentine between the dunite and the pyroxenite of the Tagil complex in the Ural Mountains (see fig. 4), as shown in Wyssotzky's careful map (1913), may illustrate another instance of this mode of formation, though it must be noted that here it has been suggested that the pyroxenite is a differentiate formed *in situ,* and simultaneously with the dunite, rather than a latter intrusion. The same suggestion has been made in Tasmania, by Waterhouse (1916) in the case of the Heemskirk District, where there have been both gabbro and granite intrusions following the peridotite in the one igneous epoch, and it has also been urged by Mr. Twelvetrees (1917) in explanation of the serpentines of Anderson's Creek, which have been invaded by granite. In the last two cases there is a large development of granite with the serpentine, but in others as Graham remarks (1917) "it may be objected that the number and size of the exposed granite dykes and masses are totally inadequate to have been responsible for serpentinization on the scale which has actually occurred"; but he sets the objection aside as based merely on a matter of opinion as to the amount of water that might accompany a granite-intrusion. There is also to be considered the possibility of the occurrence of large unexposed masses of granite where but few veins are visible. In the Great

Serpentine Belt of New South Wales, the objection is a rather cogent one, for the acidic veins are very rare, and the degree of serpentinization is entirely independent of the proximity of the great batholiths of granite, which invade the serpentine at one place, at others are twenty miles distant (see maps Benson 1913, 1916). It would be of interest to test this point in the great mass of only partly hydrated ultrabasic rocks in New Caledonia, where there does not seem to be any large amount of rock less basic than the peridotites. Lacroix (1911) has noted the occurrence of veins of pyroxenite and anorthosite, and Card (1900) of gabbro and diorite, but apparently these occur only in small quantity. There also occur small areas of granite in the serpentine, but it is not clear that they invade it (Glasser 1903, 1904).

A feature emphasized by Graham (1917) is of interest as affording another indication that serpentinization may follow the invasion of a series of gabbros into peridotites. Where these rocks contain monoclinic pyroxene, lime and more or less alumina must be set free during serpentinization; to this process is attributed the formation of grossularite (or topazolite), vesuvianite, epidote, zoisite, and diopside in veins in and near the serpentines. Other lime-silicate veins, somewhat analogous to these, were found in association with serpentine in the Tyrol by Weinschenk (1894), in Roumania by Murgoci (1900), in Italy by Novarese (vide Rosenbusch 1917, "garnetites"); Kalkowsky (1906) also notes them as occurring in Liguria, Judd (1895) and the writer (Benson 1913) in New South Wales, Ward (1911) and Waterhouse (1916) in Tasmania. Such rocks have been variously interpreted; Weinschenk (1894) referred them to the interaction of magmatic waters derived from the peridotite (not from a latter differentiate) upon the chloritic calcschist into which it had been thrust, though the adjacent central-granites, which Weinschenk considers to have also crystallized from a very aqueous magma under pressure, are considered by some writers to be of more recent origin than the peridotites, and to invade them in at least one spot (Becke and Löwl 1903). Rosenbusch, after an examination of Weinschenk's material, considers that at least part of it is a highly altered schistose gabbro, or allalinite (Rosenbusch 1907), and that the change in this case was effected without noteworthy chemical variation. Murgoci (1900) found included in the

Paringû serpentine, masses of diopside, diallage, with grossularite, vesuvianite, fassaite, clinozoisite, lotrite (a form of prehnite), clinochlore, apatite, ilmenite, rutile and sphene. He concluded that the more coarsely granulitic masses, with an appearance like that of saussurite-gabbro, were indeed an altered form of gabbro, but that some hornstones of similar mineral composition were altered inclusions of chloritic calc-schist. The writer has found that in the serpentine of the Bingara region, N. S. W., there are numerous masses of pale green or white grossularite rocks, and that every stage can be noted in the change from gabbro with 15·8% CaO and a specific gravity of 2·93 to a grossularite rock with 33·3% CaO and a specific gravity of 3·42. The development of prehnite is often quite considerable. If it be, as seems probable, that the addition of lime was obtained during the process of serpentinization, we could here conclude from this mineralogical change that the peridotite had not been hydrated at the time of the intrusion of the gabbro, just as in the case of the Lizard rocks. The Tasmanian lime-silicate rocks are ascribed by Ward (1911) and Waterhouse (1916) to the "chemical reaction of the emanations from the acid magma-hearths upon the walls of the fissures that traverse the basic-rocks."

Steinmann (1908), while elaborating his view that nephrite masses are formed from originally continuous dikes of websterite, broken and metamorphosed during the serpentinization and expansion of the including masses of peridotite, states that the copper veins in the serpentine have also been dislocated by the expansion, the effects of the pressure varying so much locally that it can hardly be the result of orogenic movement alone. He adds that wherever the evidence is clear one can prove that the peridotite was still anhydrous when it was invaded by gabbro, indeed sometimes it seems probable that it was still hot. From this he infers that the processes of serpentinization, and of the nephritization and saussuritization connected therewith, commenced only after the vulcanicity had been so far exhausted that ore-formation had occurred, but, on the other hand, that the processes had been completed before the last stage of the orogenic epoch that commenced with the intrusion of the peridotite, and ended with great overthrustings. Finlayson (1909), referring to the serpentines and peridotites of Dun Mt., N. Z., in which there occur sulphidic copper ores, stated: "Processes of hydration, which appear to have been concentrated chiefly in the neighborhood of the belt of sulphides, and to have acted with diminishing intensity towards the other side of intrusion, have resulted in the serpentinization of the olivine rocks with the exception of the residual mass which composes the summit of Dun Mountain. Subsequent alterations, due to dynamic agencies, have resulted in the development of uralite, saussurite, and antigorite." Speaking generally of the serpentines throughout New Zealand he said: "It is noteworthy that the most highly serpentinized occurrences are associated closely with evidences of considerable solfataric action. Thus the sulphide zone at Dun Mountain is perfectly serpentinized, and the serpentines of the Hokitika area are likewise associated with solfataric effects. Where such action has been wanting, as around the dunite of Nelson and at Milford Sound, serpentinization is absent, although the rocks have been much crushed by pressure and movement. The study of the processes of serpentinization strongly suggests that hydrothermal action, during and following the intrusions, has been a potent factor of serpentinization." At the same time it must be noted that this assumes the magmatic origin of the cupriferous solutions, which brings in once more the vexed question of the relative importance of magmatic solutions as compared with lateral secretion in the production of ore bodies. While the magmatic solutions are perhaps most generally credited with the predominant rôle, there are strong opponents of this; *e. g.* Van Hise (1904, pp. 1043-1081 and numerous citations), who, however, refers to a matter of particular interest in this connection, namely the occurrence of high-grade copper sulphide ores in the serpentinized peridotites of Tuscany and Liguria, described by Lotti (1899), and held by Vogt to be of indubitably magmatic origin (Vogt 1902). They were later described by Delkeskamp (1907). Other occurrences of copper ores in serpentine are noted by Weed and Beck. (See under Lotti 1899.)

V. *The Formation of Nephrite.*

The close association of nephrite with serpentine is very often observed, and without doubt there is a genetic connection. Though the writer has not studied in detail the extensive literature on the formation of nephrite, a few views may here be noted for the bearing they may have on the origin of serpentine. Kalkowsky (1906) noted the occurrence of nephrite in Liguria, a rock rather than a mineral, associated with talc, serpentine and calcite in the neighborhood of faults and dislocations. He considered it to be formed under deep-seated conditions by pressure metamorphism of the talc-serpentine-carbonate rocks. He described specimens of nephrite, which he considers to be pseudomorphous after chrysotile and after talc. Steinmann investigated the same occurrences as were described by Kalkowsky (1908) and his view is cited above, and concurs with the earlier hypotheses which referred the formation to a process of uralitization. Finlayson considered that both these processes may have given rise to nephrite in New Zealand, and adds another method, namely a direct transformation of olivine into nephrite. Bonney, however, saw difficulties in this last and especially in the derivation of nephrite from talcose rocks, believing that the reverse is more probably the case. The derivation by uralitization appears to be unchallenged (Finlayson 1909 and discussion), and this is held to be a deep-seated process associated with dynamic action.[6]

VI. *The Occurrence of Serpentine in Volcanic Rocks.*

Obviously, any consideration of the origin of the mineral serpentine should include a consideration of the conditions of its occurrence in volcanic rocks. This would require a lengthy personal investigation into the microscopical and field-characters of the basic lavas, which as yet the writer has been unable to undertake. In the literature there are very frequent statements that the olivines of basalts have been serpentinized, and that owing to their ferriferous character, the serpentine is pleochroic. Sometimes the occurrence of a platy pleochroic "serpentine" is noted, and referred to iddingsite, considered to be a ferriferous variety of antigorite, and Uhlemann (1909) gives an elaborate account of the formation by weathering of iddingsite as a ferruginous form of antigorite in the picrites of Saxony, drawing comparisons between this and the features described by Weinschenk. Nevertheless, a close inspection of all examples of altered olivine encountered by the writer in

[6] But see Duparc et Hornung. 1904.

volcanic and other rocks, causes him to view with some caution the frequent statements of the presence of serpentine as a product of weathering. Under the term serpentine in its restricted significance, we are here considering only those forms of chrysotile and antigorite as are considered *e. g.* by Bonney (1905). Such minerals when examined microscopically are nearly colorless, and have a double refraction not greater than ·013. Many, perhaps the majority of writers, however, include also under the term serpentine various more or less deeply colored and pleochroic minerals, with fibrous or platy habit and a double refraction nearly twice as great. Thus Teall (1888, p. 189) refers to "a rich deep green serpentine." A study of Lacroix's collection in Paris, illustrating his Mineralogie de la France et ses Colonies, showed that this colored fibrous form is the mineral he classes as bowlingite, and considers to be merely the fibrous form of the platy pleochroic mineral iddingsite, and also places it with the serpentine-minerals. Weinschenk (1907) concurs and refers to it merely as a ferruginous form of serpentine. So also does Harker (1904), who carefully distinguishes between the effects of magmatic water upon a basalt (the production of zeolites, etc.), and that of true weathering, the "serpentinization" of the olivine. The serpentinous material produced is described as being of a pale green color, and associated with a micaceous substance which forms the bulk of the pseudomorphs and is comparable with iddingsite. These pseudomorphs may re-absorb part of the secondary magnetite, and become deep green in color and strongly pleochroic (op. cit. p. 35). In gabbros from the same region (Skye) he has noted that complete destruction of the olivine gives rise to pseudomorphs of green and yellow-brown serpentine, the secondary magnetite being here also absorbed, while pilitic pseudomorphs and iddingsite may occur. The writer has observed a block of dunite in a volcanic breccia, partly changed into normal chrysotile-serpentine and secondary magnetite, traversed by a band an inch in width composed entirely of bowlingite, with no secondary magnetite, but preserving the outlines of the olivine crystals. In this instance it seems likely that the fragment of dunite was a homogeneous or cognate xenolith in a basaltic breccia, that it was partially serpentinized at depth, and later torn from its position, included in the breccia, fractured, and altered along the crevice by circulating partly meteoric waters acting at no great depth. (This conclusion is based on a re-examination of material previously described. Benson 1910.) The distinction between the colored pleochroic minerals without secondary magnetite, and the colorless minerals with secondary magnetite produced from the same rock, is so clear that the conditions of formation of the two can hardly be the same. We may freely admit that iddingsite and bowlingite are the products of true weathering, but there does not seem to be sufficient evidence to refer the formation of antigorite or chrysotile to the same process. For this reason the writer doubts the propriety of considering iddingsite to be a ferruginous form of antigorite, owing to the different mode of occurrence. It would be interesting in this connection to study the changes of olivine in lavas acted upon by solfataric waters, though on general considerations the presence of abundant oxygen and the absence of any noteworthy pressure would probably result in the action being an intensified process of weathering.

VII. *Summary and Conclusions.*

The various lines of inquiry we have endeavored to follow support the general view in regard to the large ultrabasic masses that the chrysotile or antigorite-serpentine of which they are composed is an alteration product of an originally intrusive peridotite, often more or less pyroxenic, and that in some cases at least the hydration was brought about by the agency of waters emanating from the same magma that produced the peridotite, though not generally until a considerable amount of further differentiation has taken place. The change was, however, completed by the end of the one orogenic period of vulcanicity. We have yet to explain satisfactorily the absence of hydration in certain cases.[7]

It is not so clear that a peridotite which has escaped

[7] As a suggestion to this end alternative to that previously advanced, pp. 707-8 we may note Van Hise's view (1904, p. 350): "Alterations of serpentine in the zone of anamorphism are not recorded. But the general absence of serpentine in the schists and gneisses of sedimentary origin profoundly metamorphosed in the zone of anamorphism is conclusive evidence that the serpentine that was once in these rocks, and the associate secondary minerals, have recombined to produce heavy minerals of the classes from which the serpentine and those other secondary minerals were originally produced." This recalls Stapff's hypothesis of the origin of olivine from serpentine, but does not seem to the writer to be convincing, since it assumes without proof the prior development of serpentine.

hydration during the igneous epoch can subsequently become changed to serpentine by the action of deep circulating epigene waters, though it seems not improbable. Very frequently the hydration and carbonation has caused the development of concentric zones about the ultrabasic mass; in such cases the outermost is talc and carbonates, the inner is serpentine, and the center anhydrous dunite. This recalls the development of greisen about some but not all granite-masses, and in these the outermost portions, which have been longest and latest acted upon by the outward-passing volatile matter, show the change most completely. This, however, is perhaps the explanation only in those cases if any in which the hydration can be referred definitely to the action of waters actually proceeding from the ultrabasic magma; in others, in which the water of hydration has been derived from a latter magmatic differentiate, or perhaps from the general underground circulation, we must conceive of the peripheral alteration as the result of a type of centripetal diffusion of solutions.

It would be wrong in putting forward the evidence for the significance of magmatic waters in the production of serpentine, though it is widely accepted, to overlook the fact that it is not accepted by certain geologists, who have had very great experience of this rock, and have concluded that the change of the anhydrous silicate is so capriciously localized that it should be regarded rather as the result of the ordinary change of a mineral very susceptible to the action of water. But while not ignoring this objection, or denying the possibility that the change may have been sometimes effected by waters other than magmatic, the writer hopes that by this putting together of the evidence that much of the serpentinization is performed by water of magmatic origin some service may be rendered to other students of this interesting and difficult problem. It may be strongly urged in conclusion, upon those whose laboratory facilities permit of such work, that much useful information might be obtained from the experimental investigation of the action of carbonated waters and other energetic solutions upon magnesian silicates at high pressures and temperatures, for this seems essential for the final solution of the problem.

The writer's thanks are due Professor Bonney, Dr. Harker and to many other friends, teachers and students, in the various institutions visited, for their generous loan of microscopic slides, and the helpful discussion of the points connected therewith. This help has been partly acknowledged as occasion arose in the body of the paper. He is also indebted to Dr. Flett for his guidance over the Lizard District, and for much help and encouragement.

List of Papers cited.

In some cases the contents of the papers cited have been inferred from other sources than the original work. These have been indicated by an asterisk in the list below.

Ball, 1912. The Geography and Geology of South-eastern Egypt. Survey Department, Cairo.
*Barlow, 1910. Notes on occurrence of asbestos, J. Canadian Mining Inst.
Bascom, 1902. Geol. Survey of Maryland, pp. 95-134.
—— 1905. Bull. Geol. Soc. America.
Beche, De la, 1831. The Geological Manual, p. 481.
Becke, 1894. Min. petr. Mitth. **14**, p. 271.
Becke and Löwl, 1903. Congrès Geol. Internat., Vienna.
Becker, 1888. U. S. Geol. Survey, Monograph **13**, 1888.
Bell, 1906. Bull. **1**, N. Z. Geol. Survey; 1907, ibid., **3**.
Benson, 1910. Journ. Proc. Roy. Soc. N. S. W.
—— 1913. Proc. Linn. Soc. N. S. W., pp. 662-724; 1917, ibid., pp. 223-283.
Bischof, 1854-5. Chemische Geologie (translated).
Bodmer-Beder, 1903. N. Jahrb. Min., Beil.-Bd. **16**.
Bonney, 1877. Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc., **33**, p. 884; Geol. Mag., p. 59.
—— 1878. Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc., pp. 769-784.
—— 1879. Geol. Mag., pp. 1-16; 1887, ibid., pp. 1-5; 1889, ibid., p. 431.
—— 1905. Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc., pp. 690-714 (with Miss Raisin); 1908, pp. 152-170.
—— 1914. The crystalline Rocks of the Lizard, Cambridge.
*Breithaupt, 1831. Schweigger-Seidel Jahrbuch, **3**, p. 281.
Card, 1900. Petrological Notes in Power's article "Mineral Resources of New Caledonia," Proc. Inst. Mining and Metallurgy, **8**, pp. 32-34. See also the bibliography of geology of New Caledonia by Dun, ibid., pp. 39-44.
Clarke, 1916. Data of Geochemistry. U. S. Geol. Surv., Bull. **616**.
Clarke and Farquharson, 1916. Geol. Surv., Western Australia, Bull. **68**.
Cornu, 1909. Zs. Chem. Industr. Kolloid, **4**, pp. 291-295.
Crosby, 1894. Journ. Geol. **22**, pp. 582-593.
Damour, 1862. Bull. Soc. Geol. France, **19**, p. 413.
David, 1907. Memoirs, Geol. Survey New South Wales.
Daubrée, 1879. Études synth. Géologie Experimentale, p. 548.
Delkeskamp, 1907. Zs. prakt. Geol., pp. 393-437.
Des Cloiseaux, 1896. Bull. Soc. Min. France, **19**, p. 48.
Dieulafait, 1881. Comptes Rendus, **91**, p. 1000.
*Diller, 1910. Journ. Canadian Mining Institute.
Drasche, 1871. Min. petr. Mitth., p. 1.
Dresser, 1913. Geol. Survey Canada, Mem. **22**, pp. 61-70.
Duparc et Hornung, 1904. Comptes Rendus, **139**, p. 223.

Duparc and Siggs, 1913. Bull. Soc. Min. France, p. 14.
Finlayson, 1909. Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc., 65, pp. 351-381.
Flett and Hill, 1912. Memoir, Geol. Surv. England and Wales, Sheet No. 359.
Gagel, 1910. Centralbl. Min., p. 276.
Glasser, 1903-4. Annales des Mines, Mémoires.
Graham, 1917. Economic Geology, pp. 154-202.
Granagg, 1906. Jahrb. Geol. Reichsanstalt, pp. 367-404.
Grubenmann, 1910. Die krystallinen Schiefer, 2d edition.
Harker, 1897. Min. Mag., p. 117 (review of Weinschenk, 1894).
—— 1904. Mem. Geol. Surv. United Kingdom, pp. 33-4, 46, 112.
—— 1909. The Natural History of Igneous Rocks.
Henderson, 1898. Petrograph. geol. Investigations of South African Rocks. London (Dulau and Co.).
*Hochstetter, 1864. Zs. deutsch. geol. Ges., **16**, pp. 341-344.
Holland, 1899*a*. Geol. Mag., pp. 30-31, 540-547.
—— 1899*b*. Memoirs Geol. Survey of India, pp. 133-137.
Hunt, 1883. Trans. Roy. Soc. Canada.
Hussak, 1883. Min. petr. Mitth. **5**, p. 62.
*Issel, 1879. Boll. Com. Geol. Ital. **10**, pp. 572-583.
—— 1889. Ibid., **11**, pp. 183-192.
Jervis, 1860. Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc., **16**, pp. 480-486.
Julien, 1914. Annals New York Acad. Science, **24**, pp. 23-38.
Kalkowsky, 1906. Zs. deutsch. geol. Ges., pp. 1-74.
Katzer, 1903. Trans. Congrès Geol. Internat. Vienna, pp. 331-346.
Kispatic, 1890. Wiss. Mitth. aus Bosnien und der Herzogovinien., **7**, pp. 377-484. (N. Jahrb. Min., 1902, **1**, p. 67.)
*Kjerulf, 1864. Verhandl. Wiss. Ges. Christiania.
Knopf, 1906. Bull. Dept. Geol., Univ. Calif., **4**, pp. 425-443.
*Krotov, 1910. Sitzber. Nat. Ges. Univ. Kasan, Bull. **260**, 28 pp. (Abstract N. Jahrb. Min. 1912, **1**, p. 405.)
Lacroix, 1890. Bull. Carte Geol. France No. 2; 1894-5, ibid., **6**, No. 42.
—— 1897. Comptes Rendus, **124**, p. 513.
—— 1900. Comptes Rendus, **8** Congrès Geol. Internat.
—— 1903. Mineralogie de la France et ses Colonies, **4**.
—— 1911. Comptes Rendus, pp. 816-822.
—— 1914. Bull. Soc. Min. France, p. 75.
Leitmeier, 1913. Article on Serpentine, etc., in Doelter's Handbuch der Mineralchemie, **2**, pp. 385-434.
Lindgren, 1895. U. S. Geol. Surv., Ann. Report, p. 92.
Liesegang, 1913. Geologische Diffusionen, pp. 134-145.
Longchambon, 1910-11. Bull. Carte Geol. France, **21**.
*Lotti, 1899. Mem. Geol. Soc. Belge, **3**; also papers, cited by Beck, Nature of Ore Deposits (Weed's translation), 1905, pp. 45-48.
Low, 1906. Report Geol. Survey Canada.
McMahon, 1890. Proc. Geol. Assoc.
*McPherson, 1875. Ann. Soc. Espan. Hist. Nat.
Marshall, 1904. Trans. N. Z. Inst., **37**, pp. 481-484.
*Mazzuoli e Issel, 1881. Boll. Com. Geol. Ital., **12**, p. 313.
Mennell, 1910. Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc. pp. 355-375.
—— 1913. A Manual of Petrology.
Merrill, 1888. Proc. U. S. Nat. Mus., **2**, p. 105.
—— 1899. Geol. Mag., pp. 354-358.
Middlemiss. Records Geol. Survey India, **29**, pp. 32-34.
*Müller, 1877. Tschermak's Min. petr. Mitth., p. 25.
Murgoci, 1900. Bull. de Sciinte, Bukarest, **9**.
Novarese, 1895. Boll. Com. Geol. Ital.
Nutter and Barber, 1902. Journ. of Geology, pp. 738-744.
Palache, 1907. This Journ., pp. 491-495.
*Pantanelli, 1880. Mem. Accad. Lincei. Ser. 3. (Geol. Mag., pp. **317**, 564.)

Peach and Horne, 1899. Memoirs, Geol. Survey of Great Britain.
*Pellati, 1883. Comptes Rendus, Congrès Geol. Internat.
Pratt and Lewis, 1905. Geol. Survey of North Carolina, Memoir No. 1.
Preiswerk, 1901. Inaug. Diss. Basel.
—— 1903. Verh. Nat. Ges. Basel, **15**, pp. 293-316.
Raisin, 1897. Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc., **53**, pp. 246-316.
Redlich, 1909. Zs. prakt. Geologie, pp. 300-310.
Rinne, 1892. Jahrbuch geol. Landesanstalt, p. 56; 1901, ibid., p. 24.
*Rose, 1851. Zs. deutsch. Geol. Ges., **3**, p. 10.
Rosenbusch, 1907. Mikr. Physiographie der mass. Gesteine, **1**.
—— 1910. Elemente der Gesteinslehre.
Roth, 1869. Abhandl. Akad. Wiss. Berlin, p. 329.
—— 1893. Allgemeine und Chemischen Geologie, p. 422.
*Sandberger, 1865-71. Various papers in N. Jahrb. Min. as 1865, p. 449; 1866, p. 385; 1867, p. 171; 1871, p. 621.
Schmidt and Preiswerk, 1908. Geol. Karte der Schweiz, No. 6. Tafel iii, Profil 9.
Schneider, 1912. Inaug. Diss., Zürich.
*Schrauf, 1882. Zs. Kryst. **6**, p. 336.
Schuchert, 1910. Bull. Geol. Soc. Amer., **20**.
*Schweizer, 1840. Poggendorff's Annalen, p. 595.
Smith, G. Otis, 1904. U. S. Geol. Survey, Mount Stuart Folio, Washington.
Stapff, 1878. Verhandl. Schweiz. Nat. Ges., p. 227.
—— 1880. Geologische Profil der St. Gotthardt in der Axe des grossen Tunnels, ibid.
*Stefani, 1876. Boll. Com. Geol. Ital., **7**, pp. 16-34.
Steinmann, 1905. Ber. Naturf. Ges. Freiburg i. Br., **16**, pp. 59-60.
—— 1908. Sitzber. Neiderrhein. Ges. Natur- und Heilkunde.
*Stoppani, 1880. Geol. Mag., p. 564. (Opinion cited by A. W. W. in review of Stefani, 1876.)
Suess, 1909. The Face of the Earth, **4**, p. 561.
*Taramelli, 1877. Atti Accad. Lincei, Mem., **2**, pp. 652-708.
—— Boll. Soc. Geol. Ital., **1**, pp. 80-128. (Cited by Hunt, 1883.)
—— 1884. Trans. Accad. Lincei, **7**. (Cited by Weinschenk, 1891.)
Teall, 1888. British Petrography, pp. 104-145.
Termier, 1903. Congrès Geol. Internat., Vienna, pp. 571-586.
Thomson, 1913. Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc.
*Trabucco, 1896? Boll. Com. Geol. Ital. Sententrionale.
Twelvetrees, 1917. Tasmanian Geol. Surv., Mineral Resources, No. 4, pp. 4-7.
Uhlemann, 1909. Min. petr. Mitth., pp. 413-470.
Uhlig, 1910. N. Jahrb. Min., **2**, pp. 80 *et seq.*
Van Hise, 1904. U. S. Geol. Survey Monograph, **47**.
Vogt, 1902. Genesis of Ore-Deposits, pp. 642-643.
Ward, 1911. Trans. Aust. Assoc. Adv. Sci., **13**, pp. 176-187.
Waterhouse, 1916. Tasmanian Geol. Surv., Bull. **21**, pp. 111-143.
Weinschenk, 1891. Serpentin aus dem östlichen Centralalpen, etc., Habilitationsschrift Munich.
—— 1894. Abhandl. Bayr. Akad. Wiss. 1 Cl., **18**, pp. 653-713.
—— 1907. Die gesteinbildungen Mineralien.
—— 1913. Allgemeine Gesteinskunde, 3d edit., p. 153.
Weigand, 1875. Min. petr. Mitth., pp. 183-206.
Wilkinson, 1885. Ann. Rep. Dept. Mines N. S. W., pp. 132-134.
Wyssotzky, 1913. Mem. Comm. Geol. Russ. Nouv. Ser. Livr. **62**.
Zeally, 1915. Trans. Roy. Soc. South Africa, pp. 1-24.
Zirkel, 1893. Lehrbuch der Petrographie. **2**, pp. 377-401.

The University of Otago,
Dunedin, New Zealand.

Art. XXXVII.—*Stratigraphy and Correlation of the Devonian of Western Tennessee*[1]; by Carl O. Dunbar.

Introduction.

For more than half a century the Devonian of western Tennessee has offered one of the most inviting fields to the stratigrapher and paleontologist, yet the list of publications relating to it comprises little more than a score of pages. It remains to-day the last important area of Lower Devonian in America to be adequately described. These strata are not only replete with finely preserved fossils, but they form the most complete and complex Lower Devonian sequence in the Mississippi Valley province, and the previously unsuspected occurrence here of the typical upper Oriskany gives to the Tennessee area the highest interest.

Previous studies.—The presence of the Helderbergian rocks in Tennessee was first noted by Safford in 1855, and in 1869 he more fully described these beds, to which in 1876 he and Killebrew applied the name Linden. In 1899 a second Devonian formation, the Camden chert, was made known by Safford and Schuchert, who assigned it to the lower Oriskany. Foerste in 1901 defined the Pegram limestone, and in his valuable paper on "The Silurian and Devonian Limestones of Western Tennessee" (1903) he more fully described the Camden and the Linden formations and subdivided the latter into two members, the Ross and Pyburn limestones respectively.

Scope of the present paper.—This paper is an abstract of a report on the Devonian of Tennessee which will be published at a later date as a bulletin of the Tennessee State Geological Survey. In the complete report the stratigraphic relations and faunal characteristics of each of the Devonian formations will be described in full, and detailed geologic sections of the important exposures will be given. The limits of the present paper will permit only a brief description of these formations and a presentation of the essential conclusions reached. The new species appearing in the faunas will be described elsewhere at an early date, and the manuscript names are therefore used in this article.

[1] Published by permission of the Tennessee State Geological Survey.

Acknowledgments.—The present study was begun in 1916, when the writer spent two months in the field, making a large collection of fossils and gathering data which formed the basis of a monograph presented in 1917 as a dissertation for the degree of doctor of philosophy at Yale University. The problem proved so fruitful of results that, thanks to the interest of the late Doctor A. H. Purdue of the Tennessee State Geological Survey, the writer was enabled to spend two additional months in the field during the summer of 1917, and to elaborate the original study into a completed report.

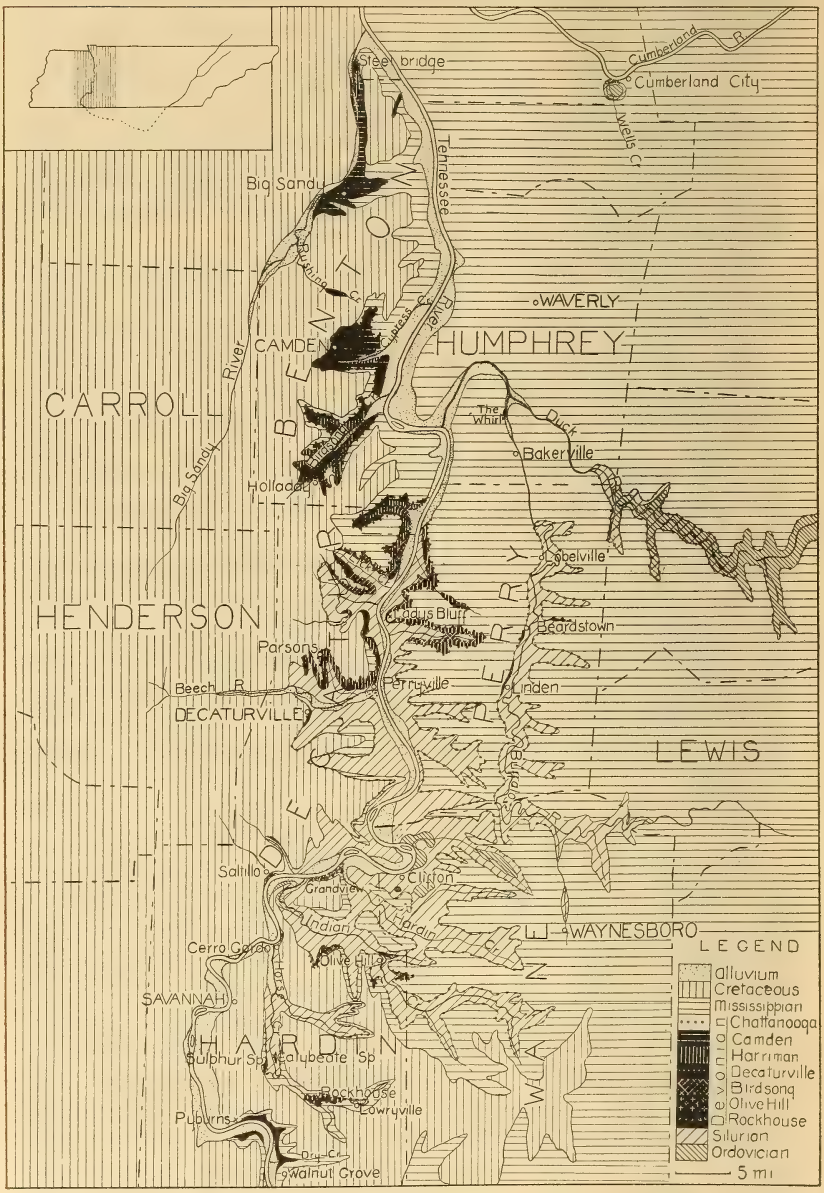
The original investigation was made possible by the kindness of Professor Charles Schuchert of Yale University, and the preparation of the manuscript has been done in the laboratories of the Peabody Museum under his constant supervision. It is a pleasant duty to acknowledge the writer's indebtedness to Professor Schuchert for many helpful suggestions and criticisms. Thanks are also due Doctor Bruce Wade for valuable information given in the field, and for several collections of fossils.

Location.—The Devonian rocks of Tennessee are exposed in numerous small irregular areas in a narrow belt along the western valley of the Tennessee River. They are best developed in Benton, Decatur, Perry, and Hardin counties. With very minor exceptions, this narrow belt across the state embraces all the Devonian strata save the widespread Chattanooga shale. (See map, fig. 1.)

Stratigraphy and Correlation

Introduction.—The Devonian rocks in Tennessee succeed those of the Middle Silurian, the contact being a disconformable one, usually with little physical evidence to direct attention to the long interval which separates these two series. In most of the exposed sections the Lower Devonian rests on the massive Decatur limestone, but in the more eastern occurrences it overlaps younger Silurian formations. Safford long ago recognized that these Lower Devonian strata form a westward-thickening wedge separating the Silurian limestones from the succeeding but much younger Mississippian shales and chert, and that they pinch out and disappear within a few miles east of the Tennessee River.

FIG. 1.


Steel bridge
Cumberland R.
Cumberland City
Wells Cr
Tennessee River
Big Sandy
Rushing Cr
Cypress Cr
WAVERLY
CAMDEN
HUMPHREY
CARROLL
Big Sandy River
The Whirl
Duck
Bakerville
Holladay
BENTON
Lobelville
HENDERSON
Ladus Bluff
Beardstown
Parsons
PERRY
Beech R
Perryville
Linden
DECATURVILLE
DECATUR
LEWIS
Buffalo
Saltillo
Clifton
Grandview
Indian
Hardin Cr
WAYNESBORO
Cerro Gordo
Olive Hill
Horse Cr
SAVANNAH
HARDIN
Sulphur Sp
Calybeate Sp
Rockhouse
Lowryville
Pyburns
Dry Cr
Walnut Grove
WAYNE
LEGEND
alluvium
Cretaceous
Mississippian
Devonian
Chattanooga
Camden
Harriman
Decaturville
Birdsong
Olive Hill
Rockhouse
Silurian
Ordovician
5 mi

The total thickness of the Devonian strata in Tennessee is not over 500 feet and the longest single exposed sequence is less than 200 feet thick. Nevertheless the strata may be divided into nine formations, each separated by longer or shorter intervals of erosion when

Generalized Devonian Section of Western Tennessee

Series	Group	Formation	Thickness	Character
Neodevonian	Chautauquan	Chattanooga shale Hardin sandstone member	20'±	Black fissile carbonaceous shale Thin basal sandstone
	Senecan	*Break*		
Mesodevonian	Erian			
	Ulsterian	Pegram limestone	10'±	Heavy-bedded white limestone
		Break		
		Camden chert	0 - 200'±	Thin-bedded buff colored novaculite
		Break		
Paleodevonian	Oriskanian	Harriman chert	30 - 55'	Heavier bedded white and buff novaculite
		Break		
		Quall limestone	10'±	Heavy-bedded cherty gray limestone
		Break		
	Helderbergian or Linden	Decaturville chert	6'±	Porous gray chert
		Break		
		Birdsong shale	35 - 65'	Bluish shaly limestone and shale
		Break		
		Olive Hill form.: Flat Gap	0-53'	Massive pure limestone
		Olive Hill form.: Bear Branch-Pyburn	0-45'	Massive limestone and oolitic hematite in north - impure cherty limestone in south
		Olive Hill form.: Ross	0-60'±	Impure thin-bedded cherty limestone
		Break		
		Rockhouse shale	0-26'	Bluish green calcareous shale

some of them were reduced to remnants before the deposition of the suceeding formation. In consequence, the thicknesses of the several formations, and even the sequence, vary from section to section. In spite of this fact, the Devonian strata, like those of the Silurian beneath, are so generally horizontal in western Tennessee that disconformities are the rule and unconformities the exception, even where the break in sequence is known to be a long one.

Lower Devonian Series

Linden or Helderbergian Group

Rockhouse shale.—Heretofore the Ross limestone has been regarded as the lowest member of the Linden, and its base as the beginning of the Devonian sequence in Tennessee. But in southern Hardin County a still lower undescribed formation of fossiliferous shale comes in like a wedge between the Ross and the Decatur (Silurian) limestone. This formation thickens to the southward, where it goes permanently below drainage. A maximum thickness of 26 feet may be seen at Rockhouse, a hunters' clubhouse on Horse Creek, 5 miles northwest of Lowryville, and because of this good exposure the formation will be named the Rockhouse shale. It is much thinner where it forms a glade near the sulphur spring on Horse Creek, 5 miles southeast of Savannah, and it does not appear in the sections farther north. It is a glade-forming, calcareous shale of greenish gray color, interbedded with occasional thin bands of light gray crystalline limestone which toward the base of the shale become thicker and closer set, so that the formation appears to grade into the underlying Decatur limestone.

The shale is replete with fossils, among which the bulbous crinoid root *Camarocrinus* is most conspicuous. The fauna consists of thirty-five species, of which one third are new. The assemblage is an extremely interesting one, with a mingling of holdovers from the Silurian, along with heralders of early Devonian time. It indicates for the formation a position very early in the Devonian and near the Siluro-Devonian boundary line. The interesting biota includes *Edriocrinus pocilliformis, E. adnascens* n. sp., *Camarocrinus, Scyphocrinus* sp., *Pleurodictyum trifoliatum* n. sp. (ancestral to *P. lenticulare* but mature at the three-celled stage), *Dalmanella macra* n. sp., *D. rockhousensis* n. sp., *Rhipidomella oblata, R. preoblata, R. saffordi, Bilobites* (small form like *bilobus*), *Leptænisca adnascens, Dictyonella subgibbosa* n. sp., *Eatonia fissicosta* n. sp., *Delthyris cyrtinoides* n. sp., (very near *perlamellosa*), *Nucleospira concentrica, Mer-*

ista tennesseensis, Meristina roemeri, Phacops sp., and six species of gastropods.

The presence here of *Dictyonella subgibbosa* n. sp., *Nucleospira concentrica*, and *Merista tennesseensis* at first inclined the writer to refer this formation to the Silurian. On the other hand, the preponderance of the fauna is distinctly Devonian and the general paleogeographic conditions likewise strongly support this reference. The Upper Silurian in America was a time of marked restriction of the seas, scarcely a normal marine fauna being known anywhere of Upper Silurian time. Furthermore, no deposits whatever of this age have yet been found anywhere in the whole Mississippi basin. The Rockhouse fauna, however, is a normal marine assemblage, and is present in both Tennessee and Oklahoma. It represents, therefore, a wide embayment in this region, which is known to have been an early Devonian basin. The preserval of so thin and soft a formation in both Tennessee and Oklahoma beneath Helderbergian strata further supports the belief that it was not subjected to long erosion before the deposition of the latter.

The Devonian age of the fauna is indicated by the deployment of the gastropods, which make up one fourth of its number, for while gastropods are commonly abundant in the Lower Devonian, the New Scotland having thirteen and the Oriskany over twenty species, on the other hand but two or three species are found together in any Silurian fauna. Likewise the abundance and variety of orthoid brachiopods is a Devonian characteristic. Neither *Pleurodictyum* nor *Edriocrinus* is known in the Silurian, and the two species of the latter both characterize the succeeding Linden formations. Large specimens of *Rhipidomella oblata,* like those of this formation, are never seen in the Silurian, and the *Delthyris* is closely related to *perlamellosa,* which is so typical of the Helderbergian, and is much larger and more coarsely lamellose than any Silurian species of this genus.

Although this is the first known occurrence of a *Dictyonella* in the Devonian in America. Barrande described a species long ago from the Middle Devonian (stage G) of Bohemia. The presence of the Silurian holdovers, *Bilobites bilobus, Nucleospira concentrica*, and *Merista tennesseensis,* however, as well as the primitive expression of the *Pleurodictyum,* which is mature in the three-celled stage, indicate for the formation a place very early in the Devonian. This inference is further supported by the thick development of overlying strata of Coeymans and New Scotland age. The Rockhouse shale is, therefore, believed to represent a part of the Keyser formation at the known base of the Lower Devonian, although it belongs to a different basin and hence shows but slight faunal relation to the Keyser.

Olive Hill formation.—The Olive Hill formation succeeds the Rockhouse shale and further northward overlies the Decatur limestone, but, like the preceding formation, it is confined to the southern part of the state. The present outcrops occur in Hardin County, Tennessee, and adjacent portions of Mississippi and Alabama. At about the northern edge of Hardin County, it has been rapidly bevelled off by interformation erosion, while to the southward it goes permanently below drainage, with unreduced thickness. Lithologically it is a complex formation. The best exposure and the one from which it takes its name is clearly shown in the bluff on Indian Creek at Olive Hill, where it is fully 150 feet thick and consists of three distinct lithologic units. These are, in descending order, the Flat Gap, the Bear Branch, and the Ross limestone members.

The Flat Gap member is a heavy-bedded, coarsely crystalline or granular limestone of white or pinkish color, and is very sparingly fossiliferous. Toward the top *Rhipidomella oblata* and *Spirifer cycloptera* are common, and *Delthyris perlamellosa* and *Dalmanites pleuroptyx* are quite rare. Colonies of massive bryozoa and large pieces of crinoid stems complete the fauna.

The Bear Branch member consists of more impure, coarse-grained limestone in which there is a considerable quantity of oolitic hematite. The latter varies greatly in richness, and may be disseminated through the limestone, giving the whole a deep reddish color, or may be concentrated into richer bands of ore separated by layers of limestone. The member takes its name from an exposure on Bear Branch about 2 miles southeast of Olive Hill, where it forms a low bluff showing a thickness of 20 feet of low-grade ore (protore), analyzing on an average from 20 to 25 per cent Fe and much resembling the Clinton iron-ore. So far as the writer is aware, this is the largest deposit of an oolitic iron-ore to be found above the Clinton. These beds yielded the ore which was mined before the Civil War at a locality about 2 miles southwest of Clifton. The cross-bedding which characterizes this member bears evidence that the oolite was deposited in shallow water. Fossils occur throughout it and are especially common in a band of muddy, cherty limestone near the middle. The fauna, however, closely resembles that of the Ross member below, fifteen of its eighteen species being common to the latter. The chief differences to be noted are the presence here of *Eatonia eminens* and the absence of *Camarocrinus* and the Scyphocrini which characterize the lower member.

The Ross limestone member was first described by Foerste (1903). It is a dense, fine-grained, siliceous or cherty limestone of dark gray color, disposed in thin layers from 2 to 5 inches thick. Although very hard and compact when fresh, it weathers to a soft, porous, shaly sandstone of rusty brown color. Its most characteristic fossils are the Camarocrini and *Scyphocrinus pyburnensis* and *S. pratteni.* Because of the abundance of the crinoid bulbs Foerste called it the "Camarocrinus or Ross limestone." Other fossils occur in more or less abundance, the more important of which are listed beyond (page 741).

For a distance of 20 or 25 miles to the south and southwest of Olive Hill, only the lower or Ross limestone member has escaped later erosion, but at Pyburns Bluff on the Tennessee River, and at a bluff on Dry Creek near the southern line of the state, thick sections of the Olive Hill formation are again exposed. Here, however, the subdivisions seen at Olive Hill cannot be clearly recognized. In the section at Pyburns the formation is between 80 and 100 feet thick, and its base is below drainage. Here it consists of dense, fine-grained, impure and cherty limestone throughout. The lower portion is characterized by Camarocrini, but this fossil is absent in the upper portion. On this faunal basis Foerste subdivided the section into the Ross limestone below and the Pyburn limestone above. The Ross here agrees in faunal and physical characters with that at Olive Hill and with the intervening sections as well. The Pyburn holds, more or less, the stratigraphic position of the Bear Branch member at Olive Hill, though its lithologic characters are entirely different. Faunally, however, it seems to agree with the latter, especially in the absence of the Camarocrini. It therefore seems highly probable that the Pyburn limestone is the equivalent of more or less of the Bear Branch; and that the latter is a local shallow-water phase is shown by its cross-bedding and the development of oolite. The author therefore holds that if the Bear Branch member could be traced southward it would be seen to grade into the impure gray limestone of the Pyburn. In this section the Pyburn member is unconformably succeeded by Mississippian shales, but in the next section to the south, on Dry Creek, the top of the Pyburn member becomes more sandy and somewhat irregularly bedded, and here it is separated by a slight erosional unconformity from a massive, coarsely crystalline, white limestone which seems to represent the Flat Gap member.

The Ross member only is exposed along Horse Creek on the Ross farm 5 miles southeast of Savannah and again for 2 or 3 miles above Rockhouse. This same member is exposed in the bluffs along the Tennessee River below Cerro Gordo, more extensively at Grandview, and also outcrops along tributaries of Indian Creek 3 or 4 miles east of Cerro Gordo.

At Olive Hill, where the three members are present, the total thickness is over 150 feet; the Ross and a part of the Bear Branch members are present near Clifton, but only a part of the Ross at Grandview; in the vicinity of Saltillo the whole formation is missing, the younger and southwardly overlapping Birdsong formation with its *Eospirifer macropleura* fauna here resting directly on the Decatur limestone. The progressive thinning of the Olive Hill formation toward the north and west, by the disappearance of the higher members first, strongly indicates a considerable interval of erosion following the deposition of this formation and preceding the Birdsong shale. So thick a series of limestones, with the upper 50 feet, especially, pure and heavy-bedded, must in all probability have extended farther north than the 12 or 15 miles which separates Olive Hill from Grandview and Saltillo.

The fauna of the Olive Hill formation is chiefly developed in the Ross member, from which fifteen species pass upward into the Bear Branch and four continue into the terminal Flat Gap member. The more important forms of the Ross limestone are: *Pleurodictyum lenticulare, Favosites conicus, Edriocrinus pocilliformis, Scyphocrinus pratteni, S. pyburnensis,* and *S. mutabilis* (with their corresponding Camarocrini), *Rhipidomella oblata, Leptostrophia beckii, Stropheodonta planulata, Anastrophia verneuili, Rensselærina medioplicata, Delthyris perlamellosa, D. octocostata* mut. *tennesseensis, Meristella atoka, M. lævis, Phacops logani* and *Dalmanites pleuroptyx.* The Bear Branch member contains, in addition, *Eatonia eminens,* but it and the Flat Gap member lack many species which occur in the Ross, especially the Scyphocrini and *Camarocrinus.*

Of this fauna of fifty-eight species, fifteen are indigenous to Tennessee, while twenty elsewhere occur in both the Coeymans and New Scotland, twenty-one being elsewhere confined to the New Scotland and one to the Coeymans. Its relations are therefore with the higher Coeymans and lower New Scotland, but it has more decidedly the impress of the latter. It does not, however, contain a number of significant species such as *Dalmanella perelegans, D. eminens, Orthostrophia strophomenoides, Camarotœchia bialveata,* and especially *Eospirifer macropleura,* which are very distinctive of the New Scotland, and which do occur in the succeeding Birdsong shale. The latter formation is the more exact equivalent of the typical New Scotland, and since, therefore, the Olive Hill formation is considerably older, as shown by the interval of erosion which separates these formations, the Olive Hill must be referred to very early New Scotland time, if, in fact, it does not represent a part of the higher Coeymans.

The close relation of this fauna to that of the Birdsong shale will be noted below in the discussion of the latter.

Birdsong formation.—This shaly member of the Linden is the best known of the early Devonian formations of western Tennessee, because of its finely preserved fossils. It is the one exposed at Linden and is much better developed west of the Tennessee River and from Perryville northward to the mouth of Big Sandy River. It was provisionally correlated by Foerste (1903) with the Pyburn limestone which he defined in the section at Pyburns Bluff near the southern edge of the state. If this correlation could be substantiated, the name Pyburn would be a most unfortunate one to apply to the formation, since the limestone at Pyburns is an isolated occurrence about 40 miles south of the nearest good section of the formation under discussion. Moreover, it is neither faunally nor lithologically typical or representative of the latter. It is the conclusion of the present study, however, that the Birdsong formation is distinct from and younger than the Pyburn limestone, and it is therefore given this new name because of its typical development along the valley of Birdsong Creek.

At the base of the formation is 8 to 10 feet of rather thick-bedded, coarsely crystalline, gray limestone, followed by a transition zone of thinner bedded crystalline limestone, interbedded with bluish calcareous shale, passing into bluish shaly limestone or limy shale which forms the upper half or two thirds of its thickness. It weathers into bluish clay and a rubble of small lumps of limestone, and frequently forms barren hillsides or "glades."

The formation attains a thickness of about 45 feet along Birdsong Creek, and continues with but little change, either lithologically or faunally, through northern Decatur County and Benton County, though it is generally below drainage in central and northern Benton County. About 5 miles above the mouth of Big Sandy River, where it comes to the surface again, it reveals an additional 20 feet of higher shaly layers not to be seen further south. To the south and east of Perryville it has been beveled off by interformational erosion, but a small outlier still persists in the vicinity of Saltillo. A thickness of only 8 feet of these strata is exposed at the boat landing at this locality. The association here of *Anastrophia verneuili, Dalmanella eminens,* and *Eospirifer macropleura* (very common) leaves no doubt of their reference to the Birdsong formation, and they apparently do not represent even the lowest layers, so that the formation appears to overlap to the south.

In all of the sections west of the Tennessee River this formation rests with a disconformable contact upon the Decatur limestone of the Silurian, the boundary line between them being usually difficult to locate. Farther northeastward, at Beardstown on Buffalo River and near Cumberland City in the Wells Creek basin, it overlaps younger Silurian strata.

Excepting the limestone at its base, the Birdsong formation is extremely fossiliferous, and the perfect preservation of its fossils is scarcely to be duplicated in the whole of the Lower Devonian. Brachiopods greatly predominate, except in a narrow zone at the top of the formation in Benton and Decatur counties which is extremely crowded with bryozoa. Some of the more important fossils are: *Pleurodictyum lenticulare, Favosites conicus, F. foerstei* n. sp., *Edriocrinus pocilliformis, Orthostrophia strophomenoides, Dalmanella subcarinata, D. perelegans, D. eminens, Rhipidomella oblata, R. emarginata, Bilobites varicus, Leptostrophia beckii, Leptænisca adnascens, L. concava, Anastrophia verneuili, Gypidula multicostata* n. sp., *Eatonia tennesseensis* n. sp., *Camarotœchia bialveata, Rensselærina medioplicata, Eospirifer macropleura, Delthyris perlamellosa, Spirifer cycloptera, Trematospira simplex, T. costata, Meristella arcuata, M. atoka, M. lævis, Phacops logani, P. hudsonica, Dalmanites pleuroptyx,* and *D. retusus* n. sp.

The very striking resemblance of this fauna to that of the New Scotland of New York has long been recognized. Of the ninety-nine species identified from this formation, sixty also occur in the New Scotland, and among these are almost all the diagnostic species of the latter, especially noteworthy being *Eospirifer macropleura.* Considering the great distance which separates Tennessee, and even Maryland, from New York, the correspondence in these faunas is unusual and clearly indicates not only an equivalence in age, but the establishment of a rather direct communicating seaway. On the other hand, there are certain elements in the Birdsong fauna which do not recur at this time in the Appalachian trough and which appear to have reached Tennessee through the previously established southern embayment. Such, for example, are the various species of *Scyphocrinus* with their associated Camarocrini, the genus *Rensselærina,* characteristic new species of *Eatonia* and *Gypidula,* and *Meristella atoka.* The Scyphocrini were sequestered somewhere in the southern waters, their bulbs appearing in great abundance in both Oklahoma and Tennessee, and ranging from the Decatur limestone of the Middle Silurian to the top of the Birdsong shale, whereas they only temporarily invaded the Appalachian trough, appearing in a zone near the middle of the Keyser in Maryland and in the Manlius? of New York.

The intimate relationship of this fauna to that of the Ross member of the Olive Hill formation is shown in the fact that fifty-one out of fifty-eight species from the latter pass into the Birdsong shale. On the contrary, there is great deployment of *Camarocrinus* in the Ross, as in the Rockhouse shale, whereas these fossils are generally not common in the Birdsong formation, and neither the distinctive *Scyphocrinus pratteni* nor its huge bulb has been seen in the latter formation. At the same time, thirty-five species appear in the Birdsong that have not been found in the Ross. The most importance is attached to *Eospirifer macropleura,* which is always to be found in the Birdsong and never in the Olive Hill. Equally characteristic species of the former formation, such as *Eatonia tennesseensis, Camarotœchia bialveata, Dalmanella perelegans,* and *Dalmanites retusus,* are also lacking in the Olive Hill. The absence of these species from the Ross and Pyburn limestones may not be attributed to the control of the sediments, since they are known to occur elsewhere in impure cherty limestones. To this fauna evidence for the distinctness of the Birdsong shale from the Olive Hill formation should be added that of the general field relations. To correlate the Birdsong shale with the Ross limestone would demand a very abrupt faunal and lithologic change between Perryville and Grandview, though each formation maintains its own characters with uniformity for many miles from these localities. But the existence of any such transition is negated by the outlier of the Birdsong formation at Saltillo, which is as far south as Grandview. This being true, the erosion of the Ross limestone from the vicinity of Saltillo must have preceded the deposition of the Birdsong shale, and this fact, as well as the faunal evidence, precluded the correlation of the latter with either of the members of the Olive Hill formation.

Decaturville chert.—This thin formation is the highest member of the Linden group and unconformably overlies all of the preceding formations. It is well developed in the vicinity of Decaturville, from which place it takes its name. The most distinctive and widespread part of the formation is a very porous and extremely fossiliferous gray or slate-colored chert, which on the surface is stained with iron rust, and which forms a heavy layer from a few inches to over a foot thick. Beneath this is thinner bedded sandy chert which weathers more readily and is not well exposed. This lower portion seems to vary in thickness from place to place, but was not seen to exceed 5 feet. Although so thin, this formation, with both its distinctive lithology and fauna, extends over halfway across the state. It was not seen north of Camden, but in various exposures along Birdsong Creek and further south on Lick Creek it disconformably succeeds typical sections of the Birdsong shale. Where best developed about the town of Decaturville, it rests on the basal layers of the Birdsong formation, though a full section of the latter is preserved at Perryville only 6 miles to the northeast. In the vicinity of Saltillo it rests in places on remnants of this formation, and elsewhere on the Decatur limestone, while 5 or 6 miles to the east at Grandview it succeeds the Ross limestone and near Walnut Grove at the south edge of the state it overlies the Olive Hill formation. Thus far it has not been identified east of the Tennessee River except in Hardin County.

The chert is replete with fossils which are preserved both as natural molds and casts and as replacements of the shell in white silica. The most striking feature of the fauna is the large size of many species, which exceeds their norm by 25 to 50 per cent. Some of the important fossils are as follows: *Favosites conicus, Pleurodictyum lenticulare, Dalmanella planoconvexa, Rhipidomella oblata, Leptostrophia beckii, Leptænisca concava, Schuchertella woolworthana, Chonostrophia jervensis, Eatonia singularis, E. medialis, Delthyris perlamellosa, Meristella* cf. *lævis, Anoplotheca concava, Homalonotus* sp. (large), and *Phacops hudsonica.*

This fauna is closely allied to those of the Birdsong and New Scotland formations and there are affinities which equally relate it to the Becraft. Of its nineteen species, twelve occur in both the New Scotland and Becraft, and two others have closely related species in both. Of the remaining forms, *Leptænisca concava* and *Phacops hudsonica* are elsewhere confined to the New Scotland, while *Chonostrophia jervensis* is limited to the Becraft. The chief distinction separating this fauna from that of the Birdsong or New Scotland is the absence here of many characteristic species of these formations, such as *Eospirifer macropleura, Bilobites varicus,* and *Anastrophia verneuili.* On the other hand, it lacks some of the most distinctive forms of the Becraft, such as *Aspidocrinus scutelliformis, Rhipidomella assimilis,* and *Spirifer concinnus.* The faunal evidence is, therefore, not very conclusive, but it is not out of harmony with the assignment of this formation to early Becraft time. This reference of the formation, however, is based rather on its stratigraphic position. The distinct unconformity with which the formation overlaps the Birdsong shale indicates a considerable time break between it and the New Scotland equivalent, and since a thick section of the latter is already represented in the Birdsong formation, the distinctly younger Decaturville chert seems to be best referred to the earliest Becraft. The Becraft sea probably entered the Mississippi basin by the same route as that of the New Scotland, since it is present in southern Illinois, where Savage (1908) has reported such characteristic Becraft fossils in the upper part of the Bailey limestone as *Aspidocrinus scutelliformis* and *Spirifer concinnus,* associated with *Oriskania condoni* (?) and *O. sinuata* n. var.

Oriskany Group

The upper Oriskany, with its characteristic fauna of large species, is typically developed in the Appalachian trough extending from Gaspé to southern Virginia, but previous to 1913 it was believed that this sea had never attained the Mississippi basin. In that year, however, Weller (1914) discovered a very small occurrence of white limestone in eastern Missouri carrying this distinctive fauna. It is one of the chief contributions of the present study to record an extensive development of the typical upper Oriskany along the Tennessee valley, where it attains a thickness of over 50 feet and is exposed in numerous places for a distance of more than 75 miles. It unconformably overlies the Linden group and is in turn separated by local unconformities from the succeeding Camden chert. The Oriskany equivalents are here divided into the lower Quall and the higher Harriman formations. The former name is applied to the basal siliceous limestone, and the latter to the much thicker and more extensively distributed superimposed novaculite.

Quall limestone.—This thin limestone formation is confined to the southern part of the state, having a maximum thickness of only about 10 feet where exposed along Dry Creek, a small tributary which enters the Tennessee River near Walnut Grove. It thins out to the northward, being locally present in the bluff at Grandview, where its greatest thickness is scarcely 4 feet. The only other observed outcrop is at the town spring at Linden, where it is about 3 feet thick and rests disconformably on the lower part of the Birdsong formation. In these three exposures it rests in turn on the Flat Gap limestone, the Decaturville chert, and the basal part of the Birdsong shale, showing an unconformable relation indicative of a considerable break in the sequence, which is in harmony with the faunal evidence.

Where freshly exposed, the limestone is light gray in color and rather fine-grained. It is disposed in layers from 18 to 20 inches thick and appears to be magnesian and highly siliceous. Upon deep weathering, it forms a very porous, rotten, white and buff chert with yellow clay, in which fossils abound as free pseudomorphs or replacements in silica. The occurrence at Linden is more impure and darker in color.

The small fauna which has been secured includes *Edriocrinus* sp., *Striatopora* sp. (large), *Plethorhyncha* cf. *barrandei, Beachia suessana, Spirifer arenosus, S. murchisoni, S. purduei,* and *Platyceras gebhardi.* This fauna is clearly related to those of the upper Oriskany of the Appalachian trough and to the succeeding Harriman novaculite, having no species in common with the Linden or Helderbergian. The writer was first inclined to consider the Quall as only a member of the Harriman, but because of the stratigraphic relations described below under the latter formation, and because of certain faunal differences—though largely negative—it seems best to regard it as a distinct formation.

Harriman novaculite.—This formation is named for Harriman Creek, in Decatur County. It consists of so called chert or novaculite that is nearly white on fresh exposure but weathers to shades of yellow and buff. It is disposed in layers ranging from a few inches to over a foot in thickness, and is very hard and brittle, being thoroughly fractured, where weathered, into small angular fragments; in this condition it so closely resembles the Camden "chert" that only the fossils may be relied upon to distinguish these two formations. Where freshly exposed, it is generally whiter and more heavily bedded than the latter.

The formation extends nearly across the state, attaining a thickness of 55 feet near the mouth of Big Sandy River in the north, and showing an almost equal thickness at Cerro Gordo and Grandview in northern Hardin County. It is well developed in the vicinity of Perryville and Parsons, where it forms "chert" hills and has been largely quarried for road metal.

In successive outcrops the Harriman novaculite rests upon the mid-Silurian and various members of the Linden group, giving the clearest evidence that it is separated from the latter by a considerable break and interval of erosion. Near the mouth of Big Sandy River it lies above the highest layers of the Birdsong shale, while on Sycamore Creek near Holladay it succeeds a zone 20 feet lower, and within 2 miles to the east on Wolf Creek it rests on the Decatur, all of the Linden being locally absent through erosion. Further south at Perryville, it rests again on the Birdsong shale, but 6 miles further to the southwest at Decaturville, the two formations are separated by the Decaturville chert. At Grandview it locally succeeds the Quall limestone, though the latter is absent at Cerro Gordo, and here it rests on the Ross member of the Olive Hill formation. Further southward, where the Quall limestone is better developed, the Harriman formation is absent.

This novaculite is generally fossiliferous, but unevenly so. Near the mouth of Big Sandy River, fossils could be found only near the top, but the portion exposed on Cypress Creek near Camden is rich in organisms, and here was secured the largest fauna. At Perryville the middle portion is abundantly fossiliferous, but the upper and lower part only sparingly so, while the section at Grandview is moderately fossiliferous. The fossils are preserved as natural molds and casts similar to those in the Camden "chert." The fauna of twenty-five species includes *Leptæna ingens* n. sp. (very large), *Leptostrophia magniventra, Anoplia nucleata, Chonostrophia complanata, Plethorhyncha* cf. *barrandei, Rensselæria ovoides, Oriskania saffordi* n. sp., *Spirifer murchisoni, S. arenosus, S. paucicostatus, Metaplasia pyxidata, Meristella lata, M. rostellata, Anoplotheca dichotoma, Leptocœlia flabellites, Platyceras gebhardi,* etc.

The relation of this fauna to that of the upper Oriskany in the Appalachian trough is very striking, especially in consideration of the great distance of over 600 miles which separates these regions. Nineteen of the twenty-five species found in Tennessee occur elsewhere in the upper Oriskany, thirteen of them being common to both Maryland and New York, and these include almost all the distinctive Oriskany forms. The distinctness of this fauna from that of the Linden group below is shown by the fact that only one species, the long-ranging *Eatonia peculiaris,* has been found in both.

The fauna of the Little Saline limestone of Missouri, discovered by Weller (1914), has not yet been described, and Weller's report is awaited with great interest. Nevertheless a preliminary comparison made by the writer with a collection sent to Yale by Professor Weller indicates that the Missouri fauna is less closely related to that of the Harriman novaculite than either of these is to that of the Appalachian trough.

Middle Devonian Series

Ulsterian Group

The earlier Middle Devonian or Ulsterian is represented in Tennessee by two formations, the Camden chert and the Pegram limestone. The former is well developed in the northern half of the valley, where it attains a measured thickness of 164 feet, while the latter is a very thin formation of which only remnants are now exposed at three widely separated localities.

Camden chert.—This formation was named by Safford and Schuchert (1899) for the village of Camden, Tennessee, where it is typically developed and well exposed. Although previous workers have regarded it as an Oriskany formation, it is one of the chief conclusions of the present study that it forms an early part of the Middle Devonian. When first described, it was referred to the lower Oriskany, and attention was especially directed to the absence here of the large brachiopods which characterize the upper Oriskany. When in 1907 Savage restudied the equivalent of these beds in Illinois, where they are known as the Clear Creek chert, he showed that they pass apparently by continuous deposition into the Grand Tower (Onondaga) formation, there being an interbedding of the upper layers of the Clear Creek chert with the basal layers of the Grand Tower. He also clearly showed the intimate relation of the faunas of these two formations, and therefore assigned the Clear Creek to the highest Oriskany, assuming that deposition was continuous in southern Illinois from the Lower into the Middle Devonian. At that time, however, the typical upper Oriskany was entirely unknown in the Mississippi basin and the Camden chert seemed best to occupy this interval, the uniqueness of its fauna being ascribed to the fact that it belonged to a different basin from that of the Appalachian trough. The finding by Weller of typical Oriskany in Missouri and especially the discovery of its good development in western Tennessee, where it is unconformably succeeded by the Camden chert, give a new vista to the problem of correlation.

The Camden chert is a white to yellow brittle novaculite disposed in thin hard layers, usually from 1 to 3 inches thick—rarely as much as 8 or 10 inches—which are commonly separated by gritty clay along the bedding planes where weathering has begun. Locally there are irregular, more or less vertical pockets of white silica, apparently the result of leaching along ground-water passages. The rock breaks with an irregular fracture into angular, sharp-edged fragments, and it is always so thoroughly fractured that even the fresh quarry faces quickly break down into a talus slope, while natural outcrops appear only as a loose rubble of angular pieces of buff "chert" or novaculite, mostly smaller than one's fist. So characteristic is this broken-up condition of the rock that the quarries where it is extensively worked for ballast or road metal are generally known as "gravel pits." It has proved to be one of the finest of road metals, as it is very slightly soluble and has the important quality of "bonding" well so as to form a hard surface under traffic. The formation displays these physical characters in all the known exposures except the one at the "whirl" in Buffalo River, 4 miles north of Bakerville. Only the upper layers are here exposed and these are directly followed by the Pegram limestone. They consist of an alternation of layers of yellowish chert, 2 to 9 inches thick, and layers of dense bluish gray limestone. The fauna of these layers indicates that they are stratigraphically higher than those elsewhere exposed where the formation is unconformably overlain by the much younger Chattanooga shale.

The Camden chert attains a total exposed thickness of 164 feet along Cypress Creek southeast of Camden, and if the layers exposed at the "whirl" on the Buffalo River be added, it has a total of about 200 feet. The log of the city well at Camden shows a thickness of 275 feet, which is to be divided between this and the Harriman chert. It is well developed from Big Sandy northward along the course of the Big Sandy River, and it also extends south of Camden along the valley of Birdsong Creek, but it seems not to extend as far south as Perryville and Parsons, the chert there exposed being referable entirely to the Harriman formation. While thicker in the more western sections, it appears to thin out by overlap eastward, only the succeeding Pegram limestone reaching as far eastward as Nashville, and in most sections its thickness is greatly reduced by later erosion. The formation doubtless continues under cover into southern Illinois, where it has a maximum thickness of 237 feet and is known as the Clear Creek chert.

The magnitude of the unconformity which separates the Camden chert from the Harriman chert below is shown by the circumstance that the latter has a thickness of 55 feet on the lower course of Big Sandy River, but is entirely absent by erosion on Rushing Creek about 7 miles south of Big Sandy, where the Camden chert rests directly on the Birdsong shale. Just south of Camden, the Harriman chert is again well developed beneath the Camden, but here its thickness can not be determined. The sharpness of the faunal break still further emphasizes the importance of the hiatus between these formations.

The fossils of the Camden chert are preserved as sharp natural molds and casts of both the exterior and interior, showing details of sculpture and internal characters in unusual perfection. As a whole the formation is abundantly fossiliferous, but some layers are relatively barren while others are replete with fossils. Among the more characteristic species of this formation are: *Stropheodonta* cf. *hemispherica, Schuchertella pandora, Eodevonaria arcuata, Chonetes hudsonicus* mut. *camdenensis* n. mut., *Anoplia nucleata, Chonostrophia reversa, Centronella glansfagea, Amphigenia curta, Oriskania con-*

doni, Atrypa reticularis (var. with very large growth lamellæ), *Spirifer duodenarius, S. acuminatus, S. hemicyclus, S. worthenanus, Reticularia fimbriata, Metaplasia pyxidata, Pentagonia unisulcata, Leptocœlia flabellites, Phacops cristata,* and *Dalmanites myrmecophorus.* In the higher layers exposed on Buffalo River were found in addition *Rhipidomella* cf. *penelope* and *Spirifer macrothyris.*

The relation of this fauna to that of the Clear Creek chert of Illinois is very close. Of the forty-two species identified from Tennessee, twenty-four occur in Illinois and five more have close affinities which will probably prove to be identities. Even these numbers, however, fail to express the close resemblance of the faunas, for the twenty-nine species just noted embrace practically all those of frequent occurrence in either fauna.

In seeking to compare the fauna with those of the Oriskany and the Onondaga, about one-fourth of the species must be eliminated, because they are indigenous and peculiar to this southwestern embayment, so that their stratigraphic importance is not known. Seven additional species range through both Oriskany and Onondaga and may therefore be eliminated from consideration. Of the remaining nineteen, four are elsewhere confined to the Oriskany and twelve to the Onondaga. The assemblage here of such characteristic Onondagan species as *Chonostrophia reversa, Centronella glansfagea, Spirifer duodenarius, S. acuminatus, Pentagonia unisulcata, Phacops cristatus,* and *Dalmanites myrmecophorus,* is of the highest significance, and since this is corroborated by the facts that the Camden is separated by an interval of erosion from a normal development of typical upper Oriskany, which it overlies, and that it passes without a break into a recognized Onondaga formation (the Grand Tower of Illinois), the conclusion becomes inevitable that it belongs with the Onondaga in the Middle Devonian.

The distribution of this formation in Tennessee and Illinois, and possibly Arkansas (the Arkansas novaculite), the absence of the formation from the Appalachian trough, and finally its faunal affinities with the Middle Devonian of South America, already pointed out by Schuchert (1906), all indicate that it represents a southern or Gulf embayment. The species which show a close relation to the Maecuru fauna of South America are *Stropheodonta* cf. *blainvillei, Anoplia nucleata, Chonetes hudsonicus* mut. *camdenensis, Amphigenia curta, Spirifer duodenarius, Leptocœlia flabellites,* and *Actinopteria communis.*

Succeeding the Clear Creek in Illinois, the Grand Tower (Onondaga) formation is about 150 feet thick. The characteristic and widespread coral fauna does not appear here until about the middle of the formation. Savage's studies have led to the conclusion that its appearance marks the first confluence of this southern embayment with the northeastern one whence the corals seemingly came. Both the corals and cephalopods, he believes, are present in New York in lower strata equivalent to the lower half of the Grand Tower formation. If this be true, the inclusion of the Clear Creek (and Camden) chert in the Ulsterian series makes a thickness of over 300 feet of strata in this southern embayment before the advent here of the coral fauna. The incursion of this embayment must therefore have taken place very early in the Middle Devonian, and the Camden (and Clear Creek) chert may be partially at least the equivalent of the Esopus and Schoharie grits of New York.

Pegram limestone.—This thin formation of heavy-bedded white limestone was named by Foerste (1901) for the village of Pegram, Tennessee. It attains a maximum thickness of 12 feet at this locality, but thins out eastward to 3 feet near Newsom. Only three widely separated remnants of the formation are known, the first being the small area about Pegram where several outcrops occur, the second fully 50 miles west at the "whirl" on Buffalo River 4 miles north of Bakerville, and the third in Wayne County near Fortyeight P. O.

The exposure 3 miles west of Newsom has yielded the diagnostic Onondagan blastoid, *Nucleocrinus verneuili* and in addition *Stropheodonta demissa, S. perplana, Rhipidomella penelope,* and *Nucleospira concinna.* The formation at the locality on Buffalo River 4 miles north of Bakerville is replete with Onondaga corals, among which are *Cyathophyllum rugosum,* species of *Heliophyllum, Blothrophyllum, Cystiphyllum, Cyathophyllum,* etc.

The fauna clearly indicates an equivalence with the Jeffersonville limestone of Indiana and Kentucky, of which the Pegram limestone is supposed to be a southward extension.

The writer has not seen the exposure on Mills Creek near Fortyeight P. O. in Wayne County, but it is described by Drake (1914) as "nearly 6 feet of pebbly, coarsely crystalline, gray limestone." Here it rests on the Brownsport group of the Silurian, while farther east at Newsom it succeeds the still younger Lego limestone, but on Buffalo River it succeeds the Camden chert. At this locality only 45 feet of the highest part of the Camden formation is exposed, but within a few miles west at Camden it is known to be at least 164 feet thick. The overlap of the Pegram limestone eastward and southeastward over the Silurian indicates that the Camden chert thins out rapidly in this direction by overlap, since it was closely followed by the Pegram.

The formation is probably separated by a short interval from the Camden chert, since the coral fauna which characterizes it does not appear until about the middle of the Grand Tower formation in southeastern Illinois, the lower part of the latter being unrepresented in Tennessee.

? Upper Devonian Series

? Chautauquan Group

Chattanooga shale.—The Chattanooga shale is a widespread formation, extending from the western valley to the mountains of eastern Tennessee, and from Alabama into Kentucky, overlapping many formations ranging in age from Ordovician to Middle Devonian. In central Tennessee it attains a considerable thickness, but in the western valley it is uniformly thin and is locally absent at many places, due apparently to later erosion. Here it generally ranges between 2 and 10 feet, and rarely exceeds 20 feet.

The shale proper is a black, fissile, carbonaceous shale of fine and even grain, and smells strongly of petroleum when struck with a hammer. Crystals and concretions of pyrite occur commonly and thin concretionary layers of gypsum may be found near the base.

Beneath the black shale there is usually present a thin basal sandstone called the Hardin sandstone member. It generally forms a single massive layer of fine-grained muddy gray sandstone from a few inches to 3 or 4 feet thick, but it is absent at many localities and at Olive Hill has the exceptional thickness of 15 or 16 feet. Locally the base of the sandstone is conglomeratic.

Fossils in the Chattanooga shale are very meagre and of slight significance in correlation, being limited to supposed spore cases (*Sporangites*), microscopic annelid and conodont teeth, and a small species of *Lingula.* These fossils are abundant in the base of the shale in the well known quarry 3 miles west of Newsom, and they have been found at various other localities in western Tennessee. The *Lingula* has often been identified as *L. spatulata,* but the specimens collected by the writer are certainly distinct from that species, agreeing much more closely with *L. melie* of the Sunbury shale of Ohio.

The age of the Chattanooga shale is a mooted question. Most workers have regarded it as Upper Devonian, and both the Tennessee State Geological Survey and the United States Geological Survey continue to do so, while on the other hand Ulrich (1912) refers it to the base of the Mississippian. The known fauna being of little value, the problem will probably be solved only by a broad study of the stratigraphic relations of this widespread formation. No conclusive evidence could be found by the writer in western Tennessee, and he does not wish to take a decisive stand, but it has seemed advisable to conform to the established usage of the state and national surveys in referring the Chattanooga shale to the Upper Devonian.

References.

Drake, N. T.

1914. Economic geology of the Waynesboro Quadrangle, Resources of Tenn., **4**, No. 3, 99-120.

Foerste, A. F.

1901. Silurian and Devonian limestones of Tennessee and Kentucky, Bull. Geol. Soc. America, **12**, 395-444.

1903. Silurian and Devonian limestones of western Tennessee, Jour. Geology, **11**, 697-715.

Safford, J. M.

1855. A geological reconnaissance of Tennessee, first biennial report.

1861. The Upper Silurian beds of western Tennessee; and Dr. F. Roemer's monograph, this Journal (2), **31**, 205-209.

1869. Geology of Tennessee.

SAFFORD, J. M., and KILLEBREW, J. B.
1876. The elementary geology of Tennessee.
SAFFORD, J. M., and SCHUCHERT, C.
1899. Camden chert of Tennessee and its lower Oriskany fauna, this Journal (4), **7**, 429-431.
SAVAGE, T. E.
1908. Lower Paleozoic stratigraphy of southwestern Illinois, Illinois Geol. Survey, Bull. **8**, 103-116.
1910. The Grand Tower (Onondaga) formation of Illinois and its relation to the Jeffersonville beds of Indiana. Trans. Illinois State Acad. Sci., **3**, 116-132.
SCHUCHERT, C.
1906. Geology of the lower Amazon region, Jour. Geology, **14**, 722-746.
ULRICH, E. O.
1912. The Chattanoogan series, with special reference to the Ohio shale problem, this Journal (4), **34**, 157-183.
WADE, B.
1914. The geology of Perry County and vicinity, Resources of Tenn., **4**, No. 4, 150-181.
WELLER, S.
1914. Western extension of some Paleozoic faunas in southeastern Missouri, Bull. Geol. Soc. America, **25**, 135-136.

Yale University.

RICHARD RATHBUN AND HIS CONTRIBUTIONS TO ZOOLOGY.

In the October number of the Journal (page 620) mention was made of the death of Dr. Richard Rathbun, Assistant Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution and for nearly twenty years in charge of the United States National Museum.

Dr. Rathbun states in a brief autobiography which has kindly been placed in the hands of the writer that his interest in science dated from 1868 when, at the age of sixteen years, he was attracted by the fossils in the quarries near Buffalo, New York, in which he was employed as financial clerk and overseer of work. Fascinated by the glimpses of the ancient life of the world as revealed in Hugh Miller's "The Old Red Sandstone," young Rathbun set about the collection and study of the Silurian fossils occurring in the sandstones and limestones at Medina, Albion and Lockport, New York.

In these early years, before he was nineteen years of age, he founded the collection of paleontology in the museum of the Buffalo Society of Natural Sciences, and was appointed curator of that section of the museum. At the age of nineteen Rathbun entered Cornell University and continued his paleontological studies under the direction of Charles Fred Hartt. Here he remained for two years, devoting himself largely to the study of a collection of Devonian and Cretaceous Brachiopods and Lamellibranchs from Brazil. The results of these studies are embodied in Rathbun's earliest scientific papers.

The first of these, on the Devonian Brachiopoda of Ereré, province of Pará, Brazil, was completed at Albany with the assistance of Professor James Hall and published in the Bulletin of the Buffalo Society of Natural Sciences.[1] In this paper occur careful descriptions and illustrations of fifteen new species, while the remaining eight species of the collection are referred to previously described forms from North America. This paper was revised and elaborated four years later[2] to include the

[1] References to bibliography are placed at the end of the paper.

results of Rathbun's own collections and in it is incorporated a discussion of the relationships of the Devonian fauna of Brazil and North America.

The Devonian Trilobites and Mollusks of Ereré, Province of Pará, Brazil, collected by Professor Hartt in 1870-71 are described in a joint paper by Hartt and Rathbun, published in the Annals of the Lyceum of Natural History, New York.[3]

The study of the Cretaceous fossils of the Hartt collection required access to the collections in the Museum of Comparative Zoology of Harvard College, and here Rathbun remained from 1873 to 1875. At the same time he served as assistant in Zoology at the Boston Society of Natural History. These studies resulted in a preliminary report on the Cretaceous Lamellibranchs, including detailed descriptions of twelve new species.[4] During the years 1875 to 1878 Rathbun served as geologist to the Geological Commission of Brazil, where he made a study of the geological formations and the scanty mineral resources of several different provinces. While in Brazil he published a report of these geological studies including an account of his search for coal deposits and an extended survey of the coral reefs which lie along the coast.[5]

Several additional papers recording the results of his work in Brazil were published between 1876 and 1879. In one of these[6] the arrangement and formation of the Brazilian coral reefs and the characteristic life of the different faunal zones are explained with great clearness. The Extinct Coral Reefs at Bahia,[7] and the Coral Reefs of the Island of Itaparica, Bahia, and of Parahyba do Norte[8] are the titles of other articles on the same subject. His geological papers include an interesting description of the Brazilian sandstone reefs and the agencies concerned in their formation[9] and reviews of the current literature on the geology of Brazil.[10]

After Professor Hartt's death from yellow fever early in 1878, Rathbun returned to the United States and prepared two papers describing the life and scientific work of his honored friend and teacher.[11]

Rathbun had already acquired some experience in the investigation of marine life from his connection with the explorations of the U. S. Fish Commission as voluntary scientific assistant during the summers of 1874 and 1875, and on his return from Brazil in 1878 he again joined the Commission as a regularly appointed scientific assistant. His interest was thereby diverted from the paleontological field to that of recent animal life, and from this time on his zoological papers deal exclusively with living forms.

He first followed Alexander Agassiz, with whom he had been associated at Harvard, in the study of Echinoids, and his first paper in this new field comprises a list of eleven species of Echinoids from the coast of Brazil.[12] This was followed by a more detailed account of the geographical distributions of all the species of echinoderms known from that locality[13] with descriptions of species new to science. Other papers on echinoderms include reports upon the echini and stalked crinoids collected by the U. S. F. C. steamer Albatross in the Caribbean Sea and Gulf of Mexico,[14] the species of starfishes of the genus Heliaster represented in the U. S. National Museum,[15] and a catalogue of the collection of recent echini in the U. S. National Museum, with notes on geographical distribution.[16]

Rathbun's connection with the U. S. Fish Commission continued until 1896, during which time he published numerous papers describing the results of dredging expeditions off the eastern and southern coasts of the United States, and some of the new species of various groups of invertebrates secured.

In 1879-1880 he was detailed to New Haven, where, under the direction of Professor Verrill, he prepared many duplicate sets of the various species of marine invertebrates represented in the Fish Commission's extensive collections for distribution to museums and other institutions of learning. At the same time he served as Assistant in Zoology at Yale, but in the following year the work was transferred to Washington, where he was appointed curator of the Department of Marine Invertebrates of the U. S. National Museum. Three large series of these sets were eventually prepared and the lists of species in each published in the Proceedings of the U. S. National Museum.[17]

Under Rathbun's direction collections of marine invertebrates were later prepared by the National Museum for various exhibitions. The catalogue of the collection of economic crustaceans, worms, echinoderms and sponges for the Great International Fisheries Exhibition at London in 1883[18] contains an excellent account of the economic importance of these groups and the industries in which they are concerned, while another catalogue[19] describes the collection illustrating the scientific investigation of the sea and fresh waters. He also prepared and published the records of the dredging stations of the U. S. Fish Commission for many years, in part with the coöperation of Sanderson Smith.[20]

During this period Rathbun continued his systematic studies on various groups of invertebrates, publishing annotated lists of corals in the U. S. National Museum, with diagnoses of a number of new species[21] and a catalogue of the marine fauna of Provincetown, Mass.[22] He was also interested in the parasitic copepods, of which he published a list of the species in the United States National Museum[23] and described many new forms.[24]

In the economic aspects of marine biology Rathbun produced the best of all his zoological work, and rendered a great service both to science and industry. His account of the natural history of crustaceans, worms, radiates and sponges[25] in Goode's Natural History of Aquatic Animals, published in connection with the Tenth Census, is a work of the highest excellence. This was followed by three extensive reports on the history and methods of the fisheries. Of these, the first deals with the crab, crayfish, lobster, shrimp and prawn fisheries,[26] the second with the leech industry and trepang fishery,[27] and the third on the sponge fishery and trade.[28] Other reports published in connection with the Tenth Census include an account of the various fishing grounds of North America,[29] and a survey of the ocean temperatures of the eastern coasts of the United States.[30] Altogether these reports comprise 550 quarto pages and 106 plates, and they form one of the most important of all contributions to marine economic zoology.

Other economic papers include notes on the decrease of lobsters,[31] lobster culture,[32] transplanting of lobsters to the Pacific Coast,[33] the shrimp and prawn fisheries,[34] methods of deep-sea dredging,[35] investigations by the schooner Grampus,[36] a review of the fisheries in the contiguous waters of the State of Washington and British Columbia,[37] and an introduction to the report on the Albatross explorations in Alaska,[38] in addition to yearly contributions to the reports of the U. S. Commission of Fish and Fisheries from 1888-1896 respecting food fishes and the fishing grounds. That he could also write in a popular manner is shown by his articles on the "Giant Squid,"[39] and "The United States Fish Commission."[40]

Rathbun's publications by no means represent his major service to the Fish Commission, for his duties as chief executive officer and in charge of the scientific work of the Commission, in addition to several terms as acting commissioner, gave him the opportunity, for which he was so well fitted, of devising and directing the scientific investigations of the entire staff. To his skillful management much of the practical success of the Commission previous to 1896 is due.

Very important services to economic zoology were rendered by him in preparing the evidence for the case of the United States in the Paris fur seal Tribunal, in arranging for yearly surveys of the fur seal population in the Bering Sea, and later as the United States representative on the "Joint Commission with Great Britain relative to the preservation of the fisheries in waters contiguous to the United States and Canada." During these years (1891-1896) the fisheries conditions were very thoroughly investigated and an extended report published by Congress.[41]

In 1896 Rathbun severed his connection with the Fish Commission and entered upon the administrative service of the Smithsonian Institution, of which he was appointed Assistant Secretary early in 1897. His natural generosity caused him to devote more and more of his time and energies to his executive duties and from 1899, when he was placed in charge of the National Museum, he had little opportunity for original investigations.

His later writings were mainly limited to his administrative reports of the National Museum[42] during the years 1899 to 1917 in which he displayed great skill in the forceful presentation of the details required. To the building up and exhibition of the priceless collections of this great national institution and to the encouragement of its scientific research he gave his entire time and thought for upwards of twenty years.

His last publications relate to the culminating efforts of his life—the great new natural history building of the National Museum[43] and the national gallery of art,[44] together with a paper of historical interest on the history of the Columbian Institute for the Promotion of Arts and Sciences.[45]

On the day of Dr. Rathbun's death, July 16, 1918, the staff of the Smithsonian Institution recorded "their profound sorrow at the loss of a sincere friend, an executive officer of marked ability and one whose administration has had a wide influence upon the scientific institutions of the nation."

To his far-sighted wisdom, administrative ability, and untiring zeal systematic and economic zoology owe much, and to him the American public for generations will be indebted for an exposition of natural history which has few rivals.

For a brief account of the personal side of Dr. Rathbun's life, his success as an executive of the U. S. Fish Commission, Smithsonian Institution and National Museum, together with the honors which were accorded him, the reader is referred to Dr. Marcus Benjamin's recent paper in Science.[46]

Richard Rathbun's scientific career may be summarized in a few words; a youthful enthusiast in paleontology, an investigator of the Devonian and Cretaceous deposits and the coral reefs of Brazil, a contributor to systematic paleontology and zoology; in middle life a leading authority on the economic aspects of marine zoology and the means of its investigation; but most prominently and gratefully recognized in his full maturity for his remarkable ability in the administration of the United States National Museum; to him in large measure the successful development of this great national center of research and exposition is due.

WESLEY R. COE.

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

[1] Vol. **1**, No. 4, 236-261, pl. 8-10, 1874.
[2] Proc. Boston Soc. Nat. Hist., **20**, 14-39, 1878.
[3] Vol. **11**, 110-127, 1875.
[4] Proc. Boston Soc. Nat. Hist., 1874, **17**, 241-256, 1875.
[5] Archivos do Museu Nacional do Rio de Janeiro, **3**, 159-183, 1878.
[6] Amer. Naturalist, **13**, 539-551, 1879.
[7] Loc. cit., **10**, 439-440, 1876.
[8] Proc. Boston Soc. Nat. Hist., **20**, 39-41, 1878, and this Journal, 3d Ser., **17**, 326-327, 1879.
[9] Amer. Naturalist, **13**, 347-358, 1879.

[10] This Journal, **17**, 464-468, 1879; and **18**, 310-311, 1879.
[11] Sketch of Professor C. F. Hartt, in Pop. Sci. Monthly, **13**, 231-235, 1878, and Sketch of the life and scientific work of Professor Charles Fred Hartt, in Proc. Boston Soc. Nat. Hist., **19**, 338-364, 1878.
[12] Additions to the Echinoid fauna of Brazil, this Journal, 3d Ser., **15**, 82-84, 1878.
[13] A list of the Brazilian Echinoderms, with notes on their distribution, etc. Trans. Conn. Acad., **5**, 139-158, 1879.
[14] Proc. U. S. Nat. Mus., **8**, 83-89, 606-620, and 628-635, 1885.
[15] Loc. cit., **10**, 440-449, pl. 23-26, 1887.
[16] Loc. cit., **9**, 225-293, 1886.
[17] Loc. cit., **2**, 227-232, 1879; **4**, 298-303, and 304-307, 1881.
[18] Bull. 27, U. S. Nat. Mus., 107-137, 1884.
[19] Loc. cit., 511-622.
[20] Ann. Rept. Comm. Fish and Fisheries for 1879, 559-601, and Bull. U. S. F. C. for 1882, **2**, 119-131.
[21] Proc. U. S. Nat. Mus., **10**, 10-19, and 354-366, pl. 15-19, 1887.
[22] Loc. cit., **3**, 116-133, 1880.
[23] Loc. cit., **7**, 483-492, 1884.
[24] Loc. cit., **9**, 310-324, pl. 5-11, 1886, and **10**, 559-571, pl. 29-35, 1887.
[25] Fisheries and Fisheries Industries of the United States; prepared through the coöperation of the Commissioner of Fisheries and the Superintendent of the Tenth Census, by George Brown Goode, part 5, 759-850, pls. 260-277, 1884.
[26] Loc. cit., Sec. 5, **2**, 629-810, 1887.
[27] Loc. cit., 813-816.
[28] Loc. cit., 817-841.
[29] Loc. cit., Sec. 3, vii-xviii, 5-154, 49 charts, 1887.
[30] Loc. cit., 155-238, 32 charts, 1887.
[31] Bull. U. S. F. C. for 1884, **4**, 421-426.
[32] Loc. cit., 1886, **6**, 17-32.
[33] Loc. cit., 1888, **8**, 453-472, pl. 71.
[34] Loc. cit., 1882, **2**, 139-152.
[35] Science, **4**, 54-57, 146-151, 225-229, and 400-404, 1884.
[36] Collins, Bean and Rathbun, Bull. U. S. F. C. for 1887, **7**, 217-267.
[37] Rept. U. S. Commissioner of Fish and Fisheries 1899, 251-350, pl. 8-16.
[38] Bull. U. S. F. C., 1888, **8**, 5-16.
[39] St. Nicholas, **8**, 266-270, 5 pls. 1881.
[40] Century Mag., **43**, 679-697, 19 figs. 1892.
[41] Washington, D. C., 178 pp., 1897.
[42] Reports of the Dept. of Marine Invertebrates, U. S. National Museum, in Annual Reports of the Board of Regents of the Smithsonian Institution, 1883-1892 inclusive, and Reports U. S. Nat'l Museum (annually), 1899-1917.
[43] Bull. 80, U. S. Nat'l. Museum, 134 pp. 31 pls., 1913.
[44] Bull. 70, U. S. Nat'l. Museum, 140 pp., 26 ills., 1909.
[45] Bull. 101, U. S. Nat'l. Museum, 85 pp., 1917.
[46] Vol. **48**, 231-235, Sept. 6, 1918.

SCIENTIFIC INTELLIGENCE.

I. Chemistry and Physics.

1. *Notes on Isotopic Lead.*—Frank Wigglesworth Clarke has given an interesting discussion of the developments within the past few years in regard to the forms of lead produced by radioactive transformations. The forms of lead thus produced are identical with ordinary lead in their distinctively chemical properties, but they differ from it appreciably in atomic weight and in specific gravity. Thus the lead from the purest uranium minerals has an atomic weight fully a unit lower than that of ordinary lead, while that from thorium minerals is nearly a unit higher, and they are called isotopes of lead. Other cases of isotopes are believed to exist in connection with the temporary elements produced by radioactive transformations, but in no other cases is there evidence of any variation in the atomic weights of elements from different sources. In the case of ordinary lead it has been found that samples from various localities and different minerals give the same atomic weight within the limits of experimental error, that is, between 207·20 and 207·22, according to the results of Baxter and Grover. Samples of lead from uranium minerals have given varying results, some as low as 206·04 and 206·09, while a thorite lead gave 207·77. Since uranium minerals usually contain some thorium, and *vice versa,* and since contamination with ordinary lead is possible, there is some doubt about the actual atomic weights of these isotopes, and the rather wide variations in the results obtained for the atomic weights of radioactive lead is easily explained.

The author criticizes the employment of the ratio between lead and uranium as first used by Boltwood for calculating the age of uranium minerals, chiefly on the ground that a part of the lead present may be normal lead. Boltwood calculated the age of Connecticut uraninite to be 410,000,000 years, and that of Ceylonese thorianite as 2,200,000,000 years. He criticizes the method further from the fact that Becker in calculating the ages of minerals from Llano County, Texas, found enormously different ages for the same mineral from different analyses. For example, two analyses of fergusonite by Mackintosh gave the ages 10,350,000,000 and 2,967,000,000 years. The author notes that Barrell and others defend the use of the lead-uranium ratio for determining the age of minerals, and admits that the subject is still open to discussion.—*Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci.,* **4**, 181. H. L. W.

2. *The Recovery of Potash and Other Materials from Kelp.*—When the supply of German potash salts was cut off in 1914, the kelp of the Pacific Coast of the United States attracted much attention as a source of potash, and C. A. Higgins has recently

given an account of the practical development of this idea. At first primitive methods, involving much manual labor, were used in harvesting the kelp, but later mechanical reaping devices with band conveyors were installed upon large power scows, so that the harvesting and unloading were accomplished much more economically by machinery. At first the kelp was dried and burnt to produce an ash, containing about 15 per cent of K_2O, which was used for fertilizers. Afterwards the kelp was dried and only partially incinerated in order to save the greater part of the nitrogen contents of the material and thus increase its value as a fertilizer. In spite of improved methods, however, the production of potash from kelp has been found to be expensive, and the industry will be unable to compete with the usual European supply, nor even with our own supply from brines, alunite deposits, recovery from cement kilns, blast furnaces, etc., unless other products can be produced from the kelp. To accomplish this last purpose a factory was started in 1915 at San Diego, California, with the intention of producing acetone, potash and iodine from kelp. For this purpose the kelp is first fermented, whereby acetic acid is formed and the potash and iodine are brought into solution. The acetic acid is neutralized with limestone, forming calcium acetate, which upon ignition yields the important solvent, acetone, while the iodine is saved and the potash is finally obtained as potassium chloride. As the process has developed other products have been made, so that this method appears to be a promising one. It is stated that not more than 25 tons per day, on the basis of 80 per cent muriate of potash, are produced by all the kelp-harvesting concerns at the present time, and that more than half of this is produced by the fermentation process.—*Jour. Indust. Engr. Chem.*, **10**, 832.

H. L. W.

3. *Treatise on Applied Analytical Chemistry,* by VITTORIO VILLAVECCHIA. Translated by Thomas H. Pope. Vol. II, 8vo, pp. 536. Philadelphia, 1918 (P. Blakiston's Son & Co.).—The first volume of this excellent work, which has been prepared with the collaboration of nine other experts, was noticed and highly praised in the April number of the Journal of the present year. The present volume completes the work and deals with meat and its preparations, milk and its products, sugars and products containing them, beer, wine, spirits, and liquors, essential oils, turpentine and its products, varnishes, rubber and guttapercha, tanning products, inks, leather, coloring matter and textile fibers, yarns, fabrics. This volume, like its predecessor, has the excellent features of being clear, practical, and satisfactory in the selection of methods of analysis, and in giving valuable notes in regard to the interpretation of results. H. L. W.

4. *Outlines of Theoretical Chemistry;* by FREDERICK H. GETMAN. 8vo, pp. 539. New York, 1918 (John Wiley & Sons,

Inc.).—This is the second edition of an excellent text-book which first appeared five years ago. By means of a thorough revision and considerable amplification the present edition has been made to give a very satisfactory view of the recent advances in physical chemistry. The radioactive phenomena bearing upon our present atomic theory are well presented as is also the bearing of X-ray spectra upon crystalline structure, while the chapter on colloids has been re-written. The book gives a very clear and able account of theoretical chemistry, and the practical problems introduced at the conclusion of many of the chapters should be found very useful in connection with the study of the subject.

H. L. W.

5. *Electro-Analysis;* by EDGAR F. SMITH. 12mo, pp. 344. Philadelphia, 1918 (P. Blakiston's Son & Co.).—This is the sixth edition of a work so well known and highly regarded among analytical chemists that no description of its general features need be given. Since the appearance of the last edition comparatively few important advances have been made in this line of work, so that comparatively few additions to the text have been required. Among the more important additions is the description of an improved double cup for the purpose of analyzing mixtures of halides, which has been perfected in the author's laboratory. It is believed that all the recent advances that may be considered reliable have been brought into the new edition.

H. L. W.

6. *Absorption of X-Rays in Aluminium and Copper.*—A method for determining the coefficient of absorption of X-rays in elements, which seems to eliminate the chief sources of error (heterogeneity and variations in intensity of the radiations) usually affecting the results, has been devised and tested by C. M. WILLIAMS.

In order to obtain a homogeneous beam the rays from a Coolidge tube were analyzed by a rock-salt "grating." The inclusion in the first-order beam of shorter wave-lengths of higher orders was prevented by using too low a voltage to excite the submultiple radiations. In the paper, lines are plotted with thickness of absorber as abscissa and logarithm of ionization current as ordinate, each line corresponding to a different applied voltage. The length of the alternative spark-gap, between polished metal spheres 1 cm. in diameter, was taken as a measure of the voltage. The lines for 12, 9, and 6 cms. spark-gap show decided curvature and hence superposition of several wave-lengths. The line for 3 cms. is, on the other hand, perfectly straight thus indicating a homogeneous beam.

In order to compensate for the fluctuations in intensity of the source a special form of ionization chamber was constructed. The innovation consisted in separating the ionization chamber into upper and lower halves or compartments by a horizontal, longitudinal metal plate. Each compartment was provided with its own insulated electrode. The axis of the "reflected" beam of homogeneous rays coincided with that of the ionization chamber so that equal portions of the beam entered the upper and lower compartments. The layers of absorbing material were placed in front of the upper compartment but not the lower. Readings of the electroscope were taken first with the upper electrode joined to it and then with the lower one connected with it. In this way the lower compartment furnished the data necessary for the standardization of the readings taken with the upper compartment and its associated absorbing screens. "Very consistent results were obtained in this way, the points all lying very evenly on a straight line—indeed, the results for the absorption coefficient obtained in independent experiments rarely varied by more than 1 per cent., or very occasionally by 2 per cent."

The mass-absorption coefficient μ/ρ is tabulated, for aluminium and copper, for eight wave-lengths extending from $0{\cdot}431 \times 10^{-8}$ to $0{\cdot}627 \times 10^{-8}$ cm. When μ/ρ for copper is plotted against μ/ρ for aluminium, segments of two sensibly parallel straight lines are obtained. The break in the locus occurs at about $\lambda = 0{\cdot}49$ A (coef. $= 2$) which fact is very significant since Barkla found evidence of the emission by aluminium of a J radiation corresponding to a mass-absorption coefficient approximately equal to 1·9. Finally, the formula $\mu/\rho = a{\cdot}\lambda^n + C$ gave excellent agreement with the experimental data. For aluminium and copper the values of n were found to be 3 and 5/2 respectively. The latter datum is quite exact and it agrees with Owen's fifth-power law of absorption.—*Proc. Roy. Soc.,* **94** A, 567, 1918.

H. S. U.

7. *Flame and Furnace Spectra of Iron.*—From his exhaustive investigations of the tube-furnace spectrum of iron A. S. King has deduced values for the effective temperatures of the following flames: air-coal gas (mantle), oxy-hydrogen, oxy-coal gas, oxy-acetylene, and air-coal gas (cone). Since these values differ markedly from the values obtained directly by E. Bauer, who worked with the same flames that had been studied spectroscopically by Hemsalech and de Watteville, the whole question has been recently subjected to a very thorough investigation by G. A. Hemsalech. The discrepancies were due, at least in part, to the fact that King used a high-dispersion grating spectrograph while Hemsalech and de Watteville employed an ordinary prism apparatus. Consistent results were obtained as soon as Hemsalech set up his own tube-furnace and made all spectroscopic observations of both the flame and the furnace spectra with the same spectrograph.

The conclusions at which Hemsalech arrived may be summarized in the following sentences:

(*a*). The spectra of iron given by an electric-tube resistance furnace at atmospheric pressure, and at temperatures up to about 2400° C., are due to the action of heat on a chemical compound of the metal and not on the uncombined metal alone. Therefore these spectra are not of purely thermal origin.

(*b*). A spectrum of iron has been observed at the low temperature of 1500° C. and found to be the same as that emitted by an air flame burning in coal gas.

(*c*). The spectra of iron compounds in flames are identical with the furnace spectra at corresponding temperatures up to about 2400° C. All the lines of evidence lead to the conclusion that the mode of excitation must be the same in the two cases, namely, chemical dissociation of an iron compound by thermal action.

(*d*). The character of the spectrum is independent of the nature of the iron compound; thus chlorides, oxides, etc., always give the same kind of spectrum in either the flame or furnace at a given temperature.

(*e*). The name *thermo-chemical excitation* has been suggested to designate the cause of emission of the spectra in question. These spectra differ completely from the spectra radiated by the same compounds in the explosion region of the air coal-gas flame in which the emission is due to *chemical excitation* at a comparatively low temperature.

(*f*). The aluminium lines at $\lambda3944$ and $\lambda3962$ have been observed at the low temperature 1500° C.—*Phil. Mag.*, **36**, 209, 1918. H. S. U.

8. *Publications of the American Astronomical Society; Volume* 3. Pp. 372. 1918 (Published by the Society).—This volume contains the reports of the meetings of the society, beginning with the sixteenth (1913) and ending with the twenty-first (1917). In the majority of cases the scientific papers presented at the several meetings are given in abstract form. The chief exceptions to this general statement are afforded by the address (March, 1914) by Henry Norris Russell, on the "Relations between the Spectra and other Characteristics of the Stars," and by the reports of the committee on stellar parallaxes. Pages 347 to 372 contain the constitution and by-laws, lists of the officers and members, author and subject indexes, etc. The unavoidable uniformity of the text is greatly relieved by eight full-page, half-tone reproductions of excellent photographs of the members present at the meetings, of Percival Lowell, and of certain new astronomical observatories. H. S. U.

II. Geology.

1. *Maryland Geological Survey;* Edward B. Mathews, State Geologist. Vol. X. Pp. 553, 96 text figs., 1918; and *Anne Arundel County.* Pp. 232, 9 pls., 4 text figs., atlas of 4 maps,

1917.—The first of these elegant volumes begins with a portrait and appreciation of the late William Bullock Clark, who during the years from 1896 to 1917 did so much to place the state of Maryland in the front rank among the state geological surveys of our country. The many volumes issued under the directorship of Professor Clark will always remain his monument, attesting to his high standard in scientific work and his inspiration to others.

Volume ten deals with the geography of Maryland, including also the physiography, natural resources, manufactures, etc. (pp. 39-167). Part II, the larger one, deals fully with the surface and underground water resources of Maryland, including Delaware and the District of Columbia. Part I is by Professor Clark. Part II by the same author assisted by E. B. Mathews and E. W. Berry. The whole is a report that should be of the greatest practical value to the state.

The physiography, geology, and mineral resources of Anne Arundel County are described at length by Homer P. Little. The volume also contains accounts by others of the soils, climate, hydrography, magnetic declination, and forests. C. S.

2. *The San Lorenzo Series of Middle California;* by Bruce L. Clark. Bull. Dept. Geology, University of California, vol. 11, No. 2, pp. 45-234, pls. 3-24, 4 text figs., 1918.—This excellent memoir describes the stratigraphy and fauna of the Oligocene of central western California, and compares it with similar formations of Oregon, Washington, and British Columbia. The fauna consists of 137 species, of which 70 are described here as new; nearly all are of bivalves and gastropods.

The presence of Oligocene strata in California was demonstrated by Arnold in 1906, and now they are known to have a wide distribution along the west coast of the United States. From the Miocene, the Oligocene is separated by a time break of apparently long duration, and but 9 per cent of the fauna passes upward, while with the Eocene it is intimately connected. In fact, the author believes that a part of the Oligocene as here defined may include strata that are actually of Upper Eocene age, although no fossils are common to the two series. Not a single species is common to the Atlantic and Pacific borders of North America, and but 2 per cent of the fauna is still living. C. S.

3. *West Virginia Geological Survey;* I. C. White, State Geologist, Morgantown, W. Va.—The following important publications have been recently issued:

No. 28. *Detailed Report on Barbour and Upshur Counties and Western Randolph;* by D. B. Reger, with an introductory discussion of deep well records, including the Deepest Well in the World, by I. C. White, and a discussion of deep well temperatures by C. E. Van Orstrand. Pp. civ, 867; 53 pls., 43 text figs., with

4 maps (topography and geology) in separate case. These maps cover respectively Barbour county, and Upshur county and the coal area of Randolph west from Big Laurel and Rich Mountains. The whole region is underlain by the Coal Measures in which are several valuable beds, all of which are described, analyzed, and their areas mapped in this report. Price (including case of maps, delivery charges prepaid), $3.00. Extra copies of geologic map of Upshur and Western Randolph, $1.00; of Barbour, 75 cents; of topographic map of Upshur and Western Randolph, 75 cents; of Barbour, 50 cents.

No. 31. *Revised Figure showing Bituminous Coal Beds in West Virginia.* Section, 6 inches wide and 40 inches long, showing the names, number and intervals separating the Coal beds of West Virginia, and extending from the top of the Dunkard Series to the base of the Pottsville Series, on the scale of 1 inch to 200 feet, compiled and revised to July 1, 1918; by RAY V. HENNEN, Assistant Geologist. Price, 25 cents.

4. *The Evolution of the Earth and its Inhabitants;* by JOSEPH BARRELL, CHARLES SCHUCHERT, L. L. WOODRUFF, R. S. LULL, and ELLSWORTH HUNTINGTON. Pp. 208, 4 pls., 38 text figs. Yale University Press, 1918 ($2.50).—During the winter of 1916-1917, the Yale Chapter of the honorary scientific society of the Sigma Xi, under the presidency of Professor Richard S. Lull, presented a series of popular lectures on the geological and biological evidences for the evolution of our planet and its life. These are now published in book form. The lectures are: 1, The origin of the earth, by Professor Barrell; 2, The earth's changing surface and climate, by Professor Schuchert; 3, The origin of life, by Professor Woodruff; 4, The pulse of life, by Professor Lull; and 5, Climate and civilization, by Doctor Huntington. They ought to be of wide interest in scientific circles. The bookmaking is of the best.

5. *Equidæ of the Oligocene, Miocene, and Pliocene of North America, Iconographic type revision;* by HENRY FAIRFIELD OSBORN. Mem. American Museum of Natural History, new ser., vol. 2, pt. 1, 329 pp., 54 pls., 173 text figs., 1918.—This imposing quarto gives an admirable summary of our knowledge of the American fossil Equidæ from the Oligocene to the Pliocene inclusive. It consists of the usual preface, a summary of the head and limb ratios and indices used in the work, and an exposition of tooth morphology. Then follows a description of the chief geologic horizons, formations, and levels which contain equine remains, together with the principal geographical localities, all of which is summarized on page 35.

The systemic portion of the work is the most extensive and embraces every known species, reference to the original descriptions, the horizon and locality, the repository and description of the type, the specific characters and, especially, carefully drawn figures showing the essential features of tooth, skull, and limb, which, as all students of our science know, are worth any amount of verbal description. Not only are the text figures ample, but they are supplemented by the beautifully drawn and contrastingly arranged figures of the plates.

This very real contribution to vertebrate paleontology is but a forerunner of a promised monograph of the Equidæ which Professor Osborn has had in preparation since 1900. R. S. L.

6. *The genus Homalonotus;* by F. R. COWPER REED. Geol. Mag., n. s., dec. 6, vol. 5, pp. 263-276, 314-327, 1918.—The author has carefully restudied all of the species of *Homalonotus* with a view of a better generic classification of these trilobites. He recognizes but a single genus, *Homalonotus,* and ten subgenera. Of these three are new—*Eohomalonotus, Brongniartella* (to replace the preoccupied *Brongniartia* of Salter), *Burmeisterella,* and *Parahomalonotus.* The genotype of *Homalonotus* is *H. knighti,* and even though the author is well aware of this, he uses the form again as characteristic of *Koenigia,* in this following Salter 1865. According to the rules of nomenclature this cannot be done, and *Koenigia* becomes a synonym of *Homalonotus sensu stricto.* The reviewer recognizes, however, that this automatic action under the rules does not express Professor Reed's view, as *H. knighti* is a very specialized form of these trilobites.

C. S.

III. MISCELLANEOUS SCIENTIFIC INTELLIGENCE.

1. *Dispensaries, their Management and Development;* by MICHAEL M. DAVIS, JR., and ANDREW R. WARNER. Pp. ix, 438. New York, 1918 (The Macmillan Company).—Maintaining that conditions after the war will result in reconstruction of medical service in the direction of medical organization rather than of medical individualism, the Dispensary is presented as the medical organization which must cover the major portion of the field in caring for disease, standing between the hospital and the Public Health Department. The hospital cares for the acutely incapacitated, the Public Health Department deals usually with preventive work alone. But the Dispensary is an institution which organizes the professional equipment and special skill of physicians for the diagnosis, treatment and prevention of disease among ambulatory patients.

The book is divided into three parts—the history and present extent of dispensaries in the United States; the equipment, organization, and daily conduct of dispensaries; the presentation of the dispensary as a form of organization for rendering efficient medical service to the people. A. F. M.

2. *Principles and Practice of Filling Teeth;* by C. N. JOHNSON. Fourth Edition. Pp. xii, 286. Philadelphia, 1918 (P. Blakiston's Son & Co.).—A new edition of a popular treatise on the technique of the subject by the editor of "The Dental Review." The author states that the subject of oral prophylaxis has been given added attention. His good judgment is attested by the following quotation: "The mania for smoothness and evenness which impels an operator to grind down all small prominences on the teeth is reprehensible in the highest degree. This is not prophylaxis; it is vandalism." L. B. M.

3. *A Study of Engineering Education;* by CHARLES RIBORG MANN. Prepared for the Joint Committee on Engineering Education of the National Engineering Societies. Carnegie Foundation for the Advancement of Teaching. Bulletin No. XI. Pp. xi, 139. New York City (576 Fifth Avenue), 1918.—This recent bulletin of the Carnegie Foundation presents the results reached by four years work of the joint committee mentioned above. The contents are summarized in part as follows: "The origin of the present system of engineering schools is traced in detail, and its characteristics, both good and bad, are frankly stated. Its operation is studied mainly from the point of view of the effect upon the student and there is a careful examination of entrance records and college courses, as well as a brief summary of the current methods of instruction. On the basis of this analysis of the present situation, the larger problems of engineering education are considered to be those of admission, content of courses, faculty organization, and curriculum. The treatment culminates in a definition of each of the larger problems in terms of the requirements of the profession and of the young men who wish to enter."

"Numerous suggestions are presented as to ways and means of solving the problems thus defined, in an effort to reach the general principles which seem best qualified to help each school in solving the problem according to its own peculiar circumstances. Among the suggestions may be mentioned the necessity for more objective methods of rating and testing students and more accurate records of achievement; the need for closer coöperation among the several departments of instruction at each school; the introduction of practical experience with engineering materials into the Freshman year; and the increase in the emphasis placed upon the humanities and humanistic studies."

4. *National Academy of Sciences.*—The autumn meeting of the National Academy was held on November 18, 19, at the Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore.

INDEX TO VOLUME XLVI.*

* This Index contains the general heads, CHEMISTRY, GEOLOGY, MINERALS, OBITUARY, ROCKS; under each the titles of Articles referring thereto are included.